

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO



3 1761 00050292 2

UNIV. OF
TORONTO
LIBRARY

5843


OBSERVATIONS

ON THE

Language of Chaucer's Troilus

BERLIN : ASHER & CO., 13, UNTER DEN LINDEN.
NEW YORK : C. SCRIBNER & CO., LEYPOLDT & HOLT.
PHILADELPHIA : J. B. LIPPINCOTT & CO.

Observations
on the
Language of Chaucer's Troilus.



BY

GEORGE LYMAN KITTREDGE,

ASSISTANT PROFESSOR OF ENGLISH IN HARVARD UNIVERSITY.



PUBLISHED FOR THE CHAUCER SOCIETY
BY KEGAN PAUL, TRENCH, TRÜBNER & CO.,
PATERNOSTER HOUSE, CHARING-CROSS ROAD.
1891.

96814
1129



PP
1901
A3
ser. 2
no. 28

Second Series, 28.

R. CLAY & SONS, LIMITED, LONDON & BUNGAY.

TO
Professor Francis James Child
IN
GRATITUDE AND AFFECTION

P R E F A C E.

THE following Observations are intended to furnish some materials for the large induction necessary to reasonable certainty in the matter of Chaucer's language, particularly his use of final *-e*. Other matters than final *-e* are of course dealt with from time to time; but to this in particular the Observations are directed. In other words, the study here presented to members of the Chaucer Society is a study in forms, not in phonology. This study was begun in August 1887, and has been frequently interrupted. The printing has of necessity extended over an unconscionable length of time. It is hoped that these facts may serve as the excuse for some trifling inconsistencies of typography, and perhaps even for some slight vacillations in plan and method. For actual blunders no excuse is offered; but it is hoped that the work may contain enough that is useful to make scholars indulgent for such errors as they may observe. Corrections will be gratefully received.

A paper by Professor John M. Manly, of Brown University, extending the method of inquiry here followed to *The Legend of Good Women*, will be found in vol. ii. of the *Harvard Studies and Notes in Philology and Literature* (Boston, 1893), pp. 1 ff. The relations of Professor Manly's paper to the present study are explained in his Introductory Note. Both papers, it will be observed, are under special obligations to Professor Child's *Observations on the Language of Chaucer*.

My acknowledgments are due to Professor E. S. Sheldon and Professor J. M. Manly for a number of valuable suggestions. Dr. Furnivall, with his usual kindness, has furnished me with indispensable copies and collations. To Professor Child, who suggested the investigation, and has furthered it by his counsel and encouragement throughout, my obligations of every kind are innumerable.

G. L. K.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

	PAGE
INTRODUCTORY NOTE	xv
COMPARATIVE TABLES OF LINE-NUMBERS	xix
ABBREVIATIONS AND SIGNS	xxiv

I. GRAMMATICAL CHAPTER.

NOUNS.

§§ 1—5. Nouns of the <i>n</i> - declension	1—9
§ 2. Masculines	1—5
§ 3. Feminines	5—8
§ 4. Neuters	8
§ 5. <i>Lady, play, fo, feldefare</i>	9
§§ 6, 7. Masculine and neuter nouns with A.S. nominative in <i>-e</i> or <i>-u</i>	9—12
§ 6. Ending in <i>-e</i> in the <i>Troilus</i>	9—11
§ 7. Exceptions to § 6	11—12
§ 8. Feminine nouns with A.S. nominative in <i>-u</i>	12—15
§§ 9—11. Monosyllabic feminine nouns with long stem- syllable in A.S.	15—34
§ 9. Ending in <i>-e</i> in the <i>Troilus</i>	15—27
§ 10. Nouns in <i>-yng, -yngre</i>	27—31
§ 11. Ending in a consonant in the <i>Troilus</i>	31—34
§ 12. Apocope of A.S. <i>-n</i> in nouns	34—35
§ 13. <i>Hond, honde</i>	35—36
§ 14. Masculine and neuter nouns ending in a consonant in A.S. but in <i>-e</i> in the <i>Troilus</i> (including so-called dative <i>-e</i> 's)	36—47
§ 15. Germanic nouns, not A.S., ending in <i>-e</i> in the <i>Troilus</i>	47—51
§ 16. <i>Gle, se, stre, tre</i>	51
§ 17. <i>Body, day, iuy, wery</i>	51—52
§ 18. Masculine and neuter A.S. nouns ending in a consonant in the <i>Troilus</i>	52—63
§ 19. Other Germanic nouns ending in a consonant	63—64

	PAGE
§§ 20—31. Romance nouns in <i>-e</i> mute	64—87
§ 21. Miscellaneous nouns : <i>-e</i> retained	64—74
§ 22. Exceptions to § 21	74—75
§ 23. Nouns in <i>-aunce</i>	75—77
§ 24. Nouns in <i>-ence</i>	77—78
§ 25. I. Abstract nouns in <i>-esse</i>	78—79
II. Feminine <i>nomina agentis</i> in <i>-esse</i>	79
§ 26. Nouns in <i>-yce, -yse</i>	79—80
§ 27. Nouns in <i>-ure</i>	80—81
§ 28. Nouns in <i>-ère</i>	81—83
§ 29. Nouns in consonant + <i>re</i>	83—84
§ 30. Nouns in <i>-ye, -è</i>	84—86
§ 31. Nouns in <i>-ye</i> (unaccented)	86—87
§ 32. Romance nouns that end in a consonant in French but take <i>-e</i> in the <i>Troilus</i>	87—88
§ 33. Nouns ending in Old French in <i>-é, -ée</i>	88—89
§ 34. Romance (and Latin) nouns without final <i>-e</i>	89—97
I. Nouns in <i>-er</i>	90
II. Nouns in <i>-our</i>	90—91
III. Nouns in <i>-ent, -ment</i>	91—92
IV. Nouns in <i>-aunt</i>	92
V. Nouns in <i>-s</i>	92—93
VI. Nouns ending in a vowel (not <i>-e</i>)	93—94
VII. Miscellaneous	94—97
§§ 35—37. Genitive singular of nouns	97—100
§ 35. Genitive singular in <i>-es</i>	97—98
§ 36. Genitive identical in form with nominative (<i>lady, brother, etc.</i>)	98—99
§ 37. Proper names in <i>-s</i>	99—100
§§ 38—45. Plural of nouns	100—110
§ 38. Plurals in <i>-és, -is, -ys</i> (after consonants), <i>-s</i> (after <i>-e</i>)	100—103
§ 39. Exceptions to § 38 : words in <i>-aunt, -ent, -ioun,</i> <i>-en, -on, -an, -r</i> ; monosyllables in <i>-e</i>	104—106
§ 40. Plurals in <i>-en</i>	106—107
§ 41. Plurals in <i>-en</i> by imitation	107
§ 42. Plurals with umlaut	107
§ 43. Plural identical with singular	108—109
§ 44. Genitive plural	109—110
§ 45. Dative plural	110

ADJECTIVES.

§§ 46—52. Singular adjectives in the indefinite use	110—122
§ 46. A.S. adjectives in <i>-e, -a</i>	110—113
§ 47. <i>Allone, lame</i>	113—114
§ 48. <i>Lyte, multe</i>	114—115

	PAGE
§ 49. A.S. adjectives ending in a consonant that take -e in the <i>Troilus</i>	115—118
§ 50. Germanic (not A.S.) adjectives that show -e in the <i>Troilus</i>	119—120
§ 51. Romance adjectives in -e	120—121
§ 52. Romance adjectives with -e in the <i>Troilus</i> but none in French	121—122
§§ 53—54. Monosyllabic singular adjectives in the definite use	122—127
§ 53. Taking -e	122—126
I. Ordinals	123
II. Superlatives	123—124
III. Miscellaneous	124—125
IV. Words sometimes showing -e in the in- definite use (cf. § 49)	125—126
V. <i>owene, owen, owne</i>	126
§ 54. -e dropped	126—127
§ 55. Vocative singular of monosyllabic adjectives	127—128
§§ 56—62. Adjectives singular of more than one syllable in definite and vocative constructions	128—134
§ 56. Rules	128—129
§ 57. I. Dissyllabic paroxytones (following word accented on first syllable)	129—132
§ 58. II. Dissyllabic oxytones (following word ac- cented on second syllable)	132
§ 59. III. Trisyllabic proparoxytones (following word not accented on second syllable)	132—133
§ 60. IV. Trisyllabic proparoxytones (following word accented on second syllable)	133
§ 61. V. Trisyllabic paroxytones (following word accented on first syllable)	133
§ 62. Vocative of adjectives of more than one syllable	133—134
§ 63. French inflection of adjectives	134—135
§ 64. Comparative degree	135—137
(a) -er (-ere)	135
(b) <i>lenger</i>	135
(c) <i>better, bet</i> ; <i>lasse, lesse</i> ; <i>more, mo, moo</i> ; <i>worse,</i> <i>wers</i>	135—137
§ 65. Comparative and superlative with <i>more</i> and <i>most</i>	137—138
§ 66. Superlative (-est)	138
§§ 67—71. Plural of adjectives	138—149
§ 67. Monosyllabic adjectives: plural in -e	138—149
(a) Miscellaneous	138—142
(b) <i>fele, fewe</i>	142
(c) Monosyllabic superlatives	142
(d) Cardinal numerals	142—144
§ 68. Monosyllabic perfect participles standing in the predicate	144—145

Table of Contents.

	PAGE
§ 69. Monosyllabic adjectives standing in the predicate : <i>e</i> sometimes omitted	145—146
Other exceptions to § 67	146
§ 70. Adjectives of more than one syllable (in the interior of the verse)	146—148
§ 71. Adjectives of more than one syllable at the end of the verse	148—149
§ 72. Adjectives in A.S. <i>-lic</i> (<i>-lic</i>), O.N. <i>-ligr</i>	149—150

PRONOUNS.

§ 73. Personal pronouns	150—154
§ 74. Possessive pronouns	154—157
§ 75. Reflexive and intensive pronouns	157—160
§ 76. Demonstrative pronouns	160—161
§ 77. Interrogative pronouns	161
§ 78. Relative pronouns (and pronominal adjectives), and the interrogative (etc.) <i>which</i>	161—164
§ 79. Other pronominal words (<i>same, som, somewhat, other, ech, euery, euerychon, any, eyther, bothe, men, oon (o), noon (no), ought, nought</i>	164—169
§§ 80, 81. The adjective <i>al</i>	169—175
§ 80. I. Adjective use, singular ; <i>al</i>	169
II. Substantive uses, singular ; <i>al</i>	169—170
III. Singular <i>allē</i>	170—171
IV. Plural of <i>al</i>	171—175
§ 81. The genitive plural of <i>al</i>	175

ADVERBS AND OTHER PARTICLES.

§ 82. Adverbs in A.S. <i>-e</i> which preserve their termination	175—180
§ 83. Exceptions to § 82	180
§ 84. Adverbs in <i>-liche, -lich, -ly</i>	180—187
§ 85. Adverbs without vowel-ending	187—190
§§ 86, 87. Comparison of adverbs	190—193
§ 86. Comparative degree	190—192
§ 87. Superlative degree	193
§ 88. Miscellaneous particles which sometimes or always have <i>-e</i> in the <i>Troilus</i>	193—201
§ 89. <i>Atwixen, -e, bytwyren, -e, aweye, eke, often, -e, saue; here, there, where</i>	201—206
§ 90. <i>Ever</i> and <i>never</i>	206—208
§ 91. Particles in <i>-es</i>	208—211

VERBS.

	PAGE
§§ 92—98. Present indicative	212—231
§ 92. First person singular	212—215
§ 93. Second person singular	216
§ 94. Third person singular in <i>-eth, -eth, -th</i> ...	217—220
§ 95. Third person singular in <i>-t</i> (<i>abit, halt, stant,</i> <i>etc.</i>)	220—222
§ 96. Plural in <i>-en, -e</i>	222—229
§ 97. Plural in <i>-eth, -th</i>	229—230
§ 98. Plural in <i>-es</i>	230—231
§§ 99—105. Preterite indicative (first and third persons) of weak verbs	231—252
§ 99. First conjugation (Anglo-Saxon)	231—240
§ 100. First conjugation (Old Norse, etc.)	240—242
§ 101. Second conjugation (Anglo-Saxon and other Germanic languages)	242—246
§ 102. Third conjugation (Anglo-Saxon)	246—248
§ 103. Verbs strong in Anglo-Saxon	248—250
§ 104. Romance verbs with syncopated preterites (<i>aspyde, caughte, etc.</i>)	250—251
§ 105. Romance verbs with unsyncopated preterites	251—252
§ 106. Preterite indicative, second person singular, of weak formations	252—253
§ 107. Preterite indicative, second person singular, of strong verbs	253—254
§ 108. Preterite indicative (first and third persons) singu- lar of strong verbs	254
§ 109. Preterite indicative plural of strong and of weak verbs	255—260
§§ 110, 111. Present subjunctive singular of strong and of weak verbs	260—266
§ 110. Ending in <i>-e</i>	260—265
§ 111. Exceptions to § 110	265—266
§ 112. Present subjunctive plural of strong and of weak verbs	266—268
§ 113. Preterite subjunctive singular	268—272
I. Strong verbs	268—270
II. Weak verbs	270—272
§ 114. Preterite subjunctive plural of strong and of weak verbs	272—273
§§ 115—117. Imperative second person singular	273—280
§ 115. Weak verbs (Germanic)	273—276
§ 116. Latin and Romance verbs	276—277
§ 117. Strong verbs	277—280

	PAGE
§ 118. Imperative second person plural of strong and of weak verbs	280—286
§ 119. Infinitive	286—301
§ 120. Present participle	301—303
§ 121. Perfect participle of weak verbs	303—311
§ 122. Perfect participle of strong verbs	311—317
§ 123. Præterito-present verbs	317—331
I. <i>wot</i>	317—319
II. <i>not</i>	319—320
III. <i>oughte</i>	320—321
IV. <i>kan</i>	321—323
V. <i>dar</i>	323—324
VI. <i>thar</i>	324
VII. <i>shal</i>	324—326
VIII. <i>may</i>	326—329
IX. <i>mot</i>	329—331
§ 124. Other irregular verbs	331—345
I. <i>to be</i>	331—334
II. <i>will</i>	335—338
III. <i>nyl</i>	339—340
IV. <i>do</i>	340—341
V. <i>go</i>	341—343
VI. <i>haue</i>	343—345

II. METRICAL CHAPTER.

§ 125. Elision of weak <i>-e</i>	345—347
§ 126. Hiatus (exceptions to § 125)	347—352
§ 127. Elision before strong <i>h</i>	352—353
§ 128. Elision of weak <i>-e</i> in monosyllables (<i>thē, nē</i>)	353—355
§ 129. Elision of close <i>-e</i> (<i>me, we, etc.</i>)	355—359
§ 130. Elision (or slurring) of <i>-o</i> and <i>-a</i>	359—361
§ 131. Slurring of <i>-y</i> (<i>-ye</i>)	362—363
§ 132. Weak <i>e</i> in two successive syllables (syncope or apocope)	364—365
§ 133. Apocope or syncope of weak <i>e</i> after an unaccented syllable which is capable of bearing an accent	365—366
§ 134. Apocope of weak <i>-e</i> after a syllable bearing a secondary accent	366
§ 135. Apocope of weak <i>-e</i> immediately after the syllable bearing the main accent	366—372
§ 136. Syncope or slurring of <i>e</i> in final syllables when the noun-accent falls on the syllable immediately preceding	372—377
(a) <i>-es</i>	372
(b) <i>-est</i>	372—373

	PAGE
(c) <i>-eth</i>	373
(d) <i>-de, -te, -ede, -ed</i>	373—374
(e) <i>-en</i>	374—375
(f) <i>-er, -ere, -re</i>	375—377
(g) <i>-el, -le</i>	377
(h) <i>-em (-me)</i>	377
§ 137. Interior weak <i>-e</i>	377—378
§ 138. Other instances of syncope	378—381
1-5. Vowels (not weak <i>e</i>)	378—380
6. <i>whether, wher; other, or</i>	380—381
7. <i>euere, neuere</i>	381
8. <i>benedicite</i>	381
9. <i>comprehende</i>	381
10. <i>desespeir, despeir, etc.</i>	381
§ 139. Apocope of consonants	381—384
I. <i>-n</i> in verb-forms	381—382
II. <i>-eth</i> in imperative	382
III. <i>-s</i> in proper names	382—384
§ 140. Synæresis	384
§ 141. Diæresis	384
§ 142. Synizesis	384—387
§ 143. Miscellaneous slurs and contractions	387—389
§§ 144-145. The "extra syllable" before the cæsura	389—405
§ 144. I. Cases of <i>-e</i>	389—398
II. Cases of unaccented terminations ending in a consonant	398—400
§ 145. Certain final syllables before the cæsura	401—405
I. Consonant + <i>-le, -me, -ne, -re</i>	402
II. <i>-ene, -ere</i>	403
III. <i>-el, -en, -er</i>	403—404
IV. <i>-we, etc.</i>	404
V. <i>-y, -ye</i>	404—405
§ 146. "Nine-syllable" verses	405—421
ADDITIONS AND CORRECTIONS	422—426

INTRODUCTORY NOTE.

THE following Observations on the Language of Chaucer's *Troilus* are based on four MSS. A (Campsall), B (Harl. 2280), C (Camb. Gg. 4. 27), and D (Harl. 3943), as edited by Dr. Furnivall for the Chaucer Society.¹ When there is no indication to the contrary, the forms quoted rest on a consensus of these four MSS. in the verse referred to. Indications to the contrary are of several kinds: (a) an express note, either at the foot of the page or in parentheses immediately after the verse-number; (b) a general note as to disregard of variants; (c) the abbreviation "cf.", which signifies that in the references that follow variants are mostly or altogether neglected; (d) a list of variant spellings (marked "Var.")² In case some word not immediately under discussion has to be emended in order that the line referred to may afford the form registered, the necessary emendation is indicated in a foot-note or elsewhere.³ In case a line falls within a gap or omission of a stanza or more in B, C, or D, the fact is not noted. The following is a list of gaps in B, C, D.

In B one leaf containing (vv. 7708—91) is missing; 5370—6 not in A.

In C the following passages of a stanza or more in length are wanting 1—70 (*cut out*), 1037—1169 (*cut out*), 2843—98 (*cut out*), 4649—4774 (*cut out*), 5468—95 (*omitted*), 5615—5740 (*omitted*), 6329—98 (*cut out*), 7076—82 (*omitted*; two stanzas run together), 8065—*end* (*cut out*). The following single lines are omitted in C; 86 (no gap in MS.), 1701, 2231 (no gap), 2707 (blank line in MS.), 3799 (blank line), 5752 (blank line), 6550 (no gap), 6557 (blank line), 7244 (no gap), 7285 (blank line after 7286).

After 890 D has a stanza not in ABC.

¹ A, B, and C in *A Parallel-Text Print of Chaucer's Troilus and Criseyde* (1881-82); D in *Chaucer's Troilus and Criseyde (from the Harl. MS. 3943) compared with Boccaccio's Filostrato translated by Wm. Michael Rossetti* (1873—83).

² See, for example, *wrecche* (p. 5, l. 3), note at the end of article *sonne* (p. 7), *tonge* (p. 7, l. ult.), *lady*, (p. 9), *wyle* (p. 11).

³ Thus foot-note 1, p. 33, indicates that in 3074 C has *wyzt was woyd*, but that, after the last word has been changed to *woyded*, the line affords evidence for the form *wyght*. It will be seen that this is in effect but a means of registering corruptions that are easily emended.

In D the following passages of a stanza or more in length are wanting: 484—490, 4131—4270 (two leaves gone), 4586—4613 (omitted), 8170—90 (omitted). The following single lines are omitted in D: 148, 1594 (blank line). Vv. 1—70, 498—567, 4859—end, are in a late hand.

Other MSS. than ABCD have been used for purposes of comparison. Those used most were Cp. (Corpus 61) and John's, a collation of both of which by Mr. Thomas Austin was furnished me by the kindness of Dr. Furnivall, and G (Additional MS. 12044), of which Dr. Furnivall lent me a copy. Harleian 1239 (E), 2392, 4912, of which I have had specimens and partial collations, and Durham II. 13, Digby 281, Selden B, 24, Phillipps 8252, of which I have had specimens, have been compared occasionally. For all these collations and specimens I am indebted to Dr. Furnivall.

Rhyme-words are given in the form in which they occur in A, without variants. Exceptions to this practice are signified when they occur.

In citing words from Anglo-Saxon and Middle English in illustration of words or forms from the *Troilus*, no attempt has been made at anything more than a brief and handy reference, and no implication is intended as to the particular dialect of Anglo-Saxon or Middle English of which Chaucer's word is the descendant or representative. In these references *L.* means the *A-text of Laxamon*, and does not necessarily imply that the *B-text* has the same form.

In marking elision, apocope, and syncope in the Grammatical Chapter, it has been assumed that ten syllables (or eleven, when the rhyme is feminine) are the normal number, and elision, syncope, etc., have been taken for granted when the preservation of a final or an interior *e* would make a trisyllabic foot or an "extra syllable before a pause." This is merely for conciseness. There is no intention of maintaining that Chaucer never used a trisyllabic foot or that different slurs do not differ in the degree in which a sound is suppressed or modified. Special sections (§§ 144—5) in the Metrical Chapter deals with the so-called "extra syllable before the cæsure." This renders the marking of the cæsure in the grammatical part unnecessary; yet the sign || has often been added to a form when occasion seemed to require.

In registering forms, the following signs, etc., are made use of to indicate the presence or absence of the final *e* in writing or in sound.

-e (Roman, without a diacritic sign) indicates a final -e pronounced before a consonant (not *h*) or -e in rhyme.¹ In the latter case an *f* is

¹ This statement applies, of course, to -e in the word immediately under discussion in any instance. If a fragment of context is quoted, I have not always taken the superfluous trouble to mark what happens to all the -e's.

attached to the verse number. In a considerable number of cases a faulty final *e* in rhyme is registered without remark if the rhyme-word makes it clear that the *-e* is not pronounced.

-ë indicates a final *e* pronounced either (1) before a vowel or *h* (in which case the fact that a vowel or *h* follows is always made clear), or (2) before a consonant (in which case -ë is used merely for emphasis or out of caution). In the interior of a word the diæresis indicates that the vowel over which it is placed is pronounced.

-*e* (Italic) indicates a final *e* written but elided before a vowel or *h* (the former unless the contrary is indicated). Hiatus is always carefully and unmistakably marked.

-*ē* indicates a final *e* written but not sounded before a consonant (not *h*). When not final, *ē* indicates syncopated *e* (and so of other vowels).

-(*e*) indicates an erroneous final *e* written but not pronounced. When necessary this is distinguished as -(*e*),—*i. e.* before a word beginning with a vowel or *h*,—and -(*ē*),—before a word beginning with a consonant (not *h*); but this distinction is usually superfluous.

[-*e*] indicates that the metre requires an *-e* (pronounced) at the end of a word which is written without *-e* in the MS.

[-*e*] indicates that a grammatically justifiable *-e* is elided before a vowel or *h*, and is actually not written. This sign is seldom used.

[-*ē*] indicates that a grammatically justifiable *-e* is not pronounced before a consonant (not *h*) and is actually not written. This sign is seldom used.

When the fact that a word ends in a consonant or any vowel but *-e* renders it impossible to indicate by any of the signs just explained whether the word that follows begins with a vowel or a consonant, the necessary information is given either in plain terms or by means of the signs (i.) and (ii.). (i.) indicates that the forms that follow occur before a consonant (not *h*); (ii.) indicates that they occur before a vowel or *h* (the former, unless the contrary is mentioned). When neither of these signs is used, the forms that follow occur before consonants (not *h*) or in rhyme (indicated by *f*) in the places cited. (i.) (ii.) indicates that no distinction as to following vowel or consonant is made in registering the forms. These conventions are used especially in the case of nouns and adjectives that properly or regularly end in a consonant (see §§ 11, 18, 19, 34, 49), and of adverbs without *-e* (see §§ 85, 86, 88, 91): see also § 14. In the case of forms as to which there is no possible interest in knowing whether a vowel or a consonant follows, no such signs are used (see §§ 35—42, 44, 93, 94, etc.).

The relations of the *Troilus* MSS. are complicated. In general the MSS. seem to fall into two groups, the first represented by ABCpG, the second by CEJ. D₁ (the old hand of D)¹ is closely related to C, D₂ (the late hand of D) has much in common with group i., but shows also some relation to C. Phillipps is closely related to D₁. H has close relations with both D₁ Ph. and D₂. There is excellent evidence for contamination in the case of H, and, in general, it must be said that no genealogy for the MSS. of group ii. can be made out that is free from difficulties. I have made many notes on the relations of the MSS., and have even constructed a scheme which seems to satisfy most of the phenomena; but the material in my possession, though considerable, is not sufficient to warrant definite conclusions. I hope to return to the subject later, when opportunity for a complete collation of the MSS. concerned shall offer.

Of the MSS. of group i., Corpus is the best, though it makes some serious omissions. B is often better than A, but the grammatical forms of A usually deserve the preference. Of group ii., J seems to be the best. C is copied from a bad MS., and is full of errors and of corrections. D₁ and Phillipps have an extraordinary number of corruptions, and were evidently written by scribes who had no feeling for Chaucer's verse. Harl. 2392 is a poor MS. and E is apparently but indifferent. Selden, Durham, and Digby are all poor, and Harl. 4912 is far from good.

¹ There are three hands in D : a late hand (1—70, 498—567, 4859—end), and two earlier hands (one writing 3921—4480, the other writing the rest).

COMPARATIVE TABLE OF LINE-NUMBERS IN THE *TROILUS*.

REFERENCES are made by *verses*, and for this purpose the lines have been numbered throughout the poem from 1 to 8232 without regard to the division into books. The following table exhibits, in parallel columns, the numbering here used and the corresponding book, stanza, and verse numbers in Furnivall (Campsall MS.)¹ and Morris (Aldine ed.).

1—1085 = book i. The numbering used in the *Observations* follows Furnivall's numbering (Campsall MS.) exactly. Morris inserts a stanza (not found in A) after st. 127 (*i. e.* after v. 889). Hence, beginning with v. 890, one must add 7 to Furnivall's verse-numbers (beginning with st. 128, 1 to his stanza-numbers) to reduce them to Morris's numbering.

FURNIVALL.					MORRIS.
1086 ...	Book	Stanza	Verse of Stanza	Verse	Agrees with Furnivall throughout this book.
1086 ...	II,	1,	1	II, 1	
1100 ...		3,	1	15	
1150 ...		10,	2	65	
1200 ...		17,	3	115	
1250 ...		24,	4	165	
1300 ...		31,	5	215	
1350 ...		38,	6	265	
1400 ...		45,	7	315	
1450 ...		53,	1	365	
1500 ...		60,	2	415	
1550 ...		67,	3	465	
1600 ...		74,	4	515	
1650 ...		81,	5	565	
1700 ..		88,	6	615	
1750 ...		95,	7	665	
1800 ...		103,	1	715	
1850 ...		110,	2	765	
1900 ...		117,	3	815	
1950 ...		124,	4	865	
2000 ...		131,	5	915	
2050 ...		138,	6	965	
2100 ...		145,	7	1015	
2150 ...		153,	1	1065	
2200 ...		160,	2	1115	
2250 ...		167,	3	1165	
2300 ...		174,	4	1215	
2350 ...		181,	5	1265	
2400 ...		188,	6	1315	
2450 ...		195,	7	1365	
2500 ...		203,	1	1415	
2550 ...		210,	2	1465	
2600 ...		217,	3	1515	
2650 ...		224,	4	1565	
2700 ...		231,	5	1615	
2750 ...		238,	6	1665	
2800 ...		245,	7	1715	
2842 ...		251,	7	1757	

¹ Bk. iv, st. 102 [= iv. 98, vv. 680—686 in Morris], though not in AB, is included by Furnivall in his numbering, and accordingly in the numbering adopted for these *Observations* (vv. 5370—76).

Comparative Table of Line-Numbers.

FURNIVALL.					MORRIS.				
Book	Stanza	Verse of Stanza	Verse		Book	Stanza	Verse of Stanza	Verse	
2843	...	III, 1,	1	III, 1	Proem	to III,	1,	1	Proem 1
2891	...	7,	7	49		7,	7	49	
2892	...	8,	1	50		1,	1	III, 1	
2900	...	9,	2	58		2,	2	9	
2050	...	16,	3	108		9,	3	59	
3000	...	23,	4	158		16,	4	109	
3050	...	30,	5	208		23,	5	159	
3100	...	37,	6	258		30,	6	209	
3150	...	44,	7	308		37,	7	259	
3200	...	52,	1	358		45,	1	309	
3250	...	59,	2	408		52,	2	359	
3300	...	66,	3	458		59,	3	409	
3350	...	73,	4	508		66,	4	459	
3400	...	80,	5	558		73,	5	509	
3450	...	87,	6	608		80,	6	559	
3500	...	94,	7	658		87,	7	609	
3550	...	102,	1	708		95,	1	659	
3600	...	109,	2	758		102,	2	709	
3650	...	116,	3	808		109,	3	759	
3700	...	123,	4	858		116,	4	809	
3750	...	130,	5	908		123,	5	859	
3800	...	137,	6	958		130,	6	909	
3850	...	144,	7	1008		137,	7	959	
3900	...	152,	1	1058		145,	1	1009	
3950	...	159,	2	1108		152,	2	1059	
4000	...	166,	3	1158		159,	3	1109	
4050	...	173,	4	1208		166,	4	1159	
4100	...	180,	5	1258		173,	5	1209	
4150	...	187,	6	1308		180,	6	1259	
4200	...	194,	7	1358		187,	7	1309	
4250	...	202,	1	1408		195,	1	1359	
4300	...	209,	2	1458		202,	2	1409	
4350	...	216,	3	1508		209,	3	¹ 1459	
4400	...	223,	4	1558		216,	4	1509	
4450	...	230,	5	1608		223,	5	1559	
4500	...	237,	6	1658		230,	6	1609	
4550	...	244,	7	1708		237,	7	1659	
4600	...	252,	1	1758		245,	1	1709	
4650	...	259,	2	1808		252,	2	1759	
4662	...	260,	7	1820		253,	7	1771	
4663	...	IV, 1,	1	IV, 1		254,	1	1772	
4690	...	4,	7	28		257,	7	1799	
4691	...	5,	1	29		IV, 1,	1	IV, 1	
4700	...	6,	3	38		2,	3	10	
4750	...	13,	4	88		9,	4	60	
4800	...	20,	5	138		16,	5	100	
4850	...	27,	6	188		23,	6	160	
4900	...	34,	7	238		30,	7	210	
4950	...	42,	1	288		38,	1	260	
5000	...	49,	2	338		45,	2	310	
5050	...	56,	3	388		52,	3	360	
5100	...	63,	4	438		59,	4	410	
5150	...	70,	5	488		66,	5	460	
5200	...	77,	6	538		73,	6	510	

¹ Marked 1460 in Morris, but the error is not continued. Morris's 1470 is right again.

FURNIVALL.				MORRIS.			
Book	Stanza	Verse of Stanza	Verse	Book	Stanza	Verse of Stanza	Verse
5250	...	IV, 84,	7	IV, 588	IV, 80,	7	IV, 560
5300	...	92,	1	638	88,	1	610
5350	...	99,	2	688	95,	2	660
5400	...	106,	3	738	102,	3	710
5450	...	113,	4	788	109,	4	760
5500	...	120,	5	838	116,	5	810
5550	...	127,	6	888	123,	6	860
5600	...	134,	7	938	130,	7	910
5650	...	142,	1	988	138,	1	960
5700	...	149,	2	1038	145,	2	1010
5750	...	156,	3	1088	152,	3	1060
5800	...	163,	4	1138	159,	4	1110
5850	...	170,	5	1188	166,	5	1160
5900	...	177,	6	1238	173,	6	1210
5950	...	184,	7	1288	180,	7	1260
6000	...	192,	1	1338	188,	1	1310
6050	...	199,	2	1388	195,	2	1360
6100	...	206,	3	1438	202,	3	1410
6150	...	213,	4	1488	209,	4	1460
6200	...	220,	5	1538	216,	5	1510
6250	...	227,	6	1588	223,	6	1560
6300	...	234,	7	1638	230,	7	1610
6350	...	242,	1	1688	238,	1	1660
6363	...	243,	7	1701	239,	7	1673
6364	...	V, 1,	1	V, 1	V, 1,	1	V, 1
6400	...	6,	2	37	6,	2	37
6450	...	13,	3	87	13,	3	87
6500	...	20,	4	137	20,	4	137
6550	...	27,	5	187	27,	5	187
6600	...	34,	6	237	34,	6	237
6650	...	41,	7	287	41,	7	287
6700	...	49,	1	337	49,	1	337
6750	...	56,	2	387	56,	2	387
6800	...	63,	3	437	63,	3	437
6850	...	70,	4	487	70,	4	487
6900	...	77,	5	537	77,	5	537
6950	...	84,	6	587	84,	6	587
7000	...	91,	7	637	91,	7	637
7050	...	99,	1	687	99,	1	687
7100	...	106,	2	737	106,	2	737
7150	...	113,	3	787	113,	3	787
7200	...	120,	4	837	120,	4	837
7250	...	127,	5	887	127,	5	887
7300	...	134,	6	937	134,	6	937
7350	...	141,	7	987	141,	7	987
7400	...	149,	1	1037	149,	1	1037
7450	...	156,	2	1087	156,	2	1087
7500	...	163,	3	1137	163,	3	1137
7550	...	170,	4	1187	170,	4	1187
7600	...	177,	5	1237	177,	5	1237
7650	...	184,	6	1287	184,	6	1287
7700	...	191,	7	1337	191,	7	1337
7750	...	199,	1	1387	199,	1	1387
7800	...	206,	2	1437	206,	2	¹ 1438
7850	...	213,	3	1487	213,	3	1488
7861	...	214,	7	1498	214,	7	1499

¹ Morris counts the signature *Le vostre T.* as v. 1422; hence the verse-numbers increase by one as indicated.

		} Latin Thebaid argument following v. 7861 is not counted.				} Hero Morris inserts the Latin Thebaid argument as st. 215, vv. 1500—1511.	
				not counted.			
7862	...	V,	215,	1	V,	1499	
7900	...		220,	4		1537	V, 216, 1
7950	...		227,	5		1587	221, 4
8000	...		234,	6		1637	228, 5
8050	...		241,	7		1687	235, 6
8100	...		249,	1		1737	242, 7
8150	...		256,	2		1787	250, 1
8200	...		263,	3		1837	257, 2
8232	...		267,	7		1869	264, 3
							268, 7
							V, 1512

¹ Morris counts the signature *La vostre C.* after v. 7994 (his v. 1644) as v. 1645; hence his verse-numbers after 1644 increase by one.

[Professor Skeat's edition of the *Troilus* did not appear until this table had been sent to the printers. His numbering corresponds with Dr. Morris's for Book I., and with Dr. Furnivall's for the other books.]

ABBREVIATIONS AND SIGNS.

The Manuscripts.

- A* : Campsall MS.
B : Harleian MS. 2280.
C : Cambridge University Library MS. Gg. 4. 27.
Cp. : Corpus MS., Cambridge, 61.
D : Harleian MS. 3943.
Digby : Digby MS. 281, Bodleian Library.
Durh. : Durham MS. II. 13.
E : Harleian MS. 1239.
G : Additional MS. 12,044, British Museum.
III. (Harl.) 2392 : Harleian MS. 2392.
III. (Harl.) 4912 : Harleian MS. 4912.
John's : St. John's MS., Cambridge.
Phillipps : Phillipps MS. 8252.
Selden : Selden MS. B. 24, Bodleian Library.

Miscellaneous.

- c* (after the abbreviation for a MS. : as, C^c, D^c) : by the corrector.
def. adj. : adjective in the definite construction.
-c, -e, -(e), etc. : see explanation, pp. xvi, xvii, above.
f (as in 1643 f) : in rhyme.
L. : Layamon (A text). *L^b.* : Layamon (B-text).
n. : neuter in the etymological notes ; elsewhere usually nominative.
O. : Ormulum.
P. Pl. : Piers Plowman.
rh. : rhymes with (but a colon is usually employed).
Var. : variant spellings.
9-syl. : a nine-syllable verse (*i. e.* a verse lacking the unaccented part of the first foot).
(i.), (ii.), (iii.) : see explanation, p. xvii, above.
' indicates the ictus.
|| indicates cæsura.
: indicates rhymes with.
† indicates a word or a verse certainly wrong, either in sense or metre.
‡ indicates a word or a verse that may be scanned and makes sense but that is shown by comparison of MSS. to be wrong.
A dot under a vowel indicates that it is suppressed in pronunciation by syncope or apocope.
[] indicates that something which is omitted in the MS. should be supplied.
() indicates that something which is written in the MS. should be omitted.
A slur or ellipsis different from the ordinary ellipsis of final weak *e* is often indicated by italicizing the final vowel of the first word and the initial vowel of the second. Thus,—*lady ento* (p. 9), *pitze on* (p. 89), *storye it* (p. 87).

OBSERVATIONS ON THE LANGUAGE OF

Chaucer's *Troilus*.

A = Campsall MS.
D = Harl. 3943.

B = Harl. 2280.
E = Harl. 1239.
Cp. = Corpus 61.

C = Camb. Gg. 4.27.
G = Addit. MS. 12044.

§ 1. Masculine, feminine, and neuter nouns of the *n*-declension in Anglo-Saxon end in the *Troilus* in *-e*.

§ 2. I. Masculine nouns of the *n*-declension (Child, § 3).

ape (A.S. *apa*), 2127 f (: *iape n.*).

asse (A.S. *assa*, O. *asse*), 731 (*-e D*).

bane (A.S. *bona*, *bana*, L. *bone*, L^b. *bane*), 1405 (*-ë † it C*), 4995, 5436, 5569, 6965 f (*ban C*) (: the blood *Thebàne*, *-bàn C*).

bere, beere (A.S. *bera*), 6115 f (: *stere inf.* : *ledère*); *-e*, 4622 (*-ë † or D*).

byleeue (A.S. *ge-léafa*, L. *i-læfe*, O. *læfe*), 6956 f (*beleue BCD*) (: *greue inf.* : *leeue adj. pl.*).

bowe (A.S. *boga*, L. *boze*, *bowe*), 208 (*-[e] B*, *bow † D*), 1946 f (*bow D*) (: *knowe ind. 3 pl.*), 2620.

crede (A.S. *créda*), 6452 f (: *Diomede* : *hede n. heed*).

drope (A.S. *dropa*, L. *drope*), 934 f (: *hope ind. 1 sg.*); *-e*, 23.

drynke (A.S. *drinca*; but also *drinc*, *m.*, *i*-stem; L. ^{a b} *drench*, ^a *drinc*, ^b *drinke*, O. *drinne*, *drinnch*, *drinnke*), 1736 f (: *synke inf.*); *-[e]*, 5437 (*-e D*); *drynk* and, 4057 (*-e BD*). [Cf. *drynk[e]lees*, § 49, n. 5.]

ferre, feere (A.S. *ge-féra*, L. *i-vere*, O. *ferre*), 13 f, 4133 f † B, 4338 f, 5453 f (*fer D*).

Rhyme words.—*cheere* (13), *dere adj.* (4133 B, 4338), *sperre sphæra* (4338), *y-ferre* (5453).

galle (A.S. *gealla*, *galla*, O. *galle*), 5799 f (*gaH D*) (: *falle inf.*); *-e ys*, 7095 f (*galles = gall is D*) (: *halles* : *wallys*).

grame (A.S. *grama*, L. *grame*), 372 f (*gaine † C*, *game † D*) (: *shame*), 3870 f (: *name*), 5191 f (*game † D*) (: *blame inf.* : *shame*).

hawe (A.S. haga), 3696 f (hawe C) (: i-drawe *p.p.*).

hele (A.S. hēla), 5390 f (heele B) (: fele *inf.*).

hope (A.S. hōpa, L.O. hope), -e, 391 (-e he), 1895, 2392, 2408, 2414, 2418 (hoop D), 2425, 3257, 3268, 5240, 6092 (hepe † B, hoope D), 6993, 7048, 7276, 7558, 7561, 7570, 7761 (loue † C), 7763, 7801 (hoope D).—hope ‖ the, 1092; -e halt, 6711. [hope †, 2357 D.]

hosbōnde (A.S. húsbōnda, L. husbonde, L^b. hosebonde, P. Pl. hosebonde), 1839 (housebonde B, husbonde C, husbond[e] † D).—housbonde was, 7893 (hosbande C, husbonde D). [Cf. bonde, *adj.*, § 67, n. 2.]

knaue (A.S. cnafa, cnapa, L. cnaue, O. cnape-child), 3233 AC (sclaue B, own[e] D, felawē G).

knotte (A.S. enotta), -e, 4574 B (knot ACD).

lappe (A.S. læppa, L^b. lappe (= L^a. bærm), P. Pl. lappe), 1533 (lape D), 2901 f (lape C) (: quappe *inf.*), 3584 f (: trappe *n.*).

mone, moone (A.S. móna, L.O. mone), 524 f, 1017 f, 1159 f, 2005, 2397 f, 3391 f, 3466, 6638 f, 6740 f, 7011, 7012; -e hath, 4598; -e o, 7552.

Rhyme words.—to done (1017, 1159, 3391, 6638, 6740), soone (524, 1159, 2397, 6638), bone *boon* (1017).

name (A.S. noma, nama, L. nome, name, O. name), 251 f, 542 (Crisseide † D), 870, 876, 880 CD, 895 f, 1069 † D, 1847 f, 3108 f, 3109 CD, 3160 f, 3871 f, 5226 f, 6129 f, 6228 f, 6243; -e, 99, 878, 880 AB, 3109 AB, 5819, 7418 (I mene † C), 7458, 8049.

Rhyme words.—shame (251, 895, 1847, 6129, 6228), blame *n.* (3108), to blame (3160), grame (3871), game (5226, 6129, 6228), defame *inf.* (5226).

nekke (A.S. hnecca, L. necke), 2071 (nek † D), 5767; -e, 4417 (nek D).

oxe (A.S. oxa, O. oxe), -e, 7832 (ox B).

shawe (A.S. scaga), 3562 f (schawe C, sawe † D) (: slawe *p.p.*).

skathe (O.N. skaði, cf. A.S. sceaða, scaða, L. scaðe, O. skape-læss), 4869 f (schathe C) (: rathe *adv.* : bathe *inf.*), 7301 f (: rathe *adv.*).

stede, steede (A.S. stéda, stæda, L. stede), 1066, 1709 f (: blede *inf.*), 6669 f (sted D) (: to glede *n.* : hede *n.* heed), 7401 f (: nede *n.* : Diomedē). [stedē † ire, 4545 C.]

stere (A.S. stéora *gubernator*, stéor *gubernaculum*), 4133 f (fere † B) (: dere); -e, 7004 (-ce- B, ster(id) C, ster D). [Cf. ster[e]les, § 49, n. 5.]

Note.—In 4133 *stere* = pilot; in 7004 *in stere* = astern.

sterre (A.S. steorra, L. steorre, sterre, O. sterrne), 175 f (: derre *comp.*); -e, 7001.—lodē-sterre, 6595 f (lodis *s.* C, lode-sterr D) (: werre *n.*), 7755 f (loode sterr D) (: werre *n.*).

tene, teene (A.S. *téona*, L. *teone*, O. *tene*), 814 f, 1146 f, 4068 f, 5458 f (teen B), 6267 f, 6603 f, 8077 f.

Rhyme words.—*grene* (814, 1146, 6603), *queene* (814), *kene* *adj. pl.* (1146), to *sene* (4068), I *wene* *ind.* (5458), *sustene* *inf.* (5458, 6603), *i-sene*, *sene* *adj.* (6267, 8077), *shene* *def. adj.* (6267).

tyme (A.S. *tíma*, L.O. *time*), 155 f (: *pryme*), 351 f (: *lyme* *inf.*), 2074 f (: *by me* : *pryme*), 2178 f (: *pryme*), 2640 f (: *pryme*), 6833 f (: *pryme*).—*tymë* (*before consonants*), 703, 1057, 1075, 1877 † CD, 2278 AC, 2682, 2806 BC (*tyme* *y-se* A, *-ë se* BC; D †), 3050 † A (?), 3350, 3360, 3450, 3738 C (*-e* *yllost* ABD, *-ë* *lost* C; cf. 5945), 4321, 4423, 4437, 4510, 4556, 4917, 4996 (*-e* † D), 5013, 5786, 5922, 6178, 6274, 6470 CD, 6584, 6713, 6757, 6758, 6767, 7109 BCD (*tyme* *ypassed* A, *-ë* *passid* C (*presente* † B) D).—*tyme*, 1228 (*t. that* AB, *tyde* C, *tymë* † *that* D), 2296 (*t. my* AB, *tyde* *by* C, *tyde* *my* D), 2834 D (*t. †* *be*), 3146 † D, 3337 † C, 5986 AB (*t. ther*), 7111 † C.—*tymë* (*with hiatus*), 1305 † AB, 2386 † D, 3472 † D, 7110 † CD; *tymë* (*before h*), 1877 † A, 3671 † A, 4501 † D.—*tyme* (*before vowels*), 474 ABC, 564, 1305 CD, 1807, 2068, 2278 BD, 2386 ABC, 2537, 2582, 2606, 2806 A, 2828, 2834, 3050 BCD, 3472 ABC, 3697, 3738 ABD, 3914, 4244, 4621 ABC, 4720, 4761, 4996 † D, 5576, 5593, 5945, 6274, 6349 (B †), 6712, 6987, 7109 A, 7110 AB, 7111 ABD, 7199, 7688, 8062, 8167.—*tyme* *he*, 2841, 3671 BCD, 4501, 6625, 7043, 7581; *t. hem*, 6713; *by tyme* *his*, 5767 (*be* *t.* CD).

*somtyme*¹, 747 AB (*-e* C † D †),² 1367 (B †), 2586, 3293 (*-e* [*and*] A), 4037, 5315, 6273; *-e* *he*, 314; *-e* *han*, 5967 (*-e* (*to*) *haue* CD); *-e*, 508 † D, 2972 AB (*-e* CD).³

tyme *in the phrase* ofte *tyme*, 1877 CD, 6833 f † C, 7172 (*tymes* D); *-e*, 913, 7946 (*-es* D), 8121 A (*oft[e]* *t.* B, *ofte* *tymes* D); *-e* (*before* *he*, *his*, *hym*, *here* = *her*, *hath*), 1850, 1877 B, 3971, 5823 (*-es* D), 7939 (*-es* D); *tyme* *that*, 5986 AB (*reading doubtful*); *tymë* † *hath*, 1877 A.

a thousand *tyme*, 531 f (: *ryme* *inf.*); a thowsand *tyme* *he*, 457 BD (*-es* A, *sythis* *seyde* C); a *th. t.* *here* (*eam*), 4094 (*sithis* C, *tymes* D); *sixty* *tyme* *a* *day*, 441; a *hunderid* *tyme*, 4437 C (*-es* D, *sithe* A, *sithe* *he* B); *tweynty* *tyme* *he*, 6554 (*-es* D).—an hundred *tymës* *gan*, 4202 (*-ys* C); a thousand *tymës* *selle*, 4443 (*-ë* CD); a

¹ In this compound *som* is variously spelt, but always monosyllabic.

² Apparently we should read: Ek som tyme it is (i.e. it's) a craft to semë fle.

³ Or, Ye woldë som tymë, etc.

th. tymēs more, 5488 A (-ë B, -e; D); a th. tymēs mercy, 6162 (-ë B, -ys C); a th. tymēs (*before vowels*), 2174 (-ys C), 3231 (-ys C), so twenty th. t., 3315 (-ys C, -es D).—Compare, tymēs twyēs twelue, 6460 (-ë D, B † (?), C † (?)). [Cf. *sithe*, § 14.]

welcome¹ (A.S. wilcuma, L. wilcume, wulcume, L.^b wil, wel-, wol-come, P. Pl. welcome, welcomen), he was wel-come, 6436 f (: i-come *p.p.*); wel come (*as interj.*), 6555 f (: nome *p.p.*); wher shal I seyę to yow wel come or no, 5493 A (wel com B, wheider shal I sey welcomē † or no D).—wel-comeę my knyght, 4151 (w. myn pes † C). [Var. wolcome, C 6436 and 6555.]

wele (A.S. wela), 5145 (welë knowe A, wela y-knowe BC, wel I knowe D †); -e, 4, 1951 (D †), 3662, 3678, 4314 (wel B; D †), 5144 (wel BD), 7693 (wel D). [welę for welę, 335 D (wel for wel AB), = well *adv.*]

welle (A.S. wella; but also wiell, *m.*, i-stem; L. welle, L.^b wel, O. welle), 873 f, 1263 f, 1593 f, 5807 f, 6215 f, 7693 f (weH D), 7860 f (weH D), 7928 f (weH D); -e, 1926 (wel B), 4315.

Rhyme words.—telle *inf.* (873, 1263, 1593, 7928), dwelle *inf.* (1593, 5807, 7693, 7928), vnswelle *inf.* (5807), helle (873, 6215).

wille, wylle (A.S. willa, L. wille, iwille, O. wille), 125 f, 1316 f, 2687 (wil[le] D),² 2773 (wil[le] D), 4769 (willes B, wil[le] D), 6950 f (wiH D), 8168 f (wiH D). [His willë hath, 7905 C, is an error.]

Rhyme words.—stille *adj.* (125), stille *inf.* (1316), spille *inf.* (6950) Achille (8186).

The form *wil* (A.S. ge-will, *n.*, quasi jo-stem, common instead of *gewile*, *n.* (prob.), i-stem, see Siev. § 262. 2 and n. 3, Cosijn, *Aws. Gr. II*, 12; L. i-wil, O. will, P. Pl. wil) is common. Sometimes it is impossible to decide between *wil* and *wille*.—wil, wyl, (i.) 228 (wille B, will CD), 861 (wille B, wil [sche] C), 1355 (wyH A), 1564 (wille D), 3465 (wiH D), 4362 (wille BD), 7720 (wille C, wil [it] A), 8000. (ii.) 1939, 2294, 5175 (wiH D).

wone (A.S. ge-wuna, L. wune, i-wune, L.^b wone), 1403 f (: sone *filii*); wonę to, 7010 (he was † wont(e) D).

wrecche (A.S. wrecc(e)a, L. wræche, L.^b wrecche, wrech, O. wrecche), 798 f, 889 f, 1425 f, 1518 f, 1975, 4215 f, 5238, 5291 f, 6106 f, 6251 f, 6684 f; -e, 708, 777 (wrecch D, -ë † be A), 805, 4933 (wrich B), 5406 (wrech D), 5500 (-ë se CD), 7068 (wrech D).

¹ Confused, as is well known, with *wel*, *adv.*, and *come*, *p.p.*: cf. Icel. *velkominn*.

² ABG seem to have *yourē willē be*; CD read “*ȝif (If) it ȝoure (your) willē (wil[le]) be (were).*”

Rhyme words.—*recche inf.* (798, 1425, 1518, 6251), *recche subj.* 3 *sg.* (5291), *strecche inf.* (889, 1425), *kecche inf.* (4215), *drecche* 2 *pl.* (6106), *fecche inv.* (6684). [Var. BCD *wreche*; B *wriche*; D *wretche*.]

Note.—For *awc*, *botc*, *felauc*, see § 15. For *makc-les*, see § 49, n. 5.

§ 3. II. Feminine nouns of the *n*- declension (Child, § 4).

arwe (A.S. *arwe*, *arewe* (mid *arewan Chron.* 1083; *arwan catapultus* Aldh. Gl.; see Sweet, p. 281), *earlier ærig*, *earh*, L. *arwe*, L.^b *arewe*), an *arwe*, 1726 (a *narwe* B), 6210.

asce (A.S. *asce*), 1624 (*asshen* B, *asschin* C, *asshyn* D).

belle (A.S. *belle*, L.O. *belle*), 2700 f (: *telle inf.* : *dwelle inf.*), 3031, 3040 f (beH D) (: *telle inf.* : *dwelle inf.*), 7425 (bel[*e*] B).

blase (A.S. *blæse*, L. P. Pl. *blase*), -*e*, 4846.

cheke, *checke* (A.S. *céace*, *céce*), 4792 f (: *eke* : *byseche inf.* A, *by-seke* BD, *beseke* C).

dokke (A.S. *docce*), -*e*, 5123.

erthe (A.S. *eorðe*, L.O. *eorðe*, L.^b O. *erþe*), -*e*, 2850 (*erhte* B), 2863 (*erthe* and [whom] B), 4586 (*erith* B, *erthe* † *hath* E), 4603 (*erth* B).—*erthe* that, 8178 A (*erth* B). [Cf. *ertheles*, § 49, n. 5.]

harpe (A.S. *hearpe*, L. *harpe*), 731 f (: *sharpe adv.*), 2116 f (*hare* † B) (: *harpe inf.* : *sharpe adv.*).

herte (A.S. *heorte*, L. *heorte*, O. *heorrte*, *herрте*), 307 f, 792 f, 1987 f, 2016 f, 2064 f, 2181 f, 2372 f, 2717 f, 2940 f, 2989 f, 3578 f, 3746 f, 3789 f, 3843 f (C †), 3913 f, 3940 f, 4025 f, 4213 f, 4340 f (-t C), 4757 f, 4902 f, 4908 f, 5089 f, 5802 f, 5846 f, 6071 f (C †), 6111 f, 6161 f, 6282 f, 6426 f (-t C), 6496 f (-t C), 6564 f (-t C), 6618 f, 7085 f, 7413 f, 7588 f (-t C), 7687 f, 7707 f, 7783 f (-t C), 7857 f, 7897 f. (In many of the above cases D has *hert*.)—*hertē* (*before consonants*), 367 (-[*e*] BD), 1693 (-[*e*] BD), 2389 (-[*e*] D), 3881 (-[*e*] BD), 4052, 5338, 6149 (-[*e*] B), 7371, 7563 (-[*e*] B), 7570 (-[*e*] B), 7682; cf. also 228, 502, 599, 606, 749, 1006, 1063, 1664, 1783, 1845, 1894, 1985, 2007, 2016, 2035, 2067, 2193, 2326, 2406, 2411, 2442, 2677, 2885, 2899, 2952, 2969, 3198, 3453 B, 3616, 3642, 3645, 3685, 3730, 3750, 3752, 3830, 3845, 3885, 3911, 3928, 4023, 4120, 4123, 4146, 4191, 4263, 4330, 4391, 4407, 4433, 4486, 4536, 4674, 4981, 5242, 5269, 5361 A, 5871, 5936, 5973, 6079, 6190, 6214, 6252, 6591, 6808, 6816, 7275, 7490, 7552, 7676, 7684, 7694, 7746, 7931, 7934, 8022, 8060. (In some of these cases *hert[e]* is found in B or D or both. Even A occasionally has *hert[e]*, as in 229, 453, 1652.) [Cf. *herteles*, § 49, n. 5.]

hertē is occasionally found, but in nearly every case a comparison

of MSS disposes of this apocopated form (so in 1759 C, 1941 C, 3189 C, 8022 C). The same is true of *hert* before a consonant (see, e.g., D in vv. 599, 2193, 2442, 3750, 4391, 5269; cf. also 278 A). The following lines seem to admit of two scansiones:

As *muchë ioie as hertë* (hert D) may (myght D) *comprehende* (hertë . . . *complende* A), 4529 (-ë may *comprende* Cp.).

A *kynges hertë* (hert D) *semeth bi hires a wreche*, 889 (or, *hertë semeth*). (Cf. 4674, especially CD.)

There are no cases of hiatus except such as a comparison of MSS easily corrects. Thus,—*hertë †* is, 1957 A; *hertë † alle*, 1956 B.

herte, 2456 (-t BD), 2911 (-t D), 2956 (-t D), 3849 (-t BD); cf. 250, 461, 1561, 2186, 2310, 2951, 2987, 3018, 3235, 3475, 3729, 3835, 3838, 4330 B, 4367 A, 5873, 6672, 6711, 6749, 8209. The spelling *hert* before a vowel is found in all MSS to some extent: see the above list and cf. the following lines, in which A has *hert*,—535, 928, 1954, 2014 (C *herte*).—*herte he*, 2013 AB¹; 3645 † C, 5572 AB, 7141, 7937; -e *hym*, 3857 A; -e *hath*, 6501 (-t D), 7880.—*hertë happe*, 7159 (D †).

Rhyme words.—*conuerte inf.* (307, 1987, 6071), *peynes, sorwes smerte* (792, 3789, 4908, 5089, 5802, 6161, 6564, 7085, 7687, 7783), *smerte adv.* (4902), *smerte pres. and pret. subj.* 3 *sg.* (2181, 2989, 3746, 3843, 5846, 6426, 6496, 7588), *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (2016) *inf.* (2372, 4025, 6111, 6282), *asterte pres. subj.* 3 *sg.* (7707), *sterete, asterete pret. ind.* 1, 3 *sg.* (2181, 2940, 3913, 4757, 6071, 6564, 7857, 7897), *sterete inf.* (2717, 3789, 4340, 4902, 6618), *to-sterete inf.* (2064), *sherte n.* (3578, 3940, 4213, 4757).

howue (A.S. *húfe*, P. Pl. *howue*, *houue*, *houe*), -e, 3617 (*houe* C, *howe* D), 6832.²

larke (A.S. *lárwerce*, P. Pl. *larke*), 4033 (- [e] B).

[*lilie* (A.S. *lilie*), the *lilie †* (*lissyl.*) *wexith*, 942 D (*rose* ABC).]

lyne (A.S. *líne*, P. Pl. *lyne*), 2262 f (: *dyne inf.*), 2546 f (: *dyne inf.* : *fyne inf.*), 3070 (*blyve †* D), 7140 f (: *fyne inf.*); -e, 1061, 3346 (*lynę* C).

Note.—In 2262 and 3346 a *line of writing* is meant; in the other instances, a *cord* or the like. In 7844, where *lineage* is intended, A and B have *ligne*, D has *lyne* (*lyne †* C).

masse (A.S. *mæssc*, O. *messe*, P. Pl. *masse*), 2930 f (: *neure the lasse* : *passc inf.*) [*mes* : *les* : *passc* D].

more, moore (A.S. *more*; also *moru*, *f.*, see Sievers, § 278, n. 1; P. Pl. *more*), 6388 f (*moor* D) (: *forlore p.p.* : *eueręmore*).

myte (A.S. *míte*, P. Pl. *myte*), 3674 f (: *lyte*), 3742 f (: *lyte* : *white*

¹ *herte rente* C is doubtless for *herte he r.* In D, read *hert[e] r.* (?). But cf. 5572, where *hertë* seems to have given rise to *herte he* in AB.

² A alone preserves the right reading. B has *howen*, C *enmy entcudit*, D *ougne*, G *houde*. See Skcat's n. on P. Pl. xxiii, 172, ed. 1886, II, 280.

- adj. pl.*), 5346 f (: *visite inf.* : *delite inf.*). [For *myte*, 4445 D, read *mot* (A.S. *mot*) with A (moote B, mote C).]
- netle (A.S. *neteale*, *netle*), 941 (*nettyl* C, *nettle* D); netle in dokke out, 5123 (*nettle* B, *nettijl* C, *netijh* D).
- nyghtyngale (A.S. *nihtegale*, *nehtegale*), 4075 f (: *tale n.*); -e, 2003.
- owle (A.S. *üle*), -e, 6682.
- pride (A.S. *prýte*; also *prýt*, *f.*; L. *prude*, *prute*), -e, 230, 4643, 4647 (?).
- rose (A.S. *róse*), 942 (*lilie † dissyl.* D), 2341 f (: *suppose ind. 1 sg.*); -e †, 7207 C.
- shete (A.S. *scéte* (M.), *seýte* (L.W.S.), P. Pl. *schete*), -e, 3898 (-e hit = it D), 4412 (9-syl). [Var. B *shette*; CD *schete*.]
- side, syde (A.S. *síde*, L.O. *side*, P. Pl. *syde-borde*, *sydbenche*, *sydtable*), 185 f, 321 f, 3818 (-e BCD), 4308 f (*biside* D), 4577 f, 4826 f, 5354 f, 5486 f, 5740 f, 6012 f, 6053 f, 6128 f (*s(e)yde* B), 6947 f, 7062 f, 7115 f; -e, 4896, 7050; -e hym, 3078, 4431; -e here (*eam*), 3524 (-e [her] D).

Rhyme words.—I. Infinitives: *gyde* (185), *hide* (321, 5486), *chyde* (4308), *betide* (4577, 6128), *hyde* (4826), *abyde* (5486, 6012). II. Subjunctives: *gyde* 3 *sg.* (5354), *bytyde* 3 *sg.* (6053, 7115), *aspiede* (*aspie † A*, *aspied* B, *espied* D) *pret.* 3 *pl.* (*sg. † C*) (6053). III. Nouns: *tyde* (5740, 7062), *Cupide* (6947). [The rhyme with *seyde* (*dixit*) in 321 C counts for nothing; *seyde* is wrong.] (For *aside*, *beside*, see § 88.)

- sonne (A.S. *sunne*, L. *sunne*, L^b. *sonne*, O. *sunne*), 1259 f, 1849, 1866 f, 1947, 1990 f, 2054, 2322 f, 2671 f, 3220 f, 3610, 4306 (*sonne* Týtán A, *but omit to and read sonnë* Týtán), 4446, 5029 ABD, 7024, 7648; -e, 1852, 3950, 5901, 6094, 6105 ABD, 6911 (*forme † C*), 7249; -e hym, 4549 (-e † *hastith* D). [*sunne*, 5029 † C, 6105 † C.]

Rhyme words.—*konne ind. 1, 3 pl.* (1259, 1866, 2671), *inf.* (3220), *bygonne p.p.* (1866, 2322, 2671), *y-ronne* (1990), *y-wonne* (2322), *donne pred. adj. pl.* (1990).

Note.—*Sonne* is the spelling of AB, *sunne* the usual form in C. D has both forms and also *sun* (2671 f, 3220 f).

- swalwe (A.S. *swealwe*, *swalwe*), 1149 (-ow † D).
- throte (A.S. *þrote*; also *þrotu*, *f.*, see Sievers, § 278, n. 1), 1410 (-e † A); -e here (*poss. sg.*), 4092.
- tonge, tunge (A.S. *tunge*, L.O. *tunge*), 1315 (-[e] D), 1889 f (-g D, *tunge(n)* A), 3136 f, 5183, 5463 f, 5543, 6358, 6808, 7167 (C †), 7424 f, 7684 (-e (?) D †), 8157 f, 8159 f; *tonge*, 1099 AB, 2766 (*tung* D), 3144 (*tong* B, *tung* D), 7926 BD (-ü may C, -e † A). [tung[ë] it †, 1099 D.]

Rhyme words.—*ronge p.p.* (1889 [*runge(n)* A], 7424), *songe*, *y-songe p.p.* (5463, 7424, 8157, 8159), *to vs yonge* (3136), *tonge* (8157). [AB have usually the spelling *tonge*; C has usually *tunge*, D usually *tunge* or *tung*.]

trappe (A.S. *træppe*, O. *trapp*), 3583 f (: *lappe n.*); *trappë dore*, 3601 (trap[pe] D).

wodü-bynde (A.S. *wudebinde*), 4073 f AC (*wonbynde † B*, *woodbynde D*) (: *wynde inf.*).

wyke, wowke, see § 8, p. 15.

wyse (A.S. *wise*, L.O. *wise*, L.^b *wis*, *guyse*), 81 f, 159 CD (*pl. AB*), 162 f, 275 f, 336 f, 363 f, 697 f, 952 f, 957 f, 985 f, 1114 f, 1359 f, 1471 f, 1764 f, 1806 f, 2001 f (*gyse C*), 2149 f, 2548 f, 2631 f, 2752 f, 2785 f, 2897 f, 2912 f, 2974 f, 3079 f, 3298 f, 3618 † f C, 3693 f, 3785 f, 3811 f, 3889, 4129 f, 4310 f, 4390 f, 4436 f, 4516 f, 4639 f, 4660 f (*wys A*), 4740 f, 4899 f, 5056 f, 5174 f, 5472 f, 5495 f, 5551 f, 6000 f, 6189 f, 7460 f, 7683 f, 7831 f; *wyse*, 61, 285, 440 ABC, 2006, 2154, 3336 † D, 6427 (*guise D*); *-e his*, 3797; *-e he*, 8197.—*wyse* || *soth*, 3197 AB (ë CD).

Rhyme words.—this *wyse sapiens* (81), *wyse adj. pl.* (697, 957, 985, 2001, 3693, 3785, 4390), *seruice,-ise,-yse* (81, 162, 336, 952, 957, 985, 1764, 2974, 4129, 4639, 4660, 5056, 5174, 5472, 5495, 7683), *sacrifice n.* (7831), *deuyse inf.* (275, 1114, 1471, 2149, 2631, 2897, 3079, 3298, 4436, 4516, 4639, 4660, 4740, 4899, 5472, 5551, 7460, 7683), *deuyse ind. 2 pl.* (6189), *ryse inf.* (275, 697, 2912, 3811, 4310), *aryse inf.* (2752, 3785), *aryse p.p.* (2548), *auyse inf.* (363, 2785, 4436), *auyse ind. 3 pl.* (1359), *des-, dispise inf.* (1806, 4310, 7381), *dispise subj. 3 pl.* (6000), *suffise inf.* (3693, 5056, 7460). [*wyse † n.* (81 D).]

wydowe (A.S. *wiodu* (*old and rare*), *widuwe*, *weoduwe*, *wuduwe*, Ps. *widwe*, N. *widua*, Sievers, §§ 71 and n. 1, 156.4, L. *widewe*, O. *widewe*, *widdwe*), *wydowe (dissyl.) was*, 97 AD (*wydedw B*, *wedęwe C*).

Note.—For *loue*, see § 8; for *rynde*, *rysshe*, *sloue*, § 9; for *bore*, *sherte*, § 15.

§ 4. III. Neuters of the *n*- declension (Child, § 2).

ere, eere (A.S. *éare*, O. *ære*), 106 f, 725 f, 767 f, 1280 f, 1536 f, 2722 f, 3301 f, 3408 f, 3596 f, 3951 f, 4725 f, 5306 f; *ere*, 5096.

Rhyme words.—*ferre timor* (106, 725, 767, 1536, 3301, 3596), *were pret. subj. 3 sg.* (725, 767, 3301, 3408, 3951), *there* (1280, 3596, 5306), *bere feretrum* (2722), *eury where* (4725).

eye, yë (A.S. *éage*, L.^b *eage*, O. *e3he*), 272, 453 f, 1386 f, 1488 f, 1989 f, 4188 † E, 4972 † f C, 5060 f, 6318 f, 6811 f, 6917 f, 7264 f; *eye*, 6442 (*eyzyn C*).

Note.—*Eye* is the prevailing spelling; *ye*, which is shown by the rhyme to be Chaucer's form, is found in 7264 (ABD), 6917 B, 6811 D, 4972 C. Other forms are: in B, *eyghe*, 272; *eighe*, 1386; *eigh*, 1488; *heye*, 1989; in C, *eyze*, 453, 1386; in D, *ey*, 1488, 5060; *yhe*, 6318, 6442; *yee*, 6917. *Heighe*, 1989 A, is an error. *Eye* occurs in 272 D.

Rhyme words.—*companye* (453, 6811), *folye* (453), *lye* (1386, 5060, 6318, 7264), *heighe (l. hye)* (1488), *prye* (1488), *wrye inf.* (1989), *y-wrye p.p.* (6318), *aspye inf.* (6917), *sl(e)ye adj. pl.* (7264). [In 4972 C the rhyme is false,—*twye*: *yë*: *aweye*.]

§ 5. In *lady* (A.S. hlæfdige, *f.*) and *pley* (A.S. plega, *m.*), the final vowel disappears, and in *pley* the *g* unites with the preceding vowel to form a diphthong (Child, § 5; ten Brink, § 211). In *fo*, *foo* (A.S. ge-fá, *m.*) an old (A.S.) contraction is preserved (ten Brink, § 211; Sievers, § 277, n. 2).

lady (A.S. hlæfdige, L. læfdi, O. laffdi), *lady* (*before vowels and consonants*), 106, 166 ABC, 346, 434, 493, 524 (bodie † D), 1025, 1093, 1164 BD, 1510, 2150, 2177, 2501, 2718, 2799, 3797, 3910, 4131, 4327, 5265, 5863, 6112, 6507 (laydy B), 6525, 6581, 6592, 6815, 6820, 6939, 7032, 7235, 7678, 8029, etc.; *ladÿ* (*before vowels and consonants*), 166 † D, 269, 7879; *lady vntð*, 1164 A. [*ladi* is common in C.]

pley (A.S. plega, *m.*, L. plæze), 6291 f (pleye B, play C) (: weye *acc.* (way BD, alway † C) : away); *pley* and, 1790 (-e B, play C †); *pleye* the, 5528 (pley CD).

fo, *foo* (A.S. ge-fá, *subst.* (fáh, fá, *adj.*), L^a. ifa, L^b. fo, ifo), 837 f (wo † B), 1573 f, 1769 f, 2567 f, 2701 (for † C), 4828 f, 5751 f, 6522 f, 6591 f (soo † D); *before vowels*, 485, 1990.

feldöfare, 3703 f BC (feld[e]-fare BC, feldyfare D) (: fare 3 *pl.*) (cf. Parl. F., 364) is referred to *felofof*, *m.*, though Bosworth-Toller questioningly recognizes a weak feminine *feldefare* on the strength of the eleventh-century gloss *clodhamer and feldeware*, Wright-Wülek., p. 287, 17. The M.-Eng. form has perhaps been influenced by popular etymology (quasi *feld-gefara*).

Note.—For *wyndowe*, see § 15.

§ 6. Anglo-Saxon masculine and neuter vowel-stems that have a final vowel (-e or -u) in the nominative singular, preserve this vowel as -e in the *Troilus*.

For convenience the following nouns are thrown together in a single alphabetical list: (i.) masculine jo- (ja-) stems with long stem-syllable,—*ende*, *leche*; (ii.) neuter jo- (ja-) stems with long stem-syllable,—*wede*, *wyte* (for *ernde*, see § 7); (iii.) neuter wo-stem,—*bale*; (iv.) masculine i-stems with short stem-syllable,—*ache*, *hate*, *hegge*, *lye*, *mete*, *pilwe*; (v.) neuter i-stem with short stem-syllable,—*sperre*; (vi.) masculine u-stems with short stem-syllable,—*sunu*, *wudu*. Masculine nomina agentis in -ere (which properly belong under i.) and abstract nouns in -scipe (which

properly belong under iv.) seldom (nouns in *-scipe* perhaps never) retain *-e* : see § 7. For *wil*, *wille*, see § 2. For *awe*, see § 15.

ache (A.S. *ece*, *m.*), *-e*, 5390 (ach B, eche C).

bale (A.S. *bealu*, *n.*, L. *balu*, *bale*), 5401 f (: *fynGRES . . . smale* : *pale pred. adj. sg.*).

ende (A.S. *ende*, *m.*, L.O. *ende*), 966 f, 1303 f, 1876 f, 2320, 2333 f, 2580 f, 2960 f, 3047 f, 3234 f, 3304 f, 3457 f, 3544 f, 3611 f, 3773 f, 4601, 4655 f, 5777 f, 6062 f, 6242 f, 6838 f, 7257 f, 7421 f, 7636 f, 7917 f, 8032 f; *ende*, 1345, 5498, 7756; *end[e]*, 6862 f AB (*-e* CD). [Cf. *endeles*, § 85.]

Rhyme words.—I. Infinitives : *bende* (2333), *wende* (2333, 2580, 3457, 3544, 3611, 4655, 5777, 6242, 6838, 6862, 7917), *blende*, *blynde*, *caccare* (2580, 3047, 6062), *sende* (3304, 5777, 8032), *shende* (6242, 7257, 7421); II. *shende ind. 1 sg.* (7636), *subj. 3 sg.* (966), *wende cam* (1303), *cas* (3234), *camus* (3047, 7257), *catis* (2960 ABC), *to-rende subj. 3 pl.* (1876), *sende mittas* (3544), *mittat* (3773, 6862).

-ere : see § 7.

ernde. The best MSS. have *erand*. See § 7.

hate (A.S. *hete*, *m.* (cf. *hatian*), L. *hæte*, *hete*, O. *hete*), 1798; *-e*, 3870; *-e he*, 477.

hegge (A.S. *hege*, *m.*, cf. *hecg*, *f.* (?), *hecc*), He loketh forth by *hegge* by tre by greue, 7507 (*hegg* B, *hegis †* C, *hegges †* D, *hege* G).

leche (A.S. *læce*, *léce*, *m.*, L. *leche*, *læche*, O. *læche*), 857 f (: I *beseche*), 1656 f (: *preche inf.* : *speche*), 2151 f (*lece* A) (: *seche petunt* : *speche*), 2667 f (: *teche inf.*), 7900 f (: *speche* : *seche inf.*); *-e*, 2664. —*lechecraft*, 5098.

lye (A.S. *lyge*, *m.*, N. *lyg*); And for a soth they telle that lyie is, 6069 C^c (: *amphibologyis*), *but read twenty lyes with ABD*.

mete (A.S. *mete*, *m.*, N. *met(t)*, L.O. *mete*), *-e*, 907 (*mone †* C, *brede †* D), 5437 ABD¹ (*-e* C); *-e his*, 485.

pilwe (A.S. *pyle*, *pylwe*, *m.*), Saue a pilwe (*pilwo* B, *pillowe* D, *pilowe* G) I (*om.* C) fynde nought (G *inserts elles*) tenbrace (to embrace CG, to embrace D), 6587.

-shipe (A.S. *-scipe*) : see § 7.

sone (A.S. *sunu*, *m.*, L. *sune*, *sone*, O. *sune*), 226, 1401 f (: *wone custom*), 7027 ABC; *sone*, 2, 261, 1187, 1793, 3012 (*some †* B, *sonë †* thogh D), 4650 (*son* D †), 6375, 6451, 7953, 8109.—Tydeus *sonë* that doun descended is, 7877 ABDG. (*sonë †*, 7027 D.)

Note.—Verses 226, 7027 disprove ten Brink's remark (Chaucers Sprache und Verskunst, §§ 260, 261) that *sone* never occurs as a dissyllable in the interior of a verse in Chaucer. Further examples of dissyllabic *sone* will be given from the *Legend of Good Women* in an article by Professor J. M. Manly, which is soon to appear. (Cf. also Child, § 12.)

¹ Later in the line read *drynk[c]* ABC (*drynke* D).

sperc (A.S. *sperc*, *n.*, L. *sperc*, *sper*, P. Pl. *sperc*, *sper*), 3216 f (*speere* B) (: *swere juro*); *sperc*, 2512 (*spore* A), 4702; *sperc* † for, 1286 C. *wede* (A.S. (*ge*)*wæde*, *n.*, L.^a *iwede*, ^b *wede*, O. *wæde*), 177 f, 4273 f (-*ee*- D, *wode* † B), 4561 f.

Rhyme words.—*drede n.* (*all*), *brede n.* (177), *rede ind.* 3 *pl.* (4273, 4561).

wil, *wille* : see § 2.

wode (A.S. *wudu*, *m.*, L. *wude*, *wode*, O. *wude*), *haselwodū thoughte*, 6868 (*hastow* † B); from *haselwodē* || *there*, 7537; *haselwodūs shaken*, 3732 AB (-*e* is CD); -*e*, 2417. [Var. B -*wōdde*; D -*woode*.] *wyte* (A.S. *wīte*, *n.*, L.O. *wite*), 2733 f (: *lite adj.*), 3581 f (: *byte inf.* : a *lyte*). [Var. C *wite*, *wy3te*.]

§ 7. Exceptions to § 6.

A.S. *ærende* and *stéle*, neuter *jo*-stems, lose their -*e* in the *Troilus*.

The final -*e* of the termination -*shipe* (A.S. -*scipe*, masc. *i*-stem) is not sounded and sometimes not written. The final -*e* of the termination -*ere* (A.S. -*ere*, *jo*-stem) is not sounded except in rhyme.

ernde. Instead of *ernde* (A.S. *ærende*, *n.*, *jo*-stem, L. *ærnde*, *ernde*, O. *errnde*), the best MSS. have (*h*)*erand* in the only place where this word occurs,—*erand* was, 1157 (*herand* B, *erndē* D).

stel (A.S. *stéle*, *stýle*, *n.*, L. *stel*, dat. *stele*) shows no -*e*,—of *stel*, 1678 f (-*e* BD) (: *eury del* : *wel(e) adv.*), 4987 f (*stiel* B, *stele* D) (: *vpon the whiel*)¹; of *stel* and, 3322 (*stiel* B, *stele* D); *trewē* as *stel* in, 7194 (*steele* B, *stele* D).

-*ere* (A.S. -*ere*, L.W.S. also -*re*, *m.*, forming *nomina agentis*) :

èndere, 5163 (-*er* C, *yendir* D).

fýndere, 1929 (-*er* BD, *fingir* † C). [-*ère* (?).]

hàrpour (A.S. *hearpere*), *before vowel*, 2115 (*ha[r]ppour* B).

hòldere, 1729 (-*er* D, -*yn* † C).

ledère (A.S. *kédere* ?), 6116 f (-*dèr* D) (: *yfere* : *bere ursus*).

lòuèrē, 510 (-*er* D), 512 (-*er* AB), 2431 (-*er* BD), 4634 (-*er* BD), 4640 (-*er* BD), 5862 (-*er* BD); *lòuëre*, 20 (-*er* D †), 1115 (-*er* BD), 4228 (-*er* E), 4570, 5233 (-*er* D, -*ers* B); -*ère* *hastow*, 4301 (-*er* B, *oone* † D); *lòuère* I, 1097 (-*er* BD); -*èrē* *he*, 2130 (-*erē* *seyde* C, -*er* *he* D).

lyere (A.S. *léogere*), 3151 (-*er* BD); *lyere*, 3157 (accent uncertain A; -*er* BD, *li[e]rē* C).

màkere, 741 (-*er* BD; *in* A *read* [*y*]beten), 4279 (-*er* BD)²; -*erē* *yet*, 8150 (-*er* BD).

¹ C † om. *of*.

² Thow *rakel* nyght there God *makere* of *kynde*.

mòrter (A.S. mortere, *m.*, from Lat. mortarium, cf. Pogatscher, §§ 259, 287), *m.* that, 5907 (percher C).
 rèdere (A.S. rédere), 6633 (-er D).

Note.—The following verses, though they prove little or nothing, are curiously illustrative of the ending *-ere* in the fourteenth century :—

Jak Chep, Tronche, Jon Wrau, Thom Myllere, Tyler, Jak Strawe,
 Erle of the Plo, Rak to, Deer, et Hob Carter, Rakstrawe ;

Isti ductores in plebe fuere priores.—Versus de tempore Johannis Straw.
 Wright, *Political Poems*, I, 230.

-ship, -ship (A.S. -scipe), termination forming abstract nouns :

felowship. And wher that (*om.* BCD) hym lyst (liste B, leste C)
 best felowship (felaweschipe B, felauschepe C) kan, 1291.—
 fèlawshipe, 3245 (-shyp B, -ship D †, felauschepe C).

friendship (A.S. fréondscipe, L. freonscipe), (i.) 2872 (-schipe B, -shipe D). (ii.) frenship, 1456 (-shippe B, -schepe C, friendship D) ;
 frendship, 6498 (frendeschiþe B, frenschepe C, frensshipe D),
 7985 (-e D, -schip B, frenschep C) ; frendship haue, 1325 (-e D, frenschepe C), 2047 (frenship B, frenschepe C, frendship to D) ;
 frendship here (*dat.*), 6548 (frenchep B, frenschepe C, frensshipe † to D).

lordship (A.S. hláfordscipe), lordship yow, 2505 (-chip B, -schepe (I) 3ow C) ; -ship hym, 2921 (-schepe C, -shþ was † D) ; -ship ouer, 4598 (lorchip B, lorschepe C, lord(e)schipe E).

worship (A.S. weorðscipe, L. wurðscipe, worðschepe, O. wurpshipe),
 w. and, 46 (-schip B, -shipp D), 82 (-schipp B, -schepe C).

§ 8. Anglo-Saxon feminine nouns that have -u in the nominative, end in the *Troilus* in -e throughout the singular (except in the genitive).

The following list includes (i.) -ā- (-ō-) stems with short stem-syllable : *an-swere, care, fare, lace, love, sawe, shame, tale, wyke* (originally n-stem) ; (ii.) abstract nouns in -u, -o, corresponding to Gothic abstracts in -ei and usually indeclinable in the singular : *brede, elde, hele, hete* ; (iii.) feminine u-stem with short stem-syllable : *dore*. For *more, throte*, see § 3. [For *gere*, see § 43, n. 3.]

answere (A.S. andswaru, Durh. ondsuere *acc.*, L. æn(d)-swere, answare, O. anndsware, -swere) ; answer, 69 (-er B, aunswer D), 72 (-er B), 2245 (-er B), 7786 A (C (?)) ; -er D)¹ ; answerē yow, 2210 (answerē † 3ow CD) ; answerē hym, 5556 (answer to † B, answerē

¹ Of wich in effect hire answerē was this C.

him C, answer him D); answer, 2139 (ans(e)wère B, answer(d) D), 5820 (-er D).¹

brede (A.S. brædu, L^a. bræde, L^b. brede), 179 f (: wede *n.* : drede *n.*), 530 f (: lede *inf.* : drede *n.*), 8020 f (: Diomede : hede *n.* *heed*).

care (A.S. caru, L.O. care), 505 f, 550 f, 587 f, 612 f, 660 f, 1016 f, 1192 f, 2085 f, 4407 f, 4891 f, 5124 (?) f AB (*vb.* CD), 5194 † f (fare AB), 5241 f, 6230 f, 6383 f, 6417 f, 6600 f, 6698 † f B, 6699 f AC^dD (fare B), 7112 f, 7321 f, 7511 f, 7731 f (car D); care, 1862 † D; care hym, 3908.

Rhyme words.—in the snare (505, 7112), Pandare (550, 587, 612, 5124 (?) AB, 5241, 7511), fare *n.* (550, 1016, 2085, 4407, 6230, 6417, 6698 B, 6699 AC^dD, 7731), wel-fare (4891), ye fare *ind.* 2 *pl.* (1192, 6600, 7321), *inf.* (4407, 5194 CD, 5241, 6383, 7321), bare *adj.* (660, 1192, 4891), spare *inf.* (6417).

dore (A.S. duru; cf. dor, *n.*; L.O. dore, dure), -e, 180 (-ë † vmdir C), 3540, 3590, 5014 (C †); -e he, 4894; -e hym, 2033.—dore (before a pause), 3526, 3587 (dere † C)², 3601 (trap[pe] dore D).

elde (A.S. ieldu; also ield; L. ælde, æld, O. P. Pl. elde), 1478 (-[e] C), 1484 (-[e] D, olde C); -e, 6031 (age D).

fare (A.S. faru, L. fare, fære, uore, P. Pl. fare), 551 f, 1018 f, 2086 f, 2229 f, 3447 f, 3595 † f B, 3948 f, 4408 f, 5194 f AB, 6229 f, 6416 f, 6698 ACD, 6699 † f B, 6870 f, 7729 f (far D); welfære, 4890 f; a farë carte, 7525 f (a soory † c. D); welfære, 7722 AD (wèl-farë † and C); fare he, 5582.

Rhyme words.—stare *inf.* (2229), Pandare (3447, 3948, 6870), fare *inf.* (5194 AB). For the other cases, see care, above.

hele (A.S. hiëlu; also hiël, -e, *f.*; L. hele; O. hæle), 1792 f, 2835 f, 3163 f, 7959 f (*all four* : dele *inf.*); -e, 461, 2848, 7722 (esë † C), 7766.—hele honour, 6104 ABD. [Cf. heleles, § 49, n. 5.]

With *helë* swych that but ye yeuen me

The samë *hele* I shal noon *helë* haue, 7778-9.

hete (A.S. hiëtu; also hiëte, -an, *f.*; L. hate, O. hæte), 971 f, 2027 f (herte † C), 5173 (heete B, herte † C), 6245 f, 7470 f, 7602 f, 8124 f.—For hete (*hote* B) of cold for cold of hete I deye, 420 (ffor cold of hete for hete, etc. C).

Rhyme words.—tete *inf.* (971), lete *inf.* (6245), bete *inf.* (8124), bygete *p.p.* (971), ybete *p.p.* (2027), swete *pres. ind.* 2 *pl.* (2027), wete *adj. pl.* (7470), grete *adj. pl.* (7602, 8124).

lawe (A.S. lagu; also lah, *n.* (?) and laga, -an; L^{nb}. laze,^b lawe, O. lazhe), 223 f (: drawe *inf.*), 996 f (: drawe *inf.* : awe), 5280 f (: awe : gnawe *inf.*); -e, 238, 4590 (law B; E †); -e han, 2878 (-e have D).

¹ *Answer* and is possible in AB, *answer* and in D.

² In A read *lay[en]*.

loue (A.S. lufu; also lufe (nom. not W.S.), -an, *weak fem.*, see Sievers, § 278, n. 1, Cosijn, *Altws. Gr.*, II, § 33, Platt, *Anglia*, VI, 176; L.^a lufe,^b loue, O. lufe), 231 f (: aboue), 925 f (: loue *amo*), 1933 f (alone † C) (: loue *amo*), 3718 f (: aboue), 3866 f (: shoue *p.p.* : aboue), 8191 f (: aboue), 8205 f (: aboue).

Of *loue* (dissyllabic) in the interior of the verse there are but four certain examples :

Han felt that *louë* dorst[e] yow displese, 27 (dorste B; D ?).

It semeth not that *louë* doth yow¹ longe, 1631 (semyth me not C).

Louë that with an holsom alliaunce, 4588.

Louë that knetteth lawe of companye, 4590 (D (?); loue that endythyth † C).

To which is probably to be added

And to the God of *loue* thus seyde he, 421 (seyd he D).

In 8132 we have apparently a verse of nine syllables, though a very disagreeable one :

Of his *loue* I haue seyde (seyd(e) B) as (that D) I kan. (Of course it is possible to read 4588 and 4590 as 9-syl. lines; cf. 1585.)

In

Loue ayens the (*om.* C) which (-e C) who-so defendeth, 603, and

Loue hym made al prest to don hire byde, 4824,

we have to choose between nine syllables and hiatus.

Note.—The other cases of *loue* (dissyllabic) in the interior of the verse are without doubt scribal errors. Thus,—196 † AD (-ë of), 200 † D (-ë and), 234 C, 242 † C (-ë hath), 249 (?) † D (-ë have), 400 † AD (-ë is), 436 † C^c, 500 † D, 663 † D (-ë hym), 677 † CD, 991 † D (-ë of), 1144 † D, 1182 † A, 1542 † D (-ë in), 1588 † C (-ë I), 1607 † D (-ë he), 1976 † CD, 2007 † CD, 2182 † C (D ?), 2593 † D (-ë is), 3014 † D, 3359 † D, 4170 † E, 4604 † E (-ë oug(u)ht), 4987 † C, 5147 † CD, 6234 † D, 6296 † C, 6314 † C, 6844 † D, 7930 † AD.

loue (before vowels), 196 BC, 200 ABC, 237, 400 BC, 401, 571, 584, 612, 698, 899 ABD, 902, 972, 991 ABC, 1005, 1020, 1104, 1111, 1112, 1124, 1182 BC, 1208, 1331, 1394, 1456, 1464, 1477, 1542 ABC, 1635, 1662, 1764, 1827, 2160, 3564, 4608 ABC, 4987, 5077, 5147, 5243 † CD, 5340, 8232, etc.—*loue* he, 353 † C, 388 (B †), 1607 AB; -e his, 484 ABC; -e hem, 31 B (him A = hem), 1875; -e hath, 879 AB, 960 ABC (D ?); -e hadde, 304, 663; -e how, 1752; -e halt, 4606; -e hire (?), 1986 A.

loue, 206, 255, 308, 353 ABD, 384, 402, 436 AB, 443 † C, 518, 523 ABC, 622, 646², 711, 744, 810, 864, 1118, 1129, 1147, 1181, 1182 † D, 1477, 1588 AB, 1759, 1789 (-e † D), 1823 AB, 1866,

¹ Cp. inserts *nat* here.

9-syl. verse in ABC(D ?).

1912, 1950, 2007 ABC, 2251 ABC, 2285, 2309, 3014 AB, 4103, 4433, 4586, 4587, 4590 † C, 5243 AB, 6234 ABC, 6296 AB, 6314 ABD, 6844 ABC, 7418 AB, 8039, 8052. The old-face figures indicate lines in which *louë* may be read if one chooses to admit the extra syllable before a pause (usually the principal cæsura). Thus,—Blyssyd be *loue* / that kan thus folk conuerte, 308; In *loue* / for which in wo to bedde he wente, 1147.

luf occurs once;—Of vertu rote of *luf* fyndere and hed, 1929 A (lust BC, fynder of lyst D). [Cf. *lufsom*, 6828 AB (*loue*- D), 7274 (*loue*- CD).]

sawe (A.S. *sagu*, L. *sage*, *sæge*, P. Pl. *sawe*), 6401 f (: *gnawe inf.*). [sawe †, 3562 f D, see *shawe*.]

shame (A.S. *scamu*, *scomu*, *sceamu*, O. *shame*), 252 f, 374 f, 868 f, 896 f, 1440, 1730 f, 1848 f, 2922, 2931, 3479 f, 3969 f, 5192 f, 5258 (-e B, *iapë* † in C), 6130 f, 6227 f; -e, 642 (-ë by † D), 2370, 2376 (*speche* CD), 2585, 2867, 3091, 3619, 4412 (*schamë* red D); -e *his*, 107 (-ë *falsenesse* C).

Rhyme words.—name *n.* (252, 896, 1848, 3479, 6130, 6227), *game* (868, 1730, 3969, 5192 D, 6130, 6227), *grame* (374, 5192 ABC), *blame inf.* (5192).

tale (A.S. *talū*, L.O. *tale*), 263¹, 1393 † C (*pl.* ABD), 2278 f (: *smale adj. pl.*), 2651 C, 2707 (*line om.*, C), 4036, 4077 f (: *nyghtyngale*), 4245 (*take* † C), 7395 CD (*tales* A; B †); -e, 14, 1303 (*talk* † was C, *talë* † was D), 1344 BCD (*tales* † is A), 1390 ABC, 2690, 3456 (-es † A), 3611 A (-ë brought BC, -ë † is D), 4507 (-ë was D), 4789, 5324 AB (-ë *newe* C, *thes* † *tidinges* D), 5328. [*talë* † to, 1390 D.]

wyke, *wowke* (A.S. nom. *wieu*, *wucu*, orig. a fem. *n*-stem; oblique cases in -*an* occur, see *Siev.*, § 278, n. 1, *Cosijn*, *Altws. Gr.*, II, § 33; L. *wike*, O. *wuke*, P. Pl. *woke*, *weke*, *wyke*), *wyke*, 1515 f (: *syke inf.*), 2358 f (*weke* BD, *weyke* C) (: *pyke inf.*); *wowke*, 5940 (*wouke* C, *wooke* D), 6855 (*wouke* C, *wooke* D). [Cf. *ten Brink*, § 35. A.]

§ 9. Monosyllabic feminine nouns with long stem-syllable take in the *Troilus* a final -*e* (perhaps derived from the oblique cases) throughout the singular, except in the genitive (cf. *Child*, § 16; *ten Brink*, § 207).

The following list includes : (i.) pure ā- (ō-) stems,—(a) *bene*, *bere*, *bote*, *brouce*, *chyste*, *gloue*, *halle*, *halue*, *helpe*, *leue*, *lode*, *mede*

¹ Supply [*for*] in C.

(A.S. *méd*), *myle*, *reste*, *rinde*, *rode*, *salve*, *scole*, *snare*, *sorwe*, *soule*, *steuene*, *stounde*, *strete*, *throwe*, *while*, *wounde*, *youthe* (originally i-stem); (b) *filthe*, *highte*, *lengthe*, *murthe*, [*routhe*,] *sleyghte* (O.N. *sléggð*), *slouthe*, *strengthe*, *trouthe*, *wrathe*; (ii.) *jā-* (*jō-*) stems,—*blysse*, *egge*, *helle*, *hire*, *keye*, *lysse*, *-nesse*, *shethe*, *speche*,¹ *synne*, *wreche*,¹ *yerde*; (iii.) *wā-* (*wō-*) stems,—*mede* (A.S. *méd*), *rouwe*, *trewe*; (iv.) i-stems,—*bone* (O.N. *bón*), [*byrthe*,] *dede*, *glede*, *hyue*, *myude*, *nede*, *quene*, *sighte*, *tyde*, *wene*. *Steue* (A.S. *sléf*, *slýff*) belongs either to the *jā-* or to the i-declension; the history of *rysshe* (A.S. *risc*, etc.) is not satisfactorily determined.

Note.—For convenience *soule* and *steuene* are included in this list. Some of the nouns under i. b show in Anglo-Saxon a by-form in -u (cf. also *scole*). For *pryde*, see § 3. For *hegge*, see § 6.

bene (A.S. *béan*, P. Pl.^c *bene*), 4009 f (: *mene* *indl.* 1 *sg.* : *clene* *adj.*), 6726 f (: *mene* 3 *pl.*). [Var. B *beene*.]

bere (A.S. *béar*, *bér*, L.O. *bære*), 2723 f (: *ere*), 5525, 5845 f (*ber* D) (: *manere*), 5870 f (C †, *ber* D †) (: *yfere* *adv.* : *dere* *adj.*). [Var. B *beere*.]

blysse, *blisse* (A.S. *blifðs*, *bliss*, L.O. *blisse*), 623 f, 3023 f, 3184 f, 3546 (-[*se*] ? D),² 4063, 4114 (-[*se*] D), 4164 (-[*se*] C, *blyssyd* † A), 4465 f, 4499 (-[*se*] D), 4870 (D †),³ 5985 (*ioye* C), 6759, 6911 f (*blys* C), 6913 f (*blys* C, *hisse* † D), 7021; *blysse*, *blisse*, 1934 (*blis* C, *blys*[*se*] which ? D), 1970 (D †), 1974, 1976, 2152 (*blis* C), 4026, 4248, 4558 (*blis* C), 5497 (*ioye* C), 5498 (*blys* C), 5912 (*ioyis* C †), 6969 (*blys* C). [Var. D *blis* or *blys* in the lines marked by old-style figures.]

Rhyme words.—*hwysse inf.* (623), *kyssse inf.* (3023, 6911, 6913), *lysse n.* (3184), *myssse inf.* (4465), *blyssse n.* (6911, 6913).

bone (O.N. *bón*, *bén*, *f.*, A.S. *bén*, O. *bene*, L. *bone*), 1020 f, 4730 f, 6957 f.

Rhyme words.—*mone moon* (1020), *to done* (1020, 4730), *soone* (4730, 6957). [Var. B *boone*.]

bote (A.S. *bót*, L.O. *bote*), 763, 1430 f (*boot* D), 2464 f (*bete* † C, *boot* D), 7035 f, 7609 f, 7690 (*but* † C); *-e*, 832, 2903, 4050 (*boot* B), 5276, 5401 (*-ë* † on C), 5921; *-e* *hym*, 352. [Cf. *boteles*, § 49, n. 5.]

Rhyme words.—*vnderfote* (1430), *rote* (1430, 2464, 7609), *soote adj.* (7035). [Var. BD *bootte*.]

browe (A.S. *brú*, gen. *brúwe*), 204 f (: *to loken rowe*).

byrthe, *birthe*, *burthe* (cf. A.S. *ge-byrd*, *f.*, *n.*, *ge-byrdu*, *f.*, *Siev.*,

¹ See Kluge, *Nominale Stammbildungslehre*, § 113.

² Supply [*f*or] in A, [*i*n] in D.

³ Supply [*i*n] in D.

§ 267, n. 4, O. birle, P. Pl.^b burth,^c burthe), byrthe, 3559 f (-th B, burthe C, birthe D) (: murthe AC, myrthe B, mirthe D); birthe, 5501 A (birth D, [my] burthe B); burthe hym, 6572 (byrthe B, bur[t]h C, birthe D).

chyste (A.S. cest, W.S. ciest, cyst, P. Pl.^c cheste), -e, 7731 (cheste CD). dede (A.S. diéd, déd, L. dede, O. dede, dæd-bote), 93 f, 1187 f, 1427 f, 3133 f, 4143 f, 5286 f (nede A), 5641 f, 5893 f (drede † C), 6003 f, 6234 f, 6413 f, 6837 f; -e, 3271, 3895 (drode † C), 5643. [dede, 4615 f C, *is an error*; read dyzt.]

Rhyme words.—rede *ind.* 1 *pl.* (1187), 3 *pl.* (3133, 5641), *inf.* (93, 1187, 6837), arede *inf.* (6234), nede *n.* (1427), dede *pred. adj. pl.* (3133, 5286, 5893), drede *n.* (93, 6003, 6234, 6413), lede 1 *sg.* (6003), womanhede (4143, 6837).

egge (A.S. ecg, L. mid egge), 5589 f (: abregge *inf.*).

filthe (A.S. fylþ), -e, 3223 (-ë † and B, felthe C), 6240 (fölye it † C, filth D).

glede (A.S. gléd, P. Pl.^c glede), 4999 f (: fede *inf.*), 6666 f ABC (: hede *n.* heed : stede steed).

gloue (A.S. glóf, but also foxes glófa, weak), -e he, 7376.

halle (A.S. heall, hall, L. halle), 2255 f (haH D) (: calle *inf.*), 3698 f haH D) (: alle *pl.* : falle *p.p.*), 5394 f (: alle *pl.* : falle *inf.*).

halue (A.S. healf), in *byhalue* and *on. . . halue* : (a) *byhalue* (A.S. be healf), on myn (my BD) *byhalue*, 2543 (bi- B, be- C); on his *byhalue* which, 2819 (on his half † with C, on his halue that C, on his half which D).¹ (b) on . . . halue (A.S. on healf, O. o . . . hallfe, cf. L. an his halue), on myn h., 5607 f (vn my behalue D) (: salue *n.*).

Note.—The adjective *half* may be seen in 3186, 3345, 3481, 4921, 5927, 5970 (hal † C, halfe D), in phrases with *a*, *the*, and *this*. The plural appears in *haluë goddes* (= demigods), 6207 (hal[e] C, halfe D).

helle (A.S. hell, L. (*obl.*) O. helle), 786 f, 872 f, 1190 f (heH D), 1981 f (-H D), 3434 f, 4300 f, 4442 f, 5374 f C (-H D), 6202 f, 6216 f, 6360 f, 6575 f (-H D), 7759 f, 7895 f; -e, 859 (-H D), 1521 (-H D), 2850 (-H D), 7739.

Rhyme words.—welle *n.* (872, 6216), *inf.* (5374, 6575), telle *inf.* (872, 1190, 1981, 3434, 4442, 6360), *ind.* 3 *pl.* (786, 7895), dwelle *inf.* (4300, 5374, 6202, 6360, 7759), *ind.* 3 *pl.* (3434), *subj.* 2 *sg.* (786), selle *inf.* (4300, 4442), vnswelle *inf.* (6575). [Var. holle, 786 B.]

helpe (A.S. help, L. help, dat. -e, O. hellpe), helpe to, 695 AC (help D, -e? B); -e the, 5954 (help B); help to, 2531 (-e C, he[l]pē B, help † of D); help yet, 672 (-ë † somewhat C); help do, 795 (-[e] †

¹ Line 2819 is unmetrical in D and a poor 9-syl. verse in C. B is nonsense. G and Cp. read : On his half whiche (which Cp.) that soule vs alle sende.

D, helę C); *helpe*, 2709 A (-p B); *help* (*bef. vowels*), 18 (-e BD), 1003 (-e C), 4455 (-e CD), 4765 AD (-e B)¹, 6221 (-e CD), 7390 (-e CD). [*helpē* † more, 2540 C (-es ABG, *help* to D).]

Note.—The interjectional *help!* (see 1047) was no doubt originally an imperative, though such passages as "*Gentleman. Help, help, O, help! Edgar. What kind of help?*" (*King Lear*, v. 3, 222) show that our modern feeling that this *help* is a substantive is of long standing.

highte (A.S. *héahȝu*, *héhȝu*, *hiehȝu*), 7190 f (*heighte* B, *hyzte* C, *hight* D) (: *myghte*, *myght*, *myzt*, *might pret. 3 sg.*).

hire (A.S. *hýr*, L. *hure*, P. Pl.^{ab} *huire*,^c *hure*, *huyre*), 4787 f (*here* C), 5168 f (*here* AC, *hir* D); -e, 334 (C †).

Rhyme words.—on *fire*, a *fire* (ou *fere* C) (4787, 5168), *desire ind. 1 sg.* (5168).

hyue (A.S. *hýf*), 6018 f (*heue* C) (: *dryue inf* : *blyue adv.*).

keye (A.S. *cæg*; also (rarely) *cæge*, -an, Pet. Chron. *keie*, P. Pl.^b *keye*), 6823 f (*kay* C, *key* D) (: *aweye* : *pleye inf.*).

kynde (A.S. *cynd*, *n.*, but usually *ge-cynd*, *f.* (later *n.*); late A.S. *ge-cynde*, *n.*, *ge-cyndu*, -o, *f.*, see Sievers, § 267. b and n. 4; L. *icunde*, dat. *cunde*, O. *kinde*), nom., 2459 (-[e] D), 4572 f; of, 238 f, 972 f, 1455 f, 1947 (-[e] D), 2528 f, 3150 (-[e] D, *kyng* † A), 4279 f, 4563 f, 4607 f, 5080 (*be kyndē* C), 7825 f; out of, 5798 f; in, 254 f (*adj.* † C), 3176 f, 3745 f, 5527 f; by, 5113 f, 6739 f.—*kynde*, nom., 4468, 7192.—*kynde* the, nom., 5758 AB (-ë † *wrouzt* C, *nature* † D).

Rhyme words.—*bynde inf.* (238, 254, 4279, 4607), *ind. 3 pl.* (5527), *vnbynde inf.* (4572), *wynde inf.* (254), *subj. 2 sg.* (4279), *fynde inf.* (972, 2528, 3176, 3745, 4563, 5113, 5527, 6739), *ind. 1 sg.* (5798), *ind. 3 pl.* (7825), *mynde n.* (1455 [*mende* C], 3176, 6739), *rynde* (5798). [Var. C *kende*, 1455; D *kynd*, in the lines marked by old-style figures.]

lengthe (A.S. on *lengȝe*; also, *lengu*, -o, *f.*), 1347 f BD (*lengthe* A, *lenthe* C), 7854 f (*lenthe* C, *length* D); -e, 4917 (*lenghe* B, *lenthe* C), 5807 (*lenthe* A, *lengthe* B, *leue* † C, *length* D), 6343 (*lenght* B, *length* D), 8020 (*lenghte* B, *lenthe* C, [*of*] the *lengh* D). (Rhymes only with *strengthe*.)

leue, *leue* (A.S. *léaf*, L. *leue*, *leaf*, O. *lofe*), 1819 f AB, 2387 f, 2621 (-e BCD), 2743 f, 2806 f, 3067 (-e D), 3401 f, 3436 f, 3464 f, 6020 f, 6441, 6843 f, 6845, 6856 f, 6863, 6974 f, 7378 f, 7448 f; -e, 1294, 1681, 2545, 2719 (*loue* † B), 2774, 3051, 3458, 3525, 5392; *leuē* home, 126 A (-e and BCG Cp.). [*leuē* † went, 126 D.]

Rhyme words.—*byleue*, *bleue manere* (1819 AB, 3464, 6020, 6843, 6856), *reue inf.* (2743), *reue* (by-*reue*) *subj. 1 pl.* (2806), *to-cleue inf.* (6974), *leue relinquo* (7448), *eue*, *ceue* (2387, 3401, 3436, 6843, 6974, 7378).

¹ Read among[es] AD, amonge[s] B.

lode (A.S. *lād*, L. *lod-cniht*, O. *lade*), *lodē-sterre*, 6595 f (*lodis C*), 7755 f (*loode D*).

lore (A.S. *lār*, L.^a *lære*, *lare*, *leore*,^b *lore*, O. *lare*) 645 f, 754 f, 1083 f, 1650 f, 2426 f, 3085 f, 6385 f, 6690 f, 7099 f; -e, 1482.

Rhyme words.—more *adv.* (1083), the more *advl.* (645), no more *adv.* (754), I kan nomore (6690), routhe more (1650), more *n. acc.* (2426), *pred. adj. sg.* (3085), eueremore *adv.* (6385), sore *adv.* (754, 1083, 1650, 3085, 7099), sorwes sore (2426), yore *adv.* (6690). [Var. B *loore*.]

lysse (A.S. *līðs*, *liss*, L. (*obl.*) P. Pl.^{ac} *lisse*), 3185 f (*lesse B*, *lisse C*) (: yn *blysse*).

mede (A.S. *méd*, L. O. P. Pl. *mede*), 3257 f (: *nede n.* : *drede n.*); -e, 1508.

mede (A.S. *mæd*, *méd*, gen. *mæde*, *mædwe*, L. (*dat.*) *medewe*), 156 f (: *rede adj. pl.* : *rede lego*), 1138 f (: *rede adj. pl.* : *sprede inf.*).

murthe (A.S. *myrgð*, *myrð*, L. *murðe*), 3557 f (: *byrthe A*, *byrth B*, *burthe C*, *birthe D*); *myrthe †*, 7740 C. [Var. B *myrthe*; D *mirthē*.]

myle (A.S. *mīl*, L. O. *mile*), 6766 f (: *while* : *bygile inf.*).

mynde (A.S. *ge-mynd*, *f.*, *n.*, O. *minde*), *of*, 365 f; yn, 1456 f (-d D), 3173 f, 4348 f, 4385 f, 4680 f, 6736 f; *to*, 1606 f (-d D), 1687 f (-d D); *out of*, 5579 f, 5963 f, 6099 f, 7805 f, 8058 f; *acc.*, 5335 f, 3772 ABC; -e, *acc.*, 3963; yn *mynde he*, 733 (-d D), 3914 (-d D).

Rhyme words.—*fynde inf.* (365, 3173, 4348, 4680, 5963, 6099, 8058), *subj. 3 sg.* (5579), *ind. 3 pl.* (6736), *wynde inf.* (1687, 4385), *vnbynde inf.* (5335), *kynde n.* (1456, 3173, 6736), *vnkynde* (4680, 6099, 7805), *by-hynde* (1606). [Var. C *mende*.]

nede (A.S. *néd*, *níed*, *nýd*, *néad*, *néod*, L. *ned*, *neode*, O. *ned*, *acc. dat. nede*), 772 f, 863 f, 1428 f, 3259 f, 3296 f, 3308 f, 3331 f, 3388 f, 3548 f, 3570 f, 4067 f, 4736 f, 4808 f, 5286 f, 5768 f, 6194 f, 6220 f, 7389 f, 7403 f; *nedē* (*before consonants*), 128 AC (-ed † B), 2617 (A † B †), 2638 (-e C), 3266 † C (-es AB, -is D), 3984; -e, 4480, 5696, 5697 (A †), 6699 ABD, 6949 ABD, 8221.—*nede* *to*, 886, 4853 A (-e CD; B †); -e || *there*, 1799 (-e wher D); -e || *sestow*, 2888; -e *was*, 4630; -e *ful*, 4797 † C (-e he (!) D †); -e *were*, 6170 † A (!).—*nedē were it* (= *wer't*), or *nede were it*, 4773 AB (cf. 6170 A). [2891 ?] [Cf. *nedeles*, § 85; *nede*, -es, § 91.]

Rhyme words.—*spede inf.* (772, 863, 4736), *blede inf.* (863), *procede inf.* (3296), *ind. 3 pl. (inf. † D)* (4808), *for-bede inf.* (3308), *subj. 3 sg.* (3388, 6220), *bede inf.* (5768), *brede inf.* (7389), *drede n.* (772, 3259, 3331, 3548, 3570, 4736, 6194), *dede n.* (1428), *dede pred. adj. pl.* (5286), *mede medel* (3259), *hede n. he d* (3308, 4067, 6220), *Diomedē* (7389, 7403), *stede steed* (7403).

- nesse, termination (A.S. -nes, -nis, -nys, *late* -nisse, L. O. P.Pl. -nesse).
 besynesse, bysynesse, 795 f¹, 1035 f, 2259 (-nes[se] D)², 2401 f,
 3007 f, 3086 f, 3205 f, 4241 † f E, 4255 f (besines C), 4452 f
 (besynes C,) 6150 f (buxsomes † C).
 bitternesse, 639 f (bet- B, bityr- C), 3657 f, 5506 f; -e, 4062.
 brotelnesse, 8195 f (briztilnes D).
 corsednesse, 5656 B (cursed- D, wykkednesse A).
 derknësse, 18 f (derke- BD)³, 3668 f (distresse † B), 4962 f (derke-
 nesse B, derknes C).
 drerynesse, 701 f, 964 f, 5563 † C f.
 dronkënesse, 1801 f (dronkenes C, drunkenesse D).
 fälsnesse, 107 (fälsnesse BC).
 fiëblënesse, 1948 B (febilnise C, fëblenë D, fëblesse A).
 gentilnesse, 7980 f D (gentilesse ABC). (Cf. variants under *gentilesse*,
 § 25.)
 gladnësse, 19 f 22 f (gladde- B), 615 f, 1790 f, 2848 f (gladde- B),
 2889 f, 3008 f (gladde- B), 3022 f, 4038 f, 4057 f, 4086 f (-nes C),
 4242 f (-nes C), 4289 f, 4357 f (-nes C), 4568 f, 7956 f; glädnesse,
 640 C; -nësse, 4155 (-e zif C, -e yif D).
 goodnësse, 991 f, 2849 f (goode- B); -nësse he, 116 (gòde- B).
 hardnësse, 2330 f.
 hardi-, hardynesse, 566 f, 1719 f; -e, 4618.
 heynesse, 24 f, 655 f, 963 f, 3849 f, 4039 f, 4241 f (-nes C, besi-
 nesse E), 4288 f, 4767 f (wrecchidnes † D), 5025 f, 5464 f, 5563 f
 (drerynesse † C), 5745 f, 5929 f, 6503 f, 6984 f, 7154 f (-nes C),
 7577 f.
 holynesse, 560 f.
 hòlyghnesse, 8172 ([the] hòlygh- B).
 kyndënesse, 5382 f.
 lustynesse, 3019 f
 rudënesse, 6151 f (reudënes C, rud[ë]nesse D); -e, 6339.
 secrenesse, 1928 (sekyrnes C, sikernes D, sekirnesse G).
 selynesse, 3655 f, 3667 f, 3673 (-[se] D).
 shrewëdnësse, 1943 f (sh(e)rewed- B, schrewed(e)nes C, shrewdë-
 nesse D).
 sike-, sykënesse, 2661 f (sik- CD), 5507 f (seke- B, sek- C); sÿknesse
 lest, 489 (sike- B, sek- C); syknësse, 4055 f (sek- C, sijk- D).
 siker-, sykernesse, 3824 f (sekir- C), 4085 f (sekirnes C), 4157 f,

¹ Old-style figures indicate that D has -nes.

² But of hire bysynesse (-es Cp.) this was on.

³ Scansion uncertain.

- 4355 f; -nesse, 1858 (sekirnes C), 6174 (sekirnes C). [Cf. *secrenesse*.]
 sothfastnesse, 5742 f (soth(e)- D).
 swetnèsse, 1036 f (swett(e)nesse B), 2886 f (swenienesse † B), 3021 f (swett(e)- B); -nessē, 4061 (*perh.* -nèsse in A); swètnesse hauc, 638 (swèt(e)nesse han B, swètnesse a C).
 vnliklynesse, 16 f.
 wikked-, wykkednesse, 992 f (-yd- BD, weked- C), 5656 f A (corsed- B, cursed- D).
 wildernesse, 6207 f.
 wilfulnesse, 793 f.
 witt(e)nesse, 6212 (witnessesse BCD); wytnèsse, 3102 f (witt(e)- B).
 wodnèsse, 3636 f (wod(e)- B); woòdnese, 4224 (woo(n)d(e)nes B, wod(e)nesse † E); -nèsse, 4900 (wod(e)- B, distreste † C, wood(e)- D).
 worthi-, worthynesse, 567 f, 642 f, 961 f (-nes C),¹ 1246 f, 1263 (-[se] D), 1789 f, 1926 f (-nes C), 4158 f, 4451 f (-nes C), 4631 f (-nes C), 6148 f (-nes C), 6330 f, 7080 f, 7928 (-[se] D, -e the C), 8192 f; -nesse his, 4392; vnworthynesse he, 2166 (on- C).
 wrecchednesse, 1371 f (-nes C), 4629 f (-nes C), 6402 f (wreched(e)- B, wreched(e)nes C); -nesse, 3223 (wreched(e)- C); wrecchidnes †, 4767 f D (heuynesse AB).

But:—

buxsomnes †, 6150 f C; gladnès † ho, 2891 D; goòdnes † heryc, 4514 D; noblènes †, 8194 f D (noblèsse AB); witnes of, 5403 A (-nesse BCD).²

See also the variants in the preceding list.

A.S. bieternes, biternys; dréorinys; druncennes; glædnes; gódnés; hálignes; heardnes; hefignes; séocnes; swétnes; ge-witnes; wódnys [; búhsomnes Bosw.- T. *without authority*].

Rhyme words.—Nouns in -nesse rhyme principally with each other; but the following rhymes also occur,—distresse (615, 639, 641, 1801, 1943, 2330, 2886, 3086, 3102, 3205, 3824, 4055, 4057, 4288, 4289, 4629, 4631, 4767, 4962, 5025, 5382, 5464, 5506, 5563, 5742, 5745, 6330, 7080, 7956), accesse (2401, 2661), gentilesse (1246, 1789, 1790, 3007, 3008, 4255, 7956), largesse (4568), prowessse (1719), richesse (6330), noblesse (8192), goddesse (6207), hierdesse (655), presse *n.* (560), lesse, lasse *adj. sg.* (701, 793, 5464, 6984), *plu.* (6207), I gesse *ind.* (655, 991, 992, 1371, 1801, 1943, 4568, 5563), gesse, gysse *inf.* (3824, 4085, 4086, 5656, 6984), dresse *inf.* (1719, 6402), redresse *inf.* (3849, 5929, 6402, 6503), expresse *ind. 3. pl.* (7154), blesse *subj. 3. sg.* (7577).

queene, quene (A.S. cwén, cwón, L. quen, quene, O. cwen), 699 f,

¹ In C read *worth[yn]nesse*.

² In A supply [*here*].

759, 817 f, 2772 f (the quene † elyne C?), 2788 f, 5900 f, 6256 f, 6375 f, 7258 f; -e, 2641 (quen C), 2799, 6009 (quen C).

Rhyme words.—y-seene *adj.* (699), sene *adj.* (7258), tene (817), grene (817, 2788, 6375), susteyne (-tene) *inf.* (2772), shene *adv.*? (5900), shene *adj.* *def.* (6256), wene *n.* (6256), † clene¹ *adv.* (6375). [Var. D qwene.]

reste (A.S. ræst, rest, L. dat. reste, O. resste), 188 f,² *600 f, 1845 f, *1996 f, *2029 f, *3066 f, 3767 f, *3808 f, 3887 f, *3973 f, 4277 f, *4360 f, *4441 f, *4522 f, *5243 f (rest B); 5781 f (prest † C), *5949 f, 6107 (-[e] D), *6264 f, 6299 f, 6881 f, 7370 f, 7384 C (-[e] D, bedde AB), 7468 f, 8098 f ([vn]to r. A), 8112 f; -e, 4274 (-t B, nest † D); -e hym, 8036 (-t B). [rest †, 330 f C^c (lyst AD, lest B).]—vnreste, 5541 f, *7930 f, *7967 f. [Cf. resteles, § 49, n. 5.]

Rhyme words.—the beste (3767, 3887, 5541, 5781, 5949, 6264, 7967, 8112), the alderbeste (4441), my beste (600), breste *subj.* 3 *sg.* (600), breste *inf.* (4277, 5243, 6299, 7370, 7930), moleste *inf.* (5541), keste (kyste) *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (3973, 4360), leste (lyste) *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (188³, 1996³, 3066³, 3973, 4522, 6881, 7468, 8098), lyste *pres. subj.* 3 *sg.* (1845⁴, 2029, 3808, 3887), the worthieste (1845). [best *adv.* (330 C^c.)]

rode (A.S. ród, L.O. rode), 8223 f (roode BD) (: Strode *nom. pr.* : good[e] *pl.*, garde † A).

rote, roote (A.S. rôt, O. rote), 1433 f, 2463 f (a root? D), 7608 f; -e, 1929 (root(a) B, rote † fynder D). [Cf. roteles, § 49, n. 5.]

Rhyme words.—bote *A.S.* bót (1433, 2463, 7608), vnderfote (1433).

routhe, ruthe (2441), reuthe (4924) (not in A.S.; formed from the vb. reouwen, rewen, A.S. hréowan, on the analogy of other abstract nouns in -th; cf. O.N. hrygð and hryggva; L. reouðe; P. Pl.^b routhe, reuth,^c reuthe), 582 f, 769 f, 1434 f, 1574 f, 1649^e, 1749 f (rowrhte † B), 2092 f, 2224 f, 2365 f, 2441 AB, 2587 f, 2964 f, 3737 f, 4353 f, 4924 (ruth † D), 6138 f,⁷ 6152 f, 6271 f, 6335 f, 7363 f, 7462 f, 7748 f, 7950 f, 8050 f; -e, 1608 BD, 2355, 2460 (-th B), 6244, 6989. [-ë † on, 1608 A, *l.* -e vpon (mercy † C).] [Cf. routhlees, § 49, n. 5.]

Rhyme words.—slouthe (2092, 2224, 2587, 3737, 7950), vntrouthe (7462), trouthe (*all the rest*). [Var. B rowthe; BC rewthe; C reuthe.]

rowe (A.S. ráw, réw, P. Pl.^c rawe, by rewe), by r., 2055 f (row D) (: lowe *adv.* : throwe *inf.*).

¹ clere ABG Cp. Durham MS., clene Phillipps MS. 8252, cleene John's MS., shene D Selden MS. B. 24. (C cut out.)

² The asterisk indicates that C has no -e; old-style figures indicate that D has none.

³ Perh. subjunctive.

⁴ lyst A (: the worthieste).

⁵ "In rest," the reading of C, is clearly wrong.

⁶ Supply [w] in D.

⁷ Old-style figures indicate that D has *trouth*.

rynde (A.S. rind, but a pl. rindan occurs), 1727 f (rynd D) (: byhynde : fynde *inf.*), 5801 f (: kynde *n.* : fynde *ind.* 1 *sg.*).

rysshe (A.S. risc, *f.*, weak forms also occur; P. Pl. rusche, ruysshe), 4003 f (ryshe B, rische D, reche † C) (: fysshe *inf.*).

salue (A.S. sealf, O. sallfe), 5606 f (: on myn halue).

scole (A.S. scól, see Sievers, *Beitr.*, I, 488, but scólu, Chron. 816; L. in scole, P. Pl. scole), -e is, 634 (: tolys : folys).

shethe (A.S. scæð, L. dat. scæðe, scaðe, O. dat. shæþe), out of . . . shethe he, 5847 (sheth D, schede anon C).

sighte, syght[e] (A.S. gesihð, L. siht, dat. sehte, i-sihðe, etc., O. silhþe), nom., -[e] trewely, 1713 AD (-e BC); acc., -[e] fle, 1795 ACD (-e B); acc., sighte, 294 f (syȝth C, sight D) (: lyghte *inf.*); acc., -[e], 4974 f AD (-e B) (: eyen bryght[e] (-e D) : lyght[e] *inf.* (-e BD)); for, -[e] ye¹, 1754 ABC (D †); from . . . sighte, 6998 f (-t CD) (: myghte *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* : lyghte *inf.*); with sighte, 2380 f (-t CD) (: myghte *pret. subj.* 3 *sg.*).

sight, (i.) acc., 5375 f CD² (: knyȝt C, sighte *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* D).

(ii.) by, 1787 (*acc.* D, seyth C); vpon, 7735; in, 5603; nom., foresight, 5623. [of that sight † that, D 3338.] [Var. C syȝt, siȝt, syȝte; D siȝt.]

sleue (A.S. sléf, L.W.S. slýf, but slýfan *pl.* occurs as a variant in Benedict.-r., ed. Schröer, p. 89), 6065 f (: preue *inf.*), 7406 f (: releue *inf.*).

sleyghte, sleighte (O.N. sléggð, L.^b slehþe, P. Pl.^b sleighte,^c sleithe), 2597 (-[e] BC, -[e] for D), 6158 (sleyt[e] C, sleyghtes D); -e, 6121 (-t D, flyȝt † C), 6123 AB (sleyȝt C), 7136 (sleight D). [Var. B sleughte; C sleȝte.]

slouthe (A.S. sláwð, L. slauðe), 2044 f, 2093 f, 2221 f, 2585 f, 3738 f, 7947 f (-th D); -e, 1371, 3777 (-th D).

Rhyme words.—routhe (2093, 2221, 2585, 3738, 7947), trouthe (2044, 2221, 2585, 7947).

snare (A.S. snearh, but also sneare, Sweet, 4), 507 f (sware † B) (: care *n.*), 663 f (: care *n.* : bare *pred. adj. sg.*), 7111 f (: care *n.*).

sonde (A.S. sand, sond, L. sonde), 7735 f (: in honde); -e, 3334 (-d BD, [or] soun C). [in goddes sonde, 4207 D, *is error for hond.*]

sorwe³ (A.S. sorg, sorh, L. sorhþe, seorwe, O. serrþe), 390 (C †),

¹ "Right for the firste syght[e] ye parde."

² This stanza is not in AB.

³ O'd-style figures indicate that D has *sorow* (before vowels, *sorȝe*); an asterisk indicates that B has *sorw*.

485 f ABC, 527 (-ow B), 563 C, 665 (*pl.* BD), 706 (sorowe B), 860 f, 945 f, *1491 f, 1930¹, 1951, 2049 f, 2184 f, 2594, 2608 f (sorwyn C), 2694, 2955, 3147 (-es AB), 3189 † A, 3715 (-[e] B), 3730 f, 3900 f, 3928 (sorw₃ *dissyl.* D), 3935 (-[e] D), 4312 f, 4369 (-[e] B), 4760 f, 4816 C (*pl.* ABD), 5033 (-[e] B), 5091, 5094 (-[e] B), 5133 (-[e] B), 5199 C, 5422 (-[e] B), 5446 (-[e] B, -yn C), 5465 (-e † to C), 5568 ABD, 5587 (-[e] B), 5590 BC (*pl.* AD), 6107 f, 6278 f, 6376 f, 6499 C (*pl.* ABD), 6567 D (*pl.* ABC), 6628 † C, 6629 C (*pl.* ABD), 6652 (-[e] B), 6658 f, 6769 f, 6813, 6923 ACD (-es B), 7017 f, 7049 f, 7070, 7086 f (destresse † B), 7238 f, 7308 f, 7649 (C †), 7695, 7888 f, 8026 f.—sorwe, 1 (sorowe B), *108 AC, 530 (-owe BD),² *579, 582 † A, 641 (-ow ne D, -we or † in C), *712, 3640, 3742 (so[r]w B, sorw(is) C, sorow at D), *3810 (-e hire C), 3932 (sorw₃ D), 4527, 4759, 5021 AB (-owe D); *5171, 5436 (-ë † of C), 5438 † C, *5458, 5482, *5498, 5503 (sorw D), *5541 (wo C), 5561, 5586 (-e † for D), 5743, 6226 (-e 3e B, -ë that C), 6380, 6480, (-ë pese? C, D *dub.*), 6540, 6561, 6712, 6821 (-yn † C, -ë † vpon D), 6895 (-ë doum C), 6921, 6976, 7559 (-es † and B), *7605³, 7927 (-yn † of C), 7930 A(?)BC (-e † for D), 8102, 8107, 8144; sorwe he, 7012 (-e † on-to C), 8089; -e hym, *7405 AD (C?).—sorw[ë] doubleth, 5565 AB (-ë CD). [sorwe † to, 5092 AC, 5465 C (-ë AB); sorwe gan, 546 C (-owe D), *real* wo; sorow, 705 † D (*pl.* AC, -[es] † B), 3747 † D (*pl.* ABC); sorwë † of, 5791 C; sorwyn † brynge, 3768 C.] [Cf. sorwful, -w[e]ful, § 49, n. 3.]

Rhyme words.—morwe (*everywhere*), to borwe *n.* (2049, 2608, 8026), borwe *inf.* (485, 7086).

soule, sowle (A.S. *sáwol*, gen. *sáwle*, *sáule*, L. *saule*, O. *sawle*), 47 (B †), 1853 (hert[e] † D), 2944 (D †), 3768 AB (-[e] D), 4343 (D †), 4967, 4979⁴, 5134, 5361, (-e ful C, hertë A), 5836, 6026, 6061, 6155, 6216 (-e synke CD), 6685, 6942 (-e † me? D), 7913.—So that his sowle herę sow[l]ë (soule BC, sowle D) folwen myghte, 5849.—soule, 2723 (soul D, -ë brouzt C),⁵ 3187 (soul D; C †), 3433 (soul D), 4161 (-ë brought E; C †), 4441 (-e † to D), 5438 (sorwe † C), 6058 (soul B, -ë † schal CD),⁶ 6362, 7035, 7386 (-ë † vp C). [sowlę † she, 7079 D.] [2819 (?), see p. 17, foot-note.]
speche (A.S. *spræc*, *spréc*, L.W.S. *spæc*, L. *spæche*, *speche*, O. *spæche*), 702 f, 884 f, 1142 f, 1333 f, 1582 f, 1657 f, 2154 f, 2506 f, 3237 f,

¹ All four MSS. defective (sor C).

² AC corrupt.

³ In B supply [i].

⁴ AB too short; C †; D apparently right.

⁵ soule I-brought AB, soul y-brought D (cf. 4161).

⁶ sowle-is A, soul-is B.

3352 C, 3426 f, 3598 f, 4179 f, 4352 f, 4552 (D †), 4628 f, 5117 f, 5813 f, 6136 f, 6470 f, 6751 f, 7161 f, 7218 f (spech D), 7494 f, 7898 f, 7973 f, 8079 f (spech D), 8162 f, 8217 f; -e, 327, 1107, 1119, 2276, 2370 (shame AB), 2685, 3138, 3301 CD, 3304 (spech C; D †), 4477, 4790 (D †), 7185, 7289 (-ē † a ? C); -e hym, 4911 (spech B). [Cf. specheles, § 49, n. 5.]

Rhyme words.—seche *inf.* (702, 884, 7161, 7494, 7898, 8079), *ind.* 3 *pl.* (2154), *subj.* 2 *pl.* (8217), eche *inf.* (702, 884, 4352, 6470), preche *inf.* (1142, 1582, 1657, 6136), beseche *in l.* 1 *sg.* (1333, 2506, 3237, 3598, 4179, 4352, 5117, 5813, 6751, 7494, 7973), *inf.* (3426, 4628, 6470, 7218), *inv. sg.* (8162), teche *inf.* (6136), leche (1657, 2154, 7898). [Var. BC speche.]

steuene (A.S. stefn, stemn, L. stef(e)ne, steuene, O. steffne), 4565 f (neuene B) (: heuene).

stounde (A.S. stund, L. stunde, O. stunnđ), 1060 f (-d D), 1079 f (-d D), 4537 f (-d D), 4738 f (-d D), 5287 f, 7818 f, 7865 f (7866 f C); stoundemele (A.S. stundmælum), *adv.*, -e, 7037 ABD (stormyal † C). [stound, 5256 † D.]

Rhyme words.—founde *inf.* (1060), found *p.p.* (5287), wounde *n.* (1079, 4537, [5256 D,] 5287, 7865), grounde (4738, 7865), expounde *inf.* (7818). [Var. A stonde (5287); B stownde.]

strengthe (A.S. strengðu, strengð, L. strengþe, strenðe, O. strenneþe), 1345 f (strenghte B, strenthe C); strengththe, 7853 f (strenthe C, strength D). (Both rhyme with *lengthe*, *lengthe*.)

strete (A.S. stræt, strét, L.^a stræte, stret,^b stræt, O. stræte), 2271 f, 2312 f, 4723 f, 5591 f; -e, 5288; -e he, 1701 (*line om.* C).—stretø se, 1697 (-e † tho D); -e lokyng, 2100.

Rhyme words.—ete *pret. ind.* 3 *pl.* (*inf.* D) (2271), y-bete *p.p.* (2312), grete *def. adj.* (2312), grete *adj. pl.* (4723), trete *inf.* (4723), swete *roc.* (5591), bete *inv. pl.* (5591).

synne (A.S. synn, L. dat. acc. sunne, O. sinne), 824 f (-n D), 1937 f (-n C), 3755 f (-n CD), 5423 f, 6244 f (-n C); -e, 556.

Rhyme words.—inne *in* (824, 1937, 3755, 5423), wyne *inf.* (824, 6244), I gynne *ind.* (1937), twynne *subj.* 1 *sg.* (5423).

throwe (A.S. þræg, L. þrowe, O. þrazhe), 1772 f (throw D), 2740 f, 5046 f, 7824 f (trowe B).

Rhyme words.—lowe *adv.* (1772), knowe *inf.* (2740, 7824), ouerthrowe *inf.* (5046), *p.p.* (7824).

trouthe, trowthe (A.S. tréowð, tréowðu, L. treouðe, O. trowwþe), 450 † D, 584 f, 770 f, 1409 (-[e] B), 1435 f, 1575 f, 1750 f, 1927, 2043 f, 2223 f, 2366 f, 2588 f (-th B), 2962 f, 3624¹, 3805 (-e † y D), 4354 f, 6139 f, 6153 f, 6272 f, 6334 f, 7364 f, 7749 f, 7949 f, 8042 (-[e] † D), 8049 f; -e, 676, 691 (-e † wolde C), 899

¹ trouthe plyght A, -e I plighte (i. e. i-plight) B, -e y-plight D, treuthe plyzt C.

(-th B),¹ 988, 1047, 1054 (D †), 1245,² 1364, 1591, 2168 (-th B), 2282, 2447, 2975 (-th B), 3005, 3478 (-th B), 3834, 3953, 4071, 4139, 4228, 6311 ABC,² 7418 ACD, 7521, 7777 (hertes † pete C), 7798, 7980, 8034 (-th B), 8070, 8141; -e here (*poss. sg.*), 2771 (-th B); -e here (*dat.*), 5107 ABD; -e he, 8039; trouth † hold, 2168 D; trouthe the, 1255 (heed D); -e but, 831 (-e C) (cf. 2771 † B, 6311 † D, 7418 † C).—vntrouthe, 7461 f (ontreuthe C, vntrought D); -e, 3826 (-th BD, ontreuthe C); -trothe, 7811 (-trouth BD, ontreuthe C). (Old-style figures indicate that D omits -e.)

Rhyme words.—routhe (*all but* 2043), slouthe (2043, 2223, 2588, 7949). [Var. BC treuthe; B trouhte, throuth; D trouthg.]

truwe, trewe (A.S. *tréow*, cf. also *trúwa*), truwe, 5974 f (trewe CD) (: in muwe (*mewe* CD)); truwe, 5976 (trewe C, treus † be D); trewe, 4621 ABC, 4720 (trew B, trews D).

tyde (A.S. *tíd*, L. *dat.* *tide*, O. *tid*), 947 f ([t]yde C) (: *abyde inf.*: *hide inv. sg.*), 5739 f (: *syde*), 7063 f (: *side*).—*meltid* || *that*, 2641 (*meel(i)-ted* B, *melē † that* C, *om. † D*); *tid* but, 2824 AC (*tyd* B, -ē † lost D); *tyd that*, 1228 C (*tyme* A, *tymē* BD).

wene (A.S. *wén*, *f.*; also *wéna*, -an, *m.*, Gn.; L. *wene*, *buten* (*wiluten*) *wene*, O. *wen*, *wiputen* *wen*), *withouten ony wene*, 6255 f (: *shene adj. def.*: *queene*).

while, whyle (A.S. *hwíl*, L. *while*, O. *whil*, *while*), 328 f, 718 f, 1353 f, 1592 f, 2768 f, 2892, 3618 f (*wyse † C*), [3919 † f CD,] 3920 f, 4663 f, 4922 f, 5366, 6764 f, 7245 f, 7638 f; -e, 2684, 2941 (*whil(y)* and A), 3292 (*whiche † B*), 3336 (*wise † D*), 5781, 7291; -e he, 3380 (*Ther while he* AB, *The while he* CD) [, 7289 D (*l. wight*)]; *whilē* || *which(e)*, 3277 AB (-*ö* *which* C, -[*ē*] *that* D).

Rhyme words.—*smyle inf.* (328, 1592), *bygyle inf.* (718, 1353, 4663, 4922, 6764, 7245), *ind. 3 pl.* (7638), *wyle* (718, 1353, 3920), *gyle* (3618), *affyle inf.* (2768), *myle* (6764). [Var. B. *qwhile*, 5781, *qwyle*, 6764.]

Note.—As adverb,—*whil* (without sounded -e) (O. *whil*): cf. 468, 536, 3016, 5167, 5339, 5745, 5925, 6048, 6326; for *while*, cf. 315 AB (*whilys*? C), 536 D, 5167 D, 5339 D, 6326 D; *while* he, 5745 BD.—536 C, 6048 D, 6326 A, should be emended so as to keep *whil*.

wounde (A.S. *wund*, L. O. (*obl.*) *wunde*), 858 f (-d D), 1081 f (-d BD), 1241 f (-d D), 4539 f (-d D), 5257 f, 5289 f, 7866 f (D †; 7865 † f C).

Rhyme words.—*grounde n.* (858, 7866), *stounde* (1081, 4539, 5257 † D, 5289, 7866), *bounde p.p.* (858), *y-founde*, *founde p.p.* (5257 ABC, 5289), *the secunde* (-ou-) (1241), *abounde inf.* (1241). [Var. C. *wonde*.]

wrathe, wratthe, wraththe (A.S. (N.) *wræð(ð)o*, L. *wraððe*, *wræððe*, O. *wraþpe*), 6054 (*wreth[e]* B, *wrethe* C), 6510 (*wreth[e]* BD,

¹ In C insert [*by*].

² Read *al[te]* (*aH[ce]*) in 1245 CD, 6311 ABC.

wrethe C)¹; -e, 7323 (wrath B, wrethe C, wreth D), 7619 (wrethe C, wrath D), 8163 (wrath BD); -e hast, 933 (wrothe D, wrethū † C). [wrethe, 2952 † C.]

wreche (A.S. *wræc ultio, miseria*, L. *wreche*, O. *wræche*), -e, 1869 (-ë † is D), 7253 (wrech D; C †), 7259.

Note.—In 1869 *wreche* = misery; in the other two cases it = vengeance.

yerde (A.S. *gerd*, W.S. *gierd*, *gyrd*, L. *zerd*, *zeord*, O. *zerrde*), 740 f (yerd D), 1239 f (-d D), 2512 f (*zerd* D), 3909 f (*zerd* D); -e, 257 (wand † that D), 2979 (-ë † eke D).

Rhyme words.—answer(e)de *ind.* 3 *sg.* (740), ferde *subj.* 3 *sg.* (740, 1239), herde *ind.* 3 *sg.* (3909), *subj.* 3 *pl.* (2512). [Var. BCD *zerde*.]

youth (A.S. *geoguð*, Ps. *iuguð*, L. *zuzcðe*), 975 f (*zouth* BCD) (: *kouth* *subj.* 3 *sg.* : *nowthe*).

§ 10. Nouns in -yng, -ynge.

I. The following list includes such nouns (including "gerunds") in -yng as rhyme with an infinitive in the *Troilus*. All the rhyme-words are recorded in each case. D almost always lacks -e in this ending, but I have not taken the superfluous trouble to register this lack of -e. Minute varieties of spelling are also disregarded.

calkulyng (kalkelyng C, kalkelyng D), 71 (: bryng).

compleynyng, 4903 (: spryng).

comyng, 3801 (: bryng), 6866 (-g C) (: syng).

helpyng, 853 (he[l]pyng A) (: syng).

konnyng, 2943 (: bryng).

sobbyng, 5796 (wepyng C) (: bryng).

taryng, 7137 (: bryng : arguyng *ptc.*).

tellyng (-e B), 743 (in his counseyl tellyng) (: spryng).

tydyng, 2036 (: syng).

wytyng, 1321 (wet- C) (: ryng : lyuyng *ptc.*).

II. Here follow all the other cases of nouns in -yng in rhyme.

Where no note is added, the rhyme-words are other nouns in -yng; an asterisk indicates that the rhyme-word is a present participle (or participial adjective) in -yng; an asterisk and an old-style verse-number indicate that one rhyme-word is a noun in -yng, the other a present participle.

byfallyng (-e B), 5680 f.

cherysshynge (cherisyng B, -isyng C, -issying D), 6196 f.

chetyrnyng (chit- B), 1153 f.

compleynyng, *1645 f.

¹ That half so loth yowre wraththe (wreth BD, wrethe C) wolde (wold B) deserue.

comynge, 3038 f.
 deyinge, 572 f (de[y]inge B).
 doying (-e B), 1119 f (: thyng D).
 dwellynge, *304 f.
 festenyng, *6818 f (feestyng B, festyng C, noon † thing D).¹
 forseynge, 5651 f.
 guerdonyng, 1477 f (-g CD).
 gynnyng, *377 f ((by)gynnyng D).
 langwysshynge, 569 f (-guyssinge B, -guissyng C).
 louynge, 1476 f (-g CD).
 lyuyng, 197 f.
 meuyng, *285 f (-n- B, menyng C, mevyng D).
 preyinge, 571 f (-g C).
 purueyinge, *5648 f (-ueynge B, -uy[i]nge D), *5677 f.
 semynge, *284 f.
 shewynge, 5678 f (sh[e]w- B).
 slomeryng, 1152 f (-berryng B, slombryng? D).
 taryng, *7938 f (-g CD).
 warnyng, 3037 f.
 weddyng, 6198 f (-g CD).
 wenyng, 5654 f.
 weymentyng, 1150 f.
 wityng, 5653 f (wet- B, weting D).
 wonderyng, 1120 f (-[e]ryng B, wondur † thyng D).
 wynnyng, 199 f.

goynge, 5596 f (: whan I hym bryng).
 heriynge, 2890 f (-y[i]nge B) (: bryng *subj.* 3 *sg.*).
 in-comynge, 2393 f (: bryng *ind.* 1 *sg.*).
 rekenyng, 2725 f (-g CD) (: bryng *subj.* 2 *pl.*).
 taryng, 2727 f (-g CD) (: bryng *subj.* 2 *pl.*).

Note the exceptional rhyme in,—

byfallyng, 5738 f (-e B) (: thing : comynge *ptc.*).

III. Nouns in *-ynge*, *-yng*, before consonants. (D has almost always *-yng*.)

[abettyng, 1442 D (*l.* abet).]

bygynnyng, 1876 (beginnyng † oftyng C).

comynge, 4803 (-e [the] C).

dorryng, 7200 (duryng B, doryng (to) C, doying † D).

¹ BC one syllable short : *l.* festenyng.

fallyng, 5683 (-e BD).

faÿlyng, 921 (-e B, D †).

gòyngē, 5959; goyngē, 6006 † C (gòing † D, wèndyng A, wèndyngē B).
haùkyngē, 4621.

kèpyng, 200 (-e BC, D †).

kònyngē, 662 (cùnnyng D, cùnnyng is † C); connyng, 1089 G
(con(i)yngē B, C *cut out*, comyngē † A, comyng † D).¹

làngurýngē, 6405 † C.

lèsyng, 3672 (-e B, lesyng(is) C).

likýngē, 4315 † C.

lòkyng, 173, 293 (-e BC), 8183 (-e B).

lòuyngē, 1144 B (A † *om.*, of louē so † D).

màkyng, 8152 (-e B).

mènyngē, 7510 (-g [now] C).

preÿsyng, 2674 (-e B).

ràueshýng, 62 (ràuysýngē B, ràvysshýng D).

sittyng, 5700 (-e B), 5704 (-e BD).

tùrnyng 856 (-e C, tornyngē B).

wèndyng, 6006 (-e B, goyngē † C, gòing † D).

wèpyngē, 5199 (sòrwē † C), 5548 (-e B, -e hym † C).

The cause of his comyngē (-yng D) thus answerede, 2187 (causē?).

IV. Before vowels and -h (vowel, unless otherwise noted).

àkyngē, 1081.

auÿsyng here, 2999 (-e B, avisid † D, and send † C).

bùryngē (*dissyl.*), 7862 (brennyngē C, buryng (*dissyl.*) D).

callkulyngē, 6060 (kakelyng † C, kalkelyng D).

chaungyng, 3391 (-e B, schaungyng C); -e, 4893 (eschaungē of? D);
schaungyng, 5060 C † (lòkyng AD, lòkyngē B).

còmnyng, 3763; -e is, 5169; -yng, 3754 (-e B); còmnyngē hom, 7743
(-e à-zen † C); còmnyng into, 4294 (-e BC).

dàwyng, 4308 (dawnyngē BD).

dissimulyngē, 7976 (dishomblyngē † C).

dòyng, 1125 (-e B, dèlyng D).

drècchyng, 3695 (-e B).

èsyng, 2372 (-e BC).

fàllyngē, 5723.

fècchyng, 7253 (-e B, fechyng hom † C, fètting of D).

fèlyng, 3932 (-e BD, fýllyng † C); fèlyng han, 4175 (-e B, -g haue E).

¹ connyng Digby III. 4912, konnyng E, commyng Cp. Durh., comyngē John's, comyng Phillipps MS.

- flèmyng, 3775 (-e B).
 gòyngē how, 5764.
 gỳdyng, 7006 (-e BC, guiding D).
 gỳnyng hath, 1756 (bygyunyng † D).
 hármyng, 2225 (-e BC).
 hèlpyng, 857 (hèlyngē B, hèlyng D).
 konnyng, 2164 (-e B, cunnỳngē C, cunnỳng D); kònnyngē, 3841
 (knòwyngē C, kunnỳng D); kònnyng hem, 83 (knòwyngē him B,
 kuòwyngē hem C, kunnyng[ë] hem † D); kònnyngē hadde, 7229
 (knòwyngē C, konnyng † and † D).
 kỳssyng, 4245 (-e BC).
 lànghwysshỳng, 529 (-e B, -guissyng C, -guysshyng D).
 lòkyng, 182 (-e B, -ỳng and † D), 1619 (-e B), 5020 (-e B), 5060 (-e B,
 schaungyng C); -e, 4790 (tèllyngē † C, lòkyng † D).
 lòuyng, 55 (-e B), 1003 (-e BC); -e, 8196; -e how, 3.
 màkyngē, 3131 (-g [of] avaunt[es] D).
 mèd[e]lyng, 4829 † A (mèdlyngē B, mèdelyng C, mèdlyng D).
 mètyng, 4554.
 pàrtyng here (*eam*), 4370 (-e BC).
 pòuring, 4302 (-e B, -e [in] D).
 prèysyng, 3057 (-e B, -g [of] D, [in] preisyng C).
 pursùing, 2829 † C.
 rauçsshyngē, 7258 (to rauysshēn any B, to rauych ony C, to rauissh
 any D)¹; rauysshỳng, 5210 (rauaschyng C).
 [rehètyng †, 3191 D.]
 rèsònỳngē, 5708.
 scòrnyng, 105 (-e C, scornē † of D).
 sèyngē, 5085.
 shrỳkyng, 6745 (schrychyngē B, strichingē C, shrikyng D).
 sỳkyngē he, 724 (sighyng D).
 slòmberỳng, 6609 † C (pl. ABD).
 slỳnging of †, 2026 C.
 sỳttyng, 5696 (-e B).
 tàryngē (*dissyl.*) of, 7800 AC (tàrryngē B, tàryng (*dissyl.*) D).
 tèllyngē, 4790 † C.
 tìtèrỳng, 2829 (-e B, tìtèryng C) [perh. tìtèrỳng in AD, -èrỳngē in C].
 tòknyngē, 5532 (-g CD, tòknyngē B); -e herte, 5441.
 twỳnnyngē, 5965 (-g CD).
 vỳsìlyngē, 1126.

¹ Read *hen[ne]s forth* in AD.

wäggyngē, 2830.

wālyng, 408 (wailynge B, wele † and C, weylyng D).

wēndyng, 6098 (-e B, wȳndyng C), 6292 (-e B).

wēpyng, 701 (-e BC), 5603 (-e BCD); -e, 6439 (-ing? D), 7872 (C †).

whȳsprynge, 2838 (whisperyngis † C, whistryng † D).

wrytyngē, 7732 (at (the) wrytyng C); wrȳtyng, 8157 (-e B).

Observe,—

comȳngē ānd, 4517 AB (-e & ek C, -g and eke D). And compare,—
comȳngē || thus, 2187 ABC (-[e] D); or, the causē of his cōmyngē (†).

§ 11. The following feminine nouns with long stem-syllables do not take -e in the *Troilus* (cf. Child, § 17):

(i.) ā-stem,—*forward*; (ii.) i-stems,—*bench*, *might*, *plit*, *sped*, *thrift*, *wight*, *won*, *world*; (iii.) consonant stems,—*bok*, *nyght*, *ok*. In the case of *bench*, the example is not decisive.

Note.—*Candele* (A.S. *candel*, *candel*, f.) is always dissyllabic,—*candele to*, 3983 (-del D, *cardele* † C); -*dele* in, 3701 (-dett D). For *sholder* (A.S. *sculdor*, f., m., -*ru*, n. pl., see R. von Fleischhacker, *Trans. Philol. Soc.* for 1888-90, p. 241), cf. 2756. For *cedre*, see § 29; for *hound*, see § 13; for *helpē*, see § 9. *Mytk*, 2011 f C, is an error for *bon*.

bench (A.S. *bene*), on *bench hym*, 1176.

bok, *book* (A.S. *bóc*), 4679 f (-e D) (: *forsook pret. ind. 3 sg.*), 6654 f (-e BD) (: *wook : took both pret. ind. 3 sg.*). Before consonants,—1095, 1180, 1189 (*metre* ?), 1196, 4660 (-e D), 4688, 6948 (*bouē* † D); 8149 (-e D), 8152 (-e D); before vowels,—1171 (AB *too long*), 3345 (-e B, -e D †). O moral Gower this boke I directe, 8219 ABD.

forward (A.S. *foreward*), 6860.

might, *myght*, (A.S. *mi(e)ht*, *meht*, L. *mihte*, O. *mihht*, acc. dat. *mihhte*), (i.) nom., 2058 [4599 † C (pl. ACE)], 7782 AD, 7801 f, 8117 f (-e B); acc., 33 (-e D), 227 f, 1264 f, 1718 f, 2425 f (-e B), 3354 f, 3496 f, 4247, 5148 f (-e B), 5281 f, 5602, 6478 f, 7046 f, 7229 f, 7284 f, 7464 f; with, 1419 f, 1954 f, 2083 f, 2637 f, 2770 (-t alone † D), 3020 f, 3278 f (-e B), [3843 † f C,] 6149 f, 6438 f (-e B); by, 5210 f (*nyght* B)¹; of, 4618 f, 6435, 7201 f; to, 6491 f (-e B); for, 7322; through, 6200 f (-e B), 7613 f (-e B); emforth, 3841 f (emfor[th] C, after † D). (ii.) nom., 1260, 2849, 2851, 2870 (-t † hym D); acc., 8067 (-e B); with, 3085, 8084 (m. [y]serued B, *herte* D); by, 6708²; on, 5857 (*miȳt(es)* D); thorough, 2402; acc., *myght hire*, 45 (m. *their* D).—*thourgh myghte*, 5778 f AB (-t CD) (: *nyght nom.*).

¹ In A read *by* for *my*. ² Dele (*de*) in C; insert [*i*] in B.

Rhyme words.—knyght (227, 1264, 1419, 1718, 1954, 3020, 3278, 3841, 5281, 6149, 6200, 6478, 7201, 7229, 8117), nyght (2083, 2425, 2637, 3278, 3354, 5778, 6491, 7046, 7284, 7464, 7801, 8117), wyght *n.* (1264, 4618, 5210, 6200, 6438, 6491, 7201, 7229, 7613), dight *p.p.* (4618), vpright (1419), aryght (2083, 3496), a-noon right (2637), vnright *n.* (5210), right *pred. adj. sg.* (3841), right *adv.* (7613), lyght *pred. adj. sg.* (5148, 6438 7046), bryght *adj. post.-pos.* (7284), byhight *p.p.* (7464). [Var. B 33 myght; C myzt, myth 1954; D miȝt.]

nyght (A.S. neht, Midl. also næht, E.W.S. nicht, L.W.S. niht, L. niht, dat. nihte, O. nihht), (i.) nom., 2075, 3640, 4253, 4508, 5776 f, 6907 f, 7044 f, 7282 f (C †); *time*, 1174 (D †), 2423 f (-e B), 3071 f, 3281 f, 3356 f (-e B), 3476, 3552, 3756 f (-e B), 4157, 4399, 5175 f (-e B), 5315, 6494 f, 7466 f, 7543,¹ 8118 f (-e B); acc., 7022 f (nygh(t) B); nyght by nyght, 7003 f (n. & n. D); next, 944; to, 2081 f (into, D), 3511, 7532,² 7799 f; on, 4021 (lyght † B; of, C); vpon, 7148 f; in, 6826 f (-e B); ouer, 2634 f; of, 2052 f (thour, C), 4488 f; after, 5083 f; a fourtēnyght, 6697 f (-e B, fortenyȝt C); in fourtēnyght, 5989 (in † fortune nyȝt C); syn mydnyght,³ 3444 (tul, D).—(ii.) nom., 1983; acc., 3183; voc., 4271; *time*, 3379, 3392, 7156; at, 7559 (at n. with C); by, 452; ouer, 2598 (to †, D²); at n. he, 2625; at n. homward, 4711 (at n. † thei D).—by nyghte, 7065 (-t BCD), 7517 (-t BCD).

Rhyme words.—myght, myghte *n.* (2081, 2423, 2634, 3281, 3356, 5776, 6494, 7044, 7282, 7466, 7799, 8118), wyght (3071, 3756, 5083, 5175, 6494, 6697, 7148), knyght (3281, 3756, 4488, 6697, 8118), light *n.* (6907, 7003), *pred. adj. sg.* (7044), bryght *adj. post.-pos.* (2052, 6826, 7282), right *acc.* (5175), aryght (2081), anoon right (2634), as lyne right (3071), vnright *adv.* (7022) yhight *p.p.* (6907), byhight *p.p.* (7466). [Var. C nyȝt (nyȝ, 4167); D night, niȝt.]

ok (A.S. *ác*), 2465 f (ooke B, okes † D) (: *strok n.*); 2420 (okę D), 2474 (okę D̄). [Var. B ook].

plit, plyt (A.S. pliht, *m. f.*, L. plihht, plihhte, O. plihht; influenced by O. Fr. plite), (i.) 1159 (-ę BD), 1797 f (-e BD), 3881 f, (-e BCD), 3981 (-ę B), 4219 f (-e BE), 4393. (ii.) 2816 (-e D), 3088, 4322 (place † D); plyt he, 2823 (-e he D).

Rhyme words.—delit (delite) *n.* (1797, 4219), despit (despite) (1797, 3881, 4219). [Var. BCDE plit(e); BD plyt(e); C plyȝt, plizt; D plizt.]

sped, speed (A.S. spéd spéd, L.^a ispede, ^bspede, O. sped), s. bé, 1036 (speedę B, speedę D); s. fro, 1094 (-ę B, -e herafter D); s. al, 17 (spedę † though D).

thryft (O.N. þríftr), (i.) 3713 (-ę B), 4091 (-ę BD, thrif C), 6292 (-ę BD). (ii.) 1667, 3789 ([good] th. A); th. haue, 1932 (C †)⁴, 2772

¹ C, metre ?

² D, metre ?

³ Supply [*in*] in A.

⁴ In A supply [*so*].

(C †); th. he, 2568.—v̄nthrift that he, 5093 BC (v̄nthryf [that] he A). [Var. BCD thrift, BD thriſte.]

wight, wyght (A.S. wiht, wuht, wyht, *f.*, *n.* (Siev. § 267, n. 3), L. wiht, whit, O. wilht, P. Pl.^b wyght,^c wight, wiht, wiȝt), 101 f, 163 f, 1072 f, 1265 f ABC, 1535 f, 3068 f, 3621 f (-e B), 3754 f, 4126 f, 4617 f, 4635 f, 5070 f, 5085 f, 5108 f, 5178 f, 5213 f, 5406 f, 6197 f, 6287 f, 6435 f, 6493 f, 6527 f, 6694 f, 6718 f, 7150 f, 7198 f, 7226 f (-e B), 7478 f, 7611 f (-e B), 7710 f, 7918 f. *Before consonants*: 13 (-e a † D), 534 (-e D), 685 (wygh A, thinge B), 692, 1031 (nonwyt † C), 1058, 1121 AB (D †), 1273, 1432, 1613, 1655, 1881, 1916, ABC (D †), 2079, 2120, 2663, 2945, 3074 (man D¹), 3213, 3300, 3338 (wit † C, sight † D), 3445, 3517 (-e B), 3534 (man CD), 3598 (hem not † C), 3602, 3631 (whit C²), 4633, 4947 (-e D, which † C), 5027, 5053 (wit † C), 5914, 6825, 6923, 6988, 7242 (-e B), 7730, 7798, 8208.—*Before vowels*: 268, 382,³ 690,⁴ 1372,⁵ 1481, 2033, 2739,⁶ 2869, 3275 (iche in † CD), 3586, 5917 (wyȝt his † C, wight his D), 6851, 7290 (w. his BD, with † C.—*Before h*: w. hadde, 500 (D †); w. hath, 2669 (men have † D), 6736; w. he, 7289 (C om. † (*hiatus*), while † he D).

Rhyme words.—knyght (163, 1072, 1265, 1535, 3621, 3754, 5406, 6197, 6694, 7198, 7226, 7918), nyght (3068, 3754, 5085, 5178, 6493, 7150), fourtenyght (6694), myght (1265, 4617, 5213, 6197, 6435, 6493, 7198, 7226, 7611), ryght *n.* (4126, 4635, 5108, 5178, 7710), *adv.* (101, 7611), as lyne right (3068), aright (5070, 7478), vnright *n.* (1535, 5213), light *n.* (5406), *pred. adj. sg.* (5070, 6435, 6718, 7478), bright *adj. indef.* (163, 6527), plyght *p.p.* (3621), hight *p.p.* (5108, 6287), dight *p.p.* (4617), byhyght *p.p.* (6718). [Var. B wyȝt, witht, wygth, wyth; C wyȝt, wiȝt; C^e whiȝt; D whiȝt.]

won (O.N. v̄án), ther was non other won, 5843 f (-e BD) (: noon *pron.*: agon *p. p.*).

world (A.S. woruld, W.S. weorold, L. weorld, weorlde, O. weorelld), (i.) nom., 3264 (w. hit D), 3302 (wor[l]d C), 3318, 3481, 5052 (-e D), 5985 (-e BD, w. [ne] C), 7014 (-e D), 7196 (-e D),⁷ 8111 (-e D), 8204 (-e B); voc., 4868 AB (-e D); acc., 504 (-e D), 3215, 4272, 4593 (e † E), 5177 (C †, -e D), 5860 (-e D †)⁸; in, 1262, 1320, 2855 (wor[l]d A, wirk † D), 3132 (-e B)⁹, 5048 (-e BD), 5802 (-e D), 6308 (-e BD), 6805 (-e D), 7085 (-e D); out of, 41 (-e D), 5613 (-e BD); of, 1495; for, 1214 (-e B, wor[l]d C), 6099 (-e D), 8060 (-e D); thorough-out, 7425 (-e D, wo[r]ld B). (ii.) nom., 1573, 3370,

¹ Read in C, *wyzt was woȝd[ed]*.

² Supply [y] in D (*y-born*).

³ Supply [a] in A, [for] in D.

⁴ Supply [that] in D.

⁵ = person.

⁶ Supply [for] in AD.

⁷ D unmetrical.

⁸ CD read *in †*.

⁹ AC defective.

3392; voc., 211; acc., 1505, 4563, 5284 (-e D), 8180; in, 1378, 1383, 3167 (w. † now D); out of, 5442 (-ë gon D)¹; fro, 5831 (-e BD, wor[l]d was C); for, 4086 (wor[l]d A), 5961 (-e D), 5998 (-e D); in . . . w. here, 3678.—on of this world [the] beste y-preysed, 7836 A (worlde the best [i-]preysed B, world (-e DG) the (om. D) beste (best D) i-preysed(e) C).— world(e) (acc.) may, 4446 A (world BCD).

§ 12. Apocope of A.S. -n in nouns is found in the *Troilus* in the following words (cf. Child, § 15; ten Brink, §§ 203, 207):

morwe (A.S. morgen, *m.*, o-stem), *eue* (A.S. áfen, *n.*, *m.*, jo-stem), *game* (A.S. gamen, *n.*, o-stem), *mayde* (A.S. mægden, *n.*, o-stem), *kynrede* (A.S. cyn(n) + ræden, *f.*, jā-stem). Compare also *melle* (*mylle*) (A.S. mylen, myln, *m.*) and *fust* (A.S. fæsten, *n.*, jo-stem).

eue, *eeve* (A.S. áfen, éfen, *n.*, *m.*, L.^a æuen, ^b heue, O. efenn), 2386 f (euen : leue B), 3437 f, 6977 f, 7377 f, 7505 f (euene C : grene (*l.* -ue)); at, 3402 f, 6844 f; it wol neygh euën be, 7500 (euyñ CD); *time*, *eue*, 7088; euēñ and, 487 (eue BD, euyñ (?) C).

Rhyme words.—*leue noun* (2386, 3402, 3437, 6844, 6977, 7377), *bleue inf.* (6844), *to-cleue inf.* (6977), *by greue* (7505).

game (A.S. gamen, gomen, *n.*, L. gomen, gome, game), nom., [372 † f D,²] 868 f, 1123 (-ën B, -e D),³ 1732 f, 3968 f, 6225 f; acc., 5224 f; for, 3478 f (a-game BD, on g. C), 6127 f; of, 3926 f, 6783 f (fame † C); *lettē-game*, from, 3369 f (of, BC, of . . . let[tē]-game D).—*game*, acc., g. bygonne †, 3092 A (gamēn pleye B, -ë pleye C, game † to D).—*game*, nom., 4336 (gam B); acc., 2195 (gamyn in C); *bytwene*, 3096 (gam B); a *game*, 3490 (on g. C, a-game † that D), 3492 (on g. C)⁴ (cf. 3478 f).

Rhyme words.—*shame n.* ([372 D], 868, 1732, 3478, 3968, 5224, 6127, 6225), *name n.* (6127, 6225), *tame adj.* (3369), *frame inf.* (3369), *to blame* (3926, 6783), *defame inf.* (5224).

kynrede (A.S. cyn(n), *n.*, + ræden, *f.*, cf. hús-ræden, mæg-ræden, etc., P. Pl.^c of kynredene, ^b kynrede), 7342 f (ken- C, kynred D) (: out of drede).

mayde (A.S. mægden, L.W.S. mæden, *n.*, L. maiden, maide, O. ma33denn, P.Pl. mayden, mayde), nom., 1965 f (: Criseyde : seyde

¹ world a-gon A; worlde gon B (*defective*); world i-gone C; worldē gon D.

² L. *game* (AB; C gaine †).

³ gamē shent A, -ën shente B, -e y-shent D.

⁴ In the last two examples the MSS. have no hyphens; 3490 ABD may then (possibly) be acc., 3492 ABD may (not improbably) be nom.

incl. 3 *sg.*); acc., maydē fre, 7838 (-en B); -e, nom., 7836 A(?) BCD; -e, of, 8232.—cf. mayden bright, nom., 166; mayden, acc., 1168.¹ [Var. BD maide; BCD maydyn.]

morwe, morwen (A.S. morgen, *m.*, tó morgen, dat. morne, L. morzen, morze, morwe, P.Pl. morwe, morwen), I. morwe, (i.) nom., 944 f² 1150, 4311 f (-owe D *late hand*), 7393 (-ën B); *time indicated*, 487 f (on, C), 2183 f, 4405, 7048 f, 7088 f, 8024 f; to, 861 f, 2518, 3227, 3731 f, 4759³ f, 6660 f, 7307 f, 7889 f; vnto, 6768 f; til, 6279 f (to = til C, til (to) m. D); on, o-, a-, 1490 f, 2573, 2606 f, 3265 (-ën B)⁴, 4397 [-[e] B], 6105 f, 6377 f, 7467; on half a m., 5970 f (morowe D); by, 2046 f, 7015 f (-owe D), 7237 f; of, 3903 f. [to morwe † wele, 7358 C (-e ABD).] (ii.) morwe, to, 2583, 3651 (to more A), 3690, 3692 (-yn C), 7114 (D †), 7358 ABD; on, a-, o-, 2179, 3394, 6882, 7555 (-yn C); on the -e he, 6649.—II. morwën,—the m. com, 2640 (-yn C), in a m. sterue, 3231 (on a m B, on a morwyn C).

Rhyme words.—borwe *inf.* (487, 7088), to borwe *dat.* (2046, 2606, 8024), sorwe (*everywhere*). [Var. morw, B 1490, 3651, 3690, 4311, 6768, 6882, 7015, 7114, C 2583, 4311.]

mylle? (A.S. mylen, myln, *m.*), myl[lē]-stones, 2469 AD (mylnē stones B, mellē stonys C^c, melnē stones G, milnē stones Cp.). [melle, C.T. 3921 f, 4240 f; mylle, 4019; millen, 4039: *Child*, § 16. So melle *nom.* (: the coldē welle, *The Former Age*, 6, Skeat, *Minor Poems*, p. 186. A.S. mylen-stán, P. Pl.^c mulle-stonea.]

fast (A.S. fæsten, *n.*, O. fasste), of, (*bef. vowel*) fast, 6733 (-e D).

Note.—With these may be compared *a-swoowne*, 3934 f (on s. C, in a swoun D) (: out of towne) (L. iswowen, iswozen, AS. geswógen *p.p.*).

§ 13. *Hond* (A.S. hond, *fem. u-stem*) takes -e in the dative phrases *on honde, yn honde*.

Note.—“Dativ auf -e bei consonantisch auslautendem Nom. liegt vor in *honde*, woneben *hond* gilt (A.E. *honda hond*):” ten Brink, § 209. It will be observed, however, that the dative in -e is used only in certain idiomatic phrases which had an existence independent in some measure of that of the noun (cf. *infra*. § 14).

honde (A.S. hand, hond, *f.*, L. hand, hond, dat. -e, O. hand, wipþ hannd, wipþe hande), on h., 3779 f (in hond D), 3996 f, 6066 f; yn h., 1288 f (hond D), 1302 f (on hende C, on hond D), 1562 f (-d D), 2307 f (holde † C), 3615 f (hand D), 7734 f, 7978 f, 8043 f. [acc., hondē † vp, 2287 A (*pl.* BCD); -ë † wrong, 5833 A (*pl.* BCD).]

¹ A remarkable succession of -en's: “herden a mayden reden.”

² Old-style figures indicate that D has *morow* (before vowels, -ow).

³ to=till.

⁴ morow whan D.

hond, (i.) acc., 1378 (-e D); by the h., [2266 f † C (hood AD, hoode B),] 4579 (-e D); of othere h., 8127 (-e B), cf. 2090; with rakel h., 1060; withouten h., 3030 (-e B).—(ii.) [voc., 4103 † B (bond AC, god † D);] acc., 6515 (-e BC), 7236 (-e B, haue † D); into hire h., 433; of here h., 2140 (-e B)¹; yn thyn h., 1046 (-e B); in goddes h., 4027 (-e B, sonde † D); on h., 4702 † A (in honde B, in hond D), 6428 AB (-e D); by the h., 1173, 6444 (-e B, -ē † sobirly D); by the h. here, 2689 (-e B).

Rhyme words.—stonde *inf.* (1302, 8043), vnderstonde *inf.* (2307, 3615), *p.p.* (6066, 7978), withstonde *inf.* (1288, 3780), ystonde *p.p.* (7978), fonde *inf.* (1562, 3996, 6066), bonde *p.p.* (2307), sonde *n.* (7734). [Var. D hand.]

§ 14. The following masculine and neuter nouns which in Anglo-Saxon end in a consonant in the nominative sometimes or always take an -e in one or more cases in the *Troilus*:

(i.) masculine o-stems,—*borh*, *botm*, *clúd*, *déuð*, *fér* (*fér*), *græf* (*graf*), *grunl*, *-háð*, *léap*, *heofon*, *pín* (m. ?), *prím* (m. ?), *scrín*, *sōð*, *stéger*, *steal(t)*, *téar*, *tún*, *-twist*, *weg*, *wer*; (ii.) neuter o-stems,—*cræt*, *fjr*, *gæt* (*geat*), *géar* (*gér*), *gód*, *hors*, *líf*, *los*, *sōð*, *témpel*, *-wíl*, *wolcen*; (iii.) neuter jo-stems,—*bed(d)*, *híew*; (iv.) neuter wo-stem,—*cnéow*; (v.) masculine i-stem,—*flyht*; (vi.) neuter i-stems,—*ge-fér*, (*ge*)*wiht*; (vii.) masculine consonant-stem,—*fót*. For *stere* gubernaculum, see § 2.

(a)² In some of these words the Chaucerian -e is clearly the Anglo-Saxon dative singular ending. So in *bedde*, *borwe*, *dethe*, *fere* (in *yfere*, see § 88), *fjre*, *hepe*, *horse*, *knowe*, *lyue*, *towne*, *yere*. For most of these a nominative or accusative in a consonant is found in the *Troilus* (thus, *bed*, *borw*, *bourgh*, *deth*, etc.), and in all of them the -e is confined to dative phrases with a preposition. Some of the words, to be sure, exhibit also forms without -e after prepositions that in Anglo-Saxon require the dative; but it will usually be found that such phrases as preserve -e are idioms in which the preposition has come to be very closely associated with the noun, whereas in the (presumably dative) phrases that show no -e the collocation of noun and preposition may be regarded as accidental or occasional. The distinction may be seen by comparing such

¹ Metre in AB? In D supply [*that*].

² The following paragraph was in type before Kluge's note in Paul's *Grundriss*, I, 900, met my eye.

idioms as *to bedde*, *abedde*, *to towne*, *on horse*, on the one hand, with *in his bed*, *on the bed*, *on here hors*, on the other. In the first class of examples there is no article or other word between the preposition and the noun: the phrases are units, and as such have an existence more or less independent of the individual history of their component parts (in *abedde*, *afyre*, *alyue*, *yfere*, we have actual compound words). It is easy to see how the Anglo-Saxon dative -e might be lost elsewhere but preserved in these petrifications. In the second class, on the contrary, we have no such unified phrase, and consequently no -e. The difference is well illustrated by *to dethe* (A.S. *tó déaþe*) and *to the deth*. In other words, *bed*, *deth*, etc., were not inflected in the dative by Chaucer. When he appears thus to inflect one of them, he is merely using an inherited petrification containing a dative (compare our use of *alive*, *whilom*). In a few cases, however, an article or pronoun is inserted between the preposition and the noun in these phrases, and the -e still preserved,—by analogy, no doubt. The following list of the phrases included under this present sub-head *a* will make this clear: *abedde*, *to (unto) bedde*, *vnto here bedde*, *to borwe*, *to dethe*, *afyre*, *on fyre*, *in the fyre*, *to the fyre*, *to hepe*, *on hors[e]*, *on knowe*, *on (vpon) lyue*, *alyue*, *yn al his lyue*,¹ *in towne*, *to towne*, *out of towne*, *in the towne*², *to yere*, *of fern[e]yere*. *On grounde* seems to be a similar survival, and stands over against *on a ground* (i.e. on a foundation): cf. *on the grounde*, *to grounde*, *to the grounde*, *through the grounde* (but *through the ground*, *vnder the ground*). *Gode* in *to gode* (A.S. *tó góde*) and the analogous phrases *sownen ynto gode*, *for gode*, *for the townes gode*, probably belongs here. (Cf. *on, yn honde*, § 13.)

(b) One is tempted to refer to *a* the following phrases: *yn stalle* (but cf. *into a litel oxes stalle*, C. T., E 207, *in an oxe stalle*, id., 398, and see Child § 14, ten Brink § 199 Anm.), *put to flyght[e]* (but cf. *to the flyghte*), *to were* (but cf. *to the sorowful were*, Parl. F. 138). In *on the stayre*, *adoun the stayre*, *downward a stayre*, we probably have to do with an inorganic -e, not with a dative-ending (cf. *He passeth but oo stayre in dayes two*, Compl. Mars, 129), and so perhaps in *with many a twyste* and *of wighte*. For *vpon a rore*, see § 15.

(c) The Chaucerian -e represents an Anglo-Saxon dative plural ending (-um, later -an, I. -en) in *sithe* (as, *an hundred sithe*, cf. *tyme*

¹ *Lyue* is also used in the adverbial phrases *my (his, al my) lyue* = during my (etc.) life (but see 4140). Cf. also the adverb *blyue*.

² But,—*in to town*, 4624 f.

and *tymes* in similar phrases, § 2, p. 3, above). So perhaps in *vnder fote* (see Zupitza, Guy, note on v. 598).

(d) Unmistakable inorganic -e's appear in the following words, in which -e appears in nominative, accusative, or vocative,—*clowde*, *feere*, *graue*, *hewe*, *pryme* (French influence), *pyne*, *tere* (but also *teer*),¹ *weye* (but also *wey*), *wyle*, *yate*. So also in the suffix *-hede* (but also *-hod*). Cf. also *carte*, *shryne*. In *botme*, *-me* represents Anglo-Saxon syllabic *m* (A.S. *botm*) (cf. ten Brink, § 199 Anm.). *Temple* represents A.S. *tempel*. In *heuene* (dissyllabic in all cases; before vowels, *heuene*) the MSS. vary between *-ne* and *-en* (*-yn*); for *walkene* (A) there are the variants *walken* (B) and *walkyn* (CD): ten Brink decides for *heven* and *welkne*, but admits *hevne* (§ § 199. 1, 203. 5, 219); but it cannot be regarded as settled whether Chaucer in such cases said *-nē*, *-ēn*, or *-n*, whatever he may have written.

(e) The -e in *the sothe* seems the result of an adjective analogy. But we find also *forsothe* (A.S. *forsōð*,—but *tó sōðe*, *tó sōðon*, *-um*); cf. *for a soth*.

Note 1.—Ten Brink's dictum that the nominative and accusative of neuter vowel stems have "tonloses e durch Analogiewirkung in der Mehrzahl der kurzsilbigen und einigen mehrsilbigen o-Stämmen" (§ 203. 5) gets slight support from the *Troilus*. See the evidence under *bak*, *col*, *god*, *gres*, *los*, *mot*, *path*, *ship* (§ 18, below). *Holē of*, 3443 C (*holē* D) is an error, and *losse*, *losse* are hardly significant. As to *col* (*cole*), *colc* is the only form recognized by ten Brink, except in composition, but *col* occurs.

Note 2.—For instances of an erroneous -e written, but not pronounced, see especially § 18 under *bor*, *brēt*, *cold(e)*, *dom*, *fend(e)*, *flood*, *foul(e)*, *frend*, *gold*, *harm*, *hed*, *hom*, *knyght*, *kyng*, *lord*, *noon*, *reed*, *ryng*, *thing*, *werk*, *wynd*. The following apparently sounded -e's are due to copyists' errors, and are easily corrected by a comparison of MSS.,—*lede* (A.S. *léd*), 1624 f D (: *rede* *adj. pl.*); *rymē holde*, *acc.*, 2932 C (rimes ABD); *with the strmē of*, 2971 D; *losē me*, 4751 D. For *geste* (?) see § 18.

Note 3.—For *thondre* see *thonder* (§ 18). For *angre* see § 19; for *shyvre*, *shyvre*, see § 15, n. 1. On the confusion between *-er* and *-re* cf. Child § 84 and *infra* §§ 15, note 1, 29. For *feucere*, *feuer*, see § 18.

bedde (A.S. *bed(d)*, *n.*, L. *bed*, *dat.* *bedde*, O. *bedd*, *i min bedd*, o *beddē*), *to bedde*, 3497 ([-*de*] D), 3533 ([-*de*] D), 5905; *vnto bedde*, 2032 f (& † *to bedde* C, *to her bed* D) (: *spedde pret. ind. 3 sg.*); *vnto herē bedde wente*, 7384 (*reste* C, *rest[e]* D); *a-bedde*, 2390 f (in b. C, a *bed* D) (: *spedde pret. ind. 3 sg.*), 3531 ([-*de*] D), 3535 ([-*de*] D), 4426 (in b. D), 4521 ([-*de*] D?).—*to bedde he*, 1147 (*bed* D), 6574; *a bedde*, 908 B (in b. C, in *bed* D, a *bedde* and [*make*] A); *a bedde half*, 1152.²

bed: (*i.*) *vpon his b.*, 1642 (*beddē* B); *in his, thi, the b.*, 2395

¹ "Wie es scheint gilt *tere* statt *teer*:" ten Brink, § 199 Anm. But *teer* occurs.

² *Pandare a-bedde* (*so* in ABCp.; a *bed* DG) || *half yn a (om. DG) slomeryngo* (*slomberryngo* B, *slombryng* DGCp.). Leaf cut out in C.

(-de C), 2602 (-de B), 3897 BCD (*line too long in A*), 6772 (-de D); into his b., 4377 (-de A); on here, the b., 5395 (-de D), 6657 (-de D); toward the b., 5017 (-de? B, D).—(ii.) from his b., 7899 (-de D); in here b., 5909 (-de BCD), 6709 (-de D, in . . . bed ben † C); in . . . bed he, 4457 (on his bedde he D); vpon . . . bed he, 4918 (-de BD); into bed hym, 3939¹ B (-de C, D?); vpon . . . bed hym, 4886 (-de D); in . . . bed hym, 7802 (-de D).

Note.—vpon his beddē side, 4896 D, is merely haplography for *beddēs side* (AB, beddys s. C).

borwe (A.S. borh, *m.*, L. borh), to, 2048 f (: morwe : sorwe), 2609 f (: morwe : sorwe), 8027 f (: morwe : sorwe).—And I thi borw (borough B, borow D) fy (*om.* C) no wyght doth but so, 1031.—And I yourē bourgh ne neuere shal for me, 1219 (borough B, borw C, borow D. [borow 2048 f D, 2609 f D.]

botme (A.S. botm, *m.*), in . . . b., 297 (botēme C, botme † hit D); to . . . -e, 1620 (botēme † C, botmē † it D). [Cf. botmeles, § 48, n. 5.]

carte (A.S. cræt, *n.*, L. carte, O. karrte, P. Pl. cart-whel), with, 6641 ABC; nom., farē carte, 7525 f (soory † carte D) (: arte = *art thou*); cart a-mys, acc., 7028 (-e BCD); cartē, acc., 4597 † B.

clowde (A.S. clūd, *m.*, *rock*; L. clude, *rock*), nom., 3275 f (cloude BCD) (: kowde *potuit*).—cloud, (ii.) nom., 1851 (-e BC, c. that † D), 1866 (-e BC, cloudis † in D), 4862 (-e BC, D †).—vnder cloud[ē] blak, 175 (-ē BC, vndur blak cloud so D †).

dethe (A.S. déaþ, *m.*, L. dæþ, deþ, etc., dat. deaþe, deþe, O. dæþ, dat. dæþ, dæþe). A dative in -e is preserved only in the phrase *to dethe* (A.S. tó déaþe),—do to dethe, 5439 f ABG (to the dethe D, don to deye C) (: til I vnshethe (conueye C †)); to dethē mote I smetē be, 2230 CD (-[e] BG, to deth[ē] mot I be smet[ē] A). But in *to the deth* no -e is preserved,—to the deth myn herte (= until death, etc.), 6937; vnto the deth myn, 606; vnto my deth to, 7348. [to deth † or, 2840 C (-e D), *and* into myn deth † in, 4934 C, of course prove nothing].—A doubtful line (in which however, we should no doubt read *deth*) is: That of his deth (-e D) ye be nought (not C, no thing D) to (for to CGCp.) wyte, 1470. In 4082 C, read *deth* (acc.) [*y-*]schape (deth is shapen A, deth y-shapen BD).

deth, everywhere else, whether before vowels or consonants (though D often adds -e, which, however, is never sounded, for

¹ A reads "he hym (i. e. he'm) into beddē caste."

3185 D should be corrected). Thus,—nom., 1286 (-e D), 2905 (-e D), 3913 † C, 5132, 5165, 5444 (-e D, they † C),¹ 5518 (day † C), 5571, 5859, 6257,² 7756; acc., 1046, 2980 (D †), 3185 (-ë † some D), 4419, 7750, 7776, 7920 (day † C), 8081; voc. and exclam., 4912, 5163 (-e D), 6568 (loude † he C); of (NOT = ex), 527,³ 799 f (-e D) (: breth acc.), 825 (-e his D), 1423 (-e D), 1518 (-e D), 2364 (-e D), 3913 (nom. † C), 4903 (C †), 5481 (-e D), 6109; from the, his d., 469 (D †; dethës = deth his C), 536,⁴ 1651 (-e hym D), 4085; with my, his, the d., 2952 (-e D), 3747 (-e he D), 5401⁵; neigh the d., 3204 (-e D); after the, youre, my d., 5415, 5900, 7054 (day † C), 8035 (day † C); toward my d., 7004 (C †); thorough my d., 7636; for his d., 8185 AB. [Var. BD deeth.]

fere, in *yfere* (var. *in fere*), see § 88.

fere, feere (A.S. *fēr, fēr, m.*), nom., 3425 f, 3986 f, 4183 f, 4527 f; acc., 3414 f, 3470 f, 3595 f, 4240 f; voc., 4163 f; for fere, 108 f, 768 f, 1388 (-[e] B), 1534 f (fer C), 5334 f, 5863 (B † om., fer[e] D), 5887 (fer † to D), 6025 f, 7272 f, 7966 f; in f., 726 f; yu this f., 1399 (-[e] B); in *swych* f., 3299 f; of (= gen.), 3932 f.—for fere, 801, 1855 (fer C), 6744 (fer D); for fere he, 875 (fer C); of the feer his, 6619 (fere BD, fer † the C).

Rhyme words.—were *eras* (4163) *erant* (3425, 3470, 3932, 4240), *esset* 726, 768, 3299, 3414, 3986, 4183, 6025, 7966), *essent* (4527, 5334), *nera* 3 *sing.* (4183), *enquere inf.* (4527), *ere, eere* (108, 726, 768, 1534, 3299, 3595), *tere n.* (3932), *there* (3414, 3425, 3470, 3595, 4163, 6025, 7272), *where* (4240).

flyghte (A.S. *flyht, m.*, L.^a *fluht*, dat. -e^b *fliht*, dat. -e, O. *fihht*), to the flyghte, 2324 f (flyzt C, flight D) (: *lyghte adj. pl.*); is put . . . to flyght[e], 1851 f (: the sonne shyneth bright (-e B)); put to flyght the, 1698 (fleyht C). [in flyzt as, 6121 † C.]

fote (A.S. *fót, L. fot*, dat. -e, O. *fot, o fot*, with *fote*), vnderfote, 1432 f (foot D) (: *bote : rote*); in his fot(e), 4034 f (foot B) (: *sot : I mot*); nom., *fot is*, 2049 (-e C).

fyre, fire (A.S. *fýr, n.*, L. *fur*, dat. -e, O. *fir*), in the fyre, 3553 f (fyr C); to the f., 3820 f (fere BCD); *afyre*, on fire, 2866 f, 4788 f (fere C), 4846 f (in f. A, on fere C), 5171 f (fere C), 7083 f, 7829 f; a fere, 229 f (a feere B, al fere C, ful † fere D).⁶ *fyr, fir*, (i.) nom., 4475 f (-e BCD), 5080 (-e BCD); acc., 445 (-e C, fere D), 2417 f (-e B, fere CD), 3326 f (-e BCD); the ner the fyr the, 449 (fere D).

¹ In 5444 D dele (*the*).

³ In C read *to* for *the*.

⁵ In C supply [*to*].

² but [if] deth me D.

⁴ In C supply [*that*].

⁶ In B insert [*herte*].

(ii.) nom., 436 (fere D †), 490 (-e B), 4780 (fer C, fere D); a-fyr, 3698 (-e BD, à † fere C); of, 6665 (-e D); nom., fyr he, 3267 (-e BD, fyr [he] C).

Rhyme words.—ire (2866, 7829), hire, here *n.* (4788, 5171), desire *inf.* (3553, 4846, 7083), *ind.* 1 *sg.* (5171), enspire *inf.* (4846), *inv.* 2 *sg.* (3553); desir *n.* (2417, 3326, 4475), spir (-e BCD) *A.S. spir* (2417), wir (-e BD) *A.S. wir* (4475).

fyre (fere BCD): dere *adj.*: here *inf.* (3820); a fere: were *eset*: dere *inf.* (229). [Var. C 490 fuyr; C 449 fyer.]

gode, goode (A.S. *gód, n.*, O. god, inn gode, forr gode), sownen yn-to g., 1029 f (good D) (: vnderstode *subj.* 3 *sg.*); for g., 3766 f (good D) (: stode *ind.* 3 *pl.*); for the townes g., 5215 f (: withstode *subj.* 1 *sg.*); to good[ë] mot it turne, 1175 (-ë BC).

good, (i.) nom., 3950; acc., 1182 A (†) D (-e B); of, CG, a doubtful line¹, 2263 f (-e B) (: stood *ind.* 3 *sg.*), 3480 f (-e B) (: on a flode, flood D), 3724 † D, 6469 f (-e B) (: stood *ind.* 3 *sg.*), 7512 f (: hood, -e BD); for al the good, 3220 (-e B), 5583, 7249 † C.—(ii.) nom., 7739; acc., 4749 (-e B), 5073 AD (-e B); ayen som g., 7529 (-e C).

grave (A.S. *græf, graf, m., n.*, O.N. *grǫf, f.*), nom., 7781 f (: haue *inf.*: saue *inf.*); vnto, 7105 (B † C †).

grounde (A.S. *grund, m.*, L.^a *grund*,^b -e,^{ab} dat. -e, O. *grund*, to *grund*, to *grunde*), to the g., 856 f (-d CD), 4906 f; to g., 4707 f (-d D), 4739 f (-d D); on g., 4966; on the g., 7650 f; through the g., 7863 f.

ground, (i.) nom., 939 (-e B), 1927; through the g., 1190 (-e B, -d † of D); vnder the g., 4282 (-e BD). (ii.) voc., 4146 (-e BE); on a g., 3824 (-e B); to the ground his, 5184 (-e B, -ë doune D).

Rhyme words.—wounde *n.* (856, 7863), stounde (4739, 7863), bounde *p.p.* (856), y-grounde (4707), expounde *inf.* (7650), confounde *inf.* (4906). [Var. BD grownde; C. grounde.]

-hede (suffix, A.S. -hád, *m.*; wreccched *Pet. Chron.*; L.^b child-hode, man-ede; O. *mazzdenn-had, mazzþ-had*; P.Pl. maiden-hod, man-hede, man-hod, knyght-hod).

goodlihede (-hed D), of, 7953 f (: in drede); -hed, of, 1927 f (-hede BD), (: hed *caput*: ded *adj. sing.*); nom., -hede, 4572 (-hed, -hid, -heed).

knyghthod (A.S. *cnihthád*), of, 7954 (knythod C); nom., -hod and, 8117 (-e² D).

manhod, (i.) nom., 6336 (-e B); with, 3270 (-e B), 5191. (ii.) nom., 1761; with, 7839 (-e B); acc. vnmanhod, 824 (-e BD³, ðn-manhòd † C).

¹ Cp. has the right reading: Is it of loue o som good 3e me lere. B and the John's MS. also insert o.

² Supply [grete].

³ D is hopeless as to metre; in A supply [a].

womanhede, to (vnto BCD), 4144 f; of, 4582 f; for, 6124 f (-hed CD); acc., 6836 f; to womanhodę that, 283.

Rhyme words.—dede *n.* (4144, 6836), drede *n.* (4582, 6124), lede *inf.* (4582), rede *inf.* (6836).

hepe (A.S. héap, *m.*, L. hæp, hep, dat. -e), to hepe, 4606 f ABC (: lepe *inf.*).—acc., hep of, 5943 (-e D, heepe B).

heuene (A.S. heofon, *m.*: also, L.W.S. heofone, *f.*, cf. eorðe, *f.*; L. heovene, heofne, O. heoffne, heffne), in, 878 f; to, 4046 f (in † h. B), 5285 f (heuen D), of, 4567 f.—heuene, *before consonants*, always dissyllabic,—nom., 1911 (-yn D †)¹; acc., 2844 (-yn D); in, 31 (-yn C), 1980 (-en B, -yn C), 3432 (-yn D), 4441 † CD; of, 1766 (-en C, -yn D); to, 3026 (-yn D); from, 3468 (heue † C, -yn avale D), 5508 AC (en D; B †); on, 6637, 8188.—heuene, nom., 1722 (-en B, -yn † on D); in, 2850 (-yn D), 4441 AB, 8182, 8207 (-en BD); from, 5374 (-en D); in . . . h. he, 4093 B (-yn † he D)²; in h. his, 6058 (-en D); nom., h. his, 4584 (-yn D); in heuene hye, 4587. [heuene † egle, 4338 D.]

Rhyme words.—neuene *inf.* (878), neuene † *n.* (4567 B), steuene (4567 ACD), seuene (4046, 5285).

hewe (A.S. héow, *n.*, W.S. híew, híw, N. híu, see Siev. § 247, n. 3, Sweet, 1789; L. heowe, O. hew, inn hewe), nom., 461 f, 4540 f (hew B), 5402 (-[e] BCD); acc., 441 f, 1388 f, 2555 f, 7766 f; of, 3145 f, 5041 f (-w C), 5398 f (-w D), 7936 f, 8135 f; with, 5325 f, 6922 f.—hewe, nom., 2936 † D; acc., 1145 (D †).—in his hewe bothe, 487 (-e C †).

Rhyme words.—newe *adv.* (441, 4540), *adj.* (1388, 2555, 5325 [of newe A], 7936 [anewe C]), newe *inf.* (3145), trewe *adj.* (5041, 5325), vntrewe 3145, 7936, 8135), rewe *inf.* (461 [rew A, rewe *pres. subj.* 2 *pl.* † CD], 5398, 6922), knewe *ind.* 3 *pl.* (4540).

horse (A.S. hors, *n.*, L. hors, an horse, to horse, O. horrs), on hors[ë] gan, 6400 AB (-ë CD).—hors, (i.) on here h., 6545 (of = down from, BCD); from hire h., 6552 (-e D, C †). (ii.) nom., 223, 1711; acc., 4707, 7381 (-e D); on his h., 2346, 6398 (h. he D); of (= from) hors, 6876 B (of here h. AC (*plu.*), of horsë light D); from his h. he, 6563 (-e D; C †).

knowe (A.S. cnéo(w), *n.*, N. cnéw, cnéo, Merc. cnéu, L.^a on cncowe, L.^b a cnowe, O. o cnewwe), sat (fel C) on knowe, 2287 f (know D) (: I trowe *ind.* : sowe *inf.*).

losse, see § 18.

lyue (A.S. líf, *n.*, L. lif, on liue, bi life, bi liue, O. lif, dat. lif, -e), acc

¹ it an heuene (it) was C.

² heuene om. in A.

of time (my lyue, his l., al my l.), 594 f (lyf C), 1290 f (in † my l. D), 2141 f, 4929 f (liff D), 6528 f (in † his l. C); euere his l. and, 6799 (lyf C, liff D); on lyue, 1223 f, 1973 f, 5156 f (lyf C), 5425 f (onlef C), 6632 f (a lyue D), 7027 f, 7251 f, 7732 f, 8226 f; alyuë maken, 3734; on lyuë come, 7248; on lyue, 4958 ABD; on lyue han (haue), 5899 (o l. B, a-lyue a be C); vpon lyue, 2115 f; yn al his lyue, 2623 f ([in] C); yn lyue, 899 † C; of (= out of) lyue, 2693 f (on † l. C), 7924 f. [Cf. blyue *adv.*, § 88.]

Rhyme words.—blyue *adv.* (594, 1223, 1290, 2623, 2693, 5153, 6528), fyue (2115, 7251), Arguye *nom. pr.* (5425), thryue *inf.* (1223, 1290, 2141, 2693), dryue *inf.* (2623, 5156, 7732), dryue *subj.* 3 *sg.* (7027), depryue *inf.* (4929), dyscriue *inf.* (1973, 6632, 7732), ryue *inf.* (7924), stryue *inf.* (6528), circumscryue *inf.* (8226).

lyf, lif, nom. (i.) 1863 f, 536 (-[e] † C), 772 (-e B), 1041, 1199, 1286 B (of lyf D), 1447 (lyue B), 1551 † A (lyf is B, l. in C, -e † in D), 1826 CD, 1936, 4952, [5273 † f C], 5339 (C †), 6516, 7741 † D, 7581, 7986¹; voc., 4264; nom. (ii.) 462 ABC, 1286 A, 1826 AB, 3217 (-e B), 4319 (acc. † D, nom. -e B), 4936 (-e B); acc. (i.) 1046, 1557, 1915 † D, 1917, 1920 f, 3257, 4447, 4559, 5229, 6703 f. (-e B), 6720, 6992 (-[e] † C), 7077, 7532 (-e B, lyf † I C, lif[e] † D); acc. (ii.) 469, 1554, 1660, 4318 BD (lyf saue? AC)², 4444, 4963 (lyf † wele C), 6004, 7741 AC, 7747 (-e D), 7770 AD, 7776; acc., lyf his, 2151; of (not = ex) (i.) 4323, 5610 (-[e] † C, D †), 5826, (ii.) 4689, 4775 ABD; with (i.), 7637, 7682; by lyf be, 2103.—wreke vpon myn ownë lyf, 2950 f.—In 4140 f, *al my lyfe* (lyue BC, life? D), acc. of time, rhymes with *wyff*, voc.

Rhyme words.—stryf *n.* (1863, 1920, 6703), wyf (2950, 4140, 6703), en tentyf *adj.* (1920).

pryme (A.S. *prím*, *m.* †) seems to owe -e to the influence of Fr. *prime*.—pryme, nom., 2180 f; at, 2077 f, 6378; after, 2642 f; atwixen, 6835 f. (Cf., of lusty ver the pryme, 157 f.)

Rhyme words.—tyme (*everywhere*), by me (2077). [Var. BCD prime.]

pyne (A.S. *pín*, *m.* (?), L.O. pine), nom., 1761 f; acc., 2250 f, 6631 f (peyne † A), 6653 f (peyne † A), 7490 f; in, 4685 f, 5136 f (peyne † C), 6369 f (peyne † B); of, 7255 f † B (*l.* peyne *with* ACD); -e, nom., 4300 (-es † D).

Rhyme words.—enclyne *inf.* (1761), myne *inf.* (1761), 5136, dyne *inf.* (2250, 7490), fyne *inf.* (4685), deuyne *inf.* (6631, 6653), defyne *inf.* (6631), twyne *subj.* 3 *sg.* (6369), Quyrnye (4685), Proserpyne (5136). [Var. D pine.]

shryne (A.S. *scrín*, *n.*, see Pogatscher, p. 161), voc., -e, 6916.

sithe (A.S. *sið*, *m.*, L. *sið*, dat. -e, O. ann *siþe*, *oþerr siþe*, *offte siþe*,

¹ Supply [*that*] in A.

² Read *my lyf an houre saue* (so Cp.).

siþess), a hondred sithe, 4437 (-e he B, tyme and C, tymes D); a thousand sithe, 5415 f (: swythe : lythe *inf.*); an hundred sithe, 6835 (-e C, -es D); a thousand sithe, 7744 f (sith D) (: blythe : swythe). [Dat. pl. in A. S. : as, seofon siðum.]

sothe (A.S. sóð, *n.*, L. soð, soðe, O. soþ, to soþe). In the Middle English uses of this word there seems to be some confusion between sóð *subst.* and sóð *adj.* The substantive phrase *the sothe* is perhaps due to the influence of the definite adjective form. *Forsothe* instead of A.S. *forsóð* (cf. *tó sóðon*) is noteworthy. See also *in soth*. In the examples that follow *soth* (*sothe*) seems to have been felt as a substantive. In *ye sey right soth ywys*, 1275 AB, perhaps *soth*[e] is an adverb.

the sothe, acc., 12, 1605, 4440 (-[e] B), 5615, 6983 (-[e] B), 7375, (-[e] BD), 7391 (-[e] B, [the] soth[e] C), 7398, 8003 (-[e] B, the soth † D); forsothe, 5697 f (for soth BD) (: in yow bothe); forsothë so it semeth by hire song, 1968 ABCD (-[e] G), but cf. for a sothl, 6069.—the sothe is, 5965 (B † D †; the s. (this) is C).

soth, sooth, (i.) nom., that is s., 1268 f (-e) D (: doth 3 *sg.*); acc. (in *soth to seyn*, *soth for to telle*, and similar phrases,—no def. or indef. article), 343, 591 (*om.* D), 712 (the sothë D), 822 A, 1706 (-e) B; D †), 1769, 2071 (the sothë D), 2367 f (ful sothe, *as if adv.*, D, *but the rhyme doth 3 sg.* (doth(e) D) *condemns the form*), 2441 (the sothe [for] D; C †), 2601 (the sothë D), 3197 (-e) D), 3272, 3492 (the sothë D), 3835, 4372, 4635 (-e) D), 4709 (the sothë D), 5165 (soft † B), 7531 C (-e) D), 7712, 7883; seye a soth, 1316 (-e) D), 2222 (-e) BD); homly s. to seyne, 2644 BC ((the) soth(e) D); in soth, 6506 (-e D), 6734; for a s., 6069 (cf. *forsothe*). (ii.) nom. (in the phrase *soth is*), 3461, 4166 AC (-e) B), 5930 (so[th] C, -e) D), 6392 (-e) D); acc., seyde . . . soth, 3420 (-e) D); soth hym seyde, 822 C (-e) BD); a soth, acc., 7821 (-e) CD), 7902, 8087; a soth(e), acc., 7672 ABD (asay † C); lyk a soth, 3761; cause of soth, 5703.

staire, steyre (A.S. stæger, *m.*), on the s., 215 f (starre † B) (: contraire : debonaire); adoun the steyre, 1898 (steyzere C, stairë anon D †); downward a steyre, 2790 (steiçere B, stair D).

stalle (A.S. steall, stall, *m.*, O. stall), oxe yn stalle, 7832 f (staH D) (: vynes alle).

temple (A.S. tempel, *n.*), 323 CD (*disordered*), 1458, 6728 (tempële C), 6929; temple, 162 (AB *too long*, temple B), 185 (D?), 317, 363,

3382 (tempele C); temple he, 267 (-ë went D); templë he, 5609.¹

tere (A.S. téar, tær, tæher, *m.*), nom., 3929 f; acc., 6585 f, 7409 f, 7945 f; of, 7243 f; with, 7544 f (ter D); for . . . teer which, 3912 (tere BD, ter C).

Rhyme words.—were *erant* (3929, 6585, 7544), *essel* (7243, 7945), of his fere (3929), where (6585), ellys where (7409), there (7243, 7544). [Var. BD teere.]

towne (A.S. tún, *m.*, L. tun, dat. -e, O. tun, to tune, i, off tune, P. Pl.^{ab} to tounë), in the t., 3030 f²; in t., 5250 f, 6890 (-[e] D, in(to) tounë for C); to t., 4871 f; out of t., 3412 f (-n B), 3933 f, 5193 (-[e] B, of (=ex) the toun[e] C).—towne, of t., 270 (-[ë] † or D, in tounë † or C); into t., 2196; in t., 4724 (-n B), 5342 (-n B, tounnys † C).—nom., townë start, 6048 D (*but supply* [thus]).

Rhyme words.—sowne *inf.* (3030), rowne *inf.* (3412, 5250), a-swowne (3933), howne *n.* (4871).

town, toun, (i.) nom., 141, 1463, 5247 (-ë D), 6048 ABC, 7131 f, 7873 (-ë D); voc., 7369 f; acc., 558 f, 1464 f, 4741 (t. [to] B, *nom.* t. is † D); in the t., in this t., in al this t., 64, 2501 f, 6002 AB (C(!), -e † (!) D), 6042 f (-e CD), 6792 f, 7353 f; of (*not*=ex but equivalent to a genitive³), 186 f, 478 f, 1822, 3225 f, 4783 f, 4854 f ((s)town A), 6926 f (-e D), 7040, 7219 f, 7388 f (-e D), 7475 (-ë D); out of the t., 75, 6368 f (-e BD); out of a t., 6384 (-ë D, [a] town A); into t., 4624 f (to, D); into this t., 7486 (-ë D); into the t., 7517; aboute Troyë t., 4692 f; on al the t., 4780; traytor to the t., 4866 f; withinne Troyë t., 7332 f (-e D); thorough-out Troyë t., 8012 f (-e C).—(ii.) nom., 804, 6763 (-e D); yn al the t., 1224, 1833 (thour, C), 1966; yn the t., 3716; out of t., 3419; nom., t. hath, 5209 (-e D); in t. his, 1069.

Rhyme words.—For *town*,—doun, down *adv.* (186, 4624, 6792, 6926, 7219, 7369, 7388, 8012), Sarpedoun (6792), attricioun (558), baroun (4692, 4854), conclusioun, -ion (478, 7131, 7369), condicion (7332), confusioun (4783), denocioun (186, 558), dyscression (4866), disposicioun (6368), entencion (7131), execucion (6368), Lameadoun (4783), lyoun (4624, 4692), opynyoun (7219), oppressioun (2501), possessioun (2501), renoun (478), saluacioun, sauacion (1464, 6042), suspencion (8012), tribulacion (7353).

twyste (A.S. mæst-twist, *m.* ?), with many a t., 4072 f (-t C) (: tryste *inf.* : wyste *ind.* 3 *sg.*).

walkene (A.S. wolcen, wolcn, *n.*, pl. wolenu, *Pet. Chron.* se wolcne; L. weolcne, wolcne, *pl.* (?); P. Pl.^b walkene, welkne,^c wolkene),

¹ A disagreeable line, but identical in ABCDG: "Til in a temple he fond hym allone." Cp. reads: "Til in a temple he founde hym al alone."

² Old-style figures denote that D has no -e.

³ Always with some word or words (as, *the, this, al this*) between *of* and *town*.

the walkenę shop hym, 3393 A (walken B, walkyn CG, welkyn D, wolken Cp.).

were (A.S. wer, *m.*), to were, 2877 f (to the † w. D) (: here *eam*). [Cf. This streme you ledeth to the sorwful were, *Parl. F.*, 138 (: spere : bere *inf.*.)]

weye (A.S. weg, *m.*, L. weie, wai, dat. wei, weie, etc., O. we33e), acc., 5954 f¹ (wey C), 6288 f (way B, alway † C), 6459 f, 6719 f (way C); by, 495 f, 6988 f (wey C); vpon, 2576 f (forth his w. C); in, 3089 f; adverbial, what w., 4821 f.—weye, acc., -e to, 1862 A (way B, why C); -e for, 6131 A (wey BD, *om.* C)²; which weye be, 3599 (way BC).—weye, acc., 4610 (wey B, wey † no E); nom., weye is, 1702 (-e is C, way is B, wey is D); on . . . weye he, 1532 (way B). (Cf. aweye, away, *adv.*, § 89.)

way, wey, (i.) nom., 2336, 7432 f; acc., 1160 BD (-e † A), 4851 (-e C); 5964 (-e C), 6180 AB, 6877 (woye (?) † haue C, wey † haue D ?), 7380; out of, 219 (-e C); on, 2388, 6864 (-e BC); by, 7025 (-e BC); went his wey, 1055; do wey do wey, 1978 (D †). (ii.) vpon . . . wey he, 2034 (-e him C, wey hym D); on . . . w. hym, 4365 (-e CD); a forlong wey on, 5899 (woy C).

Rhyme words.—seye *inf.* (495, 3089, 4821, 5954, 6459), obeye *inf.* (2576), pleye *inf.* (3089), deye *inf.* (6988), leye = wayer *inf.* (6719), preye *ind. 1 sg.* (5954), tweye (495, 4821, 6988), aweye (6288, 6459), away (7432), pley *n.* (6288), weylaway (7432). [Var. BCD way; C waye, woye; D weie.]

wighte (A.S. ge-wiht, *n.*, also -e, L.^a wiht,^b weht, O. wipþ fife wehhte off sillferr), of w., 2470 f (wyghte B, weight D, on † weyghte C) (: thynges lyghte).

wyle (A.S. wil or wile, *n.* (*Chron.* 1128), flygewilum *instr. pl.* (*Mód.* 27)), nom., 1356 f, 3919 f (w(h)ile CD); for, 719 f (gyle C).

Rhyme words.—while *n.* (719, 1356, 3919), bygyle *inf.* (719, 1356). [Var. BC wile.]

yate (A.S. gæt, W.S. geat, Ps. get, *n.*, *Pet. Chron.* iate-ward, L. 3æt, dat. -e, O. gate way, P. Pl. gateward), acc., 3311 f (: late *adv.*), 7503 f (: late *adv.*); to the y., 1702 AB; vnto, 7501. But,—At the yate there she sholde oute ryde, 6395.—into the yate, 4567 (vnto BD, to C); vnto the yate he, 7555 (-is † C); on to the gate he, 6966 C (*pl.* ABDG).

A and D write always *yate*; B and C, always *3ate* (except in 6966 C).

yere (A.S. géar, gér, gér, *n.*, L. 3er, dat. -e, O. 3er) to yere, 3083 f (yeer D) (: dere); of fern[ē] yere, 7539 f (fernē[ye]re C, feuerèr †

¹ Old-style figures indicate that D has no -e.

² Obj. of *trusten to* (on BD); or, perhaps, nominative.

D) (: here *adv.*).—yer, (i.) of time, 1178 (3erę B), 4037 (3eerę D), 5755 AD (-ę B); of the yer (=gen.), 6739 (-ę B)¹. (ii.) of time, yer or, 7982 (-e B). [Var. BC 3ere; C 3er, 3yr, 3ir; D yeer, 3eer, 3eere.]

§ 15. The following Germanic nouns, for which no corresponding Anglo-Saxon etymons can be cited, sometimes or always end in the *Troilus* in -e :

(A.) Suspicious or uncertified Anglo-Saxon words,—*crampe* (cf. A.S. *crompeht* adj.), *mone* (A.S. * *mán*, inferred from *mēnan*), *werre* (see the word), *whippe* (A.S. *hweop* Somner). (B.) Words from the Old Norse : (i.) masculine n-stems, *awe*, *bole* (-ę, -e, never -ę) (but cf. A.S. *bulluc*), *felaue* (but cf. A.S. *féolaga*, itself from O.N.); (ii.) feminine n-stems,—*bore*, *sherte*; (iii.) neuter n-stem,—*wyudowe*; (iv.) neuter o-stems,—*on lofte*, *o lofte*, *a-lofte* (O. Norw. *á loft*, *á lofti*, originally u-stem), *at thy tryste* (but also *tryst*, *trust*). (C.) Probable Middle English formations from Anglo-Saxon words : (i) nouns from verbs,—*drede*, *hede*, *hye*, *lette*, and perhaps *ferde*, *mase*, *slynge*; (ii.) diminutive,—*stalke* (A.S. *stel*); (iii.) *heste* (-t-formation from A.S. *hēts*, f.), *beheste*, *wente* (cf. A.S. *wend*, f.). (D.) Borrowed from Middle Low German,—*grote*, *rore*. (E.) Miscellaneous words of more or less doubtful etymology,—*greue*, *haste*, *labbe* (var. *blabbe*), *were* (?).

For *hosbonde*, *skathe*, see § 2; for *arwe*, *wodebynde*, see § 3; for *feldefare*, see § 5; for *bone*, *byrthe*, *routhe*, *sleyghte*, see § 9.

awe (O.N. *agi*, *m.*, n-stem; cf. A.S. *ege*, *m.*, L. *eize*, *æie*, O. *e33e*, *a3he*), 999 f (: *lawe* : *drawe inf.*), 5282 f (: *lawe* : *gnawe inf.*).

blabbe, see *labbe*.

bole (O.N. *boli*, *m.*, n-stem; but cf. A.S. *bulluc*; L.O. *bule*), -ę, nom., 4901 (*lole* † C, *bulle* D); -ę, yn, 1140 (*bulle* D^c, *bool* it B); -e, of, 3565 (*bool* B, *bok* † C).

bore (O.N. *bora foramen*, f., n-stem, cf. Mätzner), nom., -e hath, 4295 (*hourre* † C).

crampe (cf. O.S. *cramp*, f., O.H.G. *krampf*, *m.*, M.L.G., M.Du. *krampe*; Sweet, 269, assumes A.S. *cramp* from the adj. *crompeht*; P. Pl. *crampe*), -e, acc., 3913 (nom. † C, *craumpe*, acc., B).

*drede*² (L. *dred*, *drede*, P. Pl. *dre(e)de*, cf. A.S. *drædan*, *vb.*), 95 f, 180 f, 499 f, 529 f, 575 f, 775 f, 1757 f, 1831 f, 1918 f, 2260 f, 2408 f,

¹ Supply [*the*] in C.

² A.S. *dræd* *subst.*, given in Bosworth, is rejected by Bosworth-Toller, the only evidence for its existence being Matth. xxv. 25 misunderstood (see Mätzner).

2589 f, 2934 f, 3260 f, 3332 f, 3549 f, 3569 f,¹ 4080 (-[e] C), 4223 f, 4562 f, 4583 f, 4734 f, 4817 f, 5269 † D, 5340 f, 5507 (-[e] C), 5753 f, 5775 f, 6001 f, 6070 (-[e] C), 6117 f, 6125 f (dred C), 6179 f, 6195 f, 6235 f, 6307 f (dred D), 6415 f, 6566 f, 6627,² 6993 f, 7122 f, 7343 f, 7453 f, 7643 f (dred D), 7955 f, 8144 f; drede, 2585 (-d C), 3672 (-d C), 4676, 6197 (-d C); -e his, 7570 (-d C); dred awaketh, 1895 (-e BD).—drede is = dred's, 4400 † A (dred is C, -e is BD).—dredë † out, 6073 D. [Cf. dreadful, § 49, n. 3.]

Rhyme words.—dede *n.* (95, 6001, 6235, 6415), dede *pred. adj. pl.* (5753, 6179), wede *A.S. wæd* (180, 4562), brede *A.S. brædu* (180, 529), hede *heed n.* (499, 575, 1831, 6566, 7122, 7453), nede *n.* (775, 1757, 3260, 3332, 3549, 3569, 4734, 6195), mede (3260), the rede *red* (4223), rede *adj. pl.* (2934), rede *inf.* (95, 2260, 2408, 2589 CD, 4223, 5340, 7643), arede *inf.* (2589 AB, 5775, 6235), atrede *inf.* (6117), rede *ind. 3 pl.* (6307, 8114), kynrede (7343), womanhede (4583, 6125), goodlihede (7955), Diomedede (7453), blede *inf.* (499), lede *inf.* (529, 1918, 4562, 4583, 6179, 6993), I lede *1 sg.* (6001), spede *inf.* (775, 4734), spede *subj. 3 sg.* (1831), forbede *subj. 3 sg.* (4817).

felawe (O.N. félagi, *m.*, but A.S. féolaga, from the Norse, occurs in *Chron. D*, 1016, see Kluge in Paul's *Grundriss*, I, 786), for his felawë daun, 7851 (fa- C, felowe D); nom., fèlawę resteth, 4990 (-owę B, -ow D); nom., fèlawę deye, 5186 (fellowę D); fèlawe, acc., 709 (-aw BD).

ferde (A.S. vb. fáran; cf. M.H.G. ge-vârde, *f. n.*, 'betrug'), for ferd[e] caught, 557 (-ë BD); of feręd thyn, 5269 (ferd C, ferde G, drede † D); for feręd out, 6073 (-ë out BG, *l. ferde* out of [his]³; fer C †, dredë † out D). [For ferdë, and myn hewe al pale, *B. Duch.* 1214; And he for ferdë lost his wit, *Hous F.* ii, 442 (950).]

grene (cf. A.S. græfe, græfa, 'pit,' and the confused glosses in Wright-Wülcker, 225, 23-24), by, 7507 f (grene † C) (: eue).

grote (O. Dutch groote, cf. L.G. (Bremen) grote; P. Pl.^c grote), 5248 f (: hote *adv.* : note).

haste (cf. Dutch haast, O. Fris. hast, Dan. Sw. hast. A.S. *hæst* and O. Fr. *haste* have also been compared), with hastë goodly, 2031 (-[e] D, laste † C); nom., ouer-haste, 965 (-t D, for euere † hast *vb.* C); nom., haste, 7968 (hast D); for . . . hast and, 4280 (-e BC); in al the haste he, 4428 (-t BD).

hede (cf. O. Fris. hûde, hōde, O.H.G. huota, *f.*; P. Pl. ^b hede), 501 f, 577 f, 820 AB? (-[e] CD), 1832 f, 3306 f, 4066 f, 4389 f, 4671 f, 5514 AB (-ę † therto C), 6221 f, 6451 f, 6565 f, 6668 f (hed D), 7120 f (hed C), 7234 f, 7411 f, 7452 f, 8019 f, 8069 f; hedę ther-

¹ Written *for-drede*.

² Supply [to] in D.

³ A also has *his*. Perhaps, however, *ferde* out is right (hiatus in cæsura). Cp. has no *his*.

of, 1666; heed for, 7266 (hede BD, hed C); hede, 3481 (hed C), 5095 (hed AC), 5769 (hed D, [-e] † what C).

Rhyme words.—drede *n.* (501, 577, 1832, 6565, 7120, 7452), nede *n.* (3306, 4066, 6221), Diomede (4671, 6451, 7234, 7411, 7452, 8019, 8069), the crede (6451), glode (6668), stede *steed* (6668), brede *A.S. brædu* (8019), blede *inf.* (501, 4671, 7411, 8069), forbede *inf.* (3306), *pres. subj.* 3 *sg.* (6221), brede *inf.* (4389), spede *subj.* 3 *sg.* (1832). [Var C^e heede; D heed.]

heste, byheste (*A.S. hies, f., behæsa gen. pl., L. heste, bihæste, O. hæse*), (a) heste, 3999 f (liste † B, heest D), 6718 (-es † A, hest[e] B, bêhestē † D); heste he, 6101 (-t C); hestē hath, 4587 (*pl. BCE*). (b) byheste, 3157 BC (heste † A, hest † D), 3188 f (-t CD), 7554 f (-t D, heste C), 8038 f (-t D); behest, byhest, 1444 f (-e BCD), 1508 f (-e BC), 2414 f (-e B). [biheste, 7794 B, *should be plural.*]

Rhyme words.—feste *n.* (1444, 1508, 3999, 8038), at the leste (1444, 2414, 3157, 3999, 8038), by este (7554). [Var. BCD beheste, B bi-.]

hye (*A.S. higian, to hasten*), in hye, 1173 f (hy D) (: *companye: thrie adv.*), 2797 f (hy C) (: *prye inf.: companye*), 6047 f (heye B, hie D) (: *iupartie*). [5861 f † C (: *deye inf.: companye*).]

labbe (*Prompt. Parv. blabbe, or labbe, wreyare of cownselles, futilis, anubicus*), *nom.*, 3142 f (blabbe D) (: *gabbe ind. 3 pl., inf. † D*).

lette (*A.S. vb. lettan, O.L.G. sbst. lette, M.H.G. letze, f., L.^b lette*), withouten, 361 f (let D), 3077 f, 3541 f (let D), 3590 f, 4703 f (let D), 7214 f (lett D).—lettēgame, 3369 f (let[te]-game D).

Rhyme words.—sette *pret. ind. 3 sg.* (361, 3077, 3541, 7214), mette *somniavit* (361), mette *congressi sunt* (4703), dores were y-shette (3077), shette *pret. ind. 3 sg.* (3590), fette *pret. ind. 3 pl.* (7214).

lofte (O. Norw. O. Icel. loft, *n.*, & loft, & lofti, later Icel. lopt, etc., *A.S. on loft from the Scand.*, see Napier, *Mod. Lang. Notes*, 1889, col. 278, Kluge in Paul's *Grundriss*, I, 786; O. o lofft, P. Pl.^a on lofte, ^bbi loft, ^con loft), on lofte, alofte, o lofte, 138 f (-t BD, onloste † C), 915 f (-t D), 943 f (-t D), 3512 f, 5883 f (-t C), 6371 f, 6711 f (-t B); a-lofte, 6622 (of † loft B, on loft C).

Rhyme words.—ofte (138, 915, 943, 3512, 5883, 6371, 6711), softe *adj. and adv.* (138, 915, 943, 3512, 6711).

maze (cf. *A.S. amasod, p. p.*), 6831 f (mase CD) (: *glaze inf.*).

mone, moone (quasi *A.S. *mān*, cf. *mānan vb.*; P. Pl.^c mone), *nom.*, 1643 f; *acc.*, 98 † f A (*l. mone inf., with BCD*), 696 f, 5612 f, 6613 f; -e †, *acc.*, 907 C.

Rhyme words.—allone (696, 1643, 5612, 6613), euerychone (5612), grone *inf.* (1643, 6613).

rore (cf. O.L.G. hrōra, O.H.G. ruora, *f.*, Ger. aufruhr 'uproar'; see, however, Murray s.v. *aroar*, where perhaps the quotation from the

Paston Letters is not in place. Confusion with *roar*, A.S. ge-rár (ǣraǣ), is prob. for Chaucer's time), sette al Troye vpon a rore, 6408 f ([a] roore D) (: pore *adj. pl.*).

sherte (O.N. skyrta, *f.*, n-stem, L. scurte, P. Pl.^c sherte), aboue (vpon BC, [vp]on D), 3580 f (-t D); to, 3941 f; on, 4214 f; in, 4758 f (-t D), 6184 f (schert C).

Rhyme words.—herte (3580, 3941, 4214, 4758), pouerte (-t C) (6184), sterte *effugi* (4758). [Var. C scherte; D schirte, shirte.]

slynge (O. Du. slinge, O.H.G. slinga, P. Pl.^{bc} slinge), with slyng[e] stones, 2026 f (sleyng s. B, slynging † of [slurred] stonys C).

stalke (dimin. of A.S. stæl, stel; P. Pl.^c stalke), on stalk[e] lowe, 2053 AB (stalke C; -ys D, *supply* [on]).

tryste (O.N. traust, *n.*), Lo holde the at thi tryste clos and I, 2619 (-[e] C, tristre † D).

tryst, trist, (i.) nom., 3783 f (-e B) (: lyst *lubet*), 4147 f (-e B, trust C, truste D) (: lyst *voc.*); acc., 3245 f (truste B) (: lyst *lubet* : wyst *p.p.*). (ii.) nom., 154 (trost C, trust D); *voc.*, 4264 (-e B, trust CE) (cf. 7622); for, 6044 (-e B).—trust, (i.) in t., 83 AC (-e B); for wāntrust, 794 (-e B, -trost C, wantrowist † D). (ii.) nom., mystrúst, 1865 (-e B; C †); for m., 3165 (-e B, -trost C).

wente (cf. A.S. wend, *f.?*), acc., 1148 f (-t AD), 1900 f (-t C^c D), 6968 f (-t ACD), 7557 f (-t CD); by, 3629 f (-t CD).

Rhyme words.—wente *pret. ind.* 1, 3 *sg.* (1148, 1900, 3629, 6968, 7557), blente *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (7557).

were (= doubt, perplexity, Scotch weir, cf. Skeat, *Minor Poems, Glossary*), ffrom day to day til they be in were of ioie, 7910 C, but read *ben bare of ioie* (with ABD).

werre (cf. A.S. war-scot; wyrre, uerre, in the *Chron.* 1119, 1140, are doubtless from French (see Behrens, p. 55); cf. O.H.G. werra, *f.*; L.^a weorra, ^b werre), 134 f, 1953 f, 4614 f, 5209 f (werr D), 6597 f, 7756 f (werr D); -e, 6331 (guerre D), 7218 (werr D).

Rhyme words.—derre *adv. compar.* (134), verre (1953), erre *pres.* 3 *pl.* (4614), *inf.* (5209), sterre (6597, 7756).

whippe (A.S. hweop, still given by Bosworth-Toller on the authority of Somner, but not yet found; cf. M. Du. wippe), of, 220 f (wyppe C, whip D) (: skyppe *inf.*).

wyndowe (O.N. vindauga, *n.*, P. Pl. windowe), to the wýndowę nexst, 2271 (-ow BCD); yn the wýndowę bothe, 2277 (-ow D); from hire wýndow down, 4625 (-e C).—Before vowels, wýndowe,—nom., 6897 (-ow B); acc., 4895 (-ow BD, wýndowe [ek] C); thurgh out, 3443 AB; at. . . wyndòwe, 2100 (-òw BD, in. . . wyndòwe C).

Note 1.—For *angre*, see *anger* (§ 19). *-re* is also found in *slyuere* (cf. A.S. *slifan*, 'to split'), 3855 f ABC (*shyvre* † D) (: *wyuere* (O. Fr. *vivre*, *guivre*, *wivre*): *delyuere inf.*).

Note 2.—*A-wep* (for *a-wepe* †) occurs once,—and *she bygan to brest a wep a-noon*, 1493 (*a wepe* B, to *breste* and † *wepe* C, to *wepe* † right D). The substantive *wep* seems to be formed from the verb *wepen* (cf. A.S. *wóp*, *m.*).

Note 3.—*Here* and *howne* in *thus scyden here and howne*, 4872 (*h. and houn* C, *her and houn* D, *heer and houn* G, *here howne* Cp.) (: *hom* to *towne*; *in to town* C, *hom(e) to toun* D, [*hom*] to *toun* G), are unsolved riddles. The usual interpretation *hare and hound*, i. e. *everybody*, of *whatever estate*, is not satisfactory.

§ 16. Four monosyllables in *-e* may be here put together :
gle (neut. *jo*-stem), *se* (*i*-stem *m.*, *f.*) *stre* (masc. *wo*-stem), *tre* (neut. *wo*-stem).

gle (A.S. (poet.) *gléo*, W.S. **glég*, *glíg*, Ep. *glíu*, see Sievers, § 247, n. 3; L. *gleo*), *gle* and, 2121 (*glee* B).

se, see (A.S. *sé*, inflected partly as *m.*, partly as *f.*, Siev. § 266, n. 3; L. *sæ*, *se*, O. *sæ*), 417, 1088, 1090, 1528 f (: *se inf.* : *he*), 2850 f (: *tre*), 4600, 5685 f (: *be sit*), 6211 f (: *be sim* : *free*), 7249 f (: *see ind.* 2 *pl.* : *me*), 8178 f (: *vanite* : *felicite*); *se* hath, 4586.

stre, *straw* (A.S. *stréaw*, *stráw-berie*, *stréa(w)berie*, North. *stré*, Rush. *stréu*, Sievers, §§ 112. n. 1 and 3, 250. n. 1; P. Pl.^{bc} *strawe*), *stre*, 2830 f (: *she* : *he*); *straw* is, 3701 (*strow* B, *straw yfaH* D); *straw yset*, 4846 (*-e* C); *a straw for*, 6725 (*-e* D).

tre, *tree* (A.S. *tréo(w)*, *n.*, North. *tré*, *tréo*, *tréu(o)*, Siev., § 250. 2; L. *treo*, dat. *treowe*, O. *treo*, *tre*), 2852 f (: *se n.*), 3385 f (: *be inf.* : *fle inf.*).—*Def. csts.*, *tre*, 4072, 4888, 7507 (*treis* † C); *bef. vowels*, 957.

Note 1. For *snow* (A.S. *snáw*, *m.*, *wo*-stem), cf. 525 (*-e* B), 5029, 7539 (*snowgh* B).

Note 2.—For *wo*, *woo*, *subst.*, from A.S. *wá*, interj., cf. 4, 34, 248 f, 322, 378, 503, 546 AB, 582 f BCD, 1004, 1147, 1468 f, 2445 f, 3084, 4249, 4921, etc.; cf. also *wher me be wo*, 2908; *wo is me*, 3113; *me is wo*, 4265 f; *wo hym*, 694 (*wo is hym* CD); *me is for hym wo*, 3768 f; *vs is wo*, 1868; *wo was hym*, 356, 6432; *hym was wo*, 5824, 6356 AD (*he was wo* B); *so wo was hem*, 4540. In "But lord this sely *Troilus* was wo," 6892, the construction is ambiguous. Cf. *ful wo to bed he went*, 1147 D (*yn wo* AB).—The interjection *ho* is also used substantively in the phrase *withouten ho*, 2168 f AG (*hoo* BCp., for *ay* and o C John's MS., for *Ay* and oo D added in later hand); cf. "But *ho* no more now of this matere" 3032; "But *ho* (*hoo* BD) for we han right ynow of this," 5904.

§ 17. In the following nouns final *-y* comes from the vocalization of an Anglo-Saxon *-g*. Cf. also *wey* (§ 14), *lady*, *pley* (§ 5).

bodig (A.S. bodig, *n.*), cf. 122, 1718, 4906, 4920, 4966, 4984, 5425 C, 5505, 6216 (*slur*), 6616, 6666, 7682, 7923, etc., etc.

day (A.S. dæg, *m.*), cf. 442, 456, 482, 1068 f (: bay *adj.* : ay *adv.*), 1145, 1146, 1271, 1287, etc., etc. (Cf. ten Brink, § 199.2.)

iuy (A.S. ifig, *n.*), pype yn an iuy lef, 7796 (yuy C) (A.S. ifigléaf).

wery (A.S. wérig, *adj.*), for wo and wery of that companye, 5369.

Note.—*May* 'maiden' is perhaps from O.N. *már* (stem *mǫrjǫ-*), late *mey* : see 7775 f (: may *possum* : day), 8083 f (*same rhymes*).

§ 18. The following masculine and neuter nouns, which in Anglo-Saxon end in a consonant in the nominative take no -e in the *Troilus*, even in the dative.

- (i) Pure masculine o-stems,¹—(a) monosyllabic, *arm, bark* (gender?), *berd, blast, bor, bot, breth, chep, cherl, clerk, cloth, crop, dom* (and compounds), *drem, em, fissh, flod* (*m., n.*), *foul, fox, frost, gnat, göd, gost, harm, hat, hawk, helm, hod, hom, hook, horn, hound, knyf, knyght, kok, kyng, lord, lust, mouth, non, oth, path, port, post, pyk* (gender?), *qualm, rēd, rēs, reyn, ryng, sheld, shour, slep, song, spir* (gender?), *ston* (*wheston*), *swarm, thank* (*m., n.*), *thef, thorn, thought, thral, thred, top, wal, wir, wynd, yerd*; (b) dissyllabic, *bisshop, bosom, bridel, crepul, epistol, ernest* (also *f.*), *feuer* (-ere), *laughter, martir, thonder, wimpil*; (ii.) pure neuter o-stems,—(a) monosyllabic, *bak, blood, bon, bond, brayn, brest, col, cold, corn, der, fel, folk, gold, gres, hed, heer, hous, lef, light, lond, loss(e), mel, mot, right, seed, shap, ship, sor, swerd, thing, vers, werk, wex, whiel, word, wrong, wyf, wyn*; (b) dissyllabic, *deuel* (*m., n.*), *forlong, gospel, iren, ordel* (q. v.), *timber, water, weder, wonder, yuel*. (iii.) masculine jo-stem,—*bryd*; (iv.) neuter jo-stems,—*kyn, net, wit*; (v.) masculine i-stems,—*craft, del, dynt, gest, gylt, hil, streng*, cf. *Grek*; (vi.) masculine u-stems,—*feld, wynter*; (vii.) masculine consonant stems,—*fend, frend, man*; (viii.) neuter consonant stems,—*bred, child*. For *fader*, etc., see end of list; for *crox*, see § 19.

In the following list MS. D has usually been disregarded, and insignificant variations in spelling have not been registered. For erroneous final -e's, not sounded, and due simply to the whim of the scribe, see especially *bor, brest, cold(e), dom, fend(e), flood, foul(e), frend, gold, harm, hed, hom, knyght, kyng, lord, noon, reed, ryng, thing, werk, wynd* (cf. § 14, note 2).

arm (A.S. *earm, m.*), (i.) acc., 2756; for, 2735 f. (ii.) acc., 3970, 4416

¹ U-stems that have in A.S. identified themselves with the o-declension are not distinguished.

- (armes † B); yn his a. he, 1241 (-e B).—arm yn arm, (i.) 1908; (ii.) 2201, 2810.
- bak (A.S. bæc, *n.*), (i.) his b. byhynde, 1724; at here b. byhynde, 7174 AB; (ii.) acc., 4089; by, 7174 † C.
- bark (A.S. bark, *Leechd.*, I, 378, O.N. borkr, *m.*), (ii.) vnder, 3569; ther nys but b., 4889; thorwgh the b., 5801 (-e B, *om.* † C).
- berd (A.S. beard, *m.*), in the b., 4703 (-e B).
- bisshop (A.S. biscop, *m.*), (ii.) nom., 1189 (9-syl. verse).
- blast (A.S. blæst, blést, *m.*), for, 2472 f (-e B).
- blood, blod (A.S. blód, *n.*), (i.) voc., 1679; acc., 435, 1530; of (*source*), 4642; vnto, 6964. (ii.) ther nas but Grekes b., 1283; vnto, 6963. [Var. B -e, -e; C blud.]
- bou (A.S. bán, *n.*), nom., 2011 f (-e B, mylk † C).
- bond (A.S. band, *n.* (*bande, pl., Pet. Chron.*), Sweet, 254; but the regular A.S. form is bend, *m., f.*, see Sievers, § 266, n. 2), (i.) acc., 4596 (in † a bounde C); withouten, 4200 (-e B); with, 4608 (bounde C); from, 4610 (-e B, hond † C). (ii.) voc., 4103 (hond † B).
- bor, boor (A.S. bár, *m.*); bore, boore, nom. 7812 D, acc., 4622 AB (-e † D), 7601 D, 7834 D; with, 3563 BD; of, 7645 D (: hoore *adj. sg., A.S. hár*; bor: hor AC; boor: hoor B).—boore he, acc., 7840 D. Everywhere else written *bor, boor*; cf., besides the places just cited, 7603, 7817, 7825, 7832, 7835, 7876, 7878.
- bosom (A.S. bósm, *m.*), And yn here bosom the lettre doun he thraste, 2240 ABC (bosom doun D).
- bot (A.S. bát, *m.*), (ii.) withinne, 416; nom., the b. hath, 1088. [Var. B boot.]
- brayn (A.S. brægen, *n.*), yn 4346 (breyne B).
- bred (A.S. bréad, *n.*), acc., 1529 f (: ded *adj. sg. pred.*). (Cf. 907 † D.)
- brist (A.S. bréost, *n.*), (i.) nom., 6582 (-e B); acc., 5414, 5834 (bryst C); in, 4898 (-e B); on, 4258 (-e B); vpon, 5813 (-e B); out of, 5132; into, 2014 (-e B). (ii.) acc., 4905; vpon, 4694 (-e B); out of, 5000 (-e B, bryst C); fro, 6155 (-e B); nom., b. here, 5477 (-e B); vnder hire b. his, 2012 (-e B). [Var. B -ee.] out of my breste, 5438 AB (brist † conueye C).
- breth (A.S. bréð, *m.*), nom., 801 f (-e B), 4935; acc., 3961, 5840.
- byrd (A.S. brid, *m.*), nom., 2852.
- brydel, bridel (A.S. bridel, *m.*), nom., 946 f (: on ydel); acc., 4604; by, 6455 f (: on ydel); on, 7236. [Var. C -il.]
- chep (A.S. céap, *m.*), as good chep, 3483 (schep C).

cherl (A.S. *ceorl*, *m.*), nom., 1017.

child (A.S. *cild*, *n.*), nom., 4770 D (-ę B, chy [l]d A).

clerk (A.S. *cleric*, *clerc*, *m.*, coincident with O.F. *clerc*), (ii.) nom., 2883 (*clerc* B).

cloth (A.S. *cláð*, *m.*), nom., 3575 f.

col (A.S. *col*, *n.*), thorough, 2417 (-ę C, -ę [the] *morë* B).

cold(e) (A.S. *ceald*, *cald*, *n.*), for, 911 f (-d CD) (: told(e) (told CD) *p.p.*); through, -e, 2052 (-d B, D (?); the *coldë nyzt* C). For *hete* of cold for cold of *hete* I *deye*, 420 (ffor cold of *hete* for *hete* of cold, etc. C).

corn (A.S. *corn*, *n.*), nom., 219 f (-e B) (: by-forn *adv.* : shorn *p.p.*).

craft (A.S. *cræft*, *m.*), (i.) nom., 665, 747; acc., 379; on (acc. BC), 6120 f. (ii.) nom., 4476; in, 6453; nom., *lechcraft*, 5098.

crepul (A.S. *crypel*, *m.*), by-fore, 6120 (-il C).

crop (A.S. *crop*(p), *m.*), nom., crop and rote, 1433, 7608 f (-e B); crop and more, 6388.

del (A.S. *dél*, *m.*), ye shenden euery del, 1675 f (-e BD); ony del, 2299 f (-e BD); eche a del, 3536 f (-e BD); neuęre a del, 3550 f (-e BD); no del, 1082 A (-ę D); euery del, 5721 f (-e B, -deH D); acc., *haluendel the drede*, 3549 (*nom.*, † C). Cf. *somdel*, *adv.*, (i.) 290 (-ę B); (ii.) 1081 AD (*some* *deel* B), 1688 (-e BD).

Rhyme words.—*wel* *adv.* (*everywhere but* 5721); *temporel*, *eternel* (5721), *stel n.* (1675). [Var. B *deele*, *deel*.]

der (A.S. *déor*, *n.*), (ii.) acc., 2620 (*deere* B).

deuel (A.S. *déofol*, *m.*, *n.*), (i.) nom., 5292 (-yl *haue* † C); voc., 2822 (-il C). (ii.) nom., the d. *haue*, 805 (-yl C). *As expletive*,—How *deuel maystow bryngen me to blysse*, 623 (*de[ue]*l C).

dom (A.S. *dóm*, *m.*), (i.) to my d., 5049 (-ę B), 5064; in myn d. †, 5258 C (*supply* [no]). (ii.) nom., 5850 ([the] *dome* B; *dom* C †). [Var. B *doom*.]—to my *dome*, 100 (*doom* B, *dom* C).

Compounds.—*frëdom*, (ii.) acc., 235 (-dam C).—*kýngdom*, (ii.) acc., 7850 (*kyndom* C, *kingdham* D).—*thráldom*, nom., 1941.—*wýsdom*, *wisdom*, (i.) with, 5590 (*wisdhum* D). (ii.) of, 1299; for, 452 (*be wisdem* C †).¹

drem (A.S. *dréam*, *m.*), (i.) acc., 6741 ((-en) B); for 7643 (-ę B); in, 7615. (ii.) nom., 7806 (-e B); acc., 7651 (-e B, -ys C), 7819 (-e B; C †); in, 7614 (*drem* [y]schewid C); by, 8078 (-e B ?); acc., d. *he*, 7815 (-e B).

dynt (A.S. *dynt*, *m.*), with, 7868 (-ę D, *dent* C).

¹ In B 452 dele the second (*for*).

- em (A.S. éam, *m.*), (i.) nom., 1440, etc.; voc., 1394, etc.; of (=from), 1015. (ii.) nom., 3115, etc.; voc., 2244.
- epistol (A.S. epistol, pistol, *m.*), e. hem, 3343 ([e]pistol C, lettre † D).
- erdest (A.S. eordest, -ost, *m., f.*), (i.) in, 2614, 2788; bytwene, 3096. (ii.) acc., 1537 (herdest B). [Cf. erdestful, § 49, n. 3.]
- fel (A.S. fell, *n.*), (ii.) nom., 91.
- feld, field (A.S. feld, *m.*), (ii.) in, 4704 (-e B), 5451 (-e D); through, 1280 (-e B)¹; yn the feld he, 1067 (feelde B). (Cf. *felddefure*, § 5.)
- fend(e) (A.S. féond, *m.*), 5099 f AD (fend B, fend † C) (: frend *voc.*).
- fèuer, -ere (A.S. fefer, féfer, *m.*, Pogatscher, p. 164), feuere, 909 f (: keuere *inf.*); feuër and, 491 (-yr B, -ere CD)²; -er is, 2605 (-ere B, -ere D, [thi] feuere C); -ere or, 4055 (fyuër D).
- fiss, fyssh (A.S. fisc, *m.*), (i.) nom., 5427. (ii.) nom., 2877; nom., f. herbe, 2852.
- flood (A.S. flód, *m., n.*), on a flod(e), 3482 f (flood D) (: as muché good); fro . . . flood of, 4442 (flood B, flod C, feende † D).
- folk, see § 43.
- forlong (A.S. furlong, -lang, *n.*), a f. wey, 5899 (forlonge B, furlong CD).
- foul(e) (A.S. fugol, *m.*), nom., foule, 6788 A (fowl B, foul C^e).
- fox (A.S. fox, *m.*), fox that ye ben, 4407 (ffor that † C).
- frend (A.S. fréond, *m.*), (i.) nom., 1348 (-e B), 2488, etc.; voc., 584 (-e B), 610, etc.; acc., 627 (-e B), 1052, etc.; of (=gen.), 98. (ii.) nom., 548 (-e B); voc., 2444 (-e B), etc.; acc., 550 (freende B); for, 1497 (-ee- B); of (=by), 3638 (-e B).—voc., frende, 602 AB (-d C), 5294 AB (-d C).
- frost (A.S. forst, *m.*), (ii.) nom., 524 (froost B), f. hym, 6898.
- gest (A.S. gest, giest, gyst, *m.*), nom., 2196 f BCDG (geste A) (: it thought here herte brest AC, breste BG, as thogh her hert to-brest D : yf yow lest CG, leste AB, list D). The collation of Cp. and John's records no variations from A in these three lines.
- gilt, gylt (A.S. gylt, *m.*), (i.) withouten, 2365 (-e B); in, 4483; of, 4019 (-e B); for, 8138. (ii.) nom., 7620 (-e B); yn, 1329; for, 7459 (-e B); nom., g. hath, 7750. [Cf. gittles, giltëles, §§ 49, n. 5, and 85.]
- guat (A.S. gnæt, *m.*), nom., 5257 (gnatte C).
- god (A.S. god, *m., n.*), (i.) nom., 195, 4607, etc.; voc., 400, etc.; acc., 40; to, 32; by, 1200 (be † iouys C), 1222 (by g. he C); of (=gen.),

¹ A happens to read *feld*.² In C dele (*al*).

- 69, 612, 1310, etc.; dat., I thankē god, 1240. (ii.) nom., 206, etc.; voc., 2145 (B †), etc.; to, 421, 925; by, 2043, 2322, 2962, 3214; of (=gen.), 571, 2402; to g. haue, 1667; to g. hope, 2357; I thanke it g., 1836.
- gold (A.S. gold, *n.*), (i.) of, 6061, 7175; with, 6039; for, 7249 A. (ii.) of, 6675; for, 3242, 7249 B; vpon a quysshon gold y-bete, 2314.—golde, nom., 6185 ABD (gold. acc. † C).
- gospel (A.S. godspell, *n.*), nom., 7628.
- gost (A.S. gúst, *m.*), (i.) nom., 2462 (C †), 3306 (C †), 4849, 5572, 5883 (-e B), 8171; voc., 4964; acc., 1616, 5447, 7733. (ii.) with, 7884. [Var. B goost.]
- GreK (A.S. Gréc, Créc), 1068.
- gres (A.S. græs, W.S. gærs, *n.*), (ii.), on, 1600 (gras D).
- harm (A.S. hearM *m.*), (i.) nom., 75 (-e B), 3755, 4006, 5505, 7588 (-e B); acc., 839 (-e B)¹, 2734 f, 3647 (-e B); for, 1539 (-e B), 3167 (-e B), 4717 (-e B); with, 1925 (-e B, C †); by, 3171 BC (*om.* † A). (ii.) nom., 1874, etc.; acc., 347 (-e B, h. † by C), etc.; to, 1661 (-e B)², 2233; for . . . h. he, 4000.—harME, nom., 333 (harm C); voc., 411 (harm C); acc., 3560 (harm C); yn, 7739 (*in*(to) harm C); harME, nom., 409 (harm C).
- hat (A.S. hæt(t), *m.*), nom., 3162 f (hattē B) (: what : that).
- hauk (A.S. hafoc, *m.*), (i.) nom., 671. (ii.) with h., 6428 (-e B).—gos-hauk, (i.) nom., 5075 C^c.—sparhauk hath, nom., 4034 (spere-hauk C).
- hed (A.S. héafod, *n.*), (i.) nom., 1929 f (-e D); acc., 1492 f (hede D), 1742 (-ē † D), 1774, 2923 f (-e D), 3799 f AB, 3897 (A †), 3921 f (-e D), 4906 (-e D), 7290 f (with . . . † hed C); at, 2781 f (-e D); to, 5821 f (-e D); by, 530 A † C †, 1255 † D, 5255 (hod C); in, 5754; of, 5390; saue, 1710. (ii.) nom., 6357; acc., 1625, 1952 (-e D); out of, 3736 (heujd C, hēde † gone D); on, 6646 (*in* his hed he † D); acc., hed he, 7840. hede, acc., 4415 f (hed BCD); by here beddes hede, 3796 f (hed B).
- Rhyme words.—ded *adj. sg.* (1492, 1929, 2781, 2923, [3796 D (dede),] 3921, 4415, 5821), goodlyhed (1929), hed, hede *head* (3796, 3799), red *n.* (2781, 5821), red *adj.* (2923, 3796, 3799, 4415, 7290). [Var. heueð, heuyd, heujd C 1710, 1952, 3736, 5821 f, 5390, 5754, 6646; heed, heede D.]
- heer (A.S. hér, hér, *n.*), (i.) acc., 5398 (here B, her CD). [*here* in 5478 f B, 7173 C, 7362 D, is an error for *heres*, pl.]
- helm (A.S. helm, *m.*), (i.) nom., 1723 (-e B); vpon, 8125 (*in* B supply [to]). (ii.) acc., 6670 (-e B).

¹ In C supply [*cruel*].² In C supply [*am*].

- hil, hill (A.S. *hyll*, *m.*), (i.) to, 6973 (C †); i[n] hil Parnaso, 4652. (ii.) nom., 943 (hille B).
- hod, hood (A.S. *hód*, *m.*), by, 2266 f (-e B, hond † C) (: good *n.* : stood *ind.* 3. *sg.*), 5255 † C, 7514 f (-e BD), (: good *n.*); acc., 2039 (-e B); in, 2195.
- hom (A.S. *hám*, *m.*), (i.) as limit of motion, as in A.S. (= *domum*), 1995 † C, 3068, 3486, 4423 (-e D), 4871 AB, 5392, etc.; at hom, 4755 (-e B); homward, 3463 (hom C). (ii.) = *domum*, 6848, etc.; home, 126 A (hoom B, hom C), home he, 1681 AB (hom C).
- hook (A.S. *hóc*, *m.*), (ii.) acc., 7140.
- horn (A.S. *horn*, *m.*), (ii.) acc., 1727 (hed † C).
- hound (A.S. *hund*, *m.*), (i.) acc., 3606 (-e B). (ii.) with, 6428 † C. (Cf. § 15, n. 3, p. 51.)
- hous, hows (A.S. *hús*, *n.*), (i.) nom., 3477; acc., 1058 (-e B), etc.; in, 3042, 6938 f (place † B) (: melodious); out of, 1522 (-e B); at, 3037; to, 3356, 6891 (C †). (ii.) voc., 6904; acc., 2871; in, 1766, 3506; to, 2546 (-e B; C †), 2625; vnto, 2599 (-e B); in the h. he, 5485.
- iren (A.S. *irén*, *n.*), acc., felt iren hot, 2361 (the thorn † C).
- knyf (A.S. *cnif*, *m.*), with this k., 1410.
- knyght (A.S. *cniht*, *m.*), (i.) nom., 165 f, 1074 f, 1262 f, 1416 f, 3280 f (-e B), 3757 f, 4329 f, 4490 f, 5013, 5231 f, 5279 f (kynght A), etc.; voc., 3018 f (-e B), 3838 f, 4151 (-e B, *om.* † C), 6199 f; acc., 979, 1956 f, 2679 (A †), 5376 f C (: *syzt n.*), 6147 f; by, 225 f; vpon, 1846; lyk, 1716 f, 2348 f (-e B); to, 3623 f (-e B), 7200 f (-e B), 6696 f. (ii.) nom., 191; of (= *gen.*), 1537 f, 7228 f (-e B), 8115 f (-e B); fro, 5408 f, 6696 f; knyghte, nom., 3825 f AB (-t C).
- kok (A.S. *coe(c)*, *m.*), nom., 4257 (C †); pekok, acc., 210 (pakoc B).
- kyn (A.S. *cyn(n)*, *n.*), (ii.) nom., 5287, 5993; acc., 6183.
- kyng (A.S. *cyning*, *cyng*, *m.*), (i.) nom., 1186 (-e B), 5539 (-e B), 7297; voc., 4856 (-e B); acc., 4800 (-e B), etc.; to, 5308 (-e B); with, 6647 (-e B), 6794 (-e B); of, 4786 (-e B). (ii.) acc., 4938; to, 3224 (-e B); with, 3434 (-e B). of the kyng, 664 AB (of [the] kyng C).
- laughter (A.S. *hleahfor*, *m.*), for l. wende, 2254 (-tere BC, -tir D); nom., laughtre men, 5528 (-ter CD).
- lef (A.S. *léaf*, *n.*), (i.) nom., 4042 (leef B). (ii.) yn, 7796 (leefe B).
- light, lyght (A.S. *leoht*, *n.*), (i.) nom., 3978 (C †), 6906 f; acc., 4298, 4543, 7001 f (-e B); wo worth . . . l., 5409 f (nyzt † C). (ii.) nom., 3979; voc., 2843; acc., 2405 (letteze † C), 3821, cf. 4962 †

- C; of, 1994; acc., l. here (*hic*), 4303 (lyth C). [Cf. lyghtles, § 49, n. 5.]
- lond (A.S. land, lond, *n.*), yn some l., 1123 (-e B).
- lord (A.S. hláford, *m.*), (i.) nom., 1415, 1524; voc. and excl., 330 (-e B), 350 (now † C), 422, 528, 2924, 6945 (-e C), etc.; with, 1791; by, 2138 BC. (ii.) nom., 65, 2488; voc. and excl., 2406 † C, 2444 (-e B), 6952 (*om.* † B); acc., 903 (-e B; C †). lorde, voc., 6962 ABD (lord C).
- loss(e) (A.S. los, *n.*, L. to lose, P. Pl.^e los, loos), nom., -e, 4689 (los B, loos D); -e ne, 4751 (los B, lossë † me D).
- lust (A.S. lust, *m.*), (i.) nom., 4388 (lest D †), 6235, 7618 (C †; -e B, listę D), 8194 (-e B, list D); acc., 1915 (lyf D), 4741 (-e B, *nom.* lust D), 5751 (-e B, wil C), 8187 A (-e B); ayens, 1561 (listę B, lyst D), 2142 (list D); for, 443 (louę C, list D); of (=gen.), 1929 (luf A, lyst and D); with, 7682; yn, 326; to, 2219. (ii.) acc., 2083 (-e B, list D), 3118 (-e B, lyst D), 4532 (-e B); of, 6389; at, 407; yn, 4661 (-e B, lyst D), 5155 (-e B, loue C); acc., l. his, 2151 (list D), 4392 (list D).
- lest, lyst (cf. A.S. lystan),—lest, nom., 1872 f (-e B) (: prest *pred. uđj. pl.*). lyst, voc., 4145 f (liste B, lust C, trustee † D) (: trist *n.*); yn, 330 f (leste B, rest C^e, lyst D) (: best *adv.*).
- man (A.S. man, *m.*) 232 f, 1633 f, 3805 f, etc., etc.
- martir (A.S. martyr, *m.*; also, martyre), nom., 5285 (-tyr BC).
- mel (A.S. máel, *n.*), see *tyde*, p. 26.
- mot (A.S. mot, *n.*), (ii.) acc., 4445 (moote B, mote C, mytę D).
- mouth (A.S. múð, *m.*), (ii.) acc., m. he, 812 BC (m. yet † A), 5823 (-e B, mout C).
- net (A.S. net(t), *n.*), of, 4575 f (nette C); withoute, 1668 f, 6033 (C †); into, 7138. (Rhyme-words all *p.p.*,—set, yset, yknet, imet.)
- noon, non(e), noon(e) (A.S. nón, *m.*), (i.) nom., noone, 7477 (non C); after noone, 2270 (-n BC); after noon, 7493 (and at † after none D); byfor noon, 7485 (-e D). (ii.) a-twixen noon, 6835 (-e BCD).
- ordal (A.S. ordál, ordél, *n.*), (ii.) by, 3888 (ordel C, ordinal † D).
- oth (A.S. áð, *m.*), acc., 3953 f (ath B); by, 3888 f (ooth B).
- path (A.S. pæð, *m.*), (ii.) acc., 1122; gon som by-path, 4547.
- port (A.S. port, *m.*, cf. O. Fr. port), to good port hastow rowed, 962¹.
- post (A.S. post, *m.*), (ii.) nom., 993.
- pyk (A.S. pic, *m.* (?), cf. Fr. pique), acc., 2126 f (pik C).

¹ In ABD read *fastë* for *fast*.

qualm (A.S. *cwealm*, *cwalm*, *m.*), (ii.) nom., 6745 (-e C).

red, reed (A.S. *ræd*, *réd*, *m.*), (i.) nom., 5160 f (-e BD), 6791 (counsell † D); acc. 661 (-e BD), 2783 f (-e D), 5822 f (-e BD), 6075 (-e BD), 6690 C (rede ABD); to, 2624 (-e BD); by, 2780 (-e BD). (ii.) nom., 1474¹ (-e BD), 1507 AC (-e B), 7655 (-e B,² counseil † is D); of, 2439 (-e BD); withouten, 6385 (-e D). [*rede* once in A, 6690.]

Rhyme words.—ded *mortuus* (2783, 5160), she lay as for ded (5822), at his beddes hed (2783), to here hed (5822).

res (A.S. *rás*, *m.*), yn a r., 5012 (rees B).

reyn, rayn (A.S. *regn*, *rén*, *m.*), (i.) nom., 3468 (-e B), 3498 f (-e B) (: agayn : fayn), 4402 (*in B supply* [me]); in, 3630 f (: to seyn : certeyn). (ii.) of, 3470.

right, ryght (A.S. *riht*, *n.*), (i.) nom., 591, 3840 f (perh. adj.); acc., 4124 f, 5177 f; by r., 3758, 5105 f (thour r. C); of r., 3826, 4637 f, 5233 f (-e B, on ryzt C), 7708 f. (ii.) by r., 1848, 5058.—vnright, acc., 1538 f, 5212 f.

ryng (A.S. *hring*, *m.*), (i.) nom., 3732 (-e B), 5531 f (-e B, ryngis † C); voc., 6912 (-e B, r. of C); acc., 3735 C (-e B, ryng I A); yn, 1670 (-e B).—ryng(e), acc., 3727 f AB (ryng C) (: thing *acc.*).

seed (A.S. *séd*, *n.*), nom., 385 C (sedē BD, *om.* † A).

shap (A.S. *ge-sceap*, *n.*), (ii.) acc., 1747 (shappe B, *in A supply* [his]), 6836 (shap hire BC)

sheld (A.S. *sciold*, *scyld*, *sceld*, *m.*), (i.) nom., 1286 (sheeld and B, schild & C), 1617 (-e B, schild C), 1725 (-e B, scheld C), 3322 (shield B, schild C); acc., 6671 (-e B, child C); vnder sheld, 2412 f (-e B, schild C) (: byheld *pret. ind. 3. sg.* : held *pret. ind. 3. sg.*)

ship (A.S. *scip*, *n.*), (ii.) acc., 7007 (-e D).

shour (A.S. *scúr*, *m.*), (i.) in, 4709 (-e B). (ii.) Doun fille as shour in aperil (aperil B) swythe, 5413 (Out ran as schour of aprile ful swythe C).

slep, sleep (A.S. *sláep*, *m.*), (i.) nom., 4380 (-e C); acc., 484 f (: keep *n.*), 7810 (-e B, C †); of (= concerning), 4250 f (shep † A, on slepe C) (: kepe *n.*); of (= out of), 6883 (-e B). (ii.) in, 6724 (-e B), 8078 (-e B); yn his s. hym, 7597 (-e B); out of his s. he, 7606 (-e B); nom., s. hire, 2009 (-e B).

song (A.S. *sang*, *song*, *m.*), (i.) nom., 5828 (-e B, song is C); acc., 7008 (-e B); of, 393 (-e B), 1961 (-e B); in, 397 (-e B), 4656 f

¹ *red[ē] I shal* A (emend to, *red I sholde*).

² *Supply* [*this*] in C.

- (e B); on, 1910 (-e B, lay C); by, 1968 f (-e BC). (ii.) nom., 7738; acc., 4666, 6996; on, 389 (-e B); in, 6095 (-e B).
- sor (A.S. *sár, n., f.*), (i.) to his s., 5606 (soor B).
- spir (A.S. *spír, inc. gen.*), an ok cometh of a litel spir, 2420 f (-e BCD) (: fyr : desir *n.*).
- ston (A.S. *stán, m.*), (i.) 1685 f (-e B), 2579 f (stoone B), 3541 (-e B), 5016 f (-e B); acc., 3733 f (stoone B); on, 2313 f (-e B); of, 2956 (-e B); in (=into), 5129 f (stoon B, into a ston C). (ii.) nom., 1928 (A †), 8092 (-e B).
- streng (A.S. *streng, m.*), (ii.) acc., 2118 (-e B).
- swarm (A.S. *swearm, m.*), (ii.) nom., 1278.
- swerd (A.S. *sweord, n.*), (i.) acc., 5433 (-e B), 5877 (-e B), 6670; with this . . . s., 5902 (-e B). (ii.) acc., 4415, 5886 (-e B; C †); with s., 5873.
- thank (A.S. *þanc, þonc, m.*), (i.) acc., 803, 1008 (-e B), 1100 (-e B). (ii.) acc., 3485, etc.; t. him, 1461 (-e B).—vnthànk, (ii.) acc., 7062 (-thonke B).
- thef (A.S. *þeof, m.*), (i.) voc., 870 (theef B, if † C). (ii.) voc., 3940.
- thing, thyng (A.S. *þing, n.*), (i.) nom., 174, 217 (-e B, thyngys C), 254 (-e B), 5533 f (-e B), 5735 f (-e B), etc.; acc., 1229 (-e B), 3725 f (-e B), etc.; on, 5247 (-e B); in, 5070 (-e B); to, 5684 (-e B); fro, 748 (-e B, for † th. C); aycyns, 2499 (-e B); of, 511, 673 (thy(i)ngē B), etc.; any thyng, any thing, *adv'l.*, 848 (-e B), 3474 (-e B).—(ii.) nom., 401 (-e B), 5358 f (-es B), etc.; acc., 1719 (-e B); in, 1800 (-e B); on, 2860 (-e B); of, 2960; lyk, 103 (-e B); for that thyng hym, 1805.—no thing, no thyng, (i.) nom., 2135; acc., 1460 (-e B), etc.; for, 7057 (-e B); with, 2380 (-e B); of, 797 (-e B), etc.; *adv'l.*, 137 (-e B), etc. (ii.) nom., 339 (-e B), etc.; acc., 1558 (-e B), etc.; in, 5827 (-e B); no manerē thyng, *adv'l.*, 5939 (-e B). thingē, acc., 2791 A (thyngē B, thyng C).
- thonder, thondre (A.S. *þunor, m.*, L. *þunre*), of thondre, 3504 f (thonder B, thundyr C, thundre D) (: a-sonder : yonder); with thonder dynt, 7868 (-dir C, thunder D); with thonder, 2230 f (-ir C, -re D) (: wonder : yonder); acc., the thonder ryngē, 1318 (thundir D, thondyr (to) ryngē C).
- thorn (A.S. *þorn, m.*), acc., 2357 f (-e BC), 3946 f (-e B).
- thought (A.S. *ge-þóht, m.*), (i.) nom., 442 f, 1853, 5643 (-e B) (cf. 1856, 1891); acc., 3981 f, 4951 f, 5727 f, 7529 f, 7644; for . . . th., 579 f; yn th., 1779 (in hire th. argue BC); yn here th., 1688 f, 6465 f (-e B); in his th., 4383; out of my th., 4342 f; of here . . .

th., 1737 ; of this th., 1830 f (-e B) ; with that th., 1741. (ii.) nom., 6316 † C ; acc., 5641 ; with, 7682 ; in his th. he, 3285 ; withinne hire th. his, 1745 ; with that th. he, 827 ; with . . . th. hire, 1894. thral (A.S. þræl, *m.*), acc., 439 (thralle B).

thred, threed (A.S. þréd, þréd, *m.*), (ii.) acc., 6208, 6370 ; with, 7175 (-e B).

top (A.S. top(p), *m.*), acc., 5658.

tymber (A.S. timber, *n.*), (ii.) nom., 3372 (-yr B, -ir C, -re D).

vers (A.S., fers, *n.*, cf. O.F. vers), nexst this vers he, 399.

wal (A.S. weal(l), wal(l), *m.*), (i.) nom., 3321 f (: in al) ; in, 1132 f (walle B) (: yn al : shal 3 *sg. inul.*) (ii.) nom., 1239 ; to . . . w. his, 4906 (walle B) ; ouer . . . w. he, 7508 (walle B, waH † his C).

[Var. C waH.]

water, watre (A.S. wæter, *n.*), (i.) to watre, 2957 (-er B, -yr C) ; withoute water, 5427 (-yr C).

weder (A.S. weder, *n.*), (i.) nom., 1087, 3499 (-ir C). (ii.) nom., 3512 (-ir C).

werk (A.S. weorc, *n.*), (i.) acc., 1059, 8186 ; for, 2078, 4828 (-e B) ; of, 1101, 8021 (-e B) ; on (vpon BC), 3539 ; to, 3577. (ii.) acc., 265, 3313, 5514 (wek † A) ; of . . . w. he, 3544.—worke, acc., 2045 AB (werke C).

wex (A.S. wæx, weahs, *n.*), vpon, 2173.

wheston (A.S. hwetstán, *m.*), (ii.) nom., 631 (weston C). (Cf. *ston.*)

whiel (A.S. hwéol, *n.*), (i.) nom., 848 (whelys † C) ; on, 4673 ; vpon the w., 4985 f (: of stel) ; of (= gen.), 839. (ii.) from, 4668. [Var. C whel.]

wimpil (A.S. wimpel, *inc. gen.*), acc. wimpil and, 1195 C (*read barbe*).

wir (A.S. wír, *m.*), by, 4478 f (wyr B) (: fir *ignis* : desir *n.*).

wit, wyt (A.S. gewit(t), *n.*), (i.) nom., 5553 (C †), 5599, 6273 f, etc. ; acc., 241 f (witte B), 1358 (witte B), 3839 f (witte B, wite C), 5766 f, etc. ; out of, 108, 4892, 5010 ; emforth, 1328 f, 2082 f (euene with my w. C) ; with, 2757 ; to, 4153 (*om. † C*) ; by, 7121 f (: yit : it). (ii.) nom., 1217 (B †), etc. ; acc., 7706 ; yn, 989 ; of, 1928 (A †, wight C), 3058 ; out of, 7625 ; with, 2977 (B †), 3007, 3085 C, 6149, 8145 ; thurgh, 2926 (C^e †).

wonder (A.S. wundor, *n.*), (i.) nom., 403 (-yr C), 2228 f (-ir C) (: with thonder : yonder), 5250 (-yr C), 5762 (-ir C) ; acc., 7344 f (-ir C, wonnder B) (: asonder). (ii.) nom., 955 (-yr C), 959 (-yr C), 1105, 1828 (-ir C), 1834 (-ir C) (cf. 4920, 6425, 6484). (Cf. the adverbial and adjectival uses of *wonder*, § 85, note 2.)

word (A.S. *word*, *n.*), (i.) nom., 1102 (-e B), etc.; acc., 397, etc.; of, 820 (-e B); with, 875 (-e B), 1176 (-e B), 1293 (-e B), 1961 (-e B), 2777 (-e B), 3000, 3752 (-e B); withouten w., 3308¹; at, 4150 (-e B). (ii.) nom., 2896 (-e B); acc., 737, 2113 (-e B), etc.; word by word, 2262 (C †); by, 3273 (by w. ne † C); withouten w., 5362 (-e B; C †); with that w. he, 204 (-e B), 869 (-e B), 1349, 3583, 3806 (-e B), 3820; with that w. here (*poss. sg.*), 1335; withouten w. he, 6900; word and ende, 2580, 3544 (-e B).—acc., by-word here (*hic*), 5431 (-e B).

wrong (A.S. *wrang*, see Kluge in Paul's *Grundriss*, I, 787), (i.) acc., 2557 (-e B), 3850 (-e B). (ii.) nom., 4017 (-e B); acc., 2764; in w., 594 (-e B); acc., wrongē † to D (-ēs AB).

wyf (A.S. *wif*, *n.*), (i.) voc., 2948 f (: lyf), 4138 f (: al my lyfe A, lyue BC); from 6701 f (: lif : stryf). (ii.) nom., 678, 6134 (-e B).

wyn (A.S. *wín*, *n.*), acc., (i.) 7215, (ii.) 3513.

wynd (A.S. *wind*, *m.*), (i.) 3585 (-e B), 7036 (-e B); acc., 7041 (-e B); with w., 1851 (-e B); in the w., 3368 f (-e BC) (: blynd *pred. adj. sg.*); o wynd o wynd, 1087 (-e . . . -e B). (ii.) thorough, 6806 (-e B); with w., 7004 (-e B); wynde, nom., 2473 AB (wynd C).

wynter (A.S. *winter*, *m.*), (i.) nom., 1137; in, 3194 (-ir C), 4887 (-yr C); after, 3904 (-yr C); yn wynter mone, 524 (-yr C).

yerd (A.S. *geard*, *m.*), nom., 3erd, 1905 D (yerdē B, gardeyn (*sturred*) † A, 3erd [was] C).

yuēl (A.S. *yfel*, *n.*), (i.) acc., 1666 (euel B, euyll C, evil D), 4006 (euele B, euyll C); for, 5268 (euel B, grif † C); an yuyl that ye ne take, 7988 (an euyll 3e B, on euyll 3e C, on yueſt that D).² (ii.) nom., 782 (euyll C); acc., iuyll and, 6780 C (harm AB, harme D).

The five Anglo-Saxon kinship nouns *fæder*, *móðor*, *bróðor*, *sweostor*, *dohtor* (r-stems):—

fader, (i.) 5994 (fadidyr † C, fadir D †), 6043 (-ir D, -ir I C), 7499 (-yr C); cf. 121, 4756, 4938, 5329. (ii.) cf. 4687, 5217, 5220.

moder, (i.) 5424 AB (-ir D), 7589 (-ir C), 8232; cf. 5869. (ii.) cf. 1135, 4097.

brother, (i.) 653 (-er(e) D), 3094 f (-ir D), 6670, 6884; cf. 51, 1242, 2131, 2444, 2481, 2483, 2496, 2535 f, 2705 f (-er(e) D), 2711, 5067 f, 5120 f, 5203, 5270 f, 6497, 7869 f. (ii.) brother || I, 8094 A (-er deere BD); brother holdere, 1729.

¹ In B insert [it].

² In B read *ne* for *it*.

suster, (i.) 6253 (systyr C), 7813 (systyr he † C); cf. 1154, 2778, 5510. (ii.) cf. 860, 2309, 2644.
 doughter, douhter, (i.) 6200 (douȝtyr C), 7473 (douȝtyr C); cf. 94, 2845, 4649, 4754, 5325. (ii.) cf. 664.

§ 19. The following nouns of Germanic origin, which have no substantives to represent them in Anglo-Saxon, end in the *Troilus* in a consonant.

For erroneous -e (not sounded), see *fold(e) lok, skil*.

abod (cf. A.S. *ábídan*), nom., 7670 (abood B; C †).

anger, angre (O.N. *angr, m.*), with an angre don, 563 (-yr C, -re to D)¹; after anger game, 6225 (-ir C); ffor angrē of, 7898 (-ir CD).

bark, see § 18.

bost (etym. dub.), for b., 3090 f (-e B) (: wost *scis*); thorough, 3140 f (: almost : wost).

cast (cf. O.N. *kasta vb., kōstr, m.*), (ii.) fro, 1953 (-e B).

croſ (O.N. *kross, m.*; A.S. Normannes croſ, Birch, *Cart. Sax.*, III, 367, see Skeat, *Trans. Philol. Soc.* for 1888-90, p. 286) is of Romance origin, but its precise history is doubtful, see p. 92.

flat (cf. O.N. *flatr, adj.*), of, 5589 B (A † C †).

fold(e) (cf. O.N. *faldr, m.*, O.H.G. *falt, m.*), in many fold(e), 1782 f (-d CD) (: told *p.p.* : cold).

Note.—For *fold* (A.S. *-feald*) in the adverbial phrase *a thousand fold*, see (i.) 2088, 2671, 3094, 3416 (-ē † dye B), 4382, 4526 (-e B); (ii.) 1227 (-e B); a th. f. his, 546 (-e B); a thowsand folde more, 819 (-d C).

hap (O.N. *happ, n.*), nom., 2781; acc., 2539; with, 4088 (B †).—*vnhap*, acc., 552.

keep (cf. A.S. *cépan*), acc., 486 f (-e B) (: sleep); *kep(e)*, acc., 4252 f (*kep BC*) (: of slep).

lak (O.N. *lacr, adj.*), (i.) nom., 2263 (*lakkę B*). (ii.) nom., 2044 CD (*lat † A, lokke † B*)², 7177 (*lakke BD*); for, 1994 (*lakke B*), 2365 CD.

lasch (cf. Dutch *lasch*), acc., l. haue, 220 (*lasche C*)³.

lok, look (cf. A.S. *lócian*), (i.) nom., 2352, etc.; acc., 2344, 7292 f (-e B), etc.; with, 307 (-e B), 325 (-e B), 538 (-e B), etc. (ii.) acc., 291 (-e B), etc.; of, 295 (-e B); with al his l., 229.—of *hirę lok(e)*, 364 AB (*lok C*).

skil (O.N. *skil, n.*), nom., in *skil(e)* is, 3488 (*skyl BC, skil hit D*), *skyl ywys*, 1450 (-e D).

¹ In A supply [to].

² Verse too long in C.

³ In C supply [he].

smert (cf. A.S. *smeortan*; Dutch *smart*, O.H.G. *smerzo*, *m.*, *smerza*, *f.*), (i.) nom., 5507 (-e D); for s., 5035 (-e BD). (ii.) on s., 5128 (*e* B, *smerthe* D).—smert (-e D), 6780, is perhaps a verb (= smerteth). [On the supposed sbst. *smerte*, see § 67, s. v. *smerte*, *adj. pl.*]

stert (cf. Dutch *storten*; cf. A.S. *steort tuil*), (ii.) with, 6617 (-e) B.

strok (cf. A.S. *strican*), acc., 2467 f (-e) B (: ok); with s., 5173 (*strook(e)* B).

sweigh (= impetus; cf. O.N. *sveigr*, *m.*), nom., 2468 (*swough* B, *swey* C, *sweyf* D).

swough (= swoon; cf. A.S. *swógan*), of (= out of), 3962 (*swou3* C, *swoun* D), 5874 (*swow* C, *swogh* D).

syk (cf. A.S. *sícan*), with, 1230 (-e) D, 1548 (*sikö † seide* B, *syk(e)* she D), 3643 (-e) D, 3965 (-e † *whan* B), 4335, 6189. [Var. B *syhg*; BC *sik*; D *sike*, *si3*, *sigh*.]

walk (cf. A.S. *wealcan*), in his w., 190 (C?).

Note 1.—For *thryft* (O.N. *þrjft*, *f.*) and *won* (O.N. *ván*, *f.*), see § 11; for *shyvre*, *slyvre*, see § 19, n.

Note 2.—For *kankdort*, of very doubtful etymology, see 2837 f (*kankdort* C, *kankerdorte* D).

§ 20. In Romance nouns final -e (-e mute) is usually retained, both in writing and in sound, except for the regular elision. But there are a good many exceptions, in some of which the -e is preserved in writing but loses its value as a syllable, in others of which the -e is neither written nor pronounced. (Cf. Child, § 19; ten Brink, §§ 222, 223.)

For details see the following sections (§§ 21—31). — § 21. Miscellaneous Romance nouns in -e which sometimes or always retain -e in the *Troilus*. § 22. Exceptions to § 21. § 23. -*aunce*. § 24. -*ence*. § 25 -*esse*. § 26. -*ice*. § 27. -*ure*. § 28. -*ère*. § 29. *disclaundre*, *lettre*, etc. § 30. -*ye*, -*ie*. § 31. *comèdye*, *augùrye*, *fùrye*, *stòrie*, etc.

§ 21. Miscellaneous Romance nouns in -e (-e mute) which sometimes or always retain -e in the *Troilus*.

This list contains the following words: *age*, *Ariète*, *assège*, *bataÿle* (*bátayle*), *baude*, *baume*, *bille*, *blame*, *calle*, *cause*, *caue*, *charge*, *charme*, *chaunge*, *cheyne*, *clause*, *compleÿnte* (*còmpleÿnt[e]*), *constreÿnte* (*cònstreÿnt[e]*), *cope*, *coràge* (*còrage*), *corde*, *demaunde*, *descènte*, *disese*, *doute*, *egle*, *ensàmple*, *entènte*, *eschaunge*, *ese*, *executrice*, *face*, *faile*,

fame, fate, fayre, feste, flaumbe, force (fors), fortune (-e; fòrtune, -e), frape, garde, gaude, gemme, geste (gest[e]), grace (grace), gyle, gyse, herbe, heure, infortune, impossible, inke, ire, iape, ioie (ioye †), lesse, ligne, ma dàmè, martire, mayle, mèdecyne, meruayle, message, mewè (muwe), noble, moue, muse, mysèricòrde, nece (nece), note, noyse, orisonte, penne, peple, persòne (persòne his), peyue, place, planète, pleyate, pompe, potènte, pouèrte, preue, prològe, prouèrbe, pùrsuyte (-e), quète (quiete), rage, rascajlle, regne, rente, reprèue, requeste (-t ?), reyue, roche, route, ruijne, sauegarde, sege, signe, sire, space, steuce (stuwe), table, tente, terme, tittle, trone, vnclè, vniuerse, vrne, vsàge, vermìne, verre, veyne, viàge (viage), visàge, ymàge.

Note 1. The Romance words in this list are all French except *Ariete* (Ital. *ariete*)¹ and *orisonte* (Ital. *orizzonte*). *Povertè* (O. Fr. *poverté*), and *stuwe* (O. Fr. *estuwe*) exhibit peculiarities of formation. *Potente* has no direct French etymon (cf. O. Fr. *potence*), and may be imitated from Latin. The four words *fate* (Lat. *fatum*), *mèdecyne* (Lat. *medicina*, cf. Fr. *médecine*), *quète* (Lat. *quietem*, or, perhaps, Ital. *quiete*)¹, *vniuerse* (Lat. *universum*; cf. Fr. *univers*), *vrne* (Lat. *urna*, see p. 74, footnote 1), are included in this section for convenience. For *chimenay[c]*, see § 33, note.

Note 2. Ten Brink's rule, "Nach tonloser Silbe verliert -e regelmässig seinen Silbenwerth" (§ 223), is illustrated by *fortune*, *pùrsuyte*. In all other cases in point the word that follows begins with a vowel or a weak *h*, except those in § 22.

Note 3. Other instances of apocope may be seen in *grace*, *ioye †*, *nece*, *sire*. For irresponsibly omitted -e's (scribes' errors), see especially *entente*, *geste*, *requeste*.

Note 4. *Egyle*, *ensample*, *impossible*, *noble*, *peple*, *table*, *tittle*, *vnclè* illustrate the treatment of consonant + *le*. But cf. *marbel* (O. Fr. *marble*, *marbre*), 700 (infra), *werbal* (infra).

Note 5. *Werre bellum*, might fairly have been included in § 21; but it seemed better, on the whole, to give it a place in § 15.

age, 1480², 7189 f (: corage), 8199 f (: visage : ymage).

Ariète (Ital. *ariete*), 6254 f (aryète C) (: herte swete), 7553 f (aryète C) (: swete).

assege; thassege, 6142 (thassage B, the sege CD). [Cf. *sege*.]

batàyle, 1715 f (: withouten faile); bàtayle, 8114 (-H D)

baude, 1438 f (: gaude).

bawme, -e is, 1138.

bille (Anglo-Norm. *bille*, L. Lat. *billa*), 2215 f ABC (: stonde stille).

blame, 1100 f (: lame *pred. ulj.*), 3107 f (: name); -e, 5213, 5256, 7431; -e haue, 1295 (-ë † haue BD³).

calle, 3617 f (caH D) (: alle *pl.* : calle *inf.*).

cause, 854, 1812 f (: clause), 2492, 2524, 2718, 2771 (D †), 3607,

¹ Cf. ten Brink, § 222 Anm., who is inclined to regard *Ariete* and *quiete* as "romanisierende Abklatsche lateinischer Wörter." He says nothing about *orisonte*.

² AD defective. Supply [*that*].

³ Read in BD, *blame haue I* [myn] vnclè.

3637, 3993, 4004, 4421, 4681, 5379,¹ 5491, 5677, 5889 (-e hire BD), 5932, 6313, 6443 (-es † D), 7239, 7391 (-is wich † C), 7593, 7665 f (: clause), 7668, 7757 C (-e AD); cause, 20 (D †), 579, 670², 1568, 1580, 1917, 2187³, 2848, 2872, 3206, 3378, 3462 CD, 3828,⁴ 3833, 3874, 3987, 4761, 4803, 5350, 5589 (A †; -e to C), 5672, 5674 (-e of [the] D), 5703, 5724, 6003, 6316 (thouȝt † C), 6335, 6490 ([the] cause D; B †), 6769, 6783, 7017 (-ë is † D), 7592 (C †; -ë † of D), 7705⁵ (D †), 7757 (-e doth C), 8055.— -e (before h), (he) 4787, 4885, 6890, 7578 (-e of C, -e he? D); (haue) 7619; (hadde) 4069.—O cause of wo that cause hast (hath † C) ben of blysse, 6913. [Cf. causeles, § 85.]

cauc, 1202 f (: sauc *subj.* 3 *sg.* : raue 2 *pl.*).

charge, 2079, 4096 † f B, 4842⁶; -e, 651 (charg C); -e he, 444.

charme, 2399 (-[e] C); -e, 2665 (charm C).

chaunge, 1107 f (: straunge), 7997 f (: straunge) (chung C : strong); -e, 5327 (-g † for C). [Cf. eschaunge.]

cheyne (O. Fr. chaaine), 509 f (cheyn D) (: pleyne *inf.* : peyne *n.*), 1703 f (: tweyne : to seyne).

clause, 1813 f (: cause), 7664 f (: cause).

compleynte (O. Fr. complainte, -nt), 541 f (-t D) (: dreynthe *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* : pleynte), 5404 f (: constreynte); -e, 5446 (-t CD), 5467 (pleynt C, compleinte † D); compleynt hym, 2668 (-e B); cõmpleynt of, 655. [Cf. pleynte.]

constreynte, 5403 f (: compleynte); cõnstreynt and, 1861 (D †; -e B, constaunt † C).

cope, 3566 f (: Eurõpe).

coràge, 3739 f (: rage *n.*), 7188 f (: age); cõrage, 564 (couràgè † wake D), 5281 (cùrage B).

corde, 6806 f (: recorde *inf.* : accorde *inf.*).

demaunde, 5957 f (: comaunde *pres. pl.*), 6356 f (: recomaunde *inf.*); -e he 7222 (-ë † he D).

descente, 319 f (dissent D) (: wente *itt* : mente *pret.* 3 *sg.*).

disese, dishesc, 1232 f, 2445,⁷ 3726 f, 4118 f, 4751 f, 5759 f; -e, 2072, 3885, 4658, 6472 (desese A, de-sese C, di[s]ease D), 7783 (*pl.* † C).

Rhyme words.—displese *inf.* (1232), plese *inf.* (3726, 4118, 4751, 5759), apese *inf.* (3726), ese *n.* (4118, 4751, 5759). [Var. D disese, disease.]

¹ AB defective.

² Supply [for] in D.

³ "The cause of his comynge (-yng DG) thus answer(e)de." The choice lies between *causē* and *comyngē*. The collection of Cp. and John's MS. notes no variants.

⁴ Supply [in] in C.

⁵ Supply [my] in A.

⁶ Supply [that] in AD.

⁷ Supply [that] in D.

doute, 152 f (-t D), 1820 f † C (-t † D), 2477 f (-t D), 5066 f, 5939 f, 6233 f (dought D), 6431 f, 7658 f, 7816 f, 7881 f, 8007 f; -e, 1451 (-t D), 3360. [Cf. douteles, § 85.]

Rhyme words.—aboute (152, 1820 CD, 2477, 5066, 5939, 6233, 7658, 7816, 8007), oute (7881), withoute (6431), route (5066, 6431), deuoute (152), tuskes stoute (7816).

egle, 2011 (egele C), 4338 (egele C, egle † D).

ensample, *trisyll. bef. csts.*, 232 (-saumpele BCD), 995 (-saumpele B, on-saumpele C).—ensample, 3714 (-sampele by C),¹ 4863 (-saumpele C), 7953 (-saumpele C). [Var. B ensaumpele.]

entente (O. Fr. entente), 61 f, 738 f, 928 f, 1448 f, 1609 f, 1913 f, 1963 f, 2008 f, 2145 f, 2304 f (-t B), 2531 f, 2645 f (-t B), 2808 f, 2967 f, 3395 f, 4030 f, 4081 f, 4424 f, 4835 f, 5297 f, 5515² f, 5882 f, 6187 f, 6513 f, 7230 f, 7473 f, 7668 f, 8057 f. [In the above list D has *entent* throughout (*intent*, 61), and C has *entent* except in 61 (where a part of the MS. is cut out) and in 1448, 1963, 3395, 4081, 4835, 5297 (in which lines it has *entente*.)]—ententë (*bef. csts.*), 4008 (-[e] C, -t † is D)³; entent[ë] (*bef. csts.*), 4071 AC (-e B, entent † clene D).—entente, 5319 (-t BCD)⁴; entent (*bef. vowels*), 2378 (-e B), 7993 (-e B, entente is † C)⁵; entent he, 7139 (-e B).—entent, 2750 f ACD (-e B) (: went *ierunt*), 6078 f ABCD (: mente *pret. ind. 3 sg. : wente iit*).

Rhyme words.—wente *iit* (2808, 3395, 4424, 5882, 6078, 7473, 7668), wente, went *ierunt* (61, 2750), wente *pret. subj. 3 sg* (4835), stente, stynte *pret. ind. 3 sg.* (738, 1963, 4081), stente *pret. ind. 3 pl.* (61), repente *pres. ind. 1 sg.* (928, 1609), consente *pres. ind. 1 sg.* (928), *inf.* (2531), mente *pret. ind. 1, 3 sg.* (1448, 2304, 2645, 2967, 4030, 6078, 7230), 2 *pl.* (8057), 3 *pl.* (4835), rente *n.* (1913), sente *misit* (1913, 5515, 7473), *pret. subj. 3 sg.* (2531), hente *pret. ind. 3 sg.* (2008, 4030), assente *pres. ind. 1 sg.* (2145, 5297), *inf.* (6187), tormente *inf.* (5297), glente *pret. ind. 3 pl.* (5882), tente *n.* (6513).

Note.—A consideration of the above data shows that the only form that Chaucer uses in the *Troilus* is *entente*, never *entent* except when a final -e would disappear by the regular operation of the rules for elision. The scribes sometimes omit -e where we must supply it, not only in *entente*, but in the rhyme words; but Chaucer in the *Troilus* never rhymes *entente* with a word that has no right to a final -e and never apocopates the -e in the middle of a verse.

eschaunge (cf. change); -e 4808 (change CD), 5221 ([es]change C), 5540 (change D, eschaung † for C).—eschaungë † of, 4893 D (chaungynge ABC).

ese, 28 f, 43 f, 1835 f, 2310 f, 2951 f, 3475 f, 4121 f (ateste † B), 4248 f, 4570 f, 4748 f, 5365 f, 5756 f, 6479 f.—Before consonants,

¹ In 3714 C read, *ensampele of for c. by.*

² In CD the rhyme word is spelled *sent*; but this is not *sent* = *mittit*.

³ In BD read *al[le]*. ⁴ In C supply [ë]. ⁵ In B supply [the].

2746, 3453, 5388, 6474.—ese, 2861, 4146, 5142 (-e and [in] D), 7742 (B †; crese † D), etc.; ese hym, 2744. [7722 † C (?).] (Cf. disese.) [Var. D ease.]

Rhyme words.—displese *inf.* (28), *pres. subj.* 3 *sg.* (2951), plese *inf.* (43, 2310, 3475, 4121, 4570, 4748, 5365, 5756, 6479), apese *inf.* (2951, 6479), countrepeyse (-pese BCD) *inf.* (4248), dishese *n.* (4121, 4748, 5756), lese, O. Fr. *lesse* (1835). [Var. D eese, ease.]

exèutrice, 3459.

face, 1071 f, 1195, 1350 f, 1850 f, 4188 f, 4411 (D †), 4670 f, 4812 f, 5526 (C †), 5812 f, 5999 f, 6449 (C †), 6562 (*om.* A), 6607 f, 6899 f, 7037 f, 7071 f, 7277 f; -e, 1490, 5477, 5483, 6918, 7170¹; -e he, 5023 (fate † D); -e hem, 4730 (-e he D).—at prymë face, 3761 f (: place : grace).

Rhyme words.—grace *n.* (1071, 1350, 3761, 4188, 4670), space (1850, 5999, 7037 CD), pace *inf.* (1850, 5812, 6899, 7277), place (4188, 4812, 5812, 6607, 6899, 7037 AB, 7071), deface *ind.* 2 *pl.* (7277). [Var. C fase.]

faile, fayle, 1714 f (: batayle), 6258 f (: assayle *subj.* 3 *sg.*).

fame, 5321 (fane † C), 6783 f C †.

fate (Lat. *fatum*), 7913 (face † C); -ë helpeth, 7915 (-e hym BD, face † C); -e, 6572 (stat † C); -e he, 5023 D †.

fayre (O. Fr. *feire*), 8203 f (faire B, feir D) (: floures fayre (faire B, fair D)); To morwe? allas! that were a fayrë! quod he, 3692 (fair B, fayr C, [a] fair D).

feste, 161 (-[e] C, -t † D), 168 f (feest D), 1446 f (festis † C), 1506 f (fest D), 2992 f (-t CD), 3186 f (-t BD), 4001 f (-t D), 4154 f, 6440 f, 6804 f, 6819, 6887 f, 8040 f; -e, 3495 (-t BD), 4070 (-ë ioye? D), 4581 (-t D),² 6667, 6809 (ferste † C).

Rhyme words.—leste *adj. pl.* (168), behest, -e (1446, 1506, 3186), heste (4001), the leste (1446, 4001, 4154, 6440, 6804 *pl.*, 6887, 8040), request (-e B) (2992). [Var. B feest, feeste; D feest.]

flaumbë funeral, 6665 (flambe C, flawme D); -e, 4780 (flaumme C, flaume D).

force, 6137 (fors C), 6784.—fors, (i.) what fors, 1463. (ii.) In *no fors*, 2562, 4984 (-ce D, fors whan C), 7118, 7979 (-ce D); no fors hardly, 2802.

fortüne, 841 f (: commune *pred. adj.*), 4664 f (: entune *inf.* : comune *adj.*), 5053 f (: comune *pred. adj. pl.*), 7904.—fortune, 138, 849 AB (-tùne † to C, -e † for D), 3459, 4509, 4556 (D †), 4922 (förtüne allas † D), 4936 (-e † if C, -e yif D), 5047, 5262, 5854, 8108 (-ë † ay D), 8126 (-ë † it D); -e his, 6832; -e hem, 7497.—förtune, 837,

¹ Supply [of] in B.

² B, apparently, "swich a feste and swichë proces," where *swiche* seems to be written, by error of ear, for *swich a*.

843, 4986, 5851, 6250, 7283; -e hym, 1370.—Ne remuable fortunē deface, 6344¹. fortunē wole, 1420 AD (-tūne B; D †). [Cf. *infortune*.]

frape, 3252 f (: iape : i-shape *p.p.*).

garde,—sauē-gard[e], 4801 (-ë B, saf cundwyt hem C, safē conduyt hem D †).

gaude, 1436 f (: baude).

gemme, 1429 (comme † B, gom[me] † C).

geste, 3292 f (geest D) (: leste *pret. sg.* : the beste).—gest[e], 1168 f (geeste B, geest D) (: leste *pret. ind. 3 sg.*).

grace, 42 f, 370 f, 713 f, 900 f, 926, 955 f, 1056 f, 1070 f, 1117 f, 1351 f, 1799 f, 1916 (D †), 2155 f, 2207 f, 2450 f, 2611, 3303 (spase CD), 3314 f, 3547, 3764 f, 4018 f, 4109, 4111 f, 4191 f, 4298 f, 4646 f, 4672 f, 5217 f, 5614 f, 5895, 6055 f, 6346 f, 6534 f, 6535 (-e † befallē D), 6865, 6944 f, 6955 (-e † C), 7057 f, 7303 f, 7320 f, 7686 f, 7994 f, 8065 f, 8231 (mercy BD); grace, 973, 998, 1328 (D †), 2058, 4925, 4955.—grace for, 3770 (-ë had B, -ë to D, *om.* † C). [Cf. *graceles*, § 49, n. 5.]

Rhyme words.—pace, passe *inf.* (42, 370, 3314, 4111, 5614, 6055), passe *subj. 1 sg.* (7057), trespase *inf.* (4018), purchace *inf.* (900, 1117, 1799, 5217), *inv. pl.* (2207), chase *inf.* (4646), face (1070, 1351, 4191), at prymē face (3764), space (713, 2155, 2207, 7303, 7994, 8065), place (900, 955, 1056, 1117, 2450, 3764, 4111, 4191, 4298, 4646, 5217, 6346, 6534, 6944, 7303, 7320, 7686), deface *inf.* (6346), arace *inf.* (7320). [Var. C *grase*; C 4018 *gras*; D 42 *gras*.]

gyle, 719 f C (wyle AD, wile B) (: begile *inf.* : while); 3619 f (gile C) (: while).

gyse, see § 26.

herbe, -e, 957 (erb B), 1430 (herb B, erbe † C), 2852. [Var. C *erbe*.]

heure, oure, owre, 456 f (hour D), 1478 f, 1673 f (-is † D), 2792 f (hour D), 2982 f (our C), 4318², 5200 f (hour D), 7006 f; -e, 2642 (hoür † aftir D), 3374 (-r CD)³, 6826 (-r D)⁴, 7696 (-r CD). [hourre † hath, 4295 C.]

Rhyme words.—laboure *laboro* (456), deuoure *inf.* (7006), *subj. 3 sg.* (1478), powre *inf.* (2792), honoure *inf.* (2982), he is youre (3oures † D) (1673), oure *ours* (5200).

infortunē wolde, 4847 (-e it AB); -e, 4468, 4959. [Cf. *fortune*.]

inke, 4535 f (ynke C, ynk D) (: bythenke (bithynke) *inf.*).

¹ So in ABECp. John's Phillipps 8252 (with *remewable*) G (with *remereable*) Harl. 2392 (with *nor* for *ne*) Selden B 24 (with *ll* after *fortune*). Cut out in C. Ne resonable † fortune to deface D; No remuable fortune for to deface Durham II 13.

² For how sholde (shold[e] B) I my lyf an hourē (ourē B, our[e] D) saue, 4318 Cp., is apparently the correct reading. A, hour[e] my lyf (?); C, our[e] myn lyf (?).

³ Supply [*she*] in C.

⁴ Supply [*uas*] in D.

impossible, an impossible were, 3367 (im- B, & † impossible C; D?).
ire, iire, yre, 2864 f, 6952 f, 7827 f, 8118; ire, 793; ire he, 6399,
7586.

Rhyme words.—a-fyre (2864, 7827), I desire *ind.* (6952).

iape, 2128 f (: ape), 3250 f (: frape : i-shape *p.p.*); -e, 1215. [-ë † in,
5258 C.]

ioye, 4 f, 118 f¹, 608 f, 1225 f, 1728 f, 1834 f, 1902 (-[e] D), 1967 f,
3059 (C † D †), 3190 (ioy † to D?), 3198 f, 3632 f, 3717 f, 4070
(-e † D), 4162, 4221, 4249, 4284 f, 4292 f, 4513 (ioy † his D),
4556 f, 4718 f, 4752 f, 4931 (-[e] D), 4936 f (foye † C), 4997 f, 5004
(-[e] D †, -ë † or B), 5047 (-[e] D), 5968 f, 5985 † C (blysse ABD),
6093², 6104 f, 6293 f, 6390 f, 6481 f, 6790 f, 6971 f, 6978 f, 7094 f,
7144 f, 7293 f, 7745 f, 7910 f; ioye, 1918, 3662, 4520, 8077, etc.;
-e he, 2389; -e hastow, 6951; -e hadde 3311; -e here *poss. pl.*,
1861³; -e halt, 4478 (-e haldyth † C).—ioyë have (*inf.*), 2329 (-[e]
D).—ioyë and (*l. ioye* and [al]), 3495 C (-e AB).—ioyë † may, 4535
A (-ë BC, -[e] D).

Rhyme words.—fro ye (4), anoye *inf.* (5968), acoye *inf.* (7144), Troye (*all
the passages cited*). [Var. BD ioie; C 1728, 1918 Ioy3e.]

lesse (O. Fr. lesse), 1837 f (leese B) (: ese *n.*).

ligne, see *lyne*, § 3, p. 6.

ma dàmë, 1170 (-[e] B); -e, 1965 (madàm B).

martire, see 5480 f (under *matere*, § 28).

mayle, 7922 f (: by-waylle *inf.* : auentaylle).

medecyne, 659 f (-[e]cine B, medicynys † C, medicine D) (: fyne).

meruayle, merueyle, 476 f (: trauayl, -e BCD); -e, 3031 (meràkele
C, miràcle D).—mèrueyle, 6484 † D (wonder AB, wondyr C).

messàge, 3243, 5474 f (: rage *n.*), 5552 f (: rage *n.*). [massàgë †, 2021
C.] [5516 B, *extra metrum*.]

mewe, muwe (O. Fr. mue), 381 f, 3444 f, 4626 f, 5158 f (mew D),
5972 f.

Rhyme words.—suwe *inf.* (381), saluwe *inf.* (4626), arguwe *inf.* (5158),
stuwe *n.* (3444), truwe *truee* (5972).

miracle, see *meruayle*.

moble, moeble (*dissyl.*), 6042 (mobelë C), 6663; moeble is, 6122
(mooble B, mebil C, mobles † ben(e) D).

mowe (Fr. moue), 4669 f (mow D) (: y-throwe *p.p.*).

muse, 1094 f (: vse *inf.* : excuse *ind.* I *sg.*).

¹ Old-style figures indicate that D has no -e.

² Bygan for Ioyë the amorousë (thamorouë Cp. John's, thamarouë B, the ame-
rous[e] CD) daunce.

³ Supply a third [her] in D.

mysèricorde, 4019 f (-d B) (: recorde *inv. pl.*).

nece, 968 (-e to D), 1177, 1334, 1559, 2288, 2550 (-e [myn] A, C *defect.*), 3051, 3594 (-ë † he C, -e quod D), 3788 (nece(ce) C, -e dere † ? D), 3817, 8075 (nees[e] D), etc., etc.—nece, 1409 (trowth[e] nece B), 1491 AB, 2338 (-ë lo † C), 2502, 3117 (-ë put C, -e † put D), etc.; -e haue, 1373; -e hath, 8090 (nees D); -e how, 4405. [Var. C 2042 nese; D 4398 nice.]—nece who, 2272; nece se, 3804 (-e how CD)¹; nece lo, 1340 (-e BC, -ë † alwey D).

note, 5247 f (: hote *adv.* : grote).

noyse, 3586, 6620 ABD; -e 85 AB (C †), 1155, 3504 (D †), 4732, 4845 (voys † D), 5248; -e he, 5036. [Var. BD noise.]

òrisònte (Ital. orizzonte), 6639 (-soùñe B, ory3onte C, orisent[e] D).

penne, -e, 4675.

peple, (i.) *dissyl. bef. csts.*, 73, 1728, 1743 (-il C), 3426 (-ès B, puples C †), 7515 (puple C, people D). (ii.) *elided before vowels*, 1731 (peplë on CD), 3110 (pepil || as C), 4845 (peplë stert † D), 6231 A (peplë al(le) B, pepele ek C; D †). [Var. C. pepelë.]

persòne, 1786 f, 2572 f, 4745 f (all rhyme with *to done*); -e, 1253.—pèrsone his, 2352 (person C, -e [his] D).

peyne, 9 f, 63 f², 508 f, 589 f, 674 f, 709 f, 1560 f, 1608 f, 1861 f ABC (peyn D1862), 2072 f, 2212 f, 2316 f, 2440 f, 2586 f, 2615 f, 2821 f, 2947 f, 3836 f, 3848 f, 3960 f, 4333 f, 4373 f, 4958 f, 4980 f, 5140 (pleyne † C, peyne † D), 5166 f (peyn C), 5296,³ 5372 f CD, 5411 f (-n C), 5414 f C, 5451 f, 5509 f, 5532 f, 5565 f, 5604 f, 5803 † (-es AB, -ys C), 5806 f, 5919 f, 5967 f, 6398 f (pyne B), 6653 † f A (pyne BCD), 6778 f (pyne † BD), 7041 f, 7090 f, 7255 f, (pyne † B), 7399 f (-n C), 7592 f (payn C), 7599 (-es AB), 7632 f, 7763 f.—peyne, 34, 497, 3634 (wo † B), 4058 (-es † B), 4060 (-e hath BCD), 4344 (pleyne † C), 5799, 6861; -e hym, 7563; -e hire (*pl.*), 5791 BD (-es † A, sorwe † of C).—peyn † ther yn, 1960 D.

Rhyme words.—pleyne *inf.* (9, 508, 1608, 1861, 2440, 2615, 2947, 6398, 7592, 7763), pleyne *ind.* 1 *pl.* (709), compleyne *inf.* (4958, 5451, 5565, 7090, 7632), *inv.* (2586), *querar* (3848, 6778), *queratur* (5919), *to seyne* (to seyn 3848) (9, 589, 709, 1608, 2072, 2212, 2440, 3836, 3960, 4373, 5166, 7399), *restreyne inf.* (674, 5372 CD, 5532, 5604), *constreyne inf.* (1560), *cogitis* (2316), *destreyne inf.* (4373), *feyne simulm* (2615), *reynne plure* (4958, 5532), *reyn ind.* 3 *pl.* (5509), *freyne inf.* *A.S. frignan* (7592), *tweyne, tweyn* (2821, 3960, 4333, 5411, 5414 C, 5451, 5806, 5919, 5967, 7041, 7632), *Eleyne* (63, 674, 7255), *cheyne n.* (508), *souereyne adj.* (4980), *veyne n.* (5604, 6778). [Var. CD peine; D payne.]

place, 898 f, 953 f, 961,⁴ 1057 f (space D), 1115 f, 1128, 1163 f,

¹ Supply [can] in B.

² Old-style figures indicate that D has no -e.

³ Supply [ne] in D.

⁴ AB slightly defective.

2449 f, 2652 f, 3060 f, 3763 f, 3856 f, 4113 f, 4190 f, 4297 f, 4339. 4645 f, 4810 f, 5220 f, 5814 f, 6347 f, 6532 f, 6586 f, 6608 f, 6897 f, 6943 f, 7039 f (space CD), 7040 f (space AB), 7073 f, 7306 f, 7319 f, 7685 f, 7992 (space C).—place, 429, 2098, 3518 (-e † gan D), 4322 † D, 4435 (-ë rise † D), 4970 (-ë † is C^e); -e his, 2455 (-ë † his C; D †); place horrible, 6613 (plase oribęle C).

Rhyme words.—face and grace (q.v.), and the following:—purchace *inf.* (1115, 5220), pace, passe *inf.* (1163, 2652, 3060, 4113, 5814, 6897), chase, chace *inf.* (898, 4645), space (7039 AB, 7040 CD, 7306), embrace *inf.* (6586), race (a-race C) *radat* (3856), arace *inf.* (7319), deface *inf.* (6347). [Var. C plase.]

planète, 4099 f (: the swete : the grete).

pleynte, 408 f¹ (: I feynte *ind.* : queynte), 544 f (compleynt D) (: compleynte : dreynte *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*), 5001 † D (*pl.* ABC), 5462 (-[e] C, còmpleintę that † D), 5489 B (-[e] A, còmpleint † thus D), 5593 f (-t C) (: dreynte *pret. subj.* 2 *pl.*)².—pleynte, 5522 (-t C), 5807 (-t C), 7738 (-t C); -e his, 6631 (-t BC). [5504 ?] [Var. D pleint, pleinte.]—pleynt of, 8107 (-e B).

pompe, 6332 (pomp B).

potènte (cf. O. Fr. potence), 7585 f (-t CD) (: wente : shente, *both pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*).

pouerte (irregular formation, see ten Brink, § 221; O. Fr. poverté), 6182 f (-t C) (: sherte).

preue, 690 f, 3149 f, 3844 f, 6321 f. (*preue*, 470 f, is perhaps an adjective: "The shoures sharpe fille of armes preue.")

Rhyme words.—leue *credere* (690, 3149, 6321), remeue *inf.* (690), greue *subj.* 2 *pl.* (3844).

proldęge, 5555 (prolong † CD).³

prouerbe, 1482 (prouerb B).

pursuyte, 2829 (pursute D, pursuing C); pursuyte⁴ make, 2044 (purseut (?) C, pursute D).

quiète, quyète (Lat. quietem), 3348 f, 4661 f, 5152 f, 5167 f (qui[e]te B), 5443 f.—quiète, quyète, 4522 (quyètë and⁵ A), 7370.

Rhyme words.—swete *adj. indef.* (*all*), mete meet *inf.* (3348), *pres. subj.* 3 *sg.* (5443).

rage, 3741 f, 4915 f, 5473 f, 5554 f.

Rhyme words.—corage, asswage *inf.*, message (5473, 5554).

rascaýlle, 8216 f (: auaylle *inf.* : trauayle *n.*).

regnę shal, 7907 † B (-üs AC, -is D); regne and, 2871.

¹ Old-style figures indicate that D has no -e.

² A has *drenche* (C *drenk*) for *dreynte*.

³ Dele the first *as* in A.

⁴ Supply [*thi*] in A.

⁵ But supply [*thus*] and read *quyète*.

rente, 1915 f (-t CD) (: entente *n.* : sente *misit*), 4747 f (-t D) (: wente *ivi*).

reprène, 1504 f (reprefe D) (: leue *credere*), 2225 f (-oue † B, -efe D) (: leue *creditis*).

requèste, 4719 f (: leste *minimos*), 5176 (-[e] CD), 7312 f (-t D) (: at the meste : at the leste).—requèst, 2990 f (-e B) (: feste *n.*); requèst || is, 1450 (-e B).

reynne (Cotgr. reine), -e here, 6453 (-e he C, rene D).

roche (O. Fr. roche, roke), -e, 4339 (rok C, rock D).

route, rowte, 271 f (-t D), 1698 f (-t D), 1903 f, 5065 f, 5344 f, 5379 f, 6428 f, 6450 f (-t C), 6765 f, 6915 f, 7858 f.

Rhyme words.—aboute (all but 1698, 6428, 6915), withoute (271, 1698, 6428), oute (6915), shoute *inf.* (1698), doute *n.* (5065, 6428), knyghtes stoute (7858).

ruïne, 5049 f (: deuyne *inf.* : defyne *pres. 1 sg.*).

saue-garde (O. Fr. sauvegarde), 4801 B (saue-gard[e] A, saf cundwyt hem C, safe conduyt hem D).

sege (cf. assege), 6142 CD (thassègü A, thassàgü B); -e, 1169 (sege(e) B).

signe, 3994; -e of, 5826, 8015 (-e of [his] D).

sire, 2042 (-[e] BD)¹; -e, 2501 (sere C, here † D), 2544 (sir BD), 6117 (syre C, sir D); -e his, 2925 (sir D).—sire come, 2917 (syr B, for † D).

space, 505, 714 f, 1852 f, 2156 f, 2209 f (sp[a]ce B), 3303 (gracü AB), 5998 f, 7039 f CD, 7040 f AB, 7305 f, 7992 C, 7993 f, 8067 f.

Rhyme words.—*face*, *grace*, and *placc* (q.v.); also, chace *invr. pl.* (2209), pace *inf.* (1852).

stuwe, stewe (cf. O. Fr. estuve), 3443 f (: mewe); the stewü dore, 3540.

table, 6800 f (tabele C) (: honourable, honurabele C).

tente, 6511 f (-t C) (: entente), 7208 (-e ther B), 7385 f (-t CD) (: wente *üt*).

terme, 7059, 7453; -ë holde, 7572 (-[ë] D, hestis † C).

title he, 488 (tytele C, stanza not in D).

trone, 5741 f (: sone *adv.*), 5748 f (: to done), 5837 f (: sone *adv.*).

vnclē (*dissyl.*), 1172, 1183, 1207 (C †), 1221 (D †), 1231, 1324,² 1579, 1739, 2188, 2217, 2561, 2809, 3487, 3684 (vnclē [myn] D), 4420,³ 5601; vnclē (*dissyl.*) herde, 2185; vnclē, 1335 (-e hir D⁴). (C always spells the word with an interior e, vnkele, but never makes it a trisyllable.)⁵

¹ "Sire my nece wolē do wel by the." (Hardly to be regarded as a 9-syl. verse.)

² Supply [myn] in AB.

³ Dele (*for*) in A.

⁴ In a rather later hand.

⁵ In 2188 supply [myn] in C.

- vniuerse (Lat. universum, cf. Fr. univers), 2878 f (vniuers(it)e A) (: the worse).
 vrne¹ (Lat. urna, rather than Fr. urne), 6674 f (: torne (turne) *inf.*).
 vsàge, 150.
 vermìne, 3223 f (: determyne *inf.*).
 verre, 1952 f (: werre).
 veyne, 5605 f (: restreyne *inf.* : peyne), 6780 f (: peyne : pleyne *plorem*);
 -e, 866 (vayne D).
 viàge, 3574²; -e, 1160 (A too short); viage, 2146.
 visàge, 5524 f (vesage C) (: ymage); 8201 f (: age : ymage).
 ymàge, 4897, 5526 f (: visage), 8202 f (: age : visage).

§ 22. Exceptions to § 21 (cf. § 21, note 2).

- acòrd (O. Fr. acorde, acord), 4592 (-e B, l. om. † E).
 àngwyssh (O. Fr. anguisse, angoisse), (i.) 5506 (-guys C). (ii.) 4817
 (-guys C, -gwisshe D).
 aungel (O. Fr. angele, angle), 5306 † C (Iouë AB; Iouë D (†))³.
 (Cf. ten Brink, § 221.)
 beste (O. Fr. beste), 2852 (best BD).
 broche, broch (O. Fr. broche), (i.) broch, 4212 (-e BC, -e (of) gold (†) C), 8024 (-e BD; C †); -e || yow, 8051 (broch B, -e (†) D); -e || that, 8053 (broch B). (ii.) -e, 7403 (broch B, -e [and] that C); -e he, 8032.
 còncord (O. Fr. concorde), còncord and, 3348.
 cùrtyn (O. Fr. cortine, cortine), cùrtyn pyke, 2902 (-teyn C).⁴
 marbel (O. Fr. marble, marbre), 700 (-il C, -le D) (cf. § 21, n. 4).
 phisÿk (O. Fr. phisike), 2123 f (fisyk B, fysik C, physik D) (: lyk *pred. adj. sg.* : pyk *fish*).
 pres, prees (O. Fr. presse), (i.) cf. 173 f, 2734, 2803, 4765 f. (ii.) pres he, 2728. [Var. D prese.] In all the above cases *pres* = throng; in the phrase *Ieye on presse*, *presse* occurs, 559 f (: holynesse).
 ràket (O. Fr. rachete), ràket to, 5122 (rakett D).
 rebel (O. Fr. rebelle, *noun* and *adj.*), Al haue I ben rebel yn myn entente, 1609.
 réfuyt (O. Fr. refuite, refuit), (ii.) 3856 (-fut BC, -fute D).
 rèlyk (O. Fr. relique), rèlyk || hight, 153 (-ike C, -ique D).

¹ Apparently then a new word: "a vessel that men clepeth an vrne."

² Supply [to] in C.

³ Cp. has *Ioue*; E. Harl. 4912 John's have *But any aungel*.

⁴ Supply [in] in A.

rescoūs (O. Fr. *rescous*, *rescousse*), (i.) 4084 (*rescoūse* D). *rescoūs*, (ii.) 478.

skärmyssh (O. Fr. *escarmouche*), s. al, 1696 (*scärmich* B, *scharmus* C, *skarmissh* D †); s. of, 2019 (*scärmich* B, *charmys* B, *scarmyssh* D).¹

sours (O. Fr. *sourse*), (ii.) 7954 (*sors* D, *ground* † C).

text (O. Fr. *texte*), text || ful, 4199 (*tex* B, *tixite* † E, *tixt is* C); text || to (so C), 6072 (-e D).

träuers (O. Fr. *traverse*), 3516 (-erēs B, *curtyns* † D). [Plural?]

ÿssue (O. Fr. *issue*), 6568 (*is-* BD, *isseu* C).

Nobley (O. Fr. *nobleie*, *noblée*) occurs once (before a vowel), see 6332. Cf. *chimeneye* (O. Fr. *cheminée*) and *valey* (O. Fr. *valée*) (§ 33, n. 2).

§ 23. Nouns in *-aunce*.

That *-e* counts as a syllable is clear not only from rhyme, but from the cases in which *mischauñcē* occurs in the interior of the verse before a consonant (5332, 6024; cf. also 3132). For convenience, *balauñce*, *daunce*, *romaunce*, and *traunce* are included in this list. Interesting words are *asēuraunce*, *desēsperaunce*, *obēysaunce*, *signifiaunce*, *suffisaunce* (var. *sufficiuñce*), *reugeaunce*.

In the following list all rhyme-words are given, except nouns in *-aunce* :—

ābundaunce, 3884 (*hab-* A, *ab-* D †).

ālliaunce, 4588 f.

aqueyntaunce, 6485²; *aqueyñtaunce*, 6492 (-ns CD).

asēuraunce, 7622 f (*esēür-* B, *ass[è]ür-* C, *ass[è]ürains* D).³

balauñce, 1551 f, 6222 f (-auns D).

chaunce, 1549 f, 2432, † f B (*pl.* ACD), 8031 f (*chauns* D).

cōntenaunce, 1637 f (: *daunce n.*), 2102 f, 3821 f, 4384 f. [Var. C *cuntenaunce*; D *countyn-*.] *cōntenaunce*, 6902 (*cuntenauns* C, *countenauns* D).

contñuaunce, 2919.

daunce, 517 f (: *aaunce inf.*), 1638 f (: *contenaunce*), 2191 f (: *penaunce*), 3375 † f C^c (: *ordenaunce*), 6093 f (*dauns* D) (: *penaunce*).—*daunce*, 3537 (C †), 6811 (*dauns* D).

delÿueraunce, 4864 f (*delib-* C).

desēsperaunce, 1615 f (*des[es]p-* CD), 2392 f (*dis-* C, *des[es]p-* D) (: *daunce inf.* : *traunce n.*).

¹ 9-syl. line in A.

² *Thaqueyntaunce* (The *aqueyntau[n]se* C, The *aqueyntauns* D) of these (this BC, thes D) Troians (-yans B, -iaunes D, *Troylus* C) to (for to C) *chaunge*.

³ If we read *depē* before this word we can shun the -ēü-.

dessèueraunce, 4266 f (dis- BD).

disaueaunce, 1596 f C (*l. disaueaunce inf.*).

displesaunce, dysplesaunce, 3322 f, 4137 f.

doutaunce, 5625 f (doughtauns D), 5706 f; cf. 200 f C.

gouvernaunce, 1304 f (: daunce *inf.*: myschaunce *n.*), 1552 f, 2105 f, 2527 f (generaunce † B, sustenaunce † D), 3269 f, 3323 f, 3787 f (gouereuaunce B), 4586 f.—gouvernaunce hire (*poss. sg.*), 3058.

ignoraunce, 4136 f, 5646 f, 5663 f, 5733 f; -e, 3668, cf. 2133 † C.

instaunce, 2526 f.

mischaunce, myschaunce, meschaunce, 92 f, 1307 f (: gouernaunce : daunce *inf.*), 2104 f, 3533 f (: ordenaunce : traunce *inf.*), 4227 f (myschance D) (: auaunce *subj.* 3 *sg.*), 4865 f, 5153 f (-ns D), 6223 f (-ns D), 6722 f (-ns D), 7797 f (myschauns D, mys-schaunce C) (: auaunce *inf.*). myschauncë (*bef. csts.*), 5332 (mes- B, mischauns[e] D), 6024 (mes- B, myschaunse C, mischauns[e] D).—myschauncë || in, 3132 (meschaunce B, myschauns[ë] C, mischèf † yet D).—mischaunce, 118 AB (-ë || and B).¹

mountaunce, 2792 (mountenaun[n]s C); moùntance, 4574 (moùntenans C).

obèysaunce, 3320 f (obseruaunce † D).

òbseruaunce, 1197 f (: daunce *inf.*), 3812 f; cf. 198 † f D, 2430 † f B, 3320 † f D.—òbseruaunce, 5445 (-ns D).²

òrdenaunce, 1595 f (: disaueaunce *inf.*), 3377 f (puruyaunce † C), 3530 f (: myschaunce *n.*: traunce *inf.*), 5626 f (ordinauns D), 7968 f (ordinauns D). [Var. BD ordinaunce; B orly-.]

penaunce, pennaunce, 94 f, 1614 f (pen[a]unse C), 2190 f (: daunce *n.*), 5004 f (: traunce *n.*), 6091 f (-ns D) (: daunce *n.*), 6724 f (-ns D), 8034 f (-ns D); cf. 201 f CD (-ës AB).

persèueraunce, 44 f (: plesaunce : auaunce *inf.*).

plesaunce, 46 f (: perseueraunce : auaunce *inf.*), 3268 f, 3786 f, 3813 f (displesaunce † C), 4264 f, 4374 f, 4386 f, 5069 f (-ns D) (: daunce *inf.*), 5081 f (-ns D), 5155 f (-ns D), 6177 f (-ns D), 6304 f (-ns D), 6677 f (-ns D), 6927 f (-ns D) (: remembraunce : daunce *inf.*), 7623 f (-ns D), 7971 f (-ns D); cf. 5761 f CD.—plèsaunce, 6324 (-ns D), 7094 (-ns D); plèsaunce or plesaunce, 2846 (-ns D).

pùrueyaunce, pùruyaunce, poùrueyaunce, 1612 f, 3375 f (daunce † C^c, pùrvèaunce D), 5623 f (-ns D), 5644 f, 5662 f, 5708 f, 5732 f, 7809 f (-ns D).—pùrueyaunce hath, 5639 (-ns D).

¹ But 118 B supply [ye] and read *mischaunce in.*

² In 5445 C dele (I).

rèembraunce, 3810 f (-ance C), 4375 f, 4387 f, 5082 f (-ance C, -auns D), 6305 f (-ns D), 6678 f (-ns D), 6925 f (-ns D) (: plesaunce : daunce *inf.*), 7807 f, 7970 f (-br[a]unce C, -brauns D).—rèembraunce, 7084 (-ns D), 8026 (-ns D), 8054 (-ns D).¹

rèpentaunce, 4150 f.

romaunce, 3822 f (-ance C).—ròmaunce, 1185 (-ns CD).

signifiaunce, 6725 f (signefyaunce C, significauns †? D); signyfyauce, 7810 f (-nifiaunce B, -nyfiaunce C, -nifiauns D). (Synæresis of the italicized vowels.)

substaunce, 6175 f (-ns D).—sùbstaunce, 4879, 6167 (-ns D).

sùffisaunce, 4151 f (sufficyaunce C, soùfficiaunce E), 6302 f (sùfficiaunce C, -ficiauns D), 7126 f (sùfficiaunce C, -ficiauns D).—sùffisaunce, 4558 (-ns C). (Synæresis of the italicized vowels.)

sùstenaunce, 2527 † f D.

traunce, 2391 f (: daunce *inf.* : desespraunce), 5005 f (trau[n]ce C) (: penaunce).

vàriaunce, 5647 f, 7125 f (-ns C), 8033 f (-ns D).

vèngçaunce, 8071 AB (-gçauns D).

§ 24. Nouns in *-ence*.

This ending always rhymes with itself. In the few cases in which it occurs before a consonant in the middle of a verse, the *-e* does not count as a syllable (see under *prescience* (5683) and *science* (67)) (cf. ten Brink, § 223). For convenience, *defence* and *offence* are included in this list.

absènce, 513 f, 3056 f (-ns B), 4142 f, 5445 f (-ns BD), 6599 f (-se C, -ns BD); *-e*, 5089 (-ns BD)².—àbsence, 7759 (-ns D, -nce be C).

àbstinènce, 5446 f (-ns D).

àduertènce, 7621 f (-ns D); *-e*, 5360 (-ns BCD).

àudiènce, audyence, 4732 f, 5207 f (-ns D), 6598 f (-ns BD).

cònsiènce, 554 f (conciencia C).

defènce, 2980 f (A †), 4141 f (diff- B, defense D), 4949 f (diff- D).

differènce, 395 f (-ns CD, deference A).

diligènce, deligence, 2977 f, 4139 f.

èxcellènce, 3057 f, 3830 f, 4116 f, 4167 f.

expèriènce, 7620 f (-ns D); *-e*, 4125.

innocènce, 2133 (-ns D, ygnoraunce † C).

offènce, 556 f, 2979 f (-nse C), 4861 f.

paciènce, 7760 (-ns D).

¹ Supply [a] in D.

² Or, *absence* (first word in the verse).

prèsciènce, 5726 f (-nt † D); -e, 5649 (prescient D); -e hath, 5660 (-nt D); -e put, 5683 (-nt D).—prèsciènce, 5673 (prèscient D), 5724 (prèscient D). (Synæresis in 5673, 5724.)

presènce, 6596 f (-se C); -e, 1545 (presaunce B).

prudènce, 7107 (-ns BD).

rèsistènce, 3832 f.

reuerènce, 516 f, 3054 f, 4115 f, 4170 f, 4731 f BD (reuerence A); -e, 2882.

sàpiènce, 515 f.

sciènce, 7618 f (sience C, sciens D). —sciènce so, 67.¹

sentènce, 393 f, 4169 f, 4859 f, 5208 f (-ns D), 5725 f.

violènce, 4948 f; -e, 5224 (-ns D).

§ 25. (I.) Abstract nouns in *-esse*. (II.) Feminine nomina agentis in *-esse*.

(I.) For convenience *distresse*, *opresse*, *presse*, and *redresse* are included in this list. Rhyme words are commonly nouns in *-esse* or in *-esse*. All other rhyme-words are indicated. For *-essè* before a consonant, see *gentillesse* (3100). For *accèsse*, *èccesse*, see § 32.

(II.) All the examples of this ending occur in rhyme or before a vowel.

I. *distrèsse*, *dystressè*, *destrèsse*, 439 f (-es D) (: *blysse subj.* 3 *sg.* : *promesse*), 616 f (-es D), 641 f (-es D), 1011 f (: *lesse pred. adj.*), 1748 f, 1804 f (: *dronkenesse* : *gesse ind.* 1 *sg.*), 1941 f (-es C) (: *shrewednesse* : *gesse ind.* 1 *sg.*), 2331 f (*distrès* D), 2355 f, 2457 f (: *impreste inf.*), 2888 f (-es D), 3087 f (*disdresse* † B), 3104 f, 3206 f (-es D), 3634 f, 3723 f, 3827 f (*sykernesse* : *gesse inf.*), 3877 f, 4058 f, 4286 f, 4438 f ABC (: *blysse inf.*), 4632 f (-es CD), 4766 f, 4963 f, 5026 f, 5188 f (-es D), 5383 f (-es D), 5462 f (-es D) (: *heynesse* : *lesse pred. adj.*), 5504 f, 5560 f (: *heynesse* : *gesse ind.* 1 *sg.*), 5744 f (*detresse* D), 6333 f, 7078 f, 7957 f.—*distrèsse*, 550 (-es D)².

durèsse, 6762 f.

èccesse, see p. 87.

fèblesse, 1948 (*fèblènnesse* B, *fèbilnesse* C, *fèblènès* D)³.

gèntilèsse, *gèntillèsse*, 881 f (-nesse D) (: *gesse ind.* 1 *sg.*), 1245 f (*ientilnesse* D), 1747 f (*gentilnesse* BD), 1787 f (-nesse B, -nes D), 2353 f (-nesse CD), 3005 f (-nesse B, -nes D), 3244 f (-nesse BC,

¹ In D supply [*that*].

³ Supply [*that*] in C.

² Supply [*swich*] in C.

ientilnesse D), 3724 f (-nesse BCD), 3878 f (-nesse C, -nes D), 3990 f (-nesse BCD) (: gesse *incl.* 1 *sg.*), 4256 f (-nesse B, -nes C), 7954 f (-les C, -lnes D), 7980 f (-nesse D) (: gesse *inf.*).—gèntilèssè triste, 3100 (gentileste † B, -nessè C, -nes to D).—gèntilèsse, 4393 (-nesse CD).

largèsse, 4566 f (: gladnesse : gesse *incl.* 1 *sg.*).

noblèsse, 287 f (: gesse *inf.*), 6802 f (nobelesse C¹), 8194^f (noblesnes † D).

opprèsse, 6761 f.

presse, 559 f (: holynesse). Cf. *pres*, *prees*, § 22.

prowèsse, 438 f (: blysse *subj.* 3 *sg.* : distresse *n.*), 1717 f (: hardynessee : dresse *inf.*), 1745 f (pruesse C), 6799 f (largesse CD).

redrèsse, 5190 f (retresse B).

richèsse, 3242 f, 6332 f (rich[e]sse B), 6801 f.—richesse, 3191 (rechesse B, rehetung † D).²

tendresse. For tendresse how shal she this sustene, 6605 A (tèndrenèsse B, tendirnesse CD).³

II. deuynerèsse, 7885 f (deuineresshe C) (: sorceresse).

goddèsse, 6204 f (goddès D) (: lesse *adj. pl.* : wildernessee); For nece by the goddesse Mynerue, 1317 (-des[se] C); gòddessee, 8.

hierdèsse, 653 f (hye[r]desse D) (: heuynessee : gesse *incl.* 1 *sg.*).

maystresse, 1183.

sòrcerèsse, 7883 f (sercheresse C) (: deuyneresse).

§ 26. Nouns in *-yce*, *-yse*. For apocope, see *seruise* (315).

For *-è* before a consonant, see *coueytise* (3103).

àuarÿce, 4647 f (aueryce C) (: vice).

còueytise, coueitise, 4231 f (: dispise *incl.* 3 *pl.*), 6031 f (: suffice *inf.* : gyse *n.*), 6040 f (: deuyse *inf.*). [Var. C couetyse; D couetise].—còueytsiè wroughte, 3103 (-è (I)wroughte B, còuetisè † this D).

còwardise, -yse, 5264 f (: emprise), 6775 f (: ryse *inf.*).

emprise, 1158 f (: ryse *inf.*), 2476 f (empresse † C) (: aryse *inf.* : forbyse *inf.*), 3258 f (: seruyce), 5263 f (: cowardise).

gyse, 2001 f C (wyse ABD) (: 3e ben wise), 6032 f (: suffice *inf.* : coueytise); -e, 7224, 8013 (-e † C, guise D †); guise, 6427 D (wyse AB, wise C).

mallice, 3168 f (maleys C) (: nice *adj. pl.* : vice).—malls if, 3722 (-ice B, -icè 3if (†) C, -icè † if D)⁴.—màlys hir, 3997 (malice BD, -eys C).

¹ Dele (a) in B.

² Supply [his] in B.

³ Dele (the) in D. Cp. has *tendernessee*; John's has *tendrenessee*.

⁴ In B read *if* for *of*.

office, 4278 f (-yse C^c) (: vice).

sacrifice, 3381 f (: seruyse), 4550 f (: ryse *inf.*), 7828 f (: dispise *inf.* : wyse *n.*). [Var. BCD -ise.]

seruyce, -ÿse, -ice, -ise, 82 f, 164 f, 335 f (servys D), 951 f, 956 f, 982 f, 1763 f, 2884 f, 2975 f, 3003 f, 3256 f, 3279 f, 3317 f, 3380 f, 4130 f, 4444 f, 4636 f, 4657 f, 5059 f, 5176 f, 5471 f, 5494 f, 7681 f. [Var. B ceruyse; C serwyse.]—serulse, seruyse, 430,¹ 3250, 4230².—seruyse, 3834.—seruise, 315.

Rhyme words.—wyse *n.* (82, 164, 335, 951, 956, 982, 1763, 2975, 4130, 4636, 4657, 5059, 5176, 5471, 5494, 7681), wyse *adj. sg. and pl.* (82, 956, 982), deuyse *inf.* (2884, 3003, 3317, 4636, 4657, 5471, 7681), deuyse *ind. 1 sg.* (3279), emprise (3256), sacrifice *n.* (3380), suffice *inf.* (4444, 5059).

vice, 980 f, 1810 f (nyse † A), 1940 f, 3169 f, 4234 f, 4280 f, 4648 f, 5258 f, 8071 f. [Var. CD vise.]—vicē || for, 3142 (vis[e] C; D †).—vice is, 689 (C † D †) (: vices *pl.*); vice, 252 (vys D), 1937³, 2974.

Rhyme words.—cherice *inf.* (980, 1810), nyse, nyce *adj. sg. and pl.* (1810, 1940, 3169, 4234, 5258), malice (3169), office (4280), auaryce (4648), punyce *inf.* (8071).

§ 27. Nouns in -ure. Except as indicated, nouns in the following list rhyme only with each other.

armure, cote arm[ūr]e, 8014 (c. armūr B, cote armūre CD).

asūre (O. Fr. azur, asur), see § 32.

àuentūre, 35 f (: endure *inf.*), 368 f, 568 f (mys- † C), 784 f, 1085 f, 1309 f (: disfigure *inf.*), 1366 f, 1827 f, 2604 f (: endure *inf.*), 4059 f, 4209 f, 4986 f (: endure *inf.* : sepulture), 5050 f, 5991 f (: endure *inf.*), 6661 f (-tur D) (: endure *inf.* : sepulture), 7903 f.—disàuentūre, 1500 f, 4959 f (mys- C, disaumentur D) (: dure *inf.*), 5417 f, 7811 f; mysàuentūre, 706 f.—àuentūre, 1373 (-ë † bele CD).—mysaūnter⁴ ayleth, 766 (mÿsauēnture D †, mysau(e)ntur(e) B, auēnturè mys-aylyth † C).—For *paraūnter* (var. C parauenture, perauenture, etc.; D parauntre, parauenture, etc.), cf. 619, 668, 854, 1796, 2006, 2458, 3333, 5260, 7354 (perh. trisyl.), 7645, 7889.

crèatūre, 104 f, 115 f, 283 f, 570 f (cry- C), 1502 f, 1802 f, 2855 f (: endure *inf.*), 4914 f (crya- C), 5048 f (crya- C), 5418 f (-tur D), 5429 f (: dure *inf.* : noriture), 6341 f (: dure *inf.*), 6517 f (cria- C) (: dure *inf.*), 6573 f, 6604 f (crya- C, creatur D) (: endure *inf.*), 6747 f (-tur D), 7077 f (*l. om.* † C), 7171 f, 7195 f (cria- C, creatur D),

¹ In D supply [ny].

² In 4230 the word stands first in the verse. Either accentuation is permissible. In 4230 C read a[l]s[ō], and so too in Harl. 2392.

³ In C read fle[me]n and in D al[le].

⁴ Cf. paraunter. See ten Brink, § 263.

8064 f (-tur D) (: endure *inf.*).—crèatùrè (*bef. csts.*), 5110 (crya- C); -tùre, 1383 (criatoùr C), 5113 (criateure C), 5156 (cryatour C).
 cure, 369 f, 469 f (: dure *inf.*), 707 f, 783 f, 1084 f, 1368 f, 1826 f, 3884 f (: endure *inf.*), 4060 f, 6412 f (: endure *inf.*), 7076 f, 7902 f (cur D); -e, 5593 (care D, curè than C).
 figure, 366 f, 7812 f.
 iniùre, 3860 f (D †).
 mesùre, 1503 f, 1800 f.
 nature, 105 f, 113 f, 3858 f, 4913 f, 5430 f C †, 6572 f.—nàture, 6015.¹
 nòritùre, 5430 f (nòretùr D, nature † C) (: dure *inf.* : creature).
 ordùre, 6748 f (-ur D).
 scriptùre, 4211 f.
 sèpultùre, 4989 f (: endure *inf.* : aucture), 6662 f (*same rhymes*).
 statùre, 281 f, 7169 f (stàteùre † C).

§ 28. Nouns in -ère.

In the following list are put together, for convenience, *chere*, *manere*, *matere*, *preyere*, *ryuere*, *sperere* (= *sphere*). Observe *mànere*, *màner*. The spelling *èmyspèry* for *hemisphere* (see *sperere*) is interesting.

chere, *cheere* (14 A, and sometimes in B), 14 f, 124 f, 181 f, 280 f, 289 f, 433 f, 879 f (*shere* B), 1125 f, 1234 f, 1417 f, 1445 f, 1556 f, 2214 f, 2352 f, 2446 f, 2597 f, 2626 f, 2811 f, 2896 f, 2938 f, 3072 f, 3174 f, 3271 f, 3334 f, 3484 f, 3589 f (*cher* C), 4198 f, 4396 f, 4506 f (*clere* † A), 4552 f (D †), 5317 f (*cher* D), 6097 f † B, 6298 f, 6394 f (*cher* D), 6547 f, 6779 f (*cher* D), 7170 f, 7276 f (*shere* B, *cher* D), 7591 f (*cher* D).—*chere* (*bef. csts.*), 2660 (-[e] C; D †), 2592 D (-es AB, -is C).—*chere*, 1006, 1734 (*cher* C), 2343 (C † †), 5020, 5060 (*cher* CD); *chere* hym, 1663 (*cher* C); *cher* (*bef. vowel*), 327 A (-e B, *chyr* C, *cherè* he D †).—He neither *chere* (*schyr* C) ne (*om.* BCD) made ne word (*worde* B, *woord* D) tolde, 312 (Shall we read : He neither *cherè* madè ne word [ne] tolde ? The Cp. collation makes no note.).

Rhyme words.—*fere comes* (14), *manere* (181, 289, 879, 1125, 2597, 2626, 2811, 2896, 2938, 3271, 4552, 5317, 6394, 6547, 7170), *dere* *adj.* (433, 879, 1417, 1556, 2214, 2446, 2811, 2896, 2938, 3174, 3334, 4198, 4396, 4506, 6547, 6779, 7276, 7591), here *hic* (124, 289, 1125, 3484, 6298), here *inf.* (124, 280, 3334, 3589, 5317), *matere* (1234, 2214, 3271, 4506), *requere* *ind.* 1 *sg.* (1445), 2 *pl.* (1556), *yfere* *adv.* (1234, 2352, 3072, 3539, 4552, 6097 B), *preyere* (3484, 6298), *clere* *adj. pl.* (4198, 7170).

manere : (1) *manèr*, 33 f, 182 f, 291 f, 880 f, 1014 f, 1052 f, 1122 f,

¹ Supply [*the*] in C; [*pes*] in D.

2596 f (matere D), 2628 f, 2664 f, 2812 f, 2893 f, 2935 f, 3058 f, 3273 f, 3676 f (matere BD), 4254 f, 4291 f, 4555 f, 4585 f, 4946 f, 5315 f (-er D), 5580 f (-er D), 5844 f (-er D), 6392 f (-er D), 6549 f (-er D), 7172 f, 8170 f; manère, 1077 AB (-èr D).

(2) manèrè, maner, *bef. csts.*, (a) manèrè, 1333 (-er B)¹, 1542 (-er CD),² 1937 (-er C)³, 2460 (-er BC), 2560 (-er D, *om. † C*), 3631 (-er D, -er of C), 4577 (-er C), 4740, 5664 (-er D), 5939 (-er BCD), 6415 (-er C, -er of D), 7115 (-er CD), 7124 (-er BD, -yr C), 7748 (-er CD), 7918 (-er CD), 8014 (C †; -er D).⁴ (b) manër, 313 (-èr BD),⁵ 321 (-èr CD), 495 (-èr D), 844 (-èr D), 1944 (-èr D, -er of C), 2189 (-èr CD),⁶ 3159 (-èr BD), 3469 (-èr BD), 5822 CD (other AB), 7478 (-èr B), 7582,⁷ 7640 (*om. † C*).—manère, *bef. vowels*, 742 B (-er CD, -erès A), 2001 (-er C), 2353 (-er C). (3) manèrè † vpon, 7751 A (more CD).

Rhyme words.—here *inf.* (33, 1014, 1052, 2664, 3058, 4585, 5315), dere *adj.* (33, 880, 2812, 2893, 2935, 4254, 4291, 4946, 6549), chere *n.* (182, 291, 880, 1122, 2596, 2628, 2812, 2893, 2935, 3273, 4555, 5315, 6392, 6549, 7172), here *hic* (291, 1122, 3676, 5580), matere (1052, 3273, 4254), lere *inf.* (2664), yfere *adv.* (4555), stere *inf.* (4946), bere *bier* (5844), clere *adj. pl.* (7172), spere *sphere* (8170).

Note.—In most of the cases under 2a. and 2b. above, *maner* is used in such phrases as *no manere routhe, som manere syde, swych maner folk, any manere syde, euery manere wyght, youre frendly* (l. *fremde*) *manere speche*, etc. 313 is an exception, however.

matere : (1) matèrè, 53 f, 265 f, 1055 f, 1090 f, 1236 f, 1580 f, 2124 f, 2216 f (mat[e]re B), 2332 f, 2514 f, 2596 † f D (manere ABC), 2711 f, 2779 f, 3032 f, 3128 f, 3212 f, 3274 f, 3358 f, 3676 f BD (manere AC), 3751 f, 4148 f, 4251 f, 4503 f, 5313 f (matier D), 5480 f AB (martir D),⁸ 5746 f (-er D), 7106 f (-er D), 7314 f (matier D), 7359 f (matier D), 7951 f (matier D).—matèrè (*bef. csts.*), 968 (-[e] B, matyr[e] C), 3371. (2) matèrè, 144 (matyèr (*dissyl.*) and C), 1346 (-yr C, -er D), 1780 (-er C). (3) matèrè, 4485 AB (thyng C, thing to D), 7685 (-er C, -er D †), 7735 (-er C, matier *dissyl.* D).

Rhyme words.—dere, deere *adj.* (53, 1580, 2216, 2514, 2779, 4148, 4251, 4503, 5313), here *inf.* (53, 1055, 2711, 3212, 5746, 7314, 7951), *audio* 3032), refere *inf.* (265), manere (1055, 3274, 4251), clere *inf.* (1090), clere *adj. pl.* (7359), stere *guberno* (1090), *gubernare* (3751), chere *n.* (1236, 2216, 2596, 3274, 4503 (clere † A)), yfere *adv.* (1236, 2124, 2332, 3358), here *hic* (1580, 2711, 3358, 3676, 4148, 7106, 7359), preyere (3128), desire *inf.* (5480).

¹ Supply [to me] in A. In all read *fremde* for *friendly* (etc.).

² Supply [and] in D.

³ In C read *fic[me]n*; in D, *at[le]*.

⁴ In A read *arm[ur]e* (with Furnivall).

⁵ In D read [a]far for *ferre*.

⁶ In C supply [now].

⁷ In C read *defet* for *disfigured*.

⁸ The correct reading seems to be *martire*. C omits the stanza. G has *matere*. No note in the Cp. collation.

preyere, (1) preyère, 2296 f (C?), 3129 f, 3481 f, 6295 f (prayèr D). [Var. C preière; D prayèrc.] (2) preyëre, 4773 AB (prayer D †); preyère, 1538 (preyers B, preières C, prayèr D). (3) preyere A (preyer BC, prayer D), 2575 (*bef. vowel*), to be pronounced *preyère* or *prey'r* (monosyl.), according as we read *goodly* (DGCP. John's) or *goodëly* BC (A has *good* †).

Rhyme words —dere *adj.* (2296), matere (3129), here *hic* (3481, 6295), chere *n.* (3481, 6295).

ryuère, 5075 f (reuerer C, ryuer D) (: dere *adj.*).

spere, *sphaera*, 4337 f (: dere *adj.* : fere *comes*), 7019 f (: dere *adj.* : clere *adj. def.*), 8172 f (: manere).—hèmy-spère, 4281 (-sper(i)e B, èmèsper(i)e C, èmispèry D).

Note.—O. Fr. *gutièrre* becomes *gòter* before a consonant in 3629 (gotur D); *perre* (*masc.*), shows an irrational -e : *As he that was with-outen ony perre*, 8166 (: boughten dere : here *inf.*), cf. ten Brink, § 222.

§ 29. Nouns in consonant + *re* (variants in *-er* and *-ere*).

cedre (O. Fr. *cedre*, cf. A.S. *céder*), 2003 (siderè C).

chaumbre, *chambre*, *chamber*, (i.) dissyllabic before consonants, 2004 (-ir C), 2020 (-yr C), 2202 (-erè C, -ir D); cf. 358, 547, 2258, 3508, 3518, 3630, 4882, 4904, 5014, 5016 CD, 5394 CD, 6655.

(ii.) Slurred before vowels, *chaumbre* || and, 1641 (-er B, -ir C, -rè † and D); *chaumber* afyr, 3698 (-ere a B, -re a D; C (?)); cf. 2797, 5016 AB, 5394 AB; *chambre* he, 6565 (-ere he C) (cf. 6363, 6877). But,—But wel ye wot the chaumbrè is but lite, 2731 (-er B, -ir C). [358 B, 547 D, 1641 D, are to be corrected.]

disclaundre, 5226 (*disclandre* B, *disclaundyr* C, *disclaunder* D).¹

iaspre : *iaspre* || vpon, 2314 (-èr on C, -ar on D, *iapery* † vpon B).

lettre, 2298 f (*lettere* C) (: *bettere adv.* : *vnfettere inf.*), 2782 f (*lettere* C) (: *bettere adv.*). Before consonants (all forms dissyllabic) : *lettre*, 656,² 1188 † C, 2148, 2170 AB, 2175, 2205, 2240, 2246, 2261, 2281, 2286, 2303, 2403, 2421, 2787, 3034, 3062 (D †), 5222 (*honour* † C), 7656,³ 7704, 7758, 7785,⁴ 7792, 7965.⁵ [In 7995 B alone seems to have the correct reading.⁶] Before vowels the last syllable of *lettre* is slurred. Thus,—*lettre* I, 171 (-er C);⁷ so in 2091, 2146, 2176 ABD, 2178 AB, 2232 (-èr to C, -rè to D), 7732,

¹ In C read *mostè* for *mol*.

² Old-style figures indicate that C has *lettere* (dissyllable). B has often *lctre*, which also occurs in A 2421.

³ A needs transposition of *thow* and *a lettre*.

⁴ In D read [vn]to.

⁵ Supply [*that*] in AC and [*why*] in D.

⁶ For *This lettre this Troilus*, Cp. and John's have *Troilus this lettre*. G agrees with B, reading *This Troilus this lettir thought al strange*.

⁷ Metre defective in D.

7761, 7963, cf. 2405 † C. (In this last list old-style figures indicate that C has *lettere*. As before, B sometimes omits one *t*,—*letre*.) *letrë* here (*hic*), 2208 (*lettere dissyl.* C)¹.—*Towchyng thi lettrë that thow art wys ynowh*, 2108 A (*but omit that, with BC; D is hopeless*).²

ordre, ordre is, 336 (*ordere* C); *ordrë of*, 5679; *ordrë ay*, 5444 (*ordre ay D, ordëre til C*).

poudre, poudre in, 6672 (*-er D, -ir † which C*).

sucre, 4036 BGCp. (*seukerë C, sugre D, soür A*).

wÿuere (O. Fr. *guivre, wyvre*), 3852 f (*wiuere C, wythir † D*) (: *delyuere inf.* : *slyuere n.*).

Note.—*Feuere* (A.S. *fēfer, fefer*) appears to have been influenced by the French. There are four examples of the word in the *Troilus* (see § 18).

§ 30. Nouns in *-ÿe, -ÿe*.

When the ending rhymes with itself, the rhyme-words are left unregistered. A remarkable verse is 4647, where we appear to have *enuÿë || ire* (see under *enuÿe*). *Remedye* has the by-form *remède*.

armonyë, 8175 f.

astronomyë, 4777 f (: *lye inf.*).

bawdërÿ, 3239 f (*-ÿe BC, bawdery D*) (: *folÿe : companye*).

companye, companye, compaynye, 191 f (*-ÿ CD*), 450 f, 1171 f (*-ÿ D*), 2573 f (*-ÿ CD*), 2798 f (*-ÿ C*), 3238 f (*-ÿ D*), 4590 f, 5369 f, 5864 f, 6429 f, 6810 f. [Var. B *compaignie, -ÿe*; CD *cumpanye, company.*]

compaignÿe he, 7580 (*-paynye B, -panye C, -panie D*).

Rhyme words.—*aspie inf.* (191), *eye n.* (450, 6810), *hye n.* (1171, 2798), *thrie adv.* (1171), *denÿe inf.* (2573), *prÿe inf.* (2798), *hye adj.* (4590), *hye adv.* (5864), *gye inf.* (4590), *dÿe, ÿe inf.* (5369, 5864).

cöpye, 2782 (*-ÿe BD, cöpi C*).

curtasie, -ÿe, 2571 f (*-eysi C, -esy D*) (: *companye : denÿe inf.*), 6427 f (*-eysie B, -eysÿe C, -esie D*).

enuÿe, 4937 f (: *dÿe inf. : crye ind. 1 sg.*), 7119 f, 7842 f (: *lye mentiuntur : dÿe inf.*).—That pride *enuÿë || ire* and *auaryce*, 4647 ACD (That pride and ire *enÿe* and *auarice* B).³

espie (cf. *spie*), *esple*, 2197 (*aspie B, a spie C, a spÿe D*).

¹ ABC we have *sent*, which the metre requires us to emend to *sent[e]* or *sendeth*. D reads *sent to*; Cp. *sente*.

² Cf. also 7702 C, where, however, we might read *lokyn* (which would still leave a hard line). 7702 is wrongly filled up by the corrector of C.

³ Cp. = B; E Phillipps 8252 Harl. 2392 = ACD; G Selden B 24 John's read *That pride enuÿe and ire and auarice*; Durham II 13 reads *That ire enÿe and auerice*.

fantasye, 1567 f (-y D), 3117 f, 3874 f (-y D), 4346 f, 6132 f (C †), 6624 f, 6692 f (-y C), 6721 f, 6824 f (-y C), 6986 f (-y C), 7886 f. [Var. BCD fantasie; CD fantesie; D fantasy.]

Rhyme words.—crye *inf.* (3117), dye *inf.* (4346), espye *inf.* (6132), drye *pati* (6624), lye *mentiri* (7886).

folÿe, 194 f (-y C), 452 f, 545 f (-y D), 1024 f (-y D), 1859 f (-y D), 2158 f (-y D), 2253 f (-y D), 2371 f (-y D), 2595 f (-y D), 3236 f (-y D), 3680 f, 3709 f (-y D), 3721 f (-y D), 3828 f (-y D), 4224 f (-y C), 6132 f CD †, 6173 f (-y C), 6626 f (-y D). [Var. BCD folie.] folÿe men, 532 (-ÿ C; D †).—fölye for, 6688 (fölië B, -y C). fölye, 5919 (-y C, fooly D); fölye he, 821 (-y CD); föly ofte, 3168 (-ye BCD). föly wroughte, 3604 (fölye BC). The only case of elision with slur is *folye it*, 6240 C, where, however, the right reading is *filthe*.

Rhyme words.—aspye *inf.* (194, 1859, 2595, 3680), eye *n.* (452), multeplie *inf.* (545), dye *inf.* (1024, 2158, 2253, 2595), crye *inf.* (2158), lye *mentior* (2371), *mentiri* (3721), *mentiuntur* (4224), thrye *adv.* (2371), drye *pati* (6626).

frenësyë, 727 f (-ie D) (: dye *inf.*).

glotonye, 6733 f (-enye CD) (: signifie *ind.* 3 *pl.*).

ialousye, -ie, ielousye, 1840 f, 3679 f (B †) (: espie *inf.* : folye), 3829 f (ielosy D), 3863 f (: crye *inf.*), 3872 f, 7576 f (: dye *inf.* : malencolye).—iälousÿe, 1838 (ielosy D), 1922 (ielousy D), 3852 (iëlousÿe † the D), 3866 (cf. 3867 † D). [*iälousÿe* (*dissyl.*), 4010 A (ielouÿsyë D), should be *ialous* (as in B; ielous C).] [Var. C ielusie; CD ielousie, ielousye.]

ianglerye, 7118 f (iangelerye C, iangellarie D).

iupartie, 1550 f (: thrie *adv.*), 1857 f (-dy D) (: folye : asprie *inf.*), 3710 f (-dy D), 3719 f (-dy D †) (: folye : lye *inf.*), 6048 f (: in hÿe), 6174 f (-dy C), 7064 f (: spie *n.*), 7279 f (iupardi C), 7893 f (: lye *mentiuntur* : dye *inf.*). [Var. B iupartye; C inpartie, -dye; D iupardye, ieopardie. The divided form *iu-partye*; 6174 B, is interesting.]

lytargie, 730 f (litargye B, lytargye C, litargie D) (: plye *ind.* 3 *pl.* : melodye).

maladye, maledye, 419 f (: deye *morior*), 1568 f (-dy D), 6679 f (-dy CD) (: dye *inf.*), 7594 f (maledy C, malady D) (: dye *inf.*).—maladye away, 2600 (-dy BCD).

malëncolÿe, 6723 f (-ly C, -lie D malycolye B), 6985 f (-ly C, -lie D), 7579 f (-ly C, -lie D, melencolye B) (: ialousye : dye *inf.*), 8009 f (-ly C, -lie D) (: dye *inf.*).

melodie, -ye, 733 f (-dy D) (: lytargie : plye *ind.* 3 *pl.*), 3029 f (: hye *adv.* : glorifie *inf.*), 6825 f, 8176 f.

nouellerye, 1841 f (nouelrye BC, nouelry D).

partie, 1479 (-tye B, -ti C).

poësy, 8153 f (-ie B, -y D) (: dye *moriatur* : enuye *inv. sg.*).

poetrie, 8218.¹

prophesie, 7884 f (-cie BD, professye C) (: fantasye : lye *inf.*); -cÿ be, 7857 C (-cięs B -sięs AD).

pye, 3369 (pie B).

rèmedye, -le, 6285 f (: dye *inf.*), 6691 f (-y C), 7280 f (-y C), 7573 f (-y C) (: dye *inf.*).

Remède and red by erbess she (*l. he as in CD*) knew fyne,² 661 (remèdye and C, remèdy and D).

Remède in this yf ther were any wyse, 5551 (remèdi in C, remèdye in D)³.

But what is thanne⁴ a rèmede vnto this, 5934 (rèmade, remèdie vnto C, rèmeðye vnto D).

Ther nys non other rèmeðye yn this cas, 6424 (*C has a spurious line*).

Syn that ther is no rèmeðye in this cas, 7633.

spie (= speculator), a spie, 7066 f (a spye BC, espie D) (: iupartie).⁵ (*Cf. espie.*)

surquidrye, 213 (sur(i)quidrie A, sùrquidè and C, sùrquydè and D).

trecherye, 3120 f (-ie CD) (: crye *inf.* : fantasye).

vilonye, vilenye, vylonye, 1026 f (vilany D) (: folye : dye *inf.*), 1523 f (welany C, vilany D) (: crye *pres. ind.* 1 *sg.* : dye *inf.*)⁶, 4683 f (: lye *mentiantur*), 6853 f (: hye *ind.* 3 *pl.*). [Var. BD vilanye; B vylenye, vilenye; C velenye.]

§ 31. Nouns in -ye unaccented.

This list includes (i.) *comèdye*, *tregèdie*, *paròdye*, and (ii.) nine nouns in -rye (following an accented vowel).

augurye,—By sort and by (*om.* D) augurye (augury D) ek (eke D) trewely (trewly B, truly D), 4778. And treweliche (truely D) ek (eke D, *om.* C) augurye (augery C, augurrye D) of this (thise B, thes D, these olde C) foweles (-is B, foulis C, foules D), 6743.

comèdye, 8151 f (: tregèdie).

consistòrie, consistòrie among, 4727.

contràrye, in his contràrye, 7742 f (D †) (: wàrye *ind.* 1 *sg.*).

¹ In A supply [ye].

² In C read *he knew* for *he knyht*.

³ In B supply [were]. In D omit the second (*in*).

⁴ C *om.* thanne.

⁵ In A supply [I].

⁶ In AB dele *ony* (*any*) or *that* (?).

fürye, fùrie,—fùrye is, 3879; fùrye of, 6091 (-ÿe † of D); fùrye as, 6575 (-y as D; C †); fùrye and, 4915 AD (fùrie and BC); fùrie (*dissyl.*) || sorwyng, 9 (wight † that D).—Anoy smert dredë (-[e] C) fùry and ek sikennesse, 5507 (-ye and BD, -ie and C).

lètùarye, 7104 f (lat- B, letewarye C) (: carye *ferunt*).

memòrie, 3671 f (-y D) (: transitorie), 6946 f (: storie : victorie).

mysèrie, mysèrie in, 4934 (myn † deth in C).

paròdye, 7911 f (paradie D) (: vnbodye *inf.*).

stòrie, stòrye, 6948 f (-y BD) (: memorie : victorie), 8014 f (: victorie);

stòry, 3905 † f D (storyes AB, storijs C).—stòrye (*dissyl.*), 3341 (-y CD; B †)¹.—stòry (*before consonants*), 1116, 7400 (-ye B)², 7414 (-ye B), 7457 (-ie B).—stòrye it, 7197 (-y it B, -i as C, -y as D).

tregeèdie, 8149 f (tregeedie D) (: comedye).

victòrie, -ye, 6949 f (-y C) (: memorie : storie), 8015 f (: storye);

victory, 3906 † f D (: story) (victories AB, -ijs C).

Note.—Compare the proper name *Mercurye*,—*Mercurye for the louc of Hierse ck*, 3571 (Mercre B, -rie C, -ry D); *Ther as Mercurye sorted hym to dwelle*, 8190 A (-ie B). *Study*, 2265 (-ye B, -ie C, *dissyl.*), is perhaps rather from *studium* than from *estudie*.

§ 32. A few Romance words that end in a consonant in French take an -e in the *Troilus*.

accèsse (O. Fr. aces), 2400 f (: besynesse), 2663 f (axsesse C) (: sykenesse); -e, 2628 (acces C, actis † D).

asùre (O. Fr. asur, azur), 4212 f (: auenture *n.* : scripture).

auentaylle (cf. O. Fr. esventail), 7921 f (: by-waylle *inf.* : mayle).

darte (O. Fr. dart), 5433 f (: departe *pres.* 1 *sg.*); cf. 5134 f (§ 36, n. 2).

disioynte (cf. O. Fr. disjoint *p.p.*), 3338 f (-t D) (: poynte *inf.*);

disioynt[e], 7981 f (-e B) (: apoynte *inf.*).

excesse (rather from Lat. *excessus* than from Fr. *excès*), èccesseð doth, 626 (-ces C).

mene, meene (O. Fr. meien), 3096 f, 6467 f (meane D); -e, 689 (C † D †), 7914 (-ë † out D).

Rhyme words.--I mene (3096, 6467), clene *adj.* (3096).

pere (O. Fr. per), see note at end of § 28.

trauayle, trauaylle (O. Fr. travail), 21 f, 475 f, 1088 f, 2522 f, 3364 f, 8215 f. tràuayle, 6547.—trauaylle, 372 (-H D †)³; cf. tràuayl, 6457 † C (*l.* labour).

¹ In C insert [none].

² In B read *telle[th]*.

³ A doubtful line. "Ymagynynge (-ing D) that (C *inserts* neyther) trauaylle (-uaille B, -uayle C, -uaille G, -vaih D) nor (and D, ne G) grame (gaine C, game D)." Mr. Austin's collation gives *grace* for *grame* as the reading of Cp.E, but registers no other variants.

Rhyme words.—*auayle inf.* (21, 2522, 3364, 8215), *sayle inf.* (1088), *fyale inf.* (2522, 3364), *rascaylle* (8215), *meruayle n.* (475). [Var. B *trauaille*, *trauelle* (2522); BD *tranaile*.]

Note 1.—In 2817 Professor Child has suggested to me that we should read *by gynne* (dat. of *gyn* 'contrivance,' etc.) instead of *bygynne* (ABD) or *be-gyn* (C) (: with-inne). I find that G actually reads.—*And inwardly thus ful softly by gynne.* The Cp. collation shows no variants.

Note 2.—For *feuere*, *feuer*, see § 18.

Note 3.—April, etc. Of *Aperil* (*Aperille* C, *apparaille* D, *Aprill* G, *April* E) *whan clothed is the mede*, 156 (no variants in Cp. collation); *And seyde (seid D) frend yn April (Aperil B, Aprille C) the laste*, 3202 (not in G, no variants in Cp. collation); *Doun file (Out ran C, Out ronne John's) as shour (schoure G) in (of C) Aperit (Aprille C, Aprit DG) swythe (ful swythe C)*, 5413. *Aperil* seems to be certain for 156, 3202, and for 5413 C. In 5413 the other MSS. require *Aperille*. On the forms of *April* in Chaucer, see Varnhagen's "Ueber die verschiedenen Formen des Namens des vierten Monats bei Chaucer," appendix to *Freundenberger, Ueber das Fehlen des Auftakts*, pp. 85 ff. (Erlanger Beiträge zur engl. Philol., IV). Varnhagen is inclined to believe that *Avril*, *April*, *Aperil* (*Averil*), *Aprille* are all known to Chaucer. See also *Murray's Dictionary*, s.v. *March* (L. Martius) occurs in 1850 as *Marche* AD (*March* BC).

§ 33. Words ending in Old French in *-é* and *-ée* end indiscriminately in *-e* in Chaucer. (See ten Brink, § 223 V.)

In the following list no variants are registered. Old-style figures indicate that a vowel follows without elision.

aduersité, 25 f, 404 f, 2861 f, 4467 f, 7446 f, 7738 f.

auctorité, 65 f.

beauté, 102 f, 1479 f.—*beautë*, 975, 1421, 1426, 1431, 1433, 1483, 4572, 4583, 7181, 7277, 7618, 7770.

benyguité, 40 f, 1617 f, 2881 f, 4127 f.

bestialité, 735 f.

bouté, 4771 f.—*boùntë*, 2529, 3724, 4116, 4505; b. hem, 4106.

charité, 49 f, 4096 f.

cité, *cyté*, 100 f, 129 f, 149, 5867.—*citë*, 59, 2231, 5347, 6141, 7206, 7269, 7849, 7850, 7859.

contré, 7837 f.—*còntрэ*, 7834; c. hath, 1127.

cruelté, 586 f, 1076 f, 5434 f.

degré, *degree*, 244 f, 437, 844 f, 6324 f, 7199, 7723 f.

dèité, 3859 f.—*dèite infernal*, 6205.

destené, *destyné*, 520 f, 2176 f, 3576, 5621 f, 5631, 6364 f.

deynté, 1249 f.—*deÿntë*, 3451, 6801 (adj. ?).

duëté, 3812.

dyuersité, 3247, 8156 f.

èntрэ, 1162 (-ee B).

- felicité, 3656 f, 4533, 5142 f, 7126, 8181 f.
 honesté, 1791, 6238 f.
 iolyté, 559.
 liberté, 1858 f, 2377 f, 6019, 6648 f, 7663 f.
 meyné, 127 f.—meÿnē, 1699, 6889.
 mutabilité, 851 f.
 natiuyté, 1770 f.
 necessité, 1708 f, 5676, 5686, 5695, 5719 f, etc.
 niceté, nyceté, 906, 2371 † D, 2373.
 pité, pyté, 522 f, 892 f, 1740 f, 3875 (piété B),¹ 5030 f, 5393 f, 7187 f,
 7961 f.—pite, pÿte, 23, 2662 (pète it C), 4908 (pi(e)ty D), 5451,
 5509; pite on, 5486 A (-ë hadde B, -ë felte D); -e and, 7462 † D.
 [7777 † C.] [Var. C pete; D pitee.]
 possibilité, 1692 f, 3290 f.
 predestiné, 5628 f.
 preuyté, preueté, 2482 f, 3125, 5773 f.
 prolixité, 2649 (D †).
 propreté hire, 5054 (properte B, proprete C, prosperite † D).²
 prosperité, 3659 f, 4469 f.
 qualité, 2873 f, 4496 f.
 quantité, 412 f, 6049 f.
 soueraynté, 3013 f.
 subtilté, -té, 7617 f, 8145 f.
 sûreté, 1918 (seürté BCD); seürté, 4520 (seurete C).
 vnité, 2871 f, 8229 D.
 vanité, -yté, 5198 f, 5365, 5391 f, 8180 f, 8200 f.

Note 1.—For *pardé*, cf. 717 f, 845 f, 1754 f, 1817 f, etc., etc. (pàrdē, cf. 2404, 5186, 5203, 5752, pàrdē harm, 3755) (see also § 34, VI.). For *benedicite* (*trisyllable*) see 780 f (bendistee B, ben(e)diste C), 3599 f, 3702.

Note 2.—For *chimeney*[e] (O. Fr. cheminée), see 3983 f (chymeneye B, chemeneye C, chymeny D) (: tweye). For *valcy* (O. Fr. valée), see (i.) 6430 (-e B), (ii.) 943 (valy C). For *nobleŷ* (O. Fr. nobleie, noblée) before a vowel, see 6332.

§ 34. Romance nouns which have no final -e in French show none in the *Troilus*. (A few Latin words are included in this section.)

In the following list of examples, variants are not regarded except as they concern -e (which some MSS. add sporadically, but which is never sounded). MS. D is usually disregarded altogether. The accent is recessive unless otherwise marked. For convenience the

¹ B alone of the four is metrical. Cp. also has *piëté*.

² A has *his* †.

examples are classed as,—(I.) words in *-er*; (II.) words in *-our*; (III.) words in *-ent, -ment*; (IV.) words in *-aunt*; (V.) words in *-s*; (VI.) words in a vowel; (VII.) miscellaneous words. For nouns in *-ion, -ioun*, see the chapter on metre.

I. Words in *-er*:

astrologer, 4257 f (see note below).

auter (O. Fr. alter, autier), 7829.

auaünter, cf. *auaüntour*.

coler (O. Fr. colier), (i.) 8023. (ii.) 7174 (colèr † be-hynde C).

corner (O. Fr. cornier, -e) (ii.) 6938.

courser (O. Fr. corsier), 6448 (curser B, coursir C).

daunger (O. Fr. dangier), (i.) 1469 (-e) C †, 2328, 2461, (ii.) 1484, 4163 (daunder † A).

dyner (O. Fr. disner), (i.) 2574, 2682. (ii.) 2645.

herber (O. Fr. herbier), 2790 (erber BC).

heroner (O. Fr. haironnier), (ii.) 5075 (goshauk † C^c).

laurer (O. Fr. laurier), 3384, 3569; cf. 7470.

leyser, layser (O. Fr. leisir), (i.) 1312,¹ 2454, 3042, 7308. (ii.) 3358; l. haue, 3352; l. had, 4401.

messenger (O. Fr. messagier), 4259 f (massangere C, messenger D).

papir (O. Fr. papier), (ii.) 7960 (-er † ful C).

percher (quasi O. Fr. *perchier), 5907 C (*l. mortar*).

power (O. Fr. poeir), (i.) 5120, 6529. (ii.) -èr, 1252.

presoner (O. Fr. prisonier), (ii.) p. he, 4841 (pris- BD).

quarter (O. Fr. quartier), (ii.) 7243, 8061.

soper, souper (O. Fr. soper), (i.) 3437 (A †), 3452. (ii.) 2032, 3449,² 6881.

squyer (O. Fr. escuyer), (ii.) 191 (swyer B).

Note.—In some of the words in this list the ending is doubtless the native -er (A.S. -ere). So also in *iàpere*, 1425.

II. Words in *-our*:

accùsour, (ii.) 4292 (C †; -er D).

auctor, (i.) 394 (autour BCD), 1103 (auter D), 1134 (-our B, autour D); cf. 3344, 3417, 4038, 7451. (ii.) cf. 3858, 4607.

auaüntour, (i.) 1809 (-er A). (ii.) 3150 (A †), 3151 (-e A), 3156.

conquerour, 7157 f (-e B).

errour, (ii.) 1001 (-e) B, 5655 (-e) B.

fauour, 1748, 2221.

¹ Insert [*this*] in A.

² Insert [*the*] in C.

flour, 7155 f (-e C).

hònour, (i.) 888, 1442, 1557, 1565, 1823, 2654, 3001, 3859, 4933, 5229, 5232, 6237, 7723, 8098. (ii.) 1382, 1847, 1989, 2912, 4566, 4821, 6177, 6771 (-ur B).—honour, (i.) 120, 1246, 1790 (C †), 2517, 2538, 3007, 3786, 6104, 6223, 6328. (ii.) 287, 1967, 2995 (-e) B), 3005, 5991¹.—dishonour, 1816; dishònour, 7429 (-e) B, -our & (*slur*) C).

làbour, 965 (-e) AB), 4276, 6457 (-e) B, trauayl C). (ii.) 948, 1035, 2289; làbour he, 3917 (l. (that) he C).—labour, (ii.) 5084, cf. 199.

langour, (i.) 5506 (-ur C, -or D), 6405 A (-e) B, -or D). (ii.) 6608 (longyng CD), 6631 (-e) B, -ur(e) C), 6760 (-ur C).

licour, 5182 (-quore D).²

myrrou, mirour, (i.) 1351 (-e) B); (ii.) 365. myrouer of, 1927.

parlour, (ii.) 1167.

peyntour, 2126.

rumour, (ii.) 6416.

sauour, (ii.) s. han, 1354 (-aur A).

socour, (ii.) s. hem, 4793 (-e) B, mercy CD).

traytour, -or, (i.) 87, 4866. (ii.) 3115 (tractor B), 4542 (-ous A); traytoùr comune, 4667.

tremour, 6618 (-or A).

tresour, (i.) 4747, 6176 (-or(e) C). (ii.) 3716 (-or C).

vapour eterne, 2853.

vigour, (ii.) 3930.

Note.—*Harpour* for *harper* (A.S. *héarpere*) occurs, see 2115.

III. Words in *-ent*, *-ment*:

accident, (i.) 3760. (ii.) a. [h]is, 6167.

accusément, 5218 f (-e B, acusement C).

argument, (i.) 5139, 5841 f. (ii.) 5618.

assent, 5008 f (-e B), 5197 f (-e B, assen C), 5216 f (-e B), 5595 f.

auisément, auysément, (i.) 5598 f (-e B), 5962 f, 8174 f (-e B) (: went *p.p.*). (ii.) 1428 (-e) B).

element, 8173 f (-e B) (: went *p.p.*).

entendément, 6358 (B †).

hardiment, 5195 f (-e B, hardy † men C).

instrument, 10 f, 631 f (: myswent *p.p.*), 6805 f (-e B) (: ywent *p.p.*).

iuggément, 5961 f.

patient, 1083.

¹ Insert [*an*] in AC. BCp. John's have *an*.

² Insert [*out*] in A.

- parlèment, (i.) 4805, 4873 f (-e B), 5006 f, 5326, 5959 f. (ii.) 4880 (-men C); p. he, 5039, cf. 5221.
 precident, 4875 f (president BCD).
 sentement, 2885 f (-e B) (: present *adj.*), 5839 f (-e B). (ii.) 1098.
 serpent, (i.) 3679. (ii.) 7860.
 talènt, 2987 f.
 tòrment, (i.) 6360, 7003 (-e) B, tur(ne)ment C). (ii.) 6790 (-e) B, turnent † C); cf. 404, 5473, 5554, 7017, 7955. tormènt, 8 f.

IV. Words in *-aunt*:

- auaunt, (i.) 1043 (-e) B, 1812 (-e) B
 geaunt, 7201.
 graunt, (ii.) 5214 (-e) B.
 remenaunt, 6038 (-e) B.
 seruaunt, (i.) 15 † B, 6536, 7708. (ii.) 3825, 4329.
 tyraunt, 2325.

V. Words in *-s*:

- auys, (i.) 5078 f (-e C) (: wys *adj. sg.*). (ii.) 620, 3295.
 burges, 5007 (borwis C, burgeys and A).
 cas, (i.) 29 f, 271, 568, 836 f, 1370, 1507 f, 1510, 1542 f, 1689, 1814, 2153 A †, 2431 f, 2560 f, 2696, 2765 (B †), 3121, 3125 f, 3683 f, 4461, 4952 f, 5078, 5082, 5456 f, 5542, 6171, 6424 f, 7427, 7633 f, 8001. (ii.) 1843, 2741 (cause C), 3014, 5050, 5233, 5290; cas he, 5311.
 choys, (ii.) 5633 (cloys † B), 5642, 5721.
 conuers, 8173.
 cors, (ii.) 7105 (C †).
 cours (O. Fr. cours, course), (i.) 2055, 2470 (coures B), 8108. (ii.) 1992.
 crois, (ii.) 8206 B (cros A, crosse D), cf. p. 63.
 encrès, (ii.) 2418 (-ees B, encreseth † hope C), 4618 (-ce D), 5919 (-cresse B).
 paas, pas, 1705 (-e) B, 1712 (-e) B, 2434 f, 3123 f, 6423 f, 6967 f (pace B).
 pàlais, pàlays, -eys, paylays, (i.) 324, 1161, 1593, 1701 (*l. om.* † C), 2018, 2179, 2337 (to p. ward) (payleysseward B), 2622, 4371, 4376, 6564, 6875, 6903, 6907, 6910. (ii.) 6886, 6888, 6905.
 paradys, 7180; cf. 5526.
 pes, pees, (i.) 352, 3899, 4151, 4762 f, 5117, 5266 AC, 6014, 6021,

6052 (C †), 6126. (ii.) 3937, 5354, 6008, 6127 ; p. hereafter, 5266 B, 6224.

pows, (ii.) 3956 (pous B, pous(e) C).

process, (i.) 1509, 2700 (-cesse D),¹ 3176 (-cesse BD), 3312 (cesse D), 4581 (-cesse D), 5080 (-cesse BD). (ii.) 1353 (-cesse BD), 1377 (-cesse B, -cesse D), 1570 (-cesse B, mater C), 1763, 7854 ; cf. 6946 (before *haue*).

prys, (ii.) 1266 ; p. hym, 2670 ; p. hath, 273.

purpos, (i.) 142, 379, 1062, 1130, 1982, 3172 (therto † C), 3291, 3973, 5396, 5782, 6539, 6858, 7117, 7133, 7392, 7939. (ii.) 5, 4209, 4699, 6082, 8162 ; p. how, 7823.

remors, (ii.) 554.

recoùrs, 2437 f.

socoùrs, 2439 f.

solàs, 31 f, 1545 f, 6970 f.

surplus, 4722.

trays (Fr. traits, *pl.*), 222 (-e) B.

tretis, -ys, 4726, 4798, 5332.

voys, (i.) 1911, 2887, 2934, 6940, cf. 4565. (ii.) 111, 422 (-ce C), 2935, 4079, 4857 (acord C), 5809, 7164 ; v. he, 725 (-ce B), 6999.

Note.—For *ruby* (O. Fr. *rubi*, *rubis*), see VI., note.

VI. Words ending in a vowel (not -e) :

anoÿ, 5507.

araÿ, 2349 f, 3378 f, 4640, 6332 ; a. his, 2352.

assaÿ, 6170 f ; cf. 7672 † C.

ascrÿ aros, 1696 (the acry C, in the skye † D).

cry, 1281.

delay, 3721.

dieu ; a dieu, 5292 (adew C, and dey † D) ; cf. 2170 CD. (Cf. pardieùx, 197 ; pàrdieùx, 1844 ; depàrdieùx, 2143, 2297 ; parde, § 33, n. 1.)

lay, 1149 f, 2006 f.

May, 1135, 1197, 3904 f, 6788 f, 7207 f.

mèrcy, (i.) (ii.) 535, 1503, 1676, 2161, 2940, 5811, etc., etc. ; graunt mèrcy, (i.) (ii.) 3491, 4147, 5294, 6322 ; grant mercÿ, 1324 f.

prow (O. Fr. prou), 333 f (-e B), 2749 f, 7152 f.

tissew (O. Fr. tissu), t. heng, 1724 (-ewe D, C †).

tòrney, 6331.

¹ In AC supply [out] ; in D supply [hem]. BECp. have *oute* ; John's has *out*.

vèrtu, (i.) 429, 1078, 4591, etc. (ii.) 438 (-ue B), 4130, 4977, etc.—
vertue, 896 AB (-u CD). [Cf. vertulès, § 49, n. 5.]

Note.—For *ruby* (O. Fr. *rubi*, *rubis*), see 1670 (rebe C), 2172 (-ye C), 4213 (-ië C), 6912.

VII. Miscellaneous.

Note.—Variants are usually not registered. In none of the following words is there a sounded -e, though -e is occasionally written, even in A. D very frequently adds such irrational -e's (-e, -ë), B not seldom (as *agrefe*, *appetite*, *arte*, *chare*, *conforte*, *conceyte*, *conseylle*, *cowarde*, *delite*, *dispaire*, *desire*, *deuoure* (for *devoir*), *estale*, *fole*, *meschefe*, *ost*, *porte*, *poynte*, *refreyne*, *reporte*, *resorte*, *rewarde*, *scorne*, though in the case of most of these words the form without -e also occurs), and in C -e or -ë is sometimes found (e. g., *conseyle*, 985; *desire*, 4324; *abite*, 109; *parte*, 5087; *effecte*, 212, etc.).

abèt, 1442 (abek C).

agrief (a = on, O. Fr. gref, grief), 3704 f ([a]gref A), 4463 f, cf. 5275 f.

appetit (O. Fr. appetit, -te), 6339 f (-e BD).

art (O. Fr. art), (i.) (ii.) 659, 920 f, 1096, 4175 f, 5928; a. hire, 1342.

atÿr (ii.) 181.

awayt, (ii.) 3299 (om. † A).—awaytë, 3421 (-t BC).

barouñ, 4695 f, 4852 f.

bayard, 218.

busshele, 3867 (beschop † C, busshell † of D).

caytyf, (ii.) 4766.

char (O. Fr. char, cf. charre), 4546 f (-e BD); charhors, 7381 (-e h. D).

closet, 1684, 2300, 3505, 3529.

còmfort 845, 4736 (confert B), 4980; cònfort, 7531.—comfòrt, 528 f, 590 f, 2840 f, 2978 f. (Cf. discomfort.)

comparyson, 5112 f.

conceyt, (ii.) 989.

cònseyl, còunseyl (O. Fr. conseil), (i.) 985, 2129, 5101 (A?), 5547.

(ii.) 5776, 6793 (-e B).—counseyl, (i.) 743.

contek (etym. dub.), (ii.) 7842.

cost, 3364.

coward, *as adj.*, c. drede, 6235 (-ë B); coward(e) herte, 6071 (-d BD; C †).

daun, (i.) (ii.) 70, 4851, 7851, 7852.

debàt, 1838 f (-e CD).

delit, delÿt, (i.) 1794 f, 4218 f, 6330, 6340 f, 6501 f (-yzt C). (ii.) 762, 4152, 6198 (-yzt C).

desdayn, 5853 f.

dèspeir, (i.) 605 (dis[es]pair D).—despeÿr, 813 f (dispaÿr B; D †);
despeÿr that, 5616 (-e) D, dispair(ē) B. (Cf. also 779 A, 1091,
1615 f.)

desir, (i.) 311, 374, 465, 607, 2419 f, 3328 f, 4105, 4324, 4373, 4477 f
4493, 5235. (ii.) 296, 381, 2422, 3268, 4388, 5057, 5234, 6061;
d. hym, 4381.

despeyr, *see* desespeir.

des-, displit, (i.) 1796 f, 2134, 3879 f, 4216 f, 6337 f, 6498 f. (ii.) 207,
4547, 4786, 7606, 8056; d. hym, 902; d. hadde, 4629.

desport, 592 f, 4971 f.

deuoir, (ii.) 3887.

deuÿn (O. Fr. devin), 66.

dīscōmfort, 4973 f, 5510 f. (Cf. comfort.)

effect (Lat. effectus, cf. O. Fr. effect), (i.) (ii.) 212, 2305, 2464, 2651,
3188 D (-e B), 3347, 4422, 4657, 5552, 5956, 6541, 6740, 7372,
7786, 7984, 7992, 8147.

engÿn, 1650, 3116 f.

estat, (i.) (ii.) 130, 287, 432 (estal † A), 884, 1290, 1304, 1550, 1746,
1792, 1836 f, 1966, 2223, 5246, 6198, 7388, 8112, etc.

eyr (O. Fr. air), 7034.

faucon, fawkon, (i.) 4626. (ii.) 5075.

feith, feyth (O. Fr. feid, feit, fei, apparently with Eng. abstract *-th*),
(i.) 89 (feyt C), 336 (-ē) B, fay C), 1254, 2048, 2188 (fey B, fay †
vnkele C), 4593, 8027. (ii.) 1247, 1495, 2588 (-e) B, 7622 (feight
D), etc.

fol, fool, (i.) (ii.) 532, 618, 630, 1455 (fel A), 1485, 2930, 3741, 4307,
6461, 7149, 7886.

fōrest, 7598, 7600.

fruyt, 385.

fyn, (i.) (ii.) 1510, 1612, 1842, 1879, 2681, 2967, 3355, 3395, 5139 f,
5584, 8191, 8192, 8193, 8194, 8195, 8215.

gardeyn, -yn, (i.) 1899, 2202, 4580. (ii.) 1904, 2199. [With slur,
1905 A.]

greyn (ii.) 3868.

grief, (ii.) 2717. (Cf. agrief.)

growel, (ii.) 3553 (gruwel B).

groyn, (ii.) 349.

guerdon, -oun, 6957, 7752, 8215 AB; g. hire (*eam*), 818.

habit, 109.

ldÿðt, 903.

- lambÿc (O. Fr. *alambic*), As licour (-quore D) out (*om.* A) of a (*om.* D)
 lambyc (-bic B, -bik C, -bykē D) ful faste, 5182.
 lessòn, (ii.) 2893.
 mantel, (ii.) 1465.
 mÿschef, (i.) 755.—chèf, 5276 f; -chièf, 4464 f.
 nerf, (ii.) 1727.
 nÿgard (O. N. *hnogg-r* + Romance -and), n. haue, 4221.
 ost, (i.) (ii.) cf. 80, 4691, 5261 f, 6284 f, 6379, 6435, 7115, 7713
 (hest(ē) C). [Var. B oost, ostē, oste.]
 paillet, (ii.) 3071.
 part, (i.) (ii.) cf. 918 f, 3148, 3281, 4173 f, 4718, 4843, 5087 (-ē) C),
 5665, 5690, 7681; p. he, 2413.
 pencil (O. Fr. *penoncel*), (ii.) 7406 (-sel BC).
 peril, (i.) (ii.) 84, 475, 1691, 1960, 3209, 3695, 4775, 7388; p. he,
 3753.
 port (O. Fr. port 'bearing'), (ii.) 1077 (-e B).
 poynt, (i.) 7648 (-e) B. (ii.) 5320 (-e) B).
 preson, prison, 2302, 7247. presòn, -òùn, 3222 f, 4768 f.
 pylgrym, 7940.
 quysshon, 2314 (-en B, -yn C), 3806 (-en B, *qwischin* C).
 refreÿn, 2656 f (-e B).
 refuyt (O. Fr. *refuit*, *refuite*), (ii.) 3856 (-fut BC).
 renouùn, 481 f, 1382 f, 1746 f.
 repòrt, 593 f, 5512 f (*resport* A).
 reson, -oun, (i.) 796, 1451, 3693, 4250, 4826, 5234, 5236, 5710, 6340.
 (ii.) 764, 6245.
 resòrt, 2976 f.
 rèspect, (ii.) 8181, cf. 4748.
 respit, 6500 f.
 rewàrd, (ii.) 2218, 8099.
 saf cundwÿt hem, 4801 C (*safē conduÿt* D, *saue-gard[e]* sente A, *saue*
garde sente B).
 scorn, skorn, (i.) 318, 335. (ii.) 514, 902.
 scryt, 2215.
 sermon, (ii.) 2050. sermòn, -òùn, 2200 f, 2384 f, 5499 f.
 seson, (ii.) 168 (-on A).
 seynt, (ii.) 6916.
 signal, (ii.) 5480.
 signet (O. Fr. *signet*, *sinet*). (ii.) 2172 (*synet* C).
 sort (O. Fr. *sort*), (i.) 76 (*soÿt* † B, *byfor* † D), 2839 f (: *kankedort* :

comfort *n.*. (ii.) 3889 ABC (D †), 4778 (D †), 6063 (-e B, -e † to D), 6066 (-e D †).

soun, sown, (i.) (ii.) 732, 1890, 2203 f, 6943.

spirit, (i.) (ii.) 362, 423, 3650, 4193, 4620, 4982, 5373, 5448, 5814, 5861, 5872, 6282, 7575.

Note. The metre requires that *sprit* (7575 C), *spryzt* (5448 C), and *spryt* (C in vv. 307, 4193, 5814, 5872) be expanded to *spirit*, and 423 C also needs correction; cf. 4620 C.

stomak, 787.

stryf, 1865 f (-ft A, -fe B), 1922 f, 6704 f.

subgit, 1913 (subiect C, suget D).

treson, 1878, 8101. tresoun, 107 f.

venym, (ii.) 3867.

ver (Latin), 157 (veer B).

vessèl, 6674.

wardeyn, (ii.) 3507, 7540.

werbul (from the verb, cf. O. Fr. werbler), w. harpe, 2118.

§ 35. The genitive singular of nouns, both Anglo-Saxon and Romance, ends in the *Troilus* for the most part in *-es*, irrespective of original gender and declension.

Note.—CD usually have *-is* or *-ys*; B has *-is* in 453 (*brestis*), but regularly *-es*. In the following list trivial varieties in spelling are not registered.

Examples are,—

- | | |
|-----------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| I. aspes, an a. lef, 4042 (-is C, | (other † c. C); lyues ende, |
| auspen D). | 7917 (last[e] † D). |
| asses, 2127. | maydes, 3147 (maydēnys C, |
| beddes, 359, 3524. | -dēnes D). |
| brestes, 453. | mouses, 3578. |
| bryddes, 2006. | nyghtes, 1990, 4684. |
| dayes, 1989, 1992 (daijs C), | shames, 180. |
| 4543. | somēres, 3903 (-ēris C, somers D). |
| dethes wounde, 4539. | sonnes, 4546 (sunnys C, sunnis |
| dowues, 4338. | D), 7602 (sunnys C). |
| emes, 1551, 1557. | sorwes, 2151 (-owis D). |
| horses, 223. | tales, 1345. |
| kynges, 226, 889, etc. | widēwes, 109 (wedēwys C, |
| loues, 15, 34, 905, 2191, etc. | wydēwys D), 170 (wedēwys |
| lyues creature, 4914 (C †), 5429 | C); wydēwes, 1199 (-owes B, |

-owis D, wedewis C); wydwes, 1307 (-owes B, -owis D, wede- wis C).	wykes, 6862 (wekes B, woukis C, wookes D). wittes, 3773.
wightes, wyghtes, 660, 1280, 7121.	worldes, 6242, 7257, 7421 (wor[l]des B), 8195, 8214.

Note.—In the phrase *lyues creature* (see 4914, 5429), as well as in *that lyues body* (*Hous F.* 1063), Professor Skeat regards *lyues* as an adverb (A.S. *lifes*): see his notes, *Minor Poems*, p. 347, *Prioresses Tale*, etc., *Glossary*, s.v. *lyues*. The Anglo-Saxon adverbial *lifes* is, however, never used attributively, and one can hardly believe that *lyues* in a *lyues creature* was felt by Chaucer as very different in construction from *shames in shames deth* (*Leg. Good W.* 2064, 2072), or *dethes in dethes wounde* (*Troil.* 4539) or *dethes wo* (*Arthur and Merl.*, 2108), or *lyues* (undoubtedly a genitive pure and simple) in *lyues day* (*Leg. Good W.* 1624), or, especially, *mannes* in the line, *Éctor or ony mannes creature* (*Troil.* 1502). For a rather late example of the construction, cf. "Whereby my hart may thinke, although I see not thee, That thou wilt come, thy word so sware, if thou a *lyues man* be": *Totle's Miscellany*, Arber, p. 154. Professor Bright (*Modern Lang. Notes*, 1889, col. 363) explains *lyues* (gen.) *body* as "a living person's body," "a living man," taking *lyf* in the familiar Middle English sense of "a living person;" but this does not explain *lyues creature* or *lyues man* (unless we regard these phrases as due to analogy) and seems less likely than the interpretation of *lyues* in the sense of "of life"; cf. Byron's *a thing of life* (= a living thing = a *lyues creature*). On *Lyues* and *dethes* cf. Mätzner, s. vv.

II. disdayn[e]s prison, 2302(-ys C, disdeynous † D).	neces, 1161, 1163, 2179, 2546, 2696.
fortunes, 4467.	spouses, 6709.
Mayes day the thridde, 1141; a Mayes morwe, 2183.	[doutës † wenyng, 5654 B (dou- tous AD).] [furies (<i>dissyl.</i>) 1521 † C.]

Note 1. In one case the scribe of C has formed a genitive (to the destruction of the metre) by adding to a proper name *is* as if a separate word: *Nisus is douztyr*, 7473 (*nisus* ABD). Compare with this the form *herteis* (gen. sg.), which occurs at least three times in C (viz., 1620, 2482, 3887).

Note 2.—*The goddesse wrethe*, 933 C, error for *goddess*, may serve as one more argument, in addition to those mentioned by ten Brink, § 109 a, that *s* in the genitive was unvoiced in Chaucer's pronunciation. Cf. also *heuynesse* for *heuenes*, 6256 B. It is a little odd that ten Brink should cite Mod. Eng. *else* as having a voiced *s* ("dagegen freilich *else* mit tönendem *s* = ME. *elles*").

§ 36. A few words make a genitive without change of form. Thus,—

- his lady grace, 1117, 3314 (ladi C), 4672, 4619 † D (ladyes thank AB, ladyis thank C).
- this lady name, 99 ABD (ladyis C).
- his lady mouth, 812 (ladyis C).
- his lady heste, 3999 (his l. liste † B, his ladijs heste C, his ladies heest D).

his lady honour, 7440 (his [lady] h. B †, C; ladies D).

But,—

my ladyes depe sikes, 7038 (ladyes B, ladyis C, lady D).

any herdē tale, 4076 ACG (hard † B, heardis D).

oure tongē deference, 395 A (tonges difference B, tungis differens C, spechis † differens D).

hertē blod, 1530 (hertys B later, [-ē] D).

myn hertē lust, 1915 (-es B, -is C, -is † lyf D).

his hertē reste, 3973 B (-es A, -is CD).

hertē . . . suffisaunce, 6302 BC (-es AD).

hire hertē variaunce, 8033 (-es AD, -is C).

his hertē botēme, 297 C (-es AB, -is D). [Cf. 6816 C (?).]

But,—

for *hertes* cf. 1620 (-is BD, -ois C), 2482, 3887, 3973, 8103, 8112.

thi brother wyf, 678 B (brothēres A, brothēris CD).

his fader carte, 7028 B (fadres AD, fadiris C).

ʒour fadir tresoun, 117 D (fadres B, faderis C).

But,—

hirē fadres shame, 107 (faderes B, faderys C, fadris D).

my fadres graunt, 5214 (faderis C).

yourē faderes sleighte, 6158 (faderys sleyt[e] C, fadres sleightes D).

herē fadres . . . tente, 7385 (faderis C).

Note 1.—The following cases seem to be instances of *heuene* in composition, not genitives (cf. A.S. heofon-cyning, -drēam, -rice, etc.):—*heuene blyssc*, 3546 (hevyn blis[se] D),¹ 4164 BE (blyssyd † A, blis[se] C, heven blisse D), 4499 (heuenes B, hevyn blis[se] D); *heuen quene*, 6256 CD (heuenes A, heu(y)nes(se) † B); *heuene † egle*, 4338 D; cf. *the heuenes heighe*,² 1989 (the h. (h)eye B, [the] heuenis eye C, the hevenis eye D); *heuenys † lyzt*, 4962 C. (*Heuene*, -es, etc., dissyllabic throughout.)

Note 2.—Compare also *peple speche*, 3426 AD (peples B, puple † C³); *Criseyde darte*, 5134 A (-es BD -[e] C)⁴; *Criseydē hous*, 6891 A (-es BD, -is C). But,—*Criseydes net*, 4575 (-is D); *Criseydes eyen*, 4972 (-is D); *Criseydes herte*, 7138 (-is C).

§ 37. Many proper names in -s have the genitive identical in form with the nominative. Thus,—

the kyng Priāmus sone, 2 (Pryamys D).

Tröylūs vnsele auenture, 35.

Pandārus voys, 725 (-ys C, -is D).

¹ Supply [*For*] in A; [*in*] in D. ² Read *ye* (: *wrye inf.*). ³ C defective.

⁴ In this verse perhaps the scribes of AC took *Criseyde* for a nom. and *darte* for an *inf.*, and this may be right. The Cp. collation has no note.

- Troylus persone, 1786.
 Pandarus byhest, 2414, 3188.
 Pandarus lore, 2426.
 Deiphobus hous, 2599 (dèiphèbus (?) D), 2625.
 Pandarus reed, 2624 (-is C).
 Pandarus entente, 2808.
 Venus heriyng, 2890.
 Troylus seruyce, 4657 (cf. 7369 † B).
 Herculès lyoun, 4694 (-is B).
 Calkas ere, 4725.
 Calkas doughter, 5325.
 Saturnus doughter, 6200 (Saturnes BD, -ys C).
 Phebus suster, 6253.
 A broche . . . That Troylus (*dissyl.*) wàs, 7404 ABC (D defect.).
 Nisus doughter, 7473 (nysus (is) douȝtyr C).
 Archymoris buryng, 7862 (archimoris B, arichmoure † C, Archemories D). [*Archimori bustum sexto ludique leguntur.*]
 Tydeus (Tideus BD, Thedeus C) sone that doun descended is, 7877.

Some other genitives of proper names—

- Ioues name, 878 (Iouues B, iouys C, Iouis D).
 Ioues doughter, 2845 (Iouis D).
 natal Ioues feste, 2992 (-is C, D †).
 Ioues face, 5999 (iouys C; Ioue in his † face D, = in 's ?).
 Martes highē seruyse, 3279 (-is CD).
 Cupides sone, 7953 (-is C, Cu(s)plides D).
 Argyues wepyng, 7872 (arthmes † C).
 Penèlopèes trouthe, 8141 (-è[ē]s B, Penàlopèes D).
 Palladiòn[e]s feste, (161 Palladyon[e]s B, Palas † dionis C, Palladiòns ? D, Palladiònës G).
 Troyes town, 7131 B (-ë AC); Troyës cyte, 100 (-yis C).

Note.—The Latin genitive *aloes* may here be added—

Tho woful teris that they leten falle
 As bittre weren out of teris kynde
 For peyne, as is *ligne aloës* or galle, 5797-9
 (*lignum aloes* C *one syl. over measure*).

§ 38. The plural of nouns (A.S. and Romance) ends regularly in *-ës* (*-is*, *-ys*) or (if the nominative ends in a weak *-e*) in *-s* (Child, § 22; ten Brink, § 202, 206, 210, 213, 225). Examples are:—

- I. belles, 1890 (-e[s] C, -is D).
 foughles, 787 (fowles B, foullys C, foulis D); foweles, 6743 f (-is B, foulis C, foules D) (: owlis : foul(e) is).
 soules, 5866 (-is C), 8206.
 tales, 2017 (-is C), etc., etc.
 walles, 7029 (waH = wallis C).
 bemes, 7006 (-ys C, -es (?) D).
 stremes, 305 (-ys CD).
 lymes, 282 (lemys C, lymys D), 5844 (lemys C, lymmes D), cf. 7164.
 pawmes, 3956 (paumys C).
 sones, 1255 (-ys C, -is D).
 stones, 1953 (-ys CD, stonnes B).
 sires, 4841 (serys C, sir[e]s D).
 shoures, 470 (-is C, -ys D).
 speres, 4705 (-is D), 8123.
 sterres, 1994 (-ys C, -is D), 6637 (-is C), 8175.
 aentures, 3 (-is D); cf. creatures, 7891.
 apes, 906 f (-is C, -ys D).
 iapes (-is CD), 904, 930, 2252 (D †).
 shippes, 58 (-is D).
 sobbes (-is CD), 4910, 5037.
 leues, 4887 (-ys C, -is D), 6095 (-ys C).
 loues, 6707 (-ys C), 8211.
 wyues, 6742 f (-ys C, vyues B, wiffes D) (: lyues *pl.*, -ys C, liffes D); cf. 1204 f.
 bokes, 788 (-ys C, -is D), etc., etc.
 sykes, 4999 (-ys C, -is D), etc.
 Grekes, 533 (-ys C, -is D), etc., etc.
 rokkes, 2469¹ (rochis C^c).
 wrecches, 3775 f (wriches B, wrechis C, wrecchis D).
 tacches, 3777 f (tecches BD, techis C).
 facches, 3778 f (fecches BD, fecchis C).
 speches, 3352 (-e † C).
 ages, 1112 f (: vsages *pl.*).
 dogges, 5288 (-is C).
 ymages, 1458 (emagis C, ymagis D).
 yates, 7540 (-is C).
 nettes, 4197 (-is C).
 nyghtes, 4598 f (nytyȝs C, *om.* † D) (: myghtes *pl.*).
 routes, 1705 (-ys C).
 rites, 8212 f (vyces † A, riȝtes † D) (: appetites *pl.*).
 shotes, 1143 (shottis D).
 festes, 7792 f (-is C) (: byhestes *pl.*, -e[s] B, -is C).
 abodes, 3696 (abedes, abydis, abodis).
 dedes, 4392 (-is CD), 7166 (-is C), 8133.
 flodes, 4602 (-is C).²
 gledes, 1623 (-en C, -is D).
 goddes, 3226 (-ys C, -is D), 6068 (-is C), 8213, etc.
 nedes, 355 (-is CD), etc.
 hondes, 3956 f (-is C) (: bondes *pl.*).
 clothes (-is C), 2629, 5440.
 monethes, 1135 (monthes B, D †); monthes, 7129 (monythis C, monethes D), etc.
 othes, 7626 (-is CD), etc.

¹ Read *myll[ne]-stones* at the end of the line in AD. ² Supply [*so*] in A.

- II. dayes, 2831 f (daijs C) (: de-
layes, -is C); cf. notes 1, 2,
below.
weyes, 1907 f (: aleyes *pl.*,
aley[e]s C).
- III. bowes (= boughs), 1906 (-is
CD).
bowes (= bows *arcus*), 4702 (-ys
D).
browes, 7176 (-is C).
clawes, 2012 (-is CD, clewes B).
hawes, 6060 f (-is C) (cf. *lawes*).
hewes, 2343 (-is D, -is C (?)),
2936 (-is C, -e is D), 5816
(-ys C, hewe; D); hewys,
1106 f A (-is BD) (: newe
is).
lawes, 1127 f (-is D) (: sawes *pl.*),
6059 f (-ys C) (: sawes *pl.* :
hawes *pl.*).
sawes, 1126 f (-is D) (: lawes
pl.), 6057 f (-is C) (cf. *lawes*).
thewes, 1808 (-is C, -ys D).¹
throwes, 6569 (-ys C), 7564 (-is
C).
trewes lasten, 6764 (treus² lestith
C).
wawes, 1086 (-is D), 7472 (waH
† C).
- IV. arwes, 4706.
pylwes, 3286 (pilous B, pilwis
CD).
sorwes, 54 (sorowë D), 705 (-[es]
B, -ys C, sorow † D), 847
(-ys C, sorowes D), 2427 (-is C,
-owis D (?)), 3147 (-ë C, -ow
D), 3747 (-is C, sorow D),
3924 (dayës C, daiës D), 3976
(-is C), 4014 (-ys C), 4794
(-ys C, sorowis D, sorwues
dissyl. B), 4816 (-ë C, -owis
D), 4910 (-is C, -owis D),
5003 † (peynes AB, teeris †
D), 5163 (-is C, -owes D),
5590 (-ë BC, -is D), 6499 (-ë
C), 6561 (-is C), 6567 (-is C,
-ë D), 6628 (-ë C, peynes D),
6629 (-ë C), 7718 (-is C †).
- V. fetheres, 353 (-ris D, federis C),
7909 (fedres D, federis C).
fyngres, 2117 (-geres B, -gerys
C, -gris D), 5399 (-geres B,
-geris C, -gers D).
chartres, 3182 (-teris C, -tris D,
charres † B).
lettres, 1188 (-teres B, *sg.* † C),
3330 (-teris C), 6833 (letterys †
C), 7960 (letres B, letteris † C),
7990 (letres B, letteris C ;
D †).
candëles, 7383 (-dels B, -delis C,
-deH D).
couples, 4591 (coupeyls C).
ensaamples, 760 (exampyls C,
ensaumplis D).
mobles, 6122 † D.
peples, 4589 (pepeyls C).
temples, 3225 (tempelis C, tem-
plis D), *so* 3957.
heuenes, 3460 (-ys C, -is (?)) D).
sweuenes, 6721 (*supply* [al] *in*
A ; C †).
- VI. aduocaciës, 2554 AB (-catis †
C, -caries † D).
amphiblogiës, 6068 f (-gyis C)
(: lyes *pl.*).
fantasyës, 4855 (-sijis C, -sics
D); cf. 6277.

¹ Supply [*goode*] in D.² Dissyllable needed.

VII. Plurals with synizesis :—

àduersàries (-iē † C), 2520.	[Var. B ladys, ladis ; C ladijs, ladiis, ladyis ; D ladies].
contràries, 645 (-trarijs C).	pròphesiës, 7857 (-ciës B, pròfecy † C).
ènemyis, 6615 C (ènemys AB, ènnemyës D).	stòryes (<i>dissyl.</i>), 3139 (-ies BD, -ijs C), 7407 (storyies C, -ies BD). ¹ 3905 f (-ijs C, -y D)
fùryës, 1521 (-iës B, furies † <i>gen. pl.</i> C, furious † D), 7861 (-iës B, -iës † C, -iës † D).	<i>rhyming with</i>
ladyes (<i>dissyl.</i>), 186, 1166, 2698, 5063, 6810, 6819 (laydyes AB, ladyis C, ladies D), 7887.	victòries, 3906 f (-ijs C, -y † D), 7822 (-ies BD, -yis C). ²

Note 1.—The usual ending of the plural in A is *-es*; but *-ys* (*-is*) occurs. Thus,—*affectis*, 4233 ACD (*-os* B); *eris*, 5479 f (*eeres* B, *eres* D); *frendys*, 2560 (*-es* B, *-is* CD); *herys*, 5478 f (*-es* D, *here[s]* B); *heerys*, 7173 (*heres* BD, *here[s]* C); *hewys*, 1106 (*-is* BD) (: *newe(is)*); *lordys*, 2698 (*-es* B, *-is* CD); *owlys*, 6745 f (*-is* B, *oules* CD) (: *foweles* : *foul(e) is*); *selys*, 4304 (*-es* B, *-is* CD); *tolys*, 632 f (*-is* B, *-es* D) (: *scole is* : *folys pl.*); and in the plural of *tere*, *-ys* (*-is*) is the usual ending in A (cf. 700, 2112, 3893, 4287, 4791, 4919, 5002, 5172, 5412, 5746 f, 5508, 6578, 7089 (?), 7278, 7699, 7962, 8053; and for *teres* cf. 543, 1411, 2171, 7737). The indifference of some scribes to varieties of ending is shown by D in 4706,—*arceus dartis swerdis macys*. Instead of *-es*, *-e3* is written in *arne3*, 5881 D, 5909 D; *best3*, 3462 A. *Affectos*, 4233 B is doubtless a mere error for *-es*. Observe *vulturis*, 788 D (*vulturis* AB, *vulturinus* C); *daijs* (*dissyl.*), 2831 f C (*dayes* ABD) (: *delayis* C, *-ës* ABD); *dais* (*dissyl.*), 2436 C, 6760 C; *dayis*, 2447 C, 6602 C, 7569 C (cf. also the forms in 3924, 7022, 7713).

Note 2.—The following plurals are perhaps worth mentioning for their rhymes (cf. other rhymes of the same kind in the lists above, I. ff.) :—

tolys, 632 f (*-is* B, *-es* D) : *folys pl.* (*-is* BD) : *scole is*.
hewys, 1106 f (*-is* BD) : *newe is*.
hayes, 3193 f (*-is* B, *halis* † C) : *may is*.
owlys, 6745 f (*-is* B, *oules* CD) : *foweles pl.* : *foul(e) is*.
halles, 7093 f (*-is* B, *-es* D, *waft* † C) : *wallys pl.* (*-is* BC, *-es* D) : *galley ys* (*galles* D).
wellys, 7737 f (*-is* D, *weft* C) : *helle ys* : *ellys*.
stones, 2026 f (*-ys* CD) : *at ones*.
bones, 91 f (*-ys* CD) : *onys* (cf. 805 f, 2469 f).
desertes, 4109 f (*-is* CD) : *certes*.
pleyes, 7862 f : *lord of Argeys* (*Argeyes* B, *Argeis* D).

Note 3.—In some cases *s* only is written where *-es* (*-is*) should be pronounced. Thus—

answèr[i]s, 2435 D (*-es* A, *-e[s]* B, *-is* C).
bok[e]s, 7423 B (*-es* AD, [*thes*] *bokys* C). (Cf. 2933, 4041, 4271, 4616, 6382, 6738, 7153, 7162, 7452, 7826, 7841, 7844, 7896, 7925, 8218.)
dor[e]s, 6915 B (*-es* AD, *-is* C). (Cf. 3075, 6894.)
flour[e]s, 8204 B (*-es* AD). (Cf. 158, 1136, 2052.)

Note 4.—That the *s* in the plural ending *-es* was unvoiced is indicated by the formes *erbes* (661 A) and *knëss(e)* (3922 B); cf. also *goddesse* for *goddess* (6067 C), and *dycc* for *d's* (5760 D). Rhymes like *wellys* : *ellys*, *bones* : *onys*, are also significant (see note 2, above).

¹ Hiatus in ACD.

² Supply [*most*] in C.

§ 39. Exceptions to § 38. The following words ending in a consonant or an accented *-e* sometimes or always make their plural in *-s* (*-3, -z*) or *-es* (cf. Child, § 22; ten Brink, § 226):

I. Words in *-aunt, -ent*:

argument₃, 466 (*-tes* B, *-tj̄s* CD), 4009 B (*-tz* A, *-tis* CD), 5189 B (*-t[e]̄3* † A, *-t* C, *-tes* D)¹. But,—argument[e]₃, 5631 AB (*-tēs* DGCp.); argumentus,² 2110 AB (*-tis* CD).

element₃, 4595 B (*-tes* A, *-tj̄s* C, *-tus* ² † E).

instrument₃, 6822 (*-t* CD).³

accidentēs, 6167 † D (*sg.* ABC).

sèruaunt₃, 15 (*-tj̄3*] B, *-tj̄s* D), 48 (*-tes* B, *-tj̄s* C); sèruant₃, 328 (*-tes* B, *-tj̄s* C, *-tj̄s* D); sèruantz, 905 (*-uauntj̄3* B, *-uantj̄s* C, *-uauntj̄s* D).

But all these become *seruauntēs* if we read *louēs* instead of *louēs*.

Seruauant₃, 371 (*-tes* B, *-tis* CD), may be read *sèruauantj̄3* or *seruauntēs*, according as we read *elles fôr* or *elles for*.

But,—auauntēs, 3131 (*-is* C; D †).

II. Words in *-ioun, -ion*:

affections, 5086 (*effèciounys* or *effèciounj̄s* C).

ausions, 6737 f (*ausionys* C).

complexions, 6732 f (*-iounys* C).

condicions, 1251 (*condisciounys* or *condisciounj̄s* (?) C).⁴

illusions, 6731 f (*-ys* C).

impressions, 6735 f (*enpressiounys* C).

reuelacions, 6729 f (*-iouns* CD).

But,—impressiòn[è]_s, 2323 (*-yon[e]s* B, *-iou[ne]s* C).

pàssiòn[e]_s, 5130 (*-ioun[e]s* B, *pàsciounj̄s* C).

III. Dissyllables in *-en, -on, -an*, with the accent on the penult:

maydens, 1204 (*-ys* C, *màydènis* † D).

resonēs, 2932 (*resons* B, *werkis* † C, *wordis* D †).

Tròians, 2062 (*Troyēs* CD), 6152 (*Troilus* † C, *Troian* D), 6504 *troyanys* C, *Troiauns* D). Troiàns, 4769 (*or* Tròians). [6485?]

IV. Words in *-r*:—

lòuers, 11, 198 (AB *are defect.*), 376, 1971, 2836, 5233 † B (*sg.* ACD); lòuerēs, 45 B (*louēs* AD), 331, 344, 516, 919, 2153, 2391, 2879, 4235, 4299, 4310, 7935; lòuerēs, 22, 4985. In all the above-

¹ Doubtless we should read *argumentj̄3* in A, supplying [*to*] before *blame*.

² MS. *t* with sign of contraction for *us*.

³ In A read *ou(y)*.

⁴ Dele (*to*) in D.

cited passages B reads *louers* (except 45, 344, 2879, *loueres*), C *loueris* (or *-ys*), D *louers* or *lovers* (except *louës*, 45), *lovyers* (dissyl.), 331, *faytours* 919, *loueris* 4310).
*mànere*s, 742 A (*manere* B, *maner* CD).
messàgers, 2021 † D (*messàgès* AB, *massagè* C).
porterys, 7502 AC (*portours* B, *porters* D).
prèyers, 1538 B (*preleris* C, *sg. in AD*).
ambàssiatoùrs, 4802 (*embàssadoùrs* B, *embàssatoùrys* C); *embàssadoùrs*, 4807 (*-tours* B, *-doùrys* C, *ambàssiatoùrs* D).
prisonèrès, 4721 (*-èrs* BD); *prisonèrs*, 4808 (*presoneris* C).

Note.—In 1321 *paramours* (*-is* C¹, *-our* † D) may be the plural of *paramour* = lover; but perhaps the phrase (*withouten paramours*) means “not taking the kind of loving that we call ‘to love par amours’ into account.” In “I louede neuer womman here byform *As paramours*,” 6520-1 (*-es* B, *paramour* C), and in “Hath loved *paramours* as wel as thow,” 6695 (*paramour* CD), we have this adverbial phrase *par amours*.

V. Monosyllables in *-e*:

des, *dees*, 2432 (*deis* C), 5760 (*deth* † C, *dycē riȝt* as [*there*], D).
knes, *knees* (*monosyl.*), 110 (*kneis* C), 1037, 3025, (*kneis* C), 3795 (*knowes* B, *kneis* C, *kneës* D), 3922 (*knes(se)* B, *kneis* C).² But,—*kneës*, 4434 (*knowës* B, *kneis* C, *kneës* D *defective*).
treis 7507 C (*sg. ABD*).

VI. *benygnitees* (*not -teës*), 8222 (*-tes* B).³

Note 1.—Many apparent cases of *-es* (with syncope of *-e-*) disappear on comparison of MSS. Such are: *foles*, 217 A (cf. 3171 D) (for *folës*, *folys foolës* cf. 635 f, 705, 762, 903, 3166, 4666, 5377); *tales*, 1344 A, 3456 A⁴ (for *talës* cf. 1234, 1342, 1393, 1583, etc.); *whelys*, 848 C; *armes*, 4416 B, 6553 B (for *armës* cf. 1038, 3024, 3448, 4029, 4043, etc.); *dremys*, 7651 C (cf. 6741 D) (for *dremës* cf. 4184, 6680, 6727, 6729, 7640, etc.); *anendes* (?), 1427 A; *effectis*, 2305 C, 3188 C (cf. 2857, 7992 C); *zatis*, 7555 C (cf. 1700, 1702 CD, 6966, 7541); *herthes*, 4955 D, 6711 D (cf. 235, 2865, 2959, 3039, 3453, 3808, 3982); *londe*s, 5901 A (cf. 1113); *mijtes*, 5857 D (cf. 4599); *sykes*, 7397 A, *sikis*, 7717 C (cf. 3191, 4203, 5037, etc.); *tungis*, 1870 C (cf. 39, 565); *wordes*, 5293 A (cf. 540, 561, 736, 754, 1108, etc., etc.); *othes*, 1384 A (cf. 3985, 3988, 7626); *hestes*, 6718 A (cf. 3261, 4587, 7571 f, 7572 C); *dayis*, 6716 (? C); *aleys*, 1905 f C; *songis*, 6994 C; *tidinges*, 5324 D; *whisperyngis*, 2838 C; *lesyngis*, 3672 C (cf. *syngyngës*, etc., 2198 f, 2653, 4558 f, 4560 f, 6609 f); *peynes*, 4058 B, 4300 D, 5791 A (cf. 303, 2984, 4046, 5003, etc.); *Grekis*, 1209 C, 1596 C, 3386 D (cf. 802, 1039, 4696, etc.); *fendis*, 1981 (? CD); *kalendes*, 7997 D (*-ës* A, *-as* B, *-is* C), used as a singular (*a kalendes*) (cf. 1092); *workis*, *-ys*, 265 D, 5857 C; *desèsis*, 7783 C. In 2820 B we may read *coronës* or *corones*, but it is better to omit the (*with ACD*) and *corouënës*. Forms like *hegis* (7507 † C, cf. D) and *swowes* (7559 B) are of course out of the question. In 4439 we should read *frendës the alderbeste*,

¹ In C dele (*as*).

² In D supply [*he*].

³ In A read *goolde for gardie*.

⁴ This is the famous line about the “tale of Wade”—*he told[c] tales of wade A, he told tales of wade Cp.* (no other variants in Mr. Austin's collation), *he told[c] tale of wade B, he toldë tale of wade C, he tolde the tale of wade D, he toldë tale of wade G.*

not *frondes* the *allerbeste* (cf. 1237, 1464, 1888, 5343, 6218, 6706, 7217). *Influens* (3460 D), *chauns* (5760 f D, *chaunce* C), and *pleauns* (5761 f, *-aunce* C), seem meant for plurals, but need correction.

But there is good MS. authority for syncope in 264 (*ioyes* AC) (cf., however, 846, 2870, 3660, 4351, etc.), 1725 (*swerde* AB) (cf., however, 2026, 4706), 2847 (*herfes* AB). For *sithes*, *tynes*, see §§ 2, 14 (but *tynës*, 2853, 4273, 6739). For *thynges*, see *thyng*, pl., below (§ 43). *Pens*, 4217 (pans BC, peynes † E), and *rcrs*, 7 (wordes † D), deserve notice.

Note 2.—A few Latin plurals occur. These are *satyri* and *fauni* in

On *satiry* and *fawny* more and (*om.* A) lesse
That halue goddes ben of wilderness, 6206-7

(*satury* B, *satyry*(e) & *fany* C, *statory* † & *ferry* † D, *satiri* and *fawny* G); and *manes*, 7255 (*mannes* C). But instead of *Parcae* we have *Parcas* (6366). *Kalendas*, 7797 B, perhaps preserves a bit of the copyist's learning. See also *vultur* (etc.) for *vultures*, § 38, note 1.

§ 40. Plurals of the n-declension which preserve the Anglo-Saxon ending (-an) in the form -en, are the following:—

asshen (A.S. pl. *ascan*, L. on *axen*, O. *asskess*, P.Pl.^c *askes*), 4781 *asschyn* C, *asshyn* D); *asshen pale*, 1624 B (*asschin* C, *asshyn* D, *asshë* A).

ben (A.S. pl. *béon*, Ps. *bían*), 1278 f (: *ben p.p.*; *flen fugere*), 6018 (*ben* [f*len*] C). [Var. B *been*; D *bene*.]

eyen, eien (192), eyghen (2056, 5754), eighen (3929, 4194, 5412) (A.S. pl. *éagan*, L. *æzen*, *ezen*, P. Pl.^a *ezen*, *eizen*, ^b*eyghen*, *eyghes*, ^c*eyen*), 191,¹ 305 f, 428, 726, 1227, 1338,² 1411 f, 1619 f, 1733 f, 1948 f, 2056³, 2971, 2997, 3025 f, 3894, 3929, 3979 f, 4194, 4195, 4295 f, 4908 (*ey*[e]*n*(e) two D), 4971 (*eyen* † C corrector, *ey*[e]*n* D), 4972 (*ey*[e]*n* D), 4976 (*seyn* † C, *ey*[e]*n* D), 5184,⁴ 5410, 5412, 5531, 5535, 5754 (*thy nenë semen* B), 5821, 5885 (*eyë* B, *ey*[en] (?) D), 6583, 6929, 7107 (*ey*[e]*n* B), 7178,⁵ 7180 f, 7362 C (*eyyn* †), 7368 (-[en] A (?)), 7522, 7699, 7701, 7736. [*eyen* (?), 3200 † D; *eyzyn*, 6442 † C.] [*eyen* †, 3116 f B *is error for engyn*.]

Rhyme words.—dryen *paiuntur* (305), dryen *pai* (1948), *dyen mori* (also spelled *deyen*) (305, 1411, 1619, 3025), *spyen*, *aspien*, *espyen inf.* (1733, 3979, 4295, 7180), *lyen* (*lye mentiri* (1411), *by-wryen inf.* (1619), *cryen inf.* (1733), *pres. subj.* 3 pl. (1948), *ywryen p. p.* (4295), *syen viderunt* (7180). [Var. B *eyen*, *yën*, *eyghen*, *eighen*; C *eyen*, *eyzen*, *eyzyn*, *eyzin*, *eyzeyn*, *eynyn* (2971); D *eyen*, *yën*, *yhen*, *izen*.]

foon (A.S. *ge-fán*), 8229 f (*foone* D) (: *oon* : *eurychon*). But,—foos, 994 (*foes* B, *fojs* (to) C, *foos* [to] D), 2513 (*fojs* C).

¹ In the following list all forms are dissyllabic unless the contrary is noted. No distinction of *eyen* before consonants from *eien* before vowels has been made.

² Supply [to] in D.

³ *eyen* † D

⁴ Transpose in D.

⁵ Supply [her] in D.

Note.—*Ere* forms its plural in *-s*. Thus,—*ceres*, 2107 (*eris* BCD); *eerys*, 4230 (*erys* B, *eris* C †),¹ 6084 (*eres* BD, *eris* C); *eris*, 5479 f. (*ceres* B, *eres* D) (: *terys* : *herys*). For *apes*, *belles*, *bowes*, *ladyes*, *sterres*, *wrecches*, see § 37.

§ 41. Plurals in *-en* by imitation (Child, § 24; ten Brink, §§ 215, 217).

brethēren (A.S. pl. bróðor, bróðru, Pet. Chron. bréðre, L. broþere, breþren, broþeres, O. bréðre), 471 (brethyryn D †), 2523 brethern B, brethēryn C, brethērin D), 4939 (brethēryn C, brethern(e) D), 5868 (brethern D). (Cf. *sustren*.)

doughtren (A.S. pl. dohtor, dohtru, dohtra, L. dohtere, dohtren, dohtres, P. Pl.^b douztres, °douhtres), 4684 (doughtryn D).

sustren (A.S. pl. sweoster, L. sustren, sostres, P. Pl.^c sustres, susteres, sustren), 3575 (-tērin C, -trin D), 4651 (-tryn D), 6366. his brethēren and his sustren, 7590 (his(e) brētherēn † his sistēren C, his brethēryn & his sisters D).

children (A.S. pl. cild, cildru, L. childere, children, childres, O. chilldre), 132 (schildēryn C, childryn D †).

housen (A.S. pl. hús), 6910 † D (-es AB, -is C).

Note.—*Gamen* (1123 B), *gladen* (1623 C), *bonden* (2061 f A), *sorwynn* (3768 C), *dremen* (6741 B), *tenten* (7033 A), are merely errors of the scribe.

§ 42. Plurals with umlaut (Child, § 26; ten Brink, § 214).²

feet (A.S. fēt), 359, 1488 -(e)B), 2127. [Var. C fet.]

men (A.S. menn), 241, 279, 3438 f (: ten), 7105, etc., etc.; fomen, 4704.

wommen, women (2257) (A.S. wífmenn, Pet. Chron. wimmen), 1297 (wemen C, womman A, woman D), 1819 (women C, wymmen D, woman † A), 1867 (wemen C, wymmen D), 1878 (women C, wymmen D, womman A), 2257 (women AC, wymmen D), 3097 (women C, wymmen D), 3164 (wemen C, women D, womman † A), 3614 (wemen C, wymmen D), 4844 (wymmen D, woman C), 5210 (wemen C, women D), 5347 (wemen C, women D), 7051 (wemen C, women D). [Sing. (A.S. wífman, late wimman, see the forms cited by Sweet, *Hist. Eng. Sounds*, no—1879), womman, woman, 798, 807, 1486, etc.]

¹ In C read *also* for *as*.

² No distinction as to the word that follows the plurals cited in this section is attempted.

§ 43. In the following words plurals occur identical in form with the singular.

wynter (A.S. *n.* pl. wintru, winter), twenty wynter, 811 (-yr † C, -ir D).

yer (A.S. *n.* sg. pl. gær, gér, W.S. géar), 60, 1108 (3ere B, 3eer D).¹ yerès two, 2383; lengthe of yeres, 6343. [Var. B 3eres, CD 3eris.]

nyght (A.S. *f.* sg. pl. neaht, niht), a (ek B) wonder last but ix. nyght neuere in towne, 5250 AB (dayis † C, nyghtes † D). But,—ouȝr the nyghtes, 4598 f (: myghtes)²; lyk the nyghtes, 5910; er nyghtes ten, 6347; allē this nyghtes two, 6683. [Var. C nyztys, nyztis, nytyzs, 4598; D nightes, niȝtes.]

folk often has a plural verb. Cf., e.g., 34, 199, 241, 243, 1888, 1973, 2592, 2669, 2815, 2874, 3860, 3865, 4204, 4271, 4680, 4710, 4864, 6707 (How don this (thesē C, thes D) folk (folkes D) that seen herē loues wedded), 6778, 7124, 7541, 7641 (men A), 7942.

Cf. also: Whi allē thes(e) folk assembledin in this place, 2652 C (al this folk assembled AD, al this f. assemlede B).

If that I may and allē folk be trewe, 2695 (al[lē] f. BD, allē f. ben C).

(Pandarus) Seyde alle folk for goddes loue I preye

Stynteth right here and softely yow pleye, 2813-14 (D †).

Swowneth not now lest more folk aryse, 4032 (cf. 6050).

As (For BC) wys[e] (wyse B, wise C, thes D) folk (folke D) in bokes it expresse (expres C), 7153 (cf. 3169).

The (ffor C) folk (folke D) of Troye as who scyth (wis sithe † C) alle and some In preson ben, 7246-7.

If that I may and alle (al[lē] BD) folk be (ben C) trewe, 2695.

Note.—In general *folk* is apt, as a noun of multitude, to take plural constructions, and, of course, in many cases it is impossible to determine whether a singular or a plural is meant. A good case of a certain singular is: Whil (wilk † C) folk is blent lo al the tyme is wonne, 2828.

For other examples of *folk* in various constructions cf. 26, 138, 160, 169, 176, 179, 251, 308, 319, 354, 357, 560, 1164, 1704, 1860, 1995, 2242, 2279, 2732, 4275, 4637, 6486, 6951, 6965, 7219, 7332, 8144. The word is regularly spelled *folk*, though *folke* or *folke* is occasionally found (as 160 B, 169 B, 179 C, 319 B, 1704 B, 2242 B, and often in D), but not in A; *fok* is found in 26 A and 176 C.

A plural in *-es* is also found,—folkes, 6002 (fo'k[es] C, folkē[s] D), 8198; folkis, 4275 D; folkes, 6707 D. *Folkes* is genitive in *good for sykkē folkes eyen*, 3979 (-[es] B, -is D, follis † C).

thing. Chaucer sometimes uses *thing* as a plural; but it is not always easy or even perhaps possible to distinguish this use from

¹ Both cases before a vowel.

² Word omitted in D.

idioms in which the singular may be employed (note, e. g., variants in 3605, 5358).

Cf., however;—And letten other thing collateral, 262 (thing(e) B, thyngis C, thinges D).

And morē thyng than thow deuysed (demys C †, demist D †) here, 5205 (thyng(e) B, thyng C, thing D).

Nece al[lē] thing hath tyme I dar avowe, 3697 (allē thyng(e) BC).

But the ordinary plural is *thynges* (cf. 134, 1993, 2197 f,¹ 2260, 2276, 2350, 2471, 2858, 2874,² 3427, 3765, 4103 f,³ 4208 f,⁴ 4820, 5322, 5356 f,⁵ 5667, 5669, 5681, 5995, 6499, 7905, 7975, 8086).

thynges seems to be right in 2453 A (-ēs B, -is D; C †) (cf. 2001 † D, 2319 † C, 3248 † C, 3605 † C).

The phrase *all[e] thing* seems to deserve some special attention. Ouer al[lē] thyng he stood [for] to byholde, 310 AD (allē thing(e) . . . for to BC⁶): Considered al[lē] thyng it may not be, 2375 (al[lē] thyng(e) B, allē thyng(e) C, al thing wel(ē) D †).

Considered allē thinges as they stode, 3765 (allē thyngis C, al[lē] thing[es] D). That wost of allē thing(e) the sothfastnesse, 5742 AD (al this thyng(e) B, al this thyng C).

In allē thyng(e) is myn ententē clene, 4008 (al[lē] thyng(e) B, allē thyng . . . entent[e] C, al[lē] thing al myn entent D).

When that he sey that al[lē] thyng was wel, 3538 (allē thyng(e) B, wostē allē thyng(e) was C, wist that al[lē] thing (?) D).

The last cited example is particularly surprising. May we not, however, suppose that *allē thing*, originally plural, became a stock phrase, of which the syntax was forgotten or obscured, so that even when a singular was used the plural form *allē* might be retained?

Note 2.—*God* is used with a plural verb in 1919 ABC John's, *The blisful god han me so wel beset* (god have D, god hath G); but Cp. has *ȝe blisful god han*, which is no doubt right, *god* being vocative (cf. *lord* in the same stanza, 1922). For the regular plural *goddess* cf. 151, 3432, 4045, 4101, 4514, etc.

Note 3.—*Gere* is the A.S. fem. pl. *gearwe*: see 2097 f (: there : were *subj.* 3 *sg.*), 6185 f (*ger* D) (: elles where : there); *gere* him, 1720 (*ger* C). (Cf. ten Brink, § 210 Anm.)

§ 44. The genitive plural does not differ in form from the genitive singular.

seyntes lyues, 1203 (-is CD).

nayles poyntes, 2119 † B.

foles bost, 3140 (-is CD).

foles harm, 3171 B (-ys C, A defect.).

the goddes wyl, 3465 (-is CD);

the goddes ordenaunce, 7968

(-is C).

tonges ianglerye, 7118 (-is C).

crowes feet, 1488.

¹ *rh.* tidynges.

⁴ *rh.* rynges.

² A thing[es].

⁵ *rh.* thing is.

³ *rh.* wynges.

⁶ But C by accident omits [he].

⁷ In 2001 the proper reading is certainly *al this thyng* (sing.) *thou*. D has *all the thynges*.

frendes gouernaunce (-is C, clerkes² lawes, 6059 (-is C, frendes generaunce † B, -is clerkysshē); clerkes speche, sustenaunce D), 2527; frendes 8217.
myght, 6708 (fryndis C); the lettres space, 7993 ([the] B, frendes help (-is C), 7390.¹ letterys.C).
teris² kynde, 5798 (-es BD).

Grekes ost, 80 ABD, 5261, 6284, 6379, 6435, 7030 AB; Grekes yerde, 1239; Grekes route, 1698; on the Grekes syde, 6128; Grekes gyse, 7224. [C usually -ys or -is; D -is, -ys, -es.] But, —at Grekes requeste, 4719 A (-ys D, a grek † requeste B).

payens corsed oldē rites,³ 8212 (paynymēs D).

rauēnes qualm, 6745 (-ys C).

sweuēnes signifiauce, 6725 (sweuēnys C, sweuēnys significauns D).

§ 45. Dative plural (Anglo-Saxon *-um*):

whilom (A.S. hwilum), 508 (whilhom C, somtymē D); cf. 5402, 5731, 5817, 6904, 6907, 6910, 6927.

sithe (A.S. síðum), see § 14.

fote (A.S. fótum), see § 14.

ADJECTIVES.

§ 46. Anglo-Saxon adjectives that end in *-e* or *-a* in the indefinite use preserve a vowel in Chaucer. (Child, § 29; ten Brink, § 230).

In the *Troilus* such are (i.) of the jo-declension, *blithe*, *breme*, *clene*, *dere*, *ethe*, *grene*, *kynde*, *lene*, *mylde*, *newe*, *shene*, *sterne*, *stille*, *swete*, *thikke*, *trewe*. To these may be added (ii.) *lame* (A.S. *lama*, regularly used in the weak form) and *allone* (A.S. *eall ána*), for which see § 47. (iii.) *smothe*, and *softe* (A.S. *smóðe*, *sófte*, adverbs, but also used as adjectives instead of *sméðe* and *séfte*, see Sweet, 2051, 2081, Sievers, § 299 Anm. 1), and *swote*, *soote* (A.S. *swót adv.*, *swóte, adj.* in comp.). For *merye*, *mery*, see the end of the list.

blithe, *blythe* (A.S. *blíðe*, L. O. *bliðe*), 7746 f (: a thousand *sithe* : *swithe adv.*); -e, 4160.⁴

breme (A.S. *bréme*, O. *breme*), -e, 4846.

clene (A.S. *cláene*, L. *clæne*), 1665 f, 3099 f, 4008 f. [4071 †? D.]

Rhyme words.—I mene *ind.* (1665, 3099, 4008), mene *n.* (3099), bene *A.S.* *béan* (4008).

¹ Perhaps singular, cf. *frendes loue*, 7443.

³ *vyces* † A (: appetites).

² Possibly singular.

⁴ Supply [*two*] in A.

dere, deere (A.S. *déore*, W.S. *diere*, *dýre*, L. *deore*, *dure*, O. *deore*, *dere*), 32 f, 51 f, 434 f, 877 f, 1336 f, 1415 f, 1559 f, 1579 f, 1679 f, 1893 f, 2057 f, 2188 f, 2217 f, 2295 f, 2444 f, 2516 f, 2561 f, 2778 f, 2809 f, 2845 f, 2895 f, 2937 f, 2969 f, 3081 f, 3114 f, 3172 f, 3336 f, 3487 f (*drede* † A), 3762 f, 3788 f, 3817 f, 4052 f, 4131 f, 4146 f, 4197 f, 4253 f, 4290 f, 4335 f, 4395 f, 4505 f, 4947 f, 4969 f, 5074 f, 5203 f, 5312 f, 5557 f, 5871 f, 5973 f, 6014 f,¹ 6112 f, 6236 f, 6507 † D, 6523 f, 6550 f, 6581 f, 6670 f, 6705 f, 6777 f (C †, D †), 6830 f, 6884 f, 6930 f, 6939 f, 6999 f, 7016 f, 7274 f, 7589 f, 7678 f, 7703 f, 7820 f.—Now uncle *derë* quod she tel it us, 1207 (C †).—al *dere* ynow a rysshe (C †), 4003 (cf. 5346).—*e*, 8094 BD.

Of these the following are in formulæ of address (as, for example, *frend so dere*, *gode nece dere*, *myn hertë dere*),—877, 1207, 1336, 1559, 1579, 1679, 2057, 2188, 2217, 2295, 2444, 2516, 2561, 2778, 2809, 2845, 2969, 3081, 3172, 3487, 3788, 3817, 4052, 4131, 4146, 4335, 5203, 5312, 5557, 5871, 5973, 6014, 6112, 6236, 6523, 6581, 6670, 6705, 6777, 6830, 7274, 7703, 7820.

Rhyme words.—here *inf.* (32, 51, 2188, 3336, 3762, 3817, 5203, 6830, 6999, 7678, 7820), y-here *inf.* (5973), *ind.* 1 *sg.* (6939), here *adv.* (1336, 1579, 1679, 2057, 2188, 3487, 3788, 4052, 4146, 4969, 5203, 5557, 5973, 6830 BCD), there *adv.* (6830 A, here BCD), clere *inf.* (1893, 6884), clere *adj. sg. def.* (7016), *adj. pl.* (2845, 2969, 4197, 6581, 6930, 7703), *adv.* (6236, 6670, 6939), lere *inf.* (6523), requere *pl.* (1559), manere (32, 877, 2809, 2895, 2937, 4253, 4290, 4947, 6550), matere (51, 1579, 2217, 2516, 2778, 4146, 4253, 4505, 5312), ryuere (5074), preyere (2295), chere *n.* (434, 877, 1415, 1559, 2217, 2444, 2809, 2895, 2937, 3172, 3336, 4197, 4395, 4505 (4506 A has *clere* for *chere*), 6550, 6777, 7274, 7589), spere *sphere* (4335, 7016), fere *comes* (4335), y-fere *adv.* (2561, 3114, 5871, 6014, 6112, 6705), to yere (3081), to fyre (fere BCD) (3817), stere *n.* (4131), *inf.* (4947), bere *feretrum* (5871).

ethe (A.S. *éaðe*, *éðe*, L. *æðe*, O. *æþ*), he was *ethe* ynowh to maken dwelle, 7213 (C †).

grene (A.S. *gréne*, *gréne*, L. *grene*), 816 f, 1145 f, 2003 f, 2790 f, 2852, 3904, 6606 f.

Rhyme words.—tene (816, 1145, 6606), queene (816, 2790), shotes kene (1145), the mone shene (2003), by-twene (2790), sustene *inf.* (6606).

grene *as subst.*,—with newë grene, 157; in grenë when, 3195; roteles mot grenë sonë deye, 5432 (ertheles grenë † mot C).

kynde (A.S. *cynde*, but usually *ge-cynde*), 6079 f, 6489 f, 7283 f; *-e*, 8006 BC (*trewë* † A, *kynde* as [that] D).—vnkynde, 4678 f, 4928 f, 7804 f. (Cf. if ye be vnkynde, 6102 f; beth me not vnkynde, 6314 f).

Rhyme words.—I fynde *ind.* (6079), fynde *inf.* (4678, 4928, 6489, 7283), mynde *n.* (4678, 7804). [Var. C on-kynde.]

¹ Old-style figures indicate that D has *der*.

lene (A.S. hléne, L. P.Pl. lene), 1217 f (leene B, C † D †) (: mene *pl.*);
-e, 7584 (leen B).

mylde (A.S. milde, L.O. milde), And stod forth mewët (meuyth † D)
myldë (-[ē] D) and mansuete, 6557 (*line om. C*, And stode forthle
full mylde and manswete G).

newe (A.S. néowe, níowe, W.S. nēwe, níwe, L. neowe, niwe, O.
neowe, newe, P. Pl. newe, nywe), 157 (-[e] B), 1390 f, 1873 f (new
D), 4246 (-[e] B, E †), 4496, 5084 (-[e] BD), 6484 f (new D), 7511
(-[e] D, -[e] † is B, now † al C), 7618 (-[e] B, *om. † C*), 7632 (-[e]
BD); span newe, 4507; And vpon newë (newę BC, new D) cas
(causę † D) lyth (lyëth D) newe (new D, a newe BC) auys, 5078.—
newe is (new is BD)¹ (: hewys).—made this tale of newe, 5324 f
(al newe B, this talë newe C, thes tidings new D).

Rhyme words.—hewe *n.* (1390, 5324), trewe *indef. adj. sg.* (1390, 6484),
vntrewe *pred. adj. pl.* (1873), trewe *adj. pl.* (5324), rewe *subj. 3 sg.* (1873),
knewe *ind. 2 pl.* (6484).

shene (A.S. scéne, scýne, scéone, L. sceone, scone, L.^b scene, O. shene,
scone), 6094 f (she[ne] A) (: bi-twene : leues grene), 6639 f (: sterres
werë sene); ayen the monë shene, 2005 f (: grene *indef. adj. sg.*).
[Var. B sheene, C schene.]

smothe (A.S. smóðe, *adv.*, but also used as *adj.* instead of sméðe,
smcéðe (cf. Sweet, 2051), O. smeþe), -e, 942 ABD.

softe (A.S. sófte, *adv.*, but also used as *adj.* instead of séfte, séfte
(cf. Sweet, 2081), L. softe, O. soffte), 137 f (*perh. pl. ?*) (vnsoft † D),
942 f (-t D); he[r] streyght[e] bak and softe, 4089 f; with soft[ē]
voys, 6999 (-e C, lofte † D).

Rhyme words.—ofte (137, 942, 4089), on lofte, a-lofte (137, 942).

sterne (A.S. sterne, W.S. stierne, styrne, L. sterne, O. stirne), 7164
(stierne B); -e, 5846.

stille, stylle (A.S. stille, L. stille, O. stille, still), held hire s., 126 f
(: wylle); -e, 723 (stil D),² 1685 (stil D †), 8092; stille, 7183 † C.

swete (A.S. swéte, swáete, O. swet), 385,³ 3350 f, 4087 f, 4367 f CD,
4400 f, 4510 f, 4662 f, 5151 f, 5169 f, 5441 f, 5588 f, 5936 f (B †),
6252 f, 6554 f, 7552 f; -e, 4126; swet[e], 4061 f (-e BCD); swete ||
how, 4120.

Rhyme words.—mete *métan inf.* (3350, 4087, 4367, 4510, 5936, 6554), *subj.*
1 *sg.* (5441), mete *mátan inf.* (4400), grete *grétan inf.* (4400), flete *inf.*
(4510), *ind. 3. pl.* (4061), ye his sorwes bete *subj. (?)* (5588), strete (5588),
quiete (3350, 4662, 5151, 5169, 5441), Ariëte (6252, 7552), mansuete,
(6554). [Var. D suete, swette.]

¹ Supply [í] in D.

³ Supply [sced] in A.

² Supply [as] in AD.

Note.—Of the above the following occur in forms of address (*herte swete, my dere herte swete*, and the like): 4120, 4367, 4400, 5441, 5588, 5936, 6252, 7552.

soote, 7034 f (soot B, swote CD) (: bote A.S. *bót*); sot, 4036 f (soot B, sote CD) (: in his fote (foot B): I mot *ind.* (-e BCD)).¹—swote, 942 AB (swete † ? C).

thikke (A.S. *picce*, L. *thicke*), 941 f (thekke C, thik D) (: the wedys wykke); -e, 1278 (thik D).

trewe (A.S. *tréowe*, W.S. *tríewe*, *trýwe*, L. *treowe*, O. *trowwe*), 1391 f, 3175 (-[e] B), 4490, 5043 f, 6079 (-[e] ? D), 6082 f (true D), 6101 (-[e] D), 6190 f, 6487 f (trew B), 7014 f (true D), 7069 f, 7434 f, 7694 f (drewe † C), 7728 f, 7764 f (myn owenē hertē trewe), 7948 f.—Trewē as stel in ech condicion, 7194 (-[e] B), *if not a 9-syl. line.*—vntrewe, 3148 f, 3895 f, 5108 (-trow[e] B), 6213, 7660 (vntruē D), 7933 f, 8137 f.—trewe, 593 (-w BD, trowe C), 950 (-w D), 1424 (-w D), 1913 (-w D), 3843 (-w B, trew † with D), 4859 (soth C, sothe D), 5100 (trowis † C), 6272 (-w B, -e I [haue] D), 8006 A, 8075 (-w B, true D).

Rhyme-words.—hewe *n.* (1391, 3148, 5043, 7764, 7933, 8137), newe *adj.* (1391, 3895, 6190, 6487, 7696 *perh. adv.*), *adv.* (7014, 7933, 7948), *inf.* (3148), *knewe ind. 2 pl.* (6487), *ind. 3 pl.* (6082), *rewe inf.* (6190, 7434), *thou rewe* (7069), *rewe subj. 2 pl.* (7728). [Var. C *ontrewe.*]

mèrye, mèry (A.S. *mirige*, *mirg*), a merye someres day, 3903 (merie C, mery D); mèrye, *pred. sg.*, 4515 f (: herye *inf.*); with mery chere, 1234 (merie C), 3072 AB; this murye morwe, 4405 (merie C, me[r]y D); we shulle ben alle merye, 3794 f (merie C) (: herye *laudo*); merye dayes, 2831 (merie C, mery D). (*All forms dissyllabic.*)

Note 1.—*fremde* (A.S. *fremðe*, *fremde*) occurs only in the definite use and in the plural,—*youre frendly manere speche*, 1333 f (frende BCp., frendely C, frend D, fremde G, friende John's), where *frende* alone makes sense; *In this matere bothe (both B) fremed and tame*, 3371 ABG (frend C, frende D), where we should read *fremde*. *Dreye* (A.S. *drýge*) occurs only in the plural,—*Han . . . ded[c] ben and dreye*, 3194 f (drye BCD) (: pleye *inf.* : to seye); *He gan the teris wyppen of ful dreye*, 5835 (drye D, dreye *inf.* † C) (: seye *inf.* : prey *inf.*).

Note 2.—In *fawe*, which occurs once,—*he desircth fawe*, 5549 f (: slawe *p.p.* : with-drawe *p.p.*),—a final -n has been lost (cf. O.L.G. *fagan*, -in, A.S. *fægen*, and see ten Brink, § 44. a).

Note 3.—For the adj. *fre*, *free* (A.S. *fréo*), invariable in form, cf., for examples of all sorts, 840, 1073 f, 1402 f, 1856 f, 2206 f, 2970 f, 4364 f, 5633, 5642, 5721, 6214 f, 6507 f, 7032 f, 7186 f, 7725 f, 7753 f, 7768 f, 7838 f.

§ 47. In *allone*, *lame*, -e goes back to the Anglo-Saxon weak (“definite”) ending -a.

¹ The right reading is *soot*, noun, which A mistook for the adj.

allone, alone¹ (A.S. eall ána), 97 f, 178 f, 358 f (allon B), 547 f, 694 f (allon B), 907 f (alon CD), 1602 f, 1640 f, 3255 f (alon CD), 3382 (aboue † C), 3506 f, 4882 f (alon C), 4943 (D ?), 5530 f (alon C), 5609 f, 5770 † C, 6585, 6612 f, 6834 (alle one C); -e, 1021 (-n B), 1695 (-n B), 1775, 2301 (*om.* D), 2486, 4960 (allas † A), 7389 (-n B); allone here (*hic*), 806. (All singular except 907.)

Rhyme words.—mone *moan n.* (97, 694, 1640, 5609, 6612), enerichone (178, 907, 3255, 3506, 5530, 5609), echone (4882), grone *inf.* (358, 547, 907, 1602, 1640, 6612).

lame (A.S. lama, L. lome, lame), 1102 f (: blame *n.*).

§ 48. *Lyte, muche* belong in a category by themselves.

On their relations to A.S. *lýt, lýtel, micel, mycel*, see especially Bright, *American Journal of Philology*, IX, 219.

lyte (A.S. *lýt, adv., lýtel, adj.*) is said by ten Brink, § 231, to be "im Sing. wohl nur substantivisch gebraucht," but this is shown to be an error by two places in the *Troilus*: *the chaumbre is but lite*, 2731 f (: *wyte blame acc.*), and *yn place lite*, 7992 f (light † D) (: write *scribo* : endite *inf.*); compare also 2288 f and 7653 f, though in these two cases the word may well enough be substantive. In the definite use AB have *my litë closet* in 3505 AB (litil CD). In 826 f, 1339 f, 1354 f (lite(l), A), 1469 f, 2112 f, 2302 f, 2363 f, 2731 f, 3582 f, 3675 f, 3740 f, 7653 f, -e, 291 (lytīl C † D), 1517 (D ?), 5992 B, 6539 B, *lite, lyte* is apparently substantive. Old-style figures indicate that the reading is *a lite*,—a phrase sometimes used adverbially.—*That is litë fors*, 7290 C, is a wrong reading for *my birthe accurse*. In 7290 C reads *a litë with*, doubtless for *a lite wight* (litel wight AB, littel wight D). *lite*, 4410 f (a † lite D) (: wordes white), is adverbial; *lyte*, 4092 f, is plural (: white *pl.* : *delyte inf.*).

Rhyme words.—*wyte blame inf.* (826, 1469, 2363), *noun* (2731, 3582), *delite ind. 3 pl.* (1339), *endite subj. 1 sg.* (1354), *inf.* (1339, 2112, 7653, 7992), *plyte inf.* (2288), *smyte inf.* (2363), *byte inf.* (3582), *write ind. 1 sg.* (7992), *subj. 2 sg.* (2112, 7653), *inf.* (2302), *myte* (3675, 3740), *white pl.* (3740).

Note.—For *lytel, litel* [Var. B litil; C lityl, litil, lytil, lytyl; D litle, litell, litil, litill, liteell (5256)], adjectival, adverbial, and substantive, cf. (i.) 179, 216, 1241, 1327, 1730, 1590 BCD, 2163, 2165, 2420, 3389, 3443, 3935, 4252, 4401, 4453, 4487, 4530, 4663, 4860, 5243, 5385, 5546, 6109, 7289, 7403, 7468, 7818, 7865; (ii.) *lytel, litel*, cf. 5046, 5256, 5992 (lite B), 6539 (lite C); *litel hed*, 5095; *litel hertes reste*, 8112 (cf. 5243 C); *litel hath*, 5352; a *litel here (acc. sg.)*, 5265 (a lite B, a † litell D); a *lytel his*, 6577 (a lite *vnsulle* B).

¹ A almost always has *allone* (*alone*, 2390).

muchē (A.S. micel), 386 (muchel B, meche C, myche D), 442 (-el B, mechil C, mych[ē] D), 1313 (much † B, meche C, D †), 2156 (muchel B, meche C, mychil D), 3480 (B †, meche C, mich[e] D), 4529 (meche C, miche D), 5561 (-el B, meche C, moche D); thow hast so mechē don, 3228 (much i-do B, mychē † for D); mechē knowe, 1260 C.—muchē,—as m. as, 796 (meche AC, mych D), 3840 (meche C, mich D), 5156 (meche C, moch D); as meche as, 5998 C (wyd A, wyde BD); thus muchē, 2948 (meche C, mych D), 7361 (meche C, much D); in as m. as, 7428 (meche C, much † D); so m. as, 1327 (meche C, mych D); for as m. as, 7715 (meche C, much D);¹ so muchē honoure, 2981 (muchel B, mechil C, D om. †).—so mych † grace, 1070 D (?).—mechēl of 2744 (muchel B, mechē C, mychil D). (Non-adjectival uses, substantive or adverbial, are indicated in the above list by old-style verse-numbers.)

§ 49. Several adjectives which in Anglo-Saxon end in a consonant, sometimes or always take -e in the *Troilus*. (Child, § 30; ten Brink § 231.)

Some of the -e's in the following list are perhaps to be explained on grammatical grounds. In *brode Phebus, false Poliphete, proude Bayard, heighe God, heyghe Ioue*, we perhaps have a petrified vocative like that recognized by ten Brink (§ 236. Anm.) in *goode fayre Whyt she heet* (B. Duch., 948), cf. *fierse Mars*, 2864 (-[e] D). (Cf., however, Zupitza, *Deutsche Litteratur-Zeitung*, 1885, col. 613, and Freudenberger, *Ueber das Fehlen des Auftakts in Chaucer's heroischem Verse*, *Erlanger Beiträge zur Engl. Philol.*, Heft iv, pp. 37-39.) Is it not possible that *salte se, false worldes brotelnesse*, and *wode ialousie* (or read *the wode*?) are to be referred to the same idiom? The relation between a vocative and a constant epithet is in some respects sufficiently close. The exclamatory form *goode grace* may also be of the same vocative nature, but *harde grace* has nothing to do with address or with constant epithets. Observe *gon sithen longe while*, etc. (see *longe*) and *of olde tyme*.

bare (A.S. bær, L. bare, bar, P. Pl.^c bar,^{bc} bare), 662 f (: care *n.* : snare *n.*), 1195 f (: care *n.* : fare *pl.*), 4888 f (: wel-fare : care *n.*), 5830 f (: yfare *p.p.*); -e, 5887. [For definite form, cf. 3941, 6184.]

brode (A.S. brád, L. brad, brod, O. brad, P.Pl.^{abc} brod), brodē Phebus, 7380 (broodē D, the † brodē Phebus C).

¹ Supply [*me*] in D.

faire, fayre (A.S. fæger, L. fæir, fæire, O. fazzerr, P. Pl. fayre), the thriddë heuene faire, 2844 f (: debonaire : repaire *inf.*); in a ful fairë † wyse, 5472 B (seerë † A, sècret(e) D, sècrë G).¹—faire, 1309 (glad CD), 3253 (-r D, fayr nor C), 3564 (fair D).—faire, 101 (fayr C), 1669 (-r BCD).

fair, fayr, feyr, (i.) 815 f (-e BCD) (: despeyr *n.*), 882 (-e B); (ii.) 115 (-e BD), 277, 294 (goode B, good CD), 900 (-e B), 4448 (-e B, -e † so D), 5073 (fayr † sche C), 6535 (-e B), 6810 (-e BD). [faire *extra metr.*, 1171 AB.] [In address : goodly fayrë fresshë may, 7775 f.]

false (A.S. fals, *late*, P. Pl. fals), falsë worldës brotelnesse, 8195 (-[e] B, -e D); falsë Poliphete, 2552 C (that fals † polyfete D, fals[e] AB).²

fals, sg., 87 AB, 593, 3656, 5278 (-e D), 5725 (-e D); cf. 6199, 6209, 6319, 7642, 7889)³; false, pl., 5321 (-[e] B, C †), 8144 (-[e] B).

ferne (A.S. fyrr, *adj.*, fyrr-géar, *n.*, fyrr-géara, *adv.*, O. Sax. fernum gêre, P. Pl. fernyere), Ye fare-wel al the snow of fern[ë] yere, 7539 (fern[ë]yere B, fern[ëy]ere C, feurer † D) (: here *hic*).⁴

fresche (A.S. fersc, L. freche, frech, O. fressh), Yong freschë (fresshë B, frosch † C, freisshë D) strong and hardy as lyon, 7193.

fressh, fresch, (i.) 1721 (-e D); (ii.) 166 (-e B, frosch C, fressh † lady D), 816 (-e CD), 1637 (-e BD), 1972 (-e BC), 2007 A (-e B), 2182 (-e B), 4626 (-e D), 5817 (frosche † *pl.* C), 7207, 7473.

In address,—o goodly fresshë fre, 2970 (-[e] B, fressh and D(?)); fresshë wommanlichë wyf, 4138; cf. 7680, 7775.

Var. B fresh; C frosche, frossche; D freiss, -e.

goode (A.S. gód, L.O. god), And seyde On suche a mirour good[e] grace, 1351, (goodë B Cp., gode E, good[e] G). *Good[ë] gouernaunce*, 1552 CD, is an error for *goddess g.* *Goode*, 44 AB (*om.* † D), 6549 (god CD), and *goode*, 52 (D †), are mere accidents. *Goode Alceste*, 8141 (good BD) may be a "petrified vocative." Everywhere else *good* (var. B good(e)), except in plural and in definite forms, where grammar requires *goode* (cf. 335, 336, 627, 1247, 1254, 1556, 1667, 1763, 2743, etc., etc.).—goud, 1337 A (goodë B, godë C, good D). (Cf. the *substantive*, § 14.)

grete (A.S. gréat, O. græt). I find no good case of *grete* except, perhaps, *yn purpos gret*, 7939 f (grete BD) (: contrefete *inf.*).

¹ *Secre* is no doubt right (*secre* John's, *secre* E Cp., *secret* Harl. 2392).

² Supply [ye] in AB. Cp. and John's have *ze*, *ye*; Cp. has *falsë*.

³ For cases of sing. *fals* (var. -e CD) before vowels, cf. 3140, 3646, 5043, 5656, 7061.

⁴ Apparently Cp. and John's agree with A. Harl. 2392 reads *feurer*.

gret, (i.) * 66, 94¹ (D †), 296 (D †), * 528², 1024, 1249, 1252³, 2522, 2595 (C †), 2788 (-e D), 3361, 3709 (om. † C), * 4055, * 4058, * 4289, * 4357, 4718, 5518, * 6173, * 6501, * 6801, 8107, * 8156. [Var. B greetę; D greet.] — (ii.) * 28⁴ (gretë ease † D), 65, 587 (C om. †), 1290 (gret [e]stat C, -e † D), 1810, 1966, 2250 (D †), 2377 (D †), 2476, * 3377 (C †, D om.), 3475, * 4476, 5212 (D †), 5559 (-e D), 7344 (C †), 7842 ([a] gret C), * 7992 (gret effect(iz) C). [Var. D greet.]—gret hònour, 2654 (-e h. BD).

Note 1.—Such -e's as there are in A are none of them sounded. They are the following,—a ful grete care, 1016 (a wol gret C, [a] ful grete D); in grete dishese, 2072 (gret C); a grete deuyneresse, 7885 (gret C); a bor as grete as, 7832 (gret CD).

Note 2.—In 515 B (*grete*), supply [a] and read *grete* (gret AC, grete D); cf. also 1252. In 1903 BD a *gretë rowte* might be read (And other of hire wommen || a gretë rowte), but *gret* is the reading of AC.

harde (A.S. heard, L. heard, herd, O. harrd), no morë hardë grace, 713 (hard[ë] D).—hard, (i.) 836 (-e B, -e C), 2321 (-e B, D †), 2326 (-e B), 2356 (-e B †, hard here D), 2990, 3776, 6119 (-e D); (ii.) 4199 (-e E). (Cf. 4757, 5802, 6035.)

heighe (A.S. héah, M. héh, L. hæh, hæhze, O. heh). Two cases of -ë, —But that wot heighë god, 3869 (-[e] B, hy[e] D, wot † I by god C); Thorough purueyaunce and disposicion Of heyghë Ioue, 7906-7 (-[e] B, heye C, high[e] D). To which add,—in heuene hye, 4587 f ABC (heye E) (: gye *inf.* : companye).—highë, 3279 (heighe B, hey C, hye D); heyghë, 4636 (heigh B, hey C, hye D).

heigh, heygh, (i.) 1717 (hey C, hye D), 3128 (hey C; D †), 3739 (hi C, hie † D), 4165 (hey C, high † is E), 5853 (hey C, high D), 6799 (hey C, hie D), 7330 (hey C, high D), 7342 (hy C, hie D), 7872 † D (high). (ii.) 4113 (hi C, hi3 D), 5220 (hey C, high D).

longe (A.S. lang, long, O. lang), gon sithen longë while, 718 (seth gone long while (†) D); nought go (gon BC, gone D) ful long[e] while, 1592 (-e B); longë tyme agon, 1807 BD (-[e] A (?), -[e] C);⁵ longë tyme agon, 7688 (-[e] D (?)). Cf. the A.S. accusative phrases *lange þrage* (*hwile, tid.*).—In *Or that it be ful longe*, 832 f (long D) (: honge *inf.*), and *Ten dayes nys so longë not tabyde*, 6716 (-e(†) C), *longe* is perhaps adv. longë lette, 7214 BCGCp. John's (more A, lenger D). [longë here (*hic*), 3661 C^e.] longe (*adv.* ?), 4698 (long D).

¹ Old-style figures indicate that B and D have -e; an asterisk indicates that B alone has -e.

² Supply [a] in A.

³ "For gret power and moral vertu here." In B we might read: "For gretë power and," etc.

⁴ Old-style figures indicate that B and D have -e (elided); an asterisk indicates that B alone has -e (elided).

⁵ Supply [*Adv*] in A, and read *long[e]*.

long, (i.) 143 (longe? B), 2384 (-e B), 3337 (-e B), 5555 (-e B, longe † D),¹ 5944 (mak[ë] long(e) sermon B, -e D).
 olde (A.S. eald, ald, L. ald, alde, olde, O. ald), of oldë tyme, 6833 BD (old[e] A, oftyn † C).—olde, 1481 (old CD); olde (*in address*), 4992. (Cf. *old*, (ii.) 6031, 7647.)

Note.—All the other cases of *olde* (not *oldë*) that I have noted are either definite or plural. Definite cases (singular) are the following,—3189,² 3537 (wolde † C, old[e] D), 4766³ (old[e] ? D), 4789, 4803 f (BC *defect.*, the old D) (: holde *inf.*), 6123 (D †), 7489, 7499; The newë loue out chaceth (cacheth † A, schakyth † C) ofte the olde, 5077 f (: holde *p.p.* : colde *inf.*); myn oldë hat, 3162. (*Oldë* in all these except as indicated.) For the plural indefinite, see the following verses,—130 f, 160 f, 2933 f, 3139 f, 4041 f, 4728 f, 5086, 5634 f, 6921 f, 7009 f, 7015, 7571 f, 7822, 7841, 7844 (C †), 7874 f, 7925, 8212, 8217. (In all of these the reading of all the MSS. is *oldë* except as follows : -e (elided), in 5086, 7015 A (old B); -[e], in B in 7841, 7844 (C †), 7925, 8212; -[e], in D in 3139; old, 4728 f D; oolde, 4041 f D; oldde, 7822 B. [old[e] †, 969 D.]—Plural definite,—-ë, 6742 (-[e] B), 6743 † C, 8116; -e, 760 (old D), 6118 † D (?).

proude (A.S. prút, L. prut), proudë bayard, 218 (-[e] D); proud (*before vowels*), 210 (-e B), 214 (pryde † B).

salte (A.S. sealt), In heuene and helle in erthe and saltë se, 2850 (-[e] BD).

wode (A.S. wód), Which that men clepeth wodë ialousie, 7576 (the wodë A).—wood, wod, (i.) 499 (-e B, D †), 3635 (-e B), cf. 2639; wod, (ii.) 3240 (-e B, om. † A), 4892 (-e B, om. † D), 5579 (-e B), cf. 5010, 6201.

Note 1.—Some adjectives show an -e which is grammatically unjustifiable and never sounded. In B this is very common; in A, however, it is pretty rare. Thus,—sike, 575 (sik B, sek C); syke, 7957 (sik B, in † seek C, sike D); but,—syk, (i.) 2601 (sik? BD); (ii.) 2608 (-e D), 2614 (sek C, seke D), 6776 (-e D, sek C).⁴ See also *faire, goode, grete, highe, oldë*.

Note 2.—*It wcle be to hire leue*, 5267 f C, is an error for *leue inf.* (ABD) (: greue *inf.*); cf. 2718, 3487, 5273 f, 6581. Of monosyllabic adjectives, which in Anglo-Saxon end in a consonant and which take no -e in the *Troilus* in the uninflected forms, many examples are given in §§ 53, 55, 67, 69. Cf. also *bold* (2930, 4695, 7158), *broun* (109 f), *fayn* (6556, 6788, 6851 f, 7376 f), *hoors* (5809), *hor* (7647 f), *lyk* (2125 f, 5910, etc.), *tough*, *towh* (2110 f, 2929 f, 6464 f), *vwar* (549) (cf. note 3), *wan* (1636 f, 4897 f, 7584 f), *warm* (2732 f), *worth* (2163, 4382, 5160), *wyd* (5289). In some of these words there are variants in -e (not sounded): thus, *hoor(e)* (7647 f D), *wann(e)* (1636 f D), etc.

Note 3.—For dissyllables in the indefinite use, singular, cf. *heuenyssh*, 8176, cf. 104; *holsom*, 4588; *open*, 1125; *siker*, *syker*, (i.) (ii.) 673, 920, 2455, cf. 4079; *sonnyssh*, 5398; *sothfast*, 5532; *stedfast*, 5651 (*stedfast* BD); *vnwâr*, 304; a wonder *thyng*, 621, cf. 1120 D; *yonder sonne*, 2322; *on ydel*, 948 f, 6457 f, 6635; *yuel*, 8000; *ywâr*, 1483 (i- B, war C, warë D); as *Argus eyed*, 6121 f; *rosy hewed*, 2283; *horned*, 7013; *lewed*, 3240; *blistful*, *blysfyl*, (i.) 1765, 1917, 2176, 6323 (*voc. ?*), cf. 5778;

¹ C out of order.

² Old-style figures indicate that BD have *old[e]*.

³ In B we must drop (*wp-*) and read *on* with A.

⁴ *Sikë y me feyne*, 2613 D, is an error for *syklyche*, etc.

dredful, 2130, 2343, d. herte 2186, 7694, B has *dredful* in 2186, 2343, 7694; leful, 3862 (lefful C); skylful, (i.) 1477, 3780, (ii.) 3129; vnskilful, (ii.) 790; woful, (i.) 13, 1518, 2945, 5406, 5500, 6106, 6684, (ii.) 7683.

Sorweful is usually dissyllabic; *sorweful* (dissyllabic) is the regular pronunciation and spelling in AB, *sorweful* is favored by C, and D prefers *sorowfuht* (cf. 14, 1149, 1548, 5036, 6604, 6779); but the word is sometimes trisyllabic: thus,—Cryseyde ful of *sorw[e]ful* (sorwēful C, sorwēfuht D, sorowful John's) pite, 5393, where, however, Cp. has *sorwful* and *pite* (cf. also 7591 D, 7996 D); see §§ 57. c, 84. Cf. *ernestful*, 2812.

Note 4.—For adjectives in *-y* (A.S. *-ig*), indefinite, singular, (i.) before consonants, cf. *almighty* (5355), *angry* (562), *blody* (5289, 7865 C), *bysy* (1359, 3884, 6307), *cloudy* (1853), *dedly* (5533), *drery* (13), *hardy* (2159, 7165), *hasty* (6230), *heuy* (3981), *lusty*, *-i* (157, 165, 951, 1837, 2184, 6147, 6756), *myghty* (1673), *mysty* (3902), *redy* (2081, 3545, 4627, 5870, 5873, 6378, 6420), *sondry* (440, 957, 5174), *sory* (14, 1179, 1549, 2141, 3886, 6503, 6990, 7445, 7461), *thrifty* (275), *trusty* (4665 † D), *vnmyghty* (1943), *vnweri* (410, 1924), *vnworthi* (4126, 4991), *wery* (1296), *worthy*, *-i* (226, 979, 1265, 2784, 4011, 4701, 6696, 7226). For examples before vowels (with and without slurring of *-y*), see the Chapter on Metre. For the plural, see § 70; for the definite use, see § 57. d.

Note 5.—Adjectives in *-les* are the following (sing. and indef. unless otherwise noted): (i.) (ii.) *boteles*, 782 f (*booteles* B) (see *graceles*); *botmeles* *byhestes*, *pl.*, 7794 (*botteumes* C, *botumles* D); *drynk[e]les*, 1803 (*drenkynles* B, *drynkeles* C, *drink[e]les* D); *endeles*, 2168 (*enfeynd* † C, *infynyt* † D in a *rather later hand*); *gilt[e]les*, 1413 (*gilteles* BC) (*perh. adv.*); the *gilt[les]* in *distresse*, 2457 (*gilteless* B, *gilteles* C, *giltles* D) (*sg. or pl. ?*); *graceles*, 781 f (: *causeles adv.*: *boteles*); *heleles*, 7956 (*heceles* † A); *herteles*, 7957 (I *herde* † *telle* C); *knotteles*, 7132 B (*-[e]-* D, *knot[e]les* AB); *lyghtles*, 3392 (*-les* B); *makeles*, 172 f (: *natheles*: *precis n.*); *resteles*, 4426; *roteles*, 5432 (*rootheles* B, *ertheles* † C); *routhelees*, 1431 f (*-les* B, *reutheles* C, *rowtheles* D); *specheles*, 5032, 5829; *ster[e]les* (= without helm; Ital. word here is *governo*), 416 (*stierlees* (?) B, *sterlees* C, *ster[e]les* D); *vertules*, 1429 f (*vertueles* B) (: *routhelees*).

§ 50. The following adjectives of Germanic origin also show an *-e* in the *Troilus*:

badde (A.S. *bæddel* (?)), *souned in-to badde*, 6338 f (: *ye hadde ind.*); cf. *sownen ynto gode*, 1029 f.

lowe (O.N. *lágr*, L. *lah*, O. *lah*), *But hold hym as his thral lowe yn distresse*, 439 (*low* BD)¹. Cf. the definite form,—*my lowe confessioun*, 1613; *lowe, pl. or adv.*, 2869 (*lawe* B, *low* D).

meke (O.N. *mjúkr*, O. *meoc*, P. Pl.^c *meke*), 8210 f (: *seke inf.*).

schere (O.N. *skáerr*, cf. A.S. *scír*), *an arwë schere*, 6210 f C (*clere* AB, *cler* D) (: *here adv.*).

wykke, *wikke* (cf. M.E. *wicche*, A.S. *wice(e)a* ‘wizard,’ *wicce* ‘witch’), *-e*, 403 (C *om. †*, *wykkyd* D); *now is wykke iturned vn-to worse*, 3916 (*wyk* D, *wikked torned* B, *like † C*); *fro wikke I go to worse*, 5502 (*wo † A*, *wikked* D).

Note 1.—Cf. the following cases of the plural in the indefinite use,—*wykke*, 939 f (*wyk* D) (: *thikke indf. adj. sg.*), 1543 f (*weke* C, *wyk* D) (: *thikke adj. pl. or adv.*).

¹ Supply [*his*] in D.

Note 2.—*Wykked* also occurs. Thus,—7973 (*wikked* BD, *wekede* C); cf. 1889, 3650. Cf. also the plural (39, 7118), the vocative (3679, where C has *welkede*), the definite use (§ 57. b).

Note 3.—For *rakel* (cf. Swed. dial. *rakkel* *subst.*, O. N. *reikall* *adj.*) see the following places,—with r. *hond*, 1060 (-yl D); *eche* r. *dede*, 3271 (*rackle* B, *rakil* CD); *thow* r. *nyght*, 4279 (*rakle* B, *rakele* C); *pred.* (before a consonant), 4472 (-yl C). In 4484 is *rakle* an inf. ?

§ 51. Romance adjectives preserve their final -e in the *Troilus* (Child, § 19; ten Brink, § 239). (A few Latin adjectives are included in the following list.)

I. Miscellaneous :

benigne, *benÿgne* (O. Fr. *benigne*), 8232 f (: *digne pl.*); -e he was, 4644 (*beninge* B, -nyng D). (For pl., cf. 431 f, 2868 f.)

contraire (O. Fr. *contraire*), 212 f A (*contrarie* BD, -rye C) (: on the *staire* : *debonaire*). (Cf. *necessaire*.) See also § 31, to which add references to 418, 637. *Contrarie, adj.*, 5690 f (: *tarie inf.*); cf. 5665.

dèbonaire (O. Fr. *debonere*, -aire), -e, 181 (-ar B, -er CD); cf. o goodly *debonaire*, 2846 f (-eyre D) (: *clere pl.*).

digne (O. Fr. *digne*), 429 f (: *benÿgne pl.* : *resigne ind. 1 sg.*); *digne*, cf. 961, 3856. (For pl., cf. 2865 f, 8231 f.)

eterne (O. Fr. *eterne*), 2853 f (: *descerne inf.* : *werne inf.*), 3217 f (: *gouverne inf.* : *yerne adv.*).

huge (O. Fr. *ahuge*), 3498 (D †), 6049, 6428. [Var. *heuge* C.]

iuste (O. Fr. *juste*), 1612, 1812; *iust[e]*, 4069, 7619 (-e BCD).

large (O. Fr. *large*), 7167 f (: *Arge n. pr.*).

mansuète (Lat. *mansuetus*, cf. Ital. *mansueto*), 6557 f (*l. om. †* C) (: *swete* : *mete inf.*).

necessaire (O. Fr. *necessaire*), 5683 f (: *fayre adv.*) (*necessarie* AB, -rye D, C cut out). (Cf. *contrarie*.)

nice, *nyce*, *nyse* (O. Fr. *nice*), 1808 f (: *vyse* (A †) : *cherishe inf.*, -ice BCD), 1942 f (: *vice*), 2585, 5198, 5260 f (: *vice*). (For *pl.* cf. 3166 f, 4235 f.)

pale (O. Fr. *pale*, *palle*, *pasle*), 5402 f (: *smale adj. pl.* : *bale n.*), 6899 (C †).

pryme, —at *prymë face* (=Lat. *prima facie*), 3761.

straunge (O. Fr. *estrange*), 6483 f (: *chaunge inf.*), 7223 (D †), 7995 f (*strong †* C) (: *chaunge n.*); *his manère estrauunge*, 1077 f (*straunge* D) (: *chaunge inf.*).

trine (Lat. *trinus*, cf. Fr. *trine*), *trine † vnite*, 8229 D.

II. For Adjectives in *-ble*, of all constructions, singular and plural, compare the following words in the places cited (C is fond of the spelling—*bele*, but sometimes has *-el*, *-il*).

able, 1292, 1821, 1988.	impossible, 4153; cf. 783.
chàritable, 7186.	inuisible, 8229.
còuenàble, 2222 f.	muàble, 3664 f.
dìscordàble, 4595 f.	noble, 1404, 1416, 1732, 1822, 3739, 6747, 7342, 7686, 7920, 8115.
double, 1, 54, 7261.	rèmuàble, 6344.
èxcusàble, 3873.	rèsonàble, 2220 f, 2991.
feble, 7585.	stable, 4593 f.
hònouràble, 6798 f.	vustàble, 3662 f.
horrible, 6613.	visible, 8229.
humble, 124, 433, 1913, 2154, 2214, 2938, 2983, 4197, 4329, 4790, 6161, 7683.	

Note 1.—For the treatment of these words before vowels (elision or non-elision depending upon accent), see 1821, 2938, 3739, 4790, 6747, 7186, 7342, 7920, 8229. For *symple* cf. 181, 7183.

Note 2.—For *tender* (O.F. *tendre*), see *tender of*, 3746 (*tendre* BD, -*dij* C); cf. *sobre was*, 7183 (-*ere* C). For *transitorie* (: *memorie*) see 3669 f.

Note 3.—French -*é* is of course preserved. Thus,—*wke that atempre be thy brydel*, 946 (*atempere* B, *atempere † wel* C, that thou † *attempre be thy b. D*); *secrè*, *secré*, cf. 744 f, 3128, 3154 f, 3601 (cf. also *secrèt*, *secrèt* (?), (ii.) 2749, 2984, 3320); *prèue*, 3763 (*prieue* B, *pryue* D, *prime † C*), cf. *prèuy*, 3629 (*pryue* BD, *prieue* C).

§ 52. But some Romance adjectives take an -*e* in the *Troilus* that have none in French. In a few of the following instances one might be inclined to suspect the influence of a French feminine ending (cf. § 63). Some of the forms are vocative, but such are always indicated.

aduèrse (O. Fr. *advers*, *avers*), *fortune aduerse*, voc., 5854 f (: *werse* : *diuerse pl.*).

asùre (O. Fr. *azur*), *a broche gold of asure*, 4212 f (*g.* and *asure* BCD) (: *aenture* : *scripture*).

clere (O. Fr. *cler*), 6210 f (*schere* C, *cler* D) (: *here adv.*); -*e*, 3368 (*cler* C, -*e* D ?); *cler*, 5653 (-*e* BD). [For def. form *clere*, cf. 7018 f; for pl. *clere*, cf. 2843 f, 2971 f, 4195 f, 6097 f, 6372 f, 6583 f, 6929 f, 7173 f, 7178 f, 7362 f, 7701 f.]

comùne (O. Fr. *comun*), *fortune ys commune*, 843 f (: *fortune*); *she. . . traytour comune*, 4667 f (: *fortune* : *entune inf.*); *comune astrologer*, 4257 (C †); *by comune † assente* (?), 5008 D (on AC, oon B). [Cf. *pl.*, 5054 f.]

diuerse (O. Fr. *divers*), in *diuèrsè wyse*, 61 (*dyuèrse † D*). (Cf. Freudenberger, *Ueber das Fehlen des Auftraks*, p. 39.)

dyuyne (O. Fr. divin), of dyuynë purueyaunce, 5623 A (de- BD).

fyne (O. Fr. fin), of fyn[ç] force, 6784 (-ü BD). [fyne, 5139 f C (: myn) *should be fyn n.*]

mene (O. Fr. meien), Criseyde mene was, 7169 (-[e] B)¹. [Cf. the def. form,—this menë while, 2892; in this menë while, 3618 AB (in this wyse † C, in this while D).]

pure (O. Fr. pur), for pure ashamed, 1741 (-ü schamyd C)². [Adverb?] queynte (O. Fr. coint), swetë harmë so q., exclam., 411 f (-t D) (: pleynte *n.* : feynte *pres. ind. 1 sg.*).

secoude (O. Fr. second), 7199 f (*pred. masc. sg.*) (secunde B) (: founde *p. p.*); cf. Ector the secunde, 1243 f (-ounde B, -ound D) (: wounde *n.* : abounde *inf.*).

souereyne (O. Fr. souverain), o lady souëreyne, 4978 f (-ayne B, -aigne D) (: peyne *n.*).

Note 1.—Here may be added,—*the blood Theban*, 6964 f (Theban C) (: bane *n.*). The parallel form *Troïan Troïän* (regularly *troyan* in C) has no -e, whether *adj.* or *subst.* (cf. 1910, 4715, 4734, 4994 f (: man), 6489, 7240, 7272, 7275, 7283), except perhaps in the plural (cf. 145).

Note 2.—*Recreaunte* has an adventitious -e due to the scribe : *Or be recreaunte of (-e for B, recreaunt for C, recreaunt of D) his owene tene*, 814. So *pleyne*, 5552 ABD (*pleyn C*).

Note 3.—For examples of the singular of Romance adjectives in the indefinite use, see the following (accent recessive except as indicated) :—*èternèl* (5724 f), *funeral* (6665 f), *fynàl* (4807 f), *general* (163, 893 f, 919 f, 4644 f, 4804 f, 7185 f), *infernàl* (6205 f), *moral* (1252, 6334), *mortal* (2860, 3218), *inmòrtal* (103), *natal* (2992), *egàl* (2979), *royàl*, *reàl* (432, 435 f, 4642 f, 6329 f, 8193); *angwysshous* (3658), *bountenous* (883 f), *cheu-àl[e]rois* (7165), *còrageus* (7163 f), *coueytous* (4215)³, *dèsiròus* (1 51, 2186), *deynous* (290), *disdeynous* (2302 D), *doutòus* (5654), *ènyòus* (1942), *ènyòus* (4542), *grenous* (6154, 7594, 7967, cf. 5566), *hèynòus* (2702), *ialous*, *ielous* (3741, 3993), *pitous*, *petous* (111, 113, 422, 3760, 5345, 6161, 6918), *dispitoùs* (6562 f), *traytous* (4542 A; *traytour BCD*); *àbsent* (6824, 7000 BCD), *absènt* (3330 f, 7000 A), *diligent* (2986 f, 3327 f), *innocent* (2647, 2808), *présent* (4810, 7110), *présènt* (2887 f, 4142); *caytif* (rather *subst.* than *adj.*, 3224 B; *castif A*, *captÿf CD*), *èntentÿf* (1923 f), *testÿf* (7165), cf. *gÿltyf* (3861, 3891); *àngelyk* (102), *cèrteyn* (2633, 3374, 4601, etc.), *yn cèrteyn*, *cèrteyn* (697, 5570, 5607 C, 5667 f), *vnçèrteyn* (5651), *clos* (2619), *confus* (5018), *mat* (5004), *cürteys* (81), *defet* (6981, 7582), *discret* (3319, 3785), *esy* (1083, 1705), *èxpert* (67), *felon* (6562), *fortunat* (1365), *infortunat* (5406 D; -ed AB, *onfortunè C*), *fùtur* (7111), *gèntil* (3746, 6336, 7294), *ioly* (2184, 7537), *malapert* (2929), *pàrfit* (4221, 7282), *pepelyssh* (6339), *preignant* (5841), *sècret* (2749, 3320), *secrèt* (2984), *sòdeyn* (1752), *souër* (4036 † A), *subget*, -git (231, 8153), *subtil* (1342), *vnàpt* (971), in *veyn* (4254, 4976, 7736). Some of these occasionally show variants in -e (not sounded). For adjectives in -ious, -uous, -ial, -ient, -uel, see Chapter on Metre. For adjectives in -ay, cf. *gay* (2007 f), *verray* (6267, very D).

§ 53. In the definite use (that is, when preceded by a possessive or demonstrative pronoun or by the definite

¹ In C supply [*hirc*].

² D om. *for* (purë ashamyd).

³ Dissyllable ?

article) monosyllabic adjectives take an inflectional -e (Child, § 32; ten Brink, §§ 232, 241).

I. Ordinals :

our first[e] lettre, 171 (-e B, our chef[e] 1. † † D); the firste syght[e], 1754 (the ferst[e] C, the ferst † D); the firste tyme, 2841 (-[e] D). (Cf. also 280, 2298, 4615, 6603, 7303.) the alderfirst[e], 2939 (the aldir ferste C; D †); with the firste || it cam, 4725 (the ferst hit D). But,—the firste || that, 7430 (see § 54).

the thridde ferthe fyfthe sixte day, 7568 (C † D †); Mayes day the thridde, 1141 f (-d D) (: bytydde *inl.* 3 *sg.*); the thridde heuene, 2844 (-[de] D). (Cf. also 4660, 5353.)

this ilke ferthe book, 4688 (this † ferthē b. D). (Cf. also 6839, 6856). the seuēnthē spere, 8172; here seuēnthē hows, 1766 (seuēntē C, vij. D).¹

that ilke nynthe nyght, 7466 (tenthē † C). (Cf. also 7044.)

the tenthē day, 6787 (the x[the] d. D). (Cf. also 6257, 6260, 6787, 7005, 7048, 7205.)

with his tenthe some yfere, 2334 (his t. sonne † B, his tensum † C, his x. somme D).

II. Monosyllabic superlatives :

for the beste, 581² f (-t C), 2409 f, 3890 f, 4171 f, 4831 f, 5539 f, 5950 f (-t C), 6090 f, 7969 f, 8113 f; the beste, 2533 f (-t C), 3295 f ([the] beste C), 3514 f (-t C), 3689 f, 3769 f, 5319 f, 5782 f (-t C), 6265 f (-t C), 7892 f (-t C); the best is 830 AD (-e BC); the faireste and the beste, 4122 f; my beste, 597 f (-t BC); thi beste, 1021 f (-t C, for the best D); the best[e] post, 993 (-e BC); the beste knyght, 1074 (-[e] BD); my best[e] frend, 1497 (-e C); thi beste gere, 2097 (-[e] D);³ the best[ē] harpoure, 2115 (-ē C); his beste wyse, 4436 (-[e] D); the beste weye, 5954 (-[e] D); o frend of frendes the alderbeste, 4439 f (no article in CD, which read *aldir best*, *altherbest*). (Cf. also 474, 947, 1467, 3797, 5470, 5947, 5987, 6188, 7670.) But,—the best, 1825 f ACD (-e B) (: the thryftiest : the worthiest).

Rhyme-words.—I ne lest (leste) *pres. subj.* (581), leste, lyste *pres. subj.* 3 *sg.* (1021, 2533, 3514, 3689, 3890, 4171), leste *pret.* 3 *sg. ind. or subj.* (3295, 4831), reste *inf.* (597, 2409, 4122, 5950, 8113), *pres. ind.* 1 *sg.* (5319), *noun* (3769, 3890, 4439, 5782, 6265), vnreste (5539, 7969), wreste *inf.* (6090), moleste *inf.* (5539), in geste (3295), breste *pres. subj.* 3 *sg.* (597), Alceste (7892).

¹ Or,—Sat in here seuēnthē hows of heuene tho.

² Old-style figures indicate that D reads *best*.

³ Insert [*ryght*] in A.

at the laste, 916 f (att[e] laste B),¹ 1040 f (at † last D), 1230 f (attē laste B), 1484 f, 1776 f (-t C), 3938 f (-t C), 5185 f (-t C), 8002 f (-t C), 8182 f; at the last[e], 8093 (-e BD); at the last[e], 2023 f (-e BC); at the laste, 5885 (-ë † as C, -t † D); at the laste her-of, 3407 (-t B) (cf. also 1584, 1599, 1909, 3457, 3961, 4417, 5097, 6796, 7509); to the laste, 1340 f; April² the laste, 3202 f (-t C); my laste, 537 f (D †), 1955 f (-t C); his laste, 3640 f; the last[e] shour, 4709 (-ë B). But,—at the laste the, 2009 (-tē dede † D); at the laste this, 5034; at the last this, 5914 (-e BCD).

Rhyme words.—faste *adv.* (537, 916, 1040, 1230, 1776, 1955, 2023, 3938, 5185, 8002, 8182), laste *inf.* (537, 1040, 1955), caste *inf.* (1340, 1776, 3202), *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (1230, 3938, 5185, 8182), paste *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (1484), Horaste (3640).

at the leste, 1447 f, 2293 (-[e] BD), 2415 f (-t C), 3156 f, 4002 f, 6439 f (at leste † D), 6888 f, 7313 f (attē leste B), 8041 f; at the leste how, 4678; oon the leste, 4152 f (oon † of the leste E); the leeste ioye, 4162; the leste poynt, 4386 (-[e] D).

Rhyme words.—heste, behest, byheste (1447, 2415, 3156, 4002, 8041), feste (1447, 4002, 4152, 6439, 6888, 8041), requeste *n.* (7313), at the meste (7313). [Var. B leeste, leest[e]; D leest.]

at the meste, 7310 f (attē meeste B) (: requeste *noun* : at the leste); the moste wondir, 2228 C (-[e] D, the grettest wonder AB); for the moste part, 3281 C (-[e] D, more AB); here most[e] fere, 4183 (-e CE); my most[e] nede, 6194 (-e CD); compare,—now is most[e] nede, 3259.

the nexte word, 2942 (-[e] B; D †); this next[e] wyke, 2358 (the nexte C); the nexte wise, 697 BC (-[e] D).³

the worste, 1452 (-[e] D); the worste, 341 (-e so † C, -t so † D); the worste poynt, 342 (the worst y † D); the worste trecherye, 3120 (-[e] D); the worste kynde, 4468 (-[e] D). (Cf. 1389, 1622, 6459, 7090.) [Var. ABCD werste.]

III. Miscellaneous :

the bente mone, 3466 (-[e] B).

here blake wede, 177 (-[e] BD); cf. 2405 f. (For indef. *blak*, cf. 309, 642, 1619.)

the blynde lust, 8187; thy blynde and wynged sone, 4650 (blynd † D). (For indef. *blynd*, cf. 628, 1106, 3370 f).

here brighte face, 4670 (-[e] D); the bryght[e] mone, 7011 (-e C); Criseyde the brighte, 6879 f (-t CD) (: a-light (-e B) *pret. ind.* 3 *pl.* :

¹ Old-style figures denote that D has *last*.

² Three syllables (April AD, Aperil B, Aprile C).

³ A reads : For this nys not yn certeyn the next wyse. Omit *yn* (with BCD Cp. John's) and read *the next[e] wyse*.

- nyghte *inf.*) (Cf. also 5325, 7071, 7379, 7602.) here fadres faire
bryghte tente, 7385 (faire bright[e] D).
here colde mouth, 5823 (-[e] B); my cold[e] care, 612 (-e C, the †
cold[e] D). (Cf. 2052 † C, 5173.)
the dede slep, 2009.
his fixe and depe impressioun, 298 (B †, fyx C).
thi derke wede, 4273. (Cf. 5016.)
And nexst the derk[e] nyght the glade morwe, 944 (derke . . . glad[e]
B, derke . . . gladde C, -[e] . . . -[e] D).
the foule netle, 941 (C †, foul[e] D); thy foule enuÿe, 4937. (For
indef. *ful*, cf. 1981 and see § 55.)
his fulle myght, 7046 (-[le] BD) (cf. 610, 1052, 1419, 2637, 3278,
6438, 7902); at the fulle, 209 f (attē fulle B) (cf. 3055, 3359, 3376);
here ful[le] herte, 7083 A *should read* here woful h. (*so* BCD).
that glade nyght, 3071 (cf. 944, 4488).
this olde greye, 4789 f (gray D) (: his eyen tw[e]ye).
his hote fyr, 445 (-[e] D). (Cf. 490, 6870. For indef. *hot*, *hoot*, cf.
1977 f, 2361, 2618, 5925 f, 7465.)
his lighte gost, 8171 (-[e] B).
my righte lode sterre, 7755 (-[e] D); my right[e] l. s., 6595 (-e C);
thi righte place, 4970 (-[e] BD); his right[e] lady, 2150¹ (-e C),
4505 (-e C); my right[e] lady, 6930 (-e C), 7016 (bryzte C, my right
lady † D); her right[e] cours, 2055 D (kynde ABC); the right[e]
lyf, 1936 (-e C). (For indef. *right*, *vpriht*, cf. 1418 f, 3823 f,
3840 f.)
hire streght[e] bak, 4089 (streyte C, streizt[e] D, he[r] streyght[e] A).
the strong[e] cite, 7849 (-e BCD).
the swyfte fame, 5321 (C †).
My goode brother Troylus the syke, 2657 (D †) (: like *inf.* : syke *inf.*).
the white and ek the rede, 4226 f (: drede *n.* : rede *inf.*).
Antigone the white, 1972 f (: syke *inf.* : endite *inf.*); cf. 2147 f.
his wod[e] peyne, 2440 (-e BC); the wode ialousye, 7576 (wode BCD
G Cp. John's, *without the article*).
the fayrē bayē stede, 7401 f (-[e] BD); his bay[e] stede, 1709 (bayze
C); but,—his stede bay, 1066 f (: day : ay).
this blewē ryngē, 3727 (-[e] D, blowe C).

IV. Some examples are here given of the definite form of words
which occasionally show an -e in forms not obviously definite
(cf. § 49):

¹ Insert [*here*] in A.

this false world, 1505 (-[e] BD); thi fals[e] gost, 7884 (-e CD).
 the good[e] wyse worthi fressh and fre, 1402 (goode BC); my goode
 brother, 2657 (my good trew brothir † D).
 here goode softly wyse, 2752 (hire goodly soft[e] w. BD, hire goodeli
 softe w. C); his gode gouernaunce, 3269 (wise CD); his good[e]
 gouernaunce, 3323 (-e C); my good[e] loue, 3851 A^c (my good[e]
 myn B, myn goode myn C, good hert myn D); his goode chere,
 6547 (-[e] D).
 youre grete trouthe, 3834 (good[e] D).
 his heigh[e] port, 1077 (hieghē B, hy[e] D)¹; the heigh[e] worthynesse,
 4451 (hyē C, hizē D).

V. owene, owen, owne (A.S. *ágen*), is found only in the definite
 use. I. Singular. (i.) Before consonants; always dissyllabic, how-
 ever spelled. Thus,—myn owenē lust, 407 (ownē BD); thin owenē
 cheyne, 509 (own[e] BD, owen C); his owenē curtasye, 2571 (owen
 B, owne D); myn owenē lady, 7032 (swene † B,² ougne D) (cf.
 also 51, 442, 814, 1371 C (owne D), 1835, 1869, 1956, 2586, 2989,
 4025, 4327, 4329 C, 6111, 6112, 6412, 6426, 6581, 6703, 6830,
 6884, 6928, 7643, 7678, 7707, 7764, 7784, 8081); here owne place,
 3060 (owen BD, owenē C) (cf. 2950, 3757 (owenē BC, own[e] D),
 3943); myn owen lady, 6525 (owenē C, ougne D) (cf. 772, 5067,
 5751); myn owenē herte, 5973 (swete B, ougne D) (cf. 3477, 5376
 C); his ownē herte, 4662 (owen B, own[e] D); thyn owen help,
 795 (ow[e]n B, owenē C, ownē D); myn owen herte, 6214 AB
 (owenē C, ougnē D) (cf. 1530 (own? B, ouenē C, own[e] D), 6302
 (own[e] B, owenē C, ougnē D)). (ii.) Before vowels, youre owene
 (*predicate*), 6517 (owen B, owyn C, ougne D.) II. Plural, his
 owenē nedes, 3266 (owen B, own[e] D, owene † nede C); here owenē
 men, 3438 (own[e] B, owne D).

Note.—For *myn owene throte*, 1410 A, read *my throte*. The form *owne*
 (6111 C) is no doubt due merely to the omission by the scribe of the sign
 of abbreviation.

§ 54. Occasionally, however, -e is dropped in the definite
 form of monosyllabic adjectives.

his good wil, 2294 (-e BC).

this good plit, 3981 (-e B, thus good p. A).

my good wòrd, 7444 (godde C); youre good wòrd, 7985 (C †).

¹ Read [e]straunge in D.

² This form occurs several times in B; as, 4025, 4327, 6412, 6581, 7032. Cf.
succue, 2586 B.

In these cases the phrases were perhaps felt as compounds; cf. O.N. *gōð-vili*, *gōð-virki*, etc., and notice the accent. But not so in,—
this heigh matere, 3358 (he B, heyę C, hyę D).

yowre heyghę seruyce, 4130 (heigh B, heyę C, D †).

here heyghę compleynte, 5467 (heighę B, hire hyę pleynt C; D †).

thy wrong conceyte, 692 (-ę B, wrang D, C †).

my lowę confessioun, 1613.

Al be I not the firstę that dide amys, 7430 (the ferstę C, the furstę D).

the lastę, the last, see p. 124.

the pleyn felicite, 8181 (-ę B); this menę while, 3618 AB (p. 122).

Cf. the substantive use in:

Criseydę whichę that is thi lef, 5273 f (lief B, lyf C, the lefe D) (: a-gref : myschef). (For *lef*, *lief*, indef. sing., cf. 3706 f, 4461 f.)

Note 1.—Cases before a vowel, such as *hire old vsage*, 150 (olde C, the † old D), and *here playn entente*, 2645 (pleyne BC, pleyn D), of course prove nothing. *The next wyse*, 697 A, is an error.

Note 2.—In

For which these wise clerkes that ben dede
Han euere yet prouered to vs yonge
That *firstę vertu* is to kepe tonge, 3134-6¹

(-[e] BC, The first vertu is to kepe wel the tonge D), the definite form is used by a sort of *constructio ad sensum*, though the demonstrative word (*the*) is omitted. Cf. *Parforme it out for now is most[ę] nece*, 3259, and perhaps also *And thanne at erst[ę] shal we ben so fayn*, 5983 (*at erste* B, *at erste* D †, *atte erst[e]* G), but here note *atte* in G.

§ 55. In vocative phrases monosyllabic adjectives appear in the definite form when they precede the noun (as in A.S. *léofa Bécowulf*) (Child, § 34; ten Brink, § 235).

o blake nyght, 4271 (-[e] D).

o blynd[e] world o blynd entencion, 211 (-ë . . . -d B, -ë . . . -e C).

o bryght[e] Lathona, 7018 (-ë C).

thow foule daunger, 4163 BE (fole C; A †).²

Graunt mercy good[e] myn ywys quod she, 6322 (goodę B, go[o]d[e] D, Graunt mercy Iwis goode myn quod sche C).

goodę nece, 2288 (-[e] D), 3473 (-[e] D); good[e] nece, 1468 (-e C);

godę necę dere, 3817 (?) (-[ë] B, -ë C, good (?) D).³

gode brother, 3106 (-[e] D).

¹ From the *Roman de la Rose*: Sire, la vertu premeraine . . . C'est de sa langue refrener, 13117-21, II, 48, ed. Michel.

² For *foul*, *ful*, in the attributive and predicate uses (*indef.*), cf. 213, 1981, 5656, 6402, 6746 (foule A).

³ Now doth hym sitte (sitten John's) now (*om.* BCGCp. John's) gode nece dere A.

goodē swetē, louē me, 6935 (-[e] D).

Now good[e] em for goddēs loue I prey, 1394 (-ē BG, my good eem † D John's HL 2392, myn em † C, And good[e] em Cp.);¹ o good em, 1584 (-e BC); good hert myn †, 3851 D.

leue brother, 3172, 5120 (derē † D), 5203, 6670, 6840 (-[e] D).

leue nece, 1336 (louē † B), 5588.

leue Pāndare, 5114 (C †).

o quyke deth, 411 (-[e] BCD).

Cf. the exclamatory line,—

o trust o feyth o depe asēuraunce, 7622 (depē àssuraunce † C, depē àssurauns † D).

In 458 *good* is used in the voc. : Good (-ē B, God CDG, Goode? HL 2392) goodly (godely B, god HL 2392) to whom serue I (I serue CG) and (*om.* BD Cp.) laboure (-r DG).

But in definite or vocative phrases in which the adjective follows the noun no -e is added. Thus,—

myn owenē lady bryght, 4327 f (: knyght) (cf. 7285 f).

o lufsom lady bryght, 6826 f (-e B) (: nyght), etc., etc. (Cf. ten Brink, § 235.)

§ 56. For adjectives of more than one syllable which do not stand at the end of the verse², the following rules as to -e in the definite and vocative constructions may be collected from the usage of the *Troilus* :

Of adjectives of more than one syllable those alone take -e which have a primary or secondary accent on the ultima, and are followed by a word accented on the first syllable.

The special cases of which the *Troilus* furnishes examples may be stated as follows :

I. Dissyllabic paroxytone adjectives take no -e when the following word is accented on the first syllable. The verse will not bear such an arrangement of accents as x' xx'.

Example : *the wykked spyrit*. (See others in § 57.)

II. For the same reason dissyllabic oxytone adjectives take no -e when the word that follows is accented on the second syllable.

Example : *his sodejn comynge*, 380. (See § 58.)

¹ C has but nine syllables ; AB Cp. become 9-syllable lines if *good* (*goodē*) be read.

² The *Troilus* affords no certain means of judging how such words were treated at the end of a verse except in the case of some plurals (see § 71).

III. Trisyllabic proparoxytone adjectives ('x') take -e unless the word that follows is accented on the second syllable.

Example: *the wōfullēstē wýght*. (See others in § 59.)

IV. But trisyllabic proparoxytone adjectives take no -e when the following word is accented on the second syllable. The verse will not bear such an arrangement of accents as 'x' xx'.

Example: *his excellēnt prowēsse* (see § 60).

V. For the same reason trisyllabic paroxytones take no -e when the following word is accented on the first syllable.

Example: *th' errātyk stērres* (see § 61).

Examples under I.—V. follow (§§ 57—61).

Note.—Adjectives of more than three syllables are not common in the *Troilus*. The accentuation of *philosophical* is interesting in "To the, and the, philosophical Strode," 8220 (D †).

§ 57. I. Dissyllabic paroxytone adjectives take no -e in the definite and vocative uses when the following word is accented on the first syllable. (Cf. Child § 35; ten Brink, § 246.)

(a) Superlatives:

the grettest wonder, 2228 ([the] g. B, mostē C, most[e] D).

myn alderleuest lord, 3081 (-e C¹); myn alderleuest lady, 6939 ([myn] aldyr louelyest † C).

The following of course prove nothing:—

the hārdest is, 1814 (-e B; D †).

the fairste and, 4122 (-t BD), cf. 1832.

the grettest of, 4854 (-e C).

the kyndest and, 7892 C (*indef.* ABD).

Cf. in the plural,—

the worthiest and grettest in degre, 244.

the fresshest and, 4564 (-e B; C †; D †).

(b) the best[e] sounded ioly harpe, 2116 (the bestē sowned B, the beste † sounded(e) C, the best † sownyd D).

thilke couerēd qualite, 2873 (couerd B, thilk[e] couerid q. D).

this furrēd cloke, 3580 (-ed(e) C, furrid † D (?)).

the heped(e) wo, 4898 (-ed B, -id D).

Note.—Compare *on of the beste enteched creature*, 7195 (on the best (?) B, on of the beste enteched(e) C, on(e) of the best entached D) (: *dure inf.*). On the idiom, see Einkenel, *Streifzüge durch die mittelengl. Syntax*, p. 87, and Kellner, *Caxton's Blanchardyn and Eglantine*, Introduction, p. xvii (E. E. T. S.). Cf. also *the newe abysshed nyghtyngale*, 4075 (abaysed B, abasschit C, abaschid D †).

¹ Or, *leueste*.

- my nakede herte sentement, 2885 (-d BD, hertis D).
 this fals and wikked dede, 93 (wekedę C, eursyd † D).
 that wykkedę dede, 3133 (-d BD).
 that wikkedę wyuere, 3852 (-d B, the wikkid serpent † wythir D).
 the wykked spyrit, 7575 (wekedę C).
 thy wynged, 4650 (D †).
 this wrecched, 5283 (-ę C), 8180 (cf. 8214).
- (c) that blisful, 6768; the blisful, the blysfyl, 1319 (C †), 1919 † (3e, blisful D), 4510, 6943.
 this dredful, 1511 (C † *om.* this; dredęful B); hire dredful ioeye, 1861 (D †).
 thi greful, 4948 (gerful B, gery C, greffuH D).
 my sorwful, 4952 (reuful † C, sorowfuH D), 4963 (woful C, sorowfuH D); this sorwful, 596 B (sorwęful C, sorowful D), 4895 (sorwęful AC,¹ sorowfuH D), 5030 (sorwęful C, sorowfuH D), 5456 (woful † C, sorwęfuH D), 5822 (sorwęful C, sorwęfuH D), 5914 (woful C, woofuH D), 6359 (woofuH D); his sorwful herte, 6893 B (sorwęful ACD); here s. h., 6543 (sorwę- CD).—the sorwful (before vowels), 10 (sorowful B, sorry(e) D), 1537 (-wę- C, sorowful D, the soruful (*dissyl.*) hernest B).
 my woful, 5505 (sorwęful C), 7733; here woful, 5814 (his † w. B); the woful, 5447 (sorwęful C), 5801 (tho † w. B); this woful, 703 (thi w. BCD), 2446, 5022 (sorwęful C), 5027, 5034, 6560, 7077; his woful herte, 6997; here w. h., 5884 ABD; the lassę wofulle of hem, 5794 (woful BC, woofuH D). [Var. D woofuH.]
 the chyldyssh, 4010² (childisę B, childis C, childisę D).
 thyn ire and foless wilfulness, 793 (foolysh B, foly † C, folisę D).
 here snowyssh throte, 4092 (snouwhite † C, snowę whit D³).
- (d) thi bloddy, 3566 (-i C; D †).
 the fery flood, 4442 (the firy feende † D).
 youre frendly, 1333 (frendę † B, frendęly C, frend † D) (*l.* fremde),⁴ 1417 (frendęly B, frendęli C, lovelęly † D).
 his goodly, 2353 (-ęly B, goodli C); here goodly, 173 (-ęly B, -ęli C), 446 (-ęly B), 2752 BD (-ęli B, goodę † A).
 his happy, 1706 (-i C; D †)⁵ (cf. 2467).
 thyn heuy, 651.
 the holy, 3384, 7860 ([the] C).

¹ Supply [ek] in C.³ Omit (On) in D.² Read *ielous* in AD for *ialousye* (*ielousye*).⁴ Insert [*to me*] in A.⁵ Insert [*his*] in B.

oure lusty folk, 560 (-i B)¹.

his manly, 2955 (-i C).

his rosy, 4597 (-i C; E †), 6641 (-i B; D †)².

the sely, 4033 (-i C); this sely, 6892 (cely B), 7456.

that smoky, 3470 (this smokë reyn C, smokis † D).

the mestë stormy, 1863.

the sturdy ok, 2465 (stordy B, sturdi C, sturdy *pl.* † D).

here tery face, 5483.

the wel willy planète, 4099 (the welë wyly p. D).

this worthi, 7924 (the worthy B); this ilkë worthi, 8129. (Cf. 1243, 1402, 1416 CD, 2413.)

Note.—For *merye* see above, § 46.

(e) yourë bittre,³ 3021 (-tyr C);⁴ the bittyr, 5372 C (hir bitter D);
that bittre³ hope, 7276 (-tir C, the bitter D).

the gilt[l]es⁵ in, 2457 (giltëles B, giltëles C, giltles D).

this litel, 8178.

thin yuel fare, 2086 (euele C, evil D).⁶

the siker, 3763 (seker B, sekir C, sikir D).

the sothfast, 6388 ([the] -e B); that sothfast, 8223 (the s. D); myn
ow n hertës sothfast suffisaunce, 6302 (-e B, sothefast D).

the yonder hous, 2273 (-e C⁷, -ur D), 6938 (-yr C).

(f) Romance and Latin adjectives :

that noble gentil knyght, 1416 (nobele and worthi CD, noble worthi
D).

this gentil man, 3805 (zone g. m. C).

that wysë gentil herte, 3789 (that g. wisë h. C, wys[e] g. D).⁸

this myddel chaumbre, 3508 (-il CD).

the fâtal, 6364 (fathel B).

here crüel, 839 (*om.* † C); this crüwël, 6107 (cruël BD, crewël C);

myn aspre and cruwel peyne, 5509 (cruel B, asper and crewel C,
aspre † crueh D); the crüel herte, 250 (crewel CD).

his réal pàlais, 4376 (rial C; D †).

the cèrtayn, 5674.

this sòdeyn Diomède, 7387 (cf. his sodeyn comynge, 3801).

thilkë sòueyren (*dissyll.*) pùrueyaunce, 5732 (sòuereyn D).

yourë ioly wo, 2190 (-i C, *om.* † D).

his pitous face, 5023 (pi(e)tous † fate D).

¹ Dele (*in*) in D.

² D may be emended by reading *cartë* (as in ABC) for *char*.

³ Dissyllable. ⁴ Supply [*in*] in A. The word is in this line used substantively

⁵ *Sbst., insontem or insontes.* ⁶ In C omit (*al*). ⁷ Line too short in D.

⁸ Supply [*good*] in A.

yourę verray humble trewe, 2983 (humble C); his verray slouthe,
1371 (owene C, owne D).
the parfit blysse, 1976.

§ 58. II. Dissyllabic oxytone adjectives take no -e in the definite use when the following word is accented on the second syllable.

hereę natyř beautę, 102.

his sodeyn comynge, 3801.

his syklyęę manere, 2628 (siklyę B, sekylyęę C, sikly D).

Note.—Cf. *Com(e) hire to preyę yn his propre persone*, 2572 (*propre* B, *his (owene) propre* p. C), and *I com my-self in my propre persone*, 4745 (*in [my]* p.p. D).

§ 59. III. Trisyllabic proparoxytone adjectives (' x `') take -e in the definite and vocative uses, unless the word that follows is accented on the second syllable.

(a) Superlatives :

the fręndlyęstę wyght, 1072 (-[e] BD).

the fręndlyest[ę] man, 1289 (-ę BC).

the fęrfullęstę wyght, 1535 (fęręfullest[ę] B,¹ sorwęfulestę † C,² frelyest † D).

the goddlyęstę mayde, 1965 (good(e)lyest[ę] B, god(e)lięstę C, goodlięst[ę] D).

the wörthięstę knyght, 3623 (-[ę] BD).

the wörthięste, 1846 f (-t D) (: lyst, -e B³ : at reste).

the wðfullęstę wyght, 5178 (-[ę] BD); the wofulleste, 4965 f (-t CD) (: vnneste *inv. sg.* : breste *inf.*).

the gęntilęstę trewely, 7438 (-[ę] D). [*gentileste*, 3100 B, should be *gentilnesse*.]

on the gęntilęst[e], 7419 f (-e BCD) (: on(e) the worthyest[e], 7420 f (-e BCD)).

the thryftięst[e], 1822 f (-e BC) } : the best[e] (-e B). (In these lines the worthięst[e], 1824 f (-e B) } we may safely read -ę, with B.)

I am one (oon B, on C) the (of the C) fairest (-e BC) out of (withoutyn D) drede

And *goodlyęst[ę]* (goodęlyęstę B) who-so (ho so CD) taketh hede, 1831-2. Cf. the drędfullęstę thingęs, 6611 (drędęfullestę B, drędfullest[ę] D).⁴

¹ Or, *fęręfullest*.

² Or, *sorwęfuleste*.

³ *lyste* should doubtless be read (*pres. subj.* 3 *sg.*). ⁴ C reads *thynge* for *thynges*.

Elision is seen in :

the konnyngest of yow, 331.

the gentileste and ek, 1073 (genlyest † B, gentillest D).

the thriftieste and oon, 1074 (-t B, trustiest † D).

Cf. the plural,—

the worthièst and grèttest in degre, 244.

the fresshest and, 4564 (-e B, frossest [and] C; D †).

Note.—*Alderfirst[e]* and *alderbeste* are of course treated like monosyllables (see vv. 2939, 4439 f).

(b) Other adjectives, Romance as well as Saxon :

youre fresshë wommanlychë face, 6607 (womanly[che] D). Cf. the plural, tho wommanyssh[ë] thynges, 5356 (womman[y]sshë B, womanlichë C, the womanyssh[ë] D); and the vocative, o wommanlychë wif, 2948 (-[ë] BD), fresshë wommanlichë wyf, 4138 (-[ë] E, wemen lich[ë] C).

this förknowyng[ë] wyse, 78 (-ë BC, in this † wyse D).

Bygan for ioyë the amorousë daunce, 6093 (thamarousë B, the amerous[ë] CD).

O cruel god o dispitous[ë] Marte, 1520 (dispitusë C, O thou c. g. o dispitousë marte B, *thou* being above the line).

Cf. also, the Troiänë gestes, 145 A (the troyan BC *makes a bad 9-syl. verse, read* -[ë]; troians D).

§ 60. IV. But trisyllabic proparoxytone adjectives take no -e when the following word is accented on the second syllable. The verse will not bear such an arrangement of accents as ' x ' xx '.

the tèmpestous matèr, 1090 (this tempestuos m. D).

his èxcellènt prowèssë, 438, 1745. (But,—your èxcellèntë doughter, *Sq. T.* 145.)

§ 61. V. For the same reason trisyllabic paroxytone adjectives take no -e when the following word is accented on the first syllable. Thus,—

th erràtyk stèrres, 8175 (the erratyk B).

his vnhàppy dèdë, 6003 (-i B); cf. myne vnresty sorwes, 7718 (C †).

§ 62. The following may serve as examples of the vocative of adjectives of more than one syllable.

O moral Gower, this bok(e) I directe

To the, and the, philosophical Strode. 8219-20 (D †).

o thow wykked serpent, 3679 (welkede C, wikkid D).

o crueel day, 4292 (cruwel B, cruel C, cruel † ladi D).

despitous day, 4300 (dis- BC, dispitouse D).

inmortal god, 3027 (immortal D, o inmortal god *with slur* C).

enuyous day, 4296 (C †).

Thou mysbeleued and enuyous folye, 3680 (mysbeleuyd enuyous CD).

O olde vnholsom (on- C) and mysbyleued (-yd C, myslyued B, mysleuyd D) man, 4992.

o paleys desolat, 6903 f (-e D).

o paleys empty and disconsolat, 6905 f (-e D).

o thow woful Troylus, 519 (-H D).

o blysfyl light, 2843 (cf. 1007, 2145, 3547, 4159, 6945, 6962).

o brotel wele, 3662 (bretil C, Bbrotul † 9-*syl.* D).

o verray cause, 2848.

redy to, 2847.

almgyhty Ioue, 5741 (a. god C) (cf. 8105).

Thow myghty god and dredful for to greue, 6953 (dredeful B, miȝty . . . dredfuH D) (cf. 2842, 2908, 5748, 7070).

lufsom lady, 7274 (louesom CD) (cf. 6828).

But,—

o wommanlychē wyf, 2948 (-[e] BD).

fresshē wommanlichē wyf, 4138 (-[e] E, wemen † lich[e] C).

O cruel god o dispitous[e] Marte, 1520 (dispituse C; O thou c. g. o dispitouse marte B, *thou* being above the line).

Note.—The presence or absence of -e, it will be observed, depends, at least in part, on the arrangement of accents in the line.

§ 63. The *Troilus* shows few traces of the French inflection of adjectives.

Seynt Idyot, 903, and *the seynt* [i.e. *Criseyde*] *is oute*, 6916, throw no light on the vexed question of the forms *seynt*, *seynte* (which are discussed by Child, § 37, and ten Brink, § 242). In *o bele nece*, 1373 (beale B, CD *om.* o), and *a blaunche feūere*, 909 f (-[e] D) (: *keuere inf.*), we surely have to do with the intentional use of a French feminine adjective. Against *o lady souereyne*, 4978 (-ayne B, -aigne D) (: *peyne n.*) may be cited *my souereyn lady queene*, C. T. 6630 T. *Of dyuynē purueyaunce*, 5623 (de- BD) is comparable with *the seruyse diuynē*, C. T. 122 (see ten Brink, § 242, Freudenberger, *Ueber das Fehlen des Auftakts*, p. 39). Compare also the list of French adjectives that have an inorganic -e (§ 52).

In 6731 AB we have *infernals illusions* (enfernal C. infernaH D) (cf. Child, § 43; ten Brink § 243; Skeat, *Piers. Pl.*, ed. 1886, II, 130).
In 2859 *amoureux* should be singular.

§ 64. Adjectives in the Comparative Degree usually end in the *Troilus* in *-er* (var. *-ere*). Thus,—

- (a) fairer, 454 (-est † A), 6843; no fayrer creature, 7171; pl., fairere, 5064 (-er BD). (In all these C has *fayrere*.)
frendliour, 885 (frenlyer B, frendelyere C, frendlicr D).
gladder, 884 (D †, -ere C), 3199 (-ere BC).
gretter, 241 (-ere C); grettere help, 2531 (-er D); grettere hardinesse, 566 (-er BD).
hardere, 5567 (-er D).¹
hotter, 1005 (-ere C, hatter D); h. is, 449 (hatter B, hattere C, hatter he is D). (Cf. pl., -ere, 1623 (-er B), 4999 (-er D).)
leuere, 1027 (-er? D), 1437 (B? D?), 3433 (-er D), 3949 (C †, D †), 4332 (-er D), 5227,² 5229 (-yr D); -ere han, 5232 (-ere ȝit † C, -er † than D); leuere a, 3416 (-er a BD).
liker, 3870 (-ere C, like † or D).
proudder, 1223 (-ere C).
rather, my r. speche, 4179 (-ere C); my rathere speche, 8162 (-er BD).
outer, that outter hous, 3506 (other † A, this vttir C, this † litil D).
swyfter cours, 2470 (-ere C).
wiser be, 986 (-er of B, -ere C); wysere, 2087 (-er BD, -ere than C).³
worthier of, 251 (-ere C), *plural*.

So in the Romance adjective—

- straungere, 5050 (-er BD, strengere † C).
(b) lenger (A.S. lengra), 3541 (langer B, morë CD), 4703 (leng[e]r A), 7025 (-ere C, longer B), 7214 D (morë A, longë BC)⁴; lengere, 1377 (-er D, longer B), 2050 (-er BD); lengere, 7022 (-er D, longer B). (So *lengest*, 474 (*adv.* † D).)
(c) bettre (*dissyl.*) (A.S. bet(e)ra, bettra), 1262 (-er D), 1445 (-ere B, -yr C, -er D), 3772 (-ere B, -irë C, -ir † D), 5964 (-er B, -ir D), 7308 (-er BD), 7432 (-er B, -ir † D); my b. arm, 2735 (-ere C, -ir D). (In all these, unless otherwise indicated, C has *-ere*.)
bet, (i.) 257 (betir is † D), 1211 (betyr † C, worth † A), 1213, 1315, 1514, 2539 (B †, D *adv.*), 2736 (betir † to D), 3963 (bet(ir) mynde D, bet *adv.* A), 4065 (bettir † than D), 7634 (best † C, bettir †

¹ Supply [æ] in C, [i] in D.

² Insert [we] in A.

³ CD insert *ben* (*be*), necessitating a harsh slur.

⁴ Read *withouten* for *woth* in C.

wer it D). (ii.) 5253 (betere (it) is C, -ir is D), 5593 (-ere is C, bettir is D), 6404 (beste † D).

lasse, lesse (A.S. léssa), 703 f, 796 f, 1009 f (lesse(d) C), 2803, 2947, 3988¹, 5140 (allas † CD), 5465 f, 6981 f; for the lessë harm, 4000; lasse, 5240. (Cf. plural, 6206 f.) lasse nede, 2617 C (A † B †, the lessë nede D), a doubtful line.² Cf. otherë lasse folk (?), 4716. In lesse he koude, 2163, lesse has an adverbial force.

Rhyme words.—Nouns in *-nesse* (drerynesse, etc.) (703, 796, 5465, 6981), destresse *n.* (1009, 5465), gesse *inf.* (6981).

more (A.S. mára), I. as *adj. indef. sing.* in connection with nouns and pronouns,—nomorë hardë grace, 713 (n. m. hard[e] g. D); more vèrtu, 1264; ³ more feste, 1446 (festis † C); nomore feste, 6887; no more sorwe, 1491 (C †); routhe more, 1649 f (: sore *adv.* : lore *n.*)⁴; withoute more speche, 1582, 2506, 4352, 6751, 7494, 8079; more peyne, 2316; morë help, 2540 D (*perh. adv.*); the⁵ morë thank, 2551⁶; morë pres, 2728; thi wo wax alwey more, 3084 f (: sore *adv.* : lore *n.*); the⁷ more fere, 3414; withouten more lette, 3541 CD, 7214 A; his sorwe is muche more, 5561 (moore D) (: sore *adv.*); strof . . . ay which of hem was more, 7182 f (mor D) (: euerë more *adv.*); more wo, 7415; Thorough more (mor[e] B) wode and col the more fyr, 2417⁸.—*more folk*, 4032, and *morë thyng*, 5205 (C † D †), are doubtless plural. II. more, moore, *substantive use*, 6452, 7772, 7974 (-[e] D); withouten more, 3815 f (: sore *adv.*)⁹, 3998, 4795 f (: sorwes sore), 5038 f (: rore *inf.* : sikes sore), 6160 f (: yore *adv.*); withouten ony moore, 7560 f (moor D) (: sykes sore); cf. now is there litel morë for to done, 3389 (A erroneously inserts *but*); no more¹⁰ (*subst.*), 1044, 3032 (-e as B), 3192 f (: sikes sore), 3515, 6689 f (: yore : lore *noun*), 7161, 8094 f (moor D) (: euerëmore *adv.* : of yore), 8106 (na mor[e] B).

Note.—For *more* (of both kinds, *adj.* and *subst.*,—and one or two in which the adverb-line is perhaps passed), cf. 796, 3518, 5187, 5933, 6047, 6321, 6363, 6492. Cf. what sholde I more seye, 1406, 2219; what sholde I more telle, 3435; what myght I more do or seye, 3392; what hym lyste he seyde vn-to it more, 5785 f (: sore *adv.*); what wolë ye more, 7274; the harm that myghte ek fallen more, 1539 f (: sore *adv.*); not o word spak she more, 3899 f (D †) (: sore *adv.*).

¹ Read [o]this in D.

² And hast the (so DG Cp. John's, om. ABC) lasse (lesse D) nede to (om. BD, th to C) countrefete.

³ Supply [he] in B.

⁴ As neuere of thyng ne hadde I routhë more ([ne] D, no r. m. B, not r. m. C).

⁵ The A.S. þý-construction.

⁶ Dele (me) in AD (or slur).

⁷ The A.S. þý-construction.

⁸ Supply [the] in B. D reads,—The morë wode.

⁹ Insert [him] in C.

¹⁰ Sometimes written *nomore* (B *namore*).

more, I. *adj. use*, more nede is, 3699 (-e now † B, it nedith morë (i.e. *potius*) soðeynly C, D †); Ech(e) set by other more for other semeth, 643; more reward, 2218; out of more respit, 6500 (with-outë † more respite D); cf. the more harm is, 7299 (C † D †). II. no more (*subst.*) in *there is no more to done* and similar phrases, 574, 2511 (-e of CD), 3532, 7672; I kan no more but, 3232, 4035, 4115, 4156¹, 7731 (moor D); yet was there more to done, 7455; yet sey I more therto, 5734 (-e herto BD); nor axen more that, 1232; yf I more dorstë prey (?), 2521 (morë C, more y D)²; was worth more than, 4382 (worthy CD)³; withoutë more to, 2751 (-e is † B, I. to).

mo, moo (*plural*) (A.S. má, máé, *adv.*), 613 f⁴, 614, 2490 f, 2566 f, 2651 f (*sg.* † C), 3076 f, 3212 (more C), 4356 f, 4881 f, 5162, 5490 (moore D), 5787 f, 6303 f, 6592 f, 7127 f, 7626 f, 8044 f⁵. (Cf. 6521 f.).

Rhyme words.—wo, two, tho, so, fo, go, also.

Note.—Several of the passages cited contain the formula,—*withoutën wordës mo*. This occurs also in the form, *withoutën wordës morë* (cf. 5326 f, 6419 f, 8035 f.).

worse (A.S. wiersa, wyrsa), 4542 f (wors D); I go to worse, 5502 f (wors C); i-turned vnto worse, 3916 f (-s CD); in worse plyt, 1797 (-[e] D); with worse hap, 4088 (vois † B); ye may do me no werse, 5856 f. But,—wers though, 1950; wors that, 5144 (-e D); wors than, 7056 (-e D); wers of, 1947; *pl.* wers whi †, 1820 C (wors [why] † D).

Rhyme words.—acurse (acorse) *inf.* (3916), 1 *sg. ind.* (5502, wors : fors C), curse (corse) 3 *pl. ind.* (4542), aduerse (5856), diuerse (5856). [Var. EC werse; D wurse, wurs.] (Cf. 2880 f.).

§ 65. The Comparative and Superlative of adjectives are sometimes formed by means of *more* and *most* (Child, § 38, *d*). Thus—

more bounteuos, 883 f.

more gracious, 885 f.

the more worthi part, 2413.

the more swet[e], 4061 f (more swete BC).

more fayn, 6851 f.

more parfit loue, 7282.

more kynde, 7283 f.

¹ Supply [*these*] in A.

² But supply [*how*] in C and read *more*.

³ worth(y) more than CD (if *worthy* be kept, we must slur *more than* (mor'n).

⁴ The cases cited are adjectival unless the line-number is in old-style figures : in that case, the use is substantive.

⁵ In A read *othcs* for *other*.

- most meke, 8210 f.
 most is to hym dere, 4947 f.
 the mestë stormy life, 1863 (cf. § 87).
 the most[ë] fre, 1073 (cf. § 87).

§ 66. The Superlative of adjectives ends in *-est*. Thus,—
 best (cf. 828, 2570, 2649, 2738, 4746, 4863, 5341, 6381, 6904, 7717 f, 8210); fairest, 5817 (fayrë † C); leuest (cf. 1274); lothest am (cf. 1322); shortest (7137 BD); trewest, 4665 (trusty † D), etc. B, C, and D sometimes show a scribe's -e, which, however, is of course never sounded (for 6664 BD is to be emended).

For superlatives in the definite use or in the plural see §§ 53, 57, 59, 70.

Note.—In one case we may perhaps suspect that a single *-est* serves for two adjectives,—

And thus she lith with hewes pale and grene
 That whilom *fressh* and *fairest* was to sene,

5816-17 (frosche and fayrë † were C).

§ 67. The Plural of monosyllabic adjectives ends in *-e*.

In the following list no definite or vocative forms have been included without notice. An asterisk indicates that the adjective follows its noun (as, *eyen bryghte*); old-style figures indicate that the adjective stands in the predicate (as, *eyen are bryghte*)¹. No cases are included (without notice) in which the adjective refers to a plural *ye* singular in sense. For *bare*, *fresshe*, etc., see note at the end of the section.

(a) blake (A.S. blæc. Sg. blak, cf. 170, 175), my clothes euerychone
 Shul blake ben, 5441.

bryghte (A.S. beorht, E.W.S. -breht, L.W.S. -bryht. Sg. bright, bryght, 166 f, 2054 f, 5402, 6525 f, 8075, etc.), a fewë bryghtë terys, 3893 (-[e] BD); bryght[e],* 4972 f (-e D) (: sight (sighte) *n.* : lyght (lighte) *inf.*) (*in* C : dispyt †). Before vowels,—bright, * 7006 (-e C, of thi bright[e] bemes(?) D), * 7909 (-e C, out † A). [Var. C briȝte.] And sygnyfer his candeles shewed bryghte, 7383 (bryȝt C, candell . . . light D) (: alighte *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* : yf she myghte).

bygge (*etym. dub.*), bygge bowes, 4702 (big[gë] D).

colde (A.S. cald, ceald. Sg. cold, 5839 (-[e] BD); cold(e), 1783 f

¹ But these marks are not used with the singular forms given.

(cold CD), cf. 7465 f), * 264 f (cold D), * 4044 f, * 4102 f, * 6354 f, * 7705 f¹, * 8110 f (all these in the phrase *carës colde*); -e hem, * 4611 (tolde † E).

Rhyme words.—I tolde *ind.* (264), holde *inf.* (264, 8110), *p.p.* (4102), *subj.* 2 *sg.* (7705), byholde *inf.* (6354, 7705, 8110), folde *inf.* (4044, 6354), bokes olde (4044). [Var. D coolde.]

dede (A.S. *déad.* Sg., ded, cf. 723, 1494 f, 1527 f, 1739 f, 1930 f, 2135, 2441, 2784 f, 2921 f, 3923 f, 4414 f, 5162 f, 5819 f, 7609, 7866, etc.; dede, cf. 5041, 6922), * 1624 f (*sg. in A, but read* asshe[n]; as lede † D), 3134 f, 3194 BD (-[e] AC), 3734 (a dedë † man A), * 4781 f, 5754 f, 5894 f (D †), 6178 f; floures . . . that winter dedë made, 1137; shulle . . . liggen dede, 5288 f (deed D).

Rhyme words.—rede *adj. pl.* (1624), rede *legunt* (3134), dede *n.* (3134, 5894), node *n.* (5288), drede *n.* (5754, 6178), sprede *inf.* (4781), lede *inf.* (6178).

depe (A.S. *déop.* Sg. dep, 1236 C (-e ABD)), my ladyes depe sikes, 7038 (C †).

donne (A.S. *dun(n)*), 1993 f (dunne C) (: sonne *solem* : y-ronne *p.p.*).

dymme (A.S. *dim(m)*), -e, 1993 AB.

fayre (A.S. *fæger.* For singular, see § 49), floures fayre, 8204 f (fair D) (: a fayre *n.*).

felle (A.S. *fel.* Sg. fel a dede, cf. 6413), fel[l]e, * 4706 f (felle BD) (: quelle *ind.* 3 *pl.* : telle *inf.*).

glade (A.S. *glæd.* Sg. glad, cf. 592, 2623, 3489, 3493, 4633, 5067, 5349, 5387, 5471, etc.), * 1135 f, * 1233 f, * 1583 f, 2436 f (glad C; D †), * 2857 f, * 3453 f.

Rhyme words.—made *ind.* 3 *sg.* (1135, 1583, 3453), *ind.* 2 *pl.* (2857), wade *inf.* (1233), Wade *nom. pr.* (3453), hadde *ind.* 3 *sg.* (2436).

goode (A.S. *gód.* For singular, see § 49), good[e], * 8222 f (garde † A) (: Strode *nom. pr.* : on rode); -e, * 1808 (*om. † D*). But,—of good condicions, 1251 AD (-e BC)²; in good † chaunces, 2432 D.

grete (A.S. *gréat.* For singular, see § 49), * 4722 f, * 5630 (B †, grete clerkes D), * 6499 f, * 7601 f, * 8122 f; grete attendaunces, 339 (gret C); gret † effectis, 7992 C (*sg.* ABD).

Rhyme words.—strete (4722), hete *n.* (7601, 8122), trete *inf.* (4722, 6499), bete *inf.* (8122).

leue (A.S. *léof.* Sg. lef, leef, lief (var. B leu(e); D leef, lef(e)), cf. 3302, 3706 f, 3711, 3712, 4461 f), 4744 f (: acheue *inf.* : leue *credo*).

lyghte (A.S. *leoht, liht*, shortened from *léoht.* Sg. lyght, cf. 5072 f, 5146 f, 6232, 6437 f, 6715 f, 7047 f, 7481 f), * 2323 f (-t CD)

¹ Supply [my] in A.

² Omit (to) in D.

(: to the flyghte, -t BD), * 2471 f (-t CD) (: wighte *weight*). [Var. C lyȝt; D light.]

madde (A.S. ge-mædd, *p.p.* Sg. mad, cf. 5055 f), * 6569 f (made B, he † made C) (: hadde *habuit*).—be ye mad, 1198 f (made B, madde C) (: a-drad *p.p. sg.*, adradd(e) C).

prowde (A.S. prút. For singular, see § 49), alle prowde (= omnes *superbae*), 1487 f (al[le] prowde D) (: lowde *adv.*).

quyke (A.S. cwic, W.S. cwucu, cucu, see Sievers, § 303. Sg. quyk, 2921), -e, 1137.

rede (A.S. réad. Sg. red, cf. 867, 1730, 1737 f, 2924 f, 3798 f, 4412 f, 7288 f), * 158 f, * 1136 f, * 1623 f, * 2936 f (*sg.* D †).

Rhyme words.—mede *pratum* (158, 1136), drede *n.* (2936), dede *adj. pl.* (1623), rede *ind. 1 sg.* (158), sprede *inf.* (1136).

salte (A.S. sealt. Sg. only in *saltë se*, 2850 (-[e] BD), see § 49), 543, 5592 (-[e] BD), 7278 (-[e] B); -e, * 7737; -e here, * 5834 (-t B). Cf. hiȝe salte terys, 2171 C (-[e] BD, salty A).

sharpe (A.S. scearp. Sg. sharp, cf. (i.) 1876, 3268, 4373; -(e), 5560 (-p BC); (ii.) cf. 786, 4467; -(e), 7632 (*hardly adv.*)), * 470 † A (*definite* BCD), 3906 (-[e] D †); it maketh sharpe kervyng toles, 632 (-[e] D)¹; -e, 7564.

shorte (A.S. scort, sceort. Sg. short, 7989 (-e) D); in short, 2490 (-e B), 3076 (-e B)², 2041 (-[e] AD), 5298 (-[e] A), 6320 C (-[e] ABD), 7211.

sleye (Icel. slœgr), * 7261 f (slye C, slie D) (: lye *mentior* : yë); sley arn clerkes, 5634 (sleighe B, slye were D).

Note.—The rhymes show that *slye* (not *sleye*) is the correct form.

smale (A.S. smæl), * 2276 f (: tale), 4304, * 5399 f (: bale : pale); -e he[r], * 4089.

smerte; sorwes, peynes smerte, 794 f (-t D), 3792 f (-t D), 4910 f, 5088 f (-t D), 5803 f (peynë † smerte D), 6163 f, 6561 f (-t C), 7087 f, 7412 f (-t C), 7689 f, 7783 f (-t C).

Rhyme words.—herte (*everywhere*), sterte *inf.* (3792), he sterte *pret. ind.* (6561).

Note.—Skeat seems to regard *smerte* in *sorwes* (*peynes*) *smerte* as a noun. At any rate he puts *Compl. Pite* 13, *B. Duch.* 593, *Compl. Mars* 10, *H.F.* 316, along with *the wounde smerte* (*H.F.* 374), under *smerte sbst.* in his *Glossarial Index* (*Minor Poems*, 1888, p. 440). But *his sorwes wer so smerte*, *B. Duch.* 507, and *Were my sorwes never so smerte*, *Id.* 1107 (cited *ibid.*), surely make against this. Besides, the substantive seems to be

¹ In D supply [yit].

² With *short[e] tarynge*, 7137 A Cp. (*short[e]* C, *shortest* BDG John's), is the only case which seems to countenance *shorte* in the sing., but in this line the superlative is clearly right. For cases of the singular *short* before vowels, cf. 2578, 2743, 3298, 4698, 5552 (?), 5598.

smert in the *Troilus* (cf. 5035, 5128, 5507; *smert*, 6780, may be a verb; *C. T.* 3811 *T.* is indecisive). Cf. also the entirely similar phrase *soorices sore* (2427 f, 4794 f, 7718 f).

sore (A.S. *sár*. Sg. *sor*, 7002 (*soor(e)* B; D †); *sor(e)*, 4263 (*soor B*)), * 2427 f, * 3191 f¹, * 4794 f, * 5037 f, * 7038 f, * 7559 f, * 7718 f (C †); -e, * 4613, * 7397 BD (-ë doun C, here *sorë sykes* † A).

Rhyme words.—more (*all cases*), *lore n.* (2427), *rore inf.* (5037). [Var. BD *soore.*]

sothe (A.S. *sóð*. Sg. *soth*, cf. 1254, 4199), 5333 (-[e] A).

stronge (A.S. *strang*, *strong*. Sg. *strong and*, cf. 7165), * 57 f, * 7051 f, * 7227 f, * 7564 f; -e, * 4692 (*strong D*).²

Rhyme words.—longe *adv.* (*all cases*), *inf.* (7051), *honge inf.* (7564).

swyfte (A.S. *swift*), 4909 AD (-[e] B).

syke (A.S. *séoc*, Dur. Rushw. *séc*), 2903 f (*sbst.*), 3979³, * 4014 f, 4204 f⁴, * 7717 f (C †).

Rhyme words.—*syke inf.* (2903, 4014, 4204), *pyke inf.* (2903), *lyke inf.* (4204, 7717). [Var. BCD *sike*; D *sijke.*]

tame (A.S. *tam*), 3371 f (*sbst.*) (: *lettë-game* : *frame inf.*).

wete (A.S. *wæt*, *wét*), * 7472 f (C †) (: *hete noun*), * 8053 f (: *lete inf.*).

white, whyte (A.S. *hwít*. Sg. *whit*, cf. 642, 2011, and see § 49), 1993 (-[e] D), * 3743 f (: *for lyte* : *a myte*), * 4090 f (: *lyte adj. pl.* : *delyte inf.*), * 4409 f (: *lite adv.*); -e, * 158 (*whit D*), * 1136 (*om. † D*).

wronge (Icel. *vrang-r*. Sg. *wrong*, 4851, 7524 (-[e] B), * 3646 f (*wrong CD*) (: *longe adv.*), * 4233 f (: *longe pl.* : *stronge adv.*).

wrothe (A.S. *wráð*), 140 f (: *bothe*), 4784 f (: *bothe*), 6504 f (-th BD) (: *bothe*). (Cf. below, § 69.)

wyse (A.S. *wis*. Sg. *wys*, cf. 630, 1798, 5076 f, 5749, 7183, etc.), * 954 f, 984 f, * 3694 f, 3784 f, * 4392 f, * 4533 f, 7942 f. Cf. *yf ye ben wyse*, 4031 f (: *aryse pres. subj.* 3 *pl.*).

Rhyme words.—*wyse n.* (954, 984, 3694, 3784, 4392), *seruice*, *seruyse* (954, 984), *suffice*, *suffise inf.* (3694, 4533, 7942), *aryse inf.* (3784), *deuysse inf.* (4533), *degyse inf.* (7942).

yone (A.S. *geon*), *withinnë 3onë † wallis*, 7096 C (*the yonder AB*, *yonder D*).

yonge (A.S. *geong*, etc. Sg. *yong*, (i.) 1721 (*yung D*), 7193; (ii.) 1837 (*yung D*)), 1204 (-[e] D); *to vs yonge*, 3135 f (-g B)

¹ Supply [*his*] in B.

² This line affords an excellent instance of the disregard shown for -e by D: "The grekys strong[e] about[e] troy[e] toun."

³ Read *folk[es]* in B, *folkys* (for *follys*) in C.

⁴ Supply [*that*] in C.

(: tonge); o yongë fresshë folkes, 8198 (-[e] D); yong and olde (*subst.*), 130 (-e BC). [Var. B 3ong, 3onge; C 3onge.]¹

Further examples of the plural may be seen in :

In May that moder is of monethes *glade*² ·
 That *fresshë*³ floures *blew* and *white* and *rede*
 Ben *quylke* a-gayn that wynter *dedë* made
 And ful of bawme is fletynge euery mede
 Whan Phebus doth his *bryghtë*⁴ bemes sprede
 Right yn the white bole⁵ so it bytydde
 As I shal synge on Mayes day the thridde, 1135-41.

(b) fele (A.S. feola, fela, Ps. N. feolu, -o; really old neut. adj.), on of so fele, 4772; thow sleest so fele, 5174. [*fele*, 4706 f A, is *f. l.* for *felle*.]

fewe (A.S. féawe, -a, Ps. féa). I. Without *a*,—fewe lordes, 2672; fewe folk, 2732 (-[e] D); wommen fewe, 7051 (few B). II. With *a*,—a sely fewe poyntes, 338 (C † ?); a fewe wordes, 3743 (-[e] D); a fewe bryghte teres, 3893 (-[e] B); of wordes but a fewe, 6996 f (: shewe *inf.*); a fewe of olde storyes, 7822 (C †, sue † D); in a wordes fewe, 5942 f AB (in [a] w. f. CD) (: shewe *inf.*).

(c) So in the plural of monosyllabic superlatives :

meste and leste, 167 f (B †; A ?; the moost and ek(e) the leest D) (: feste); most and leste, 4721 f (: requeste *n.*). (For “definite” plural phrases, *the meste and [ek] the leste, with the firste and with the beste*, cf. 6803, 7202.)

(d) Cardinal numerals (Child § 39. *c*; ten Brink, § 247) :

tweyne, tweye (A.S. *masc.* twégen, Kent. Rushw. twágen, North. tuóge, tuége, etc.).

(1) tweyne, * 1705 f (twene C), * 2800 f, * 2820 f (-n D), * 3957 f, * 4332 f, * 5410 f (-n CD), * 5804 f, * 7634 f, * 7711 f; a nyght or tweyne, 3392 f (-n D, twey(e)ne C); we tweyne, 4049 f, 5138 f, 5450 f (-n D), 5920 f (twyne B), 7042 f; vs tweyne, 5965 f (twyne B); tweyn (: peyne), * 5412 f C. [4976 † f A, 5064 † f C.]

Rhyme words.—cheyne *n.* (1705), Eleyne (2800), peyne *n.* (2820, 4332, 5410, 5450, 5804, 5920, 5965, 7042, 7634), to seyne *inf.* (1705, 3392, 3957, 7711), reyne *inf.* (3392), streyne *inf.* (4049), compleyne *inf.* (5138, 5450, 7634, 7711), *subj.* 3 *sg.* (5920).

(2) tweye, * 1255 f, 1267 f (swychë tweye), 1896 f (*absolute use*),

¹ *3ynge* occurs in 184 C, —*hyse 3yngë knyztis (yonge AD, 3onge B)*.

² monthes gladde B.

³ fressch[e] B.

⁴ bryght[e] B.

⁵ bool B.

* 2917 f, 3665 f (*absolute*) (tweyen B), * 4791 f (twye A, tway D), * 4976 f B (tweyne † A, twye C †), 6075 f (a day or tweye, cf. 6045 f), * 8091 f (twye B, tuey D) (cf. * 4820 f, * 4909 f); vs, ye, yow, bothë tweye, 2242 f (to † C), 2277 f (tweyne † C), 2739 f, 3982 f, 7670 f (tweyne B) (cf. 5771 f, 6165 f, 6991 f); a day or tweye, 6276 B (two A, too C, tweyne D). For the definite use (as, *the tweye, this ilke tweye*), cf. 494 f, 4035 f, 4156 f, 5032 f. —twey, with twey † vesägis, 7262 C (two AB, tuo D), cf. 3349 † D (*definite*).

Note.—D almost always has *twey* (but cf. 2383 f, 3074 f); C has *twey* in 6075 f, 7670 f.

Rhyme words.¹—deye *inf.* (1255, 4909, 6075, 6991), seye *inf.* (1255, 2739, 2917, 3665, 4820, 4909, 5771, 6045, 6165, 7670, 8091), *ind.* 1 *sg.* (1267, 2277), pleye *inf.* (1896), *subj.* 2 *sg.* (3665), preye *inf.* (2739), *ind.* 1 *sg.* (2242, 6165), *ind.* 3 *pl.* (6045), leye *inf.* (2917, 7670), purueye 2 *pl. inv. or subj.* (2242), a-weye (2277, 4976), chimëney(-eye) (3982), this olde greye (4791), what weye (4820), by the weye (6991).

Note.—For *tuo* (var. C *to, too*; D *tuoo, to*), cf. 614 f, 645, 1671, 2777 f, 7736, 8226, etc.; *a-tuo*, 4317 f (on to C, a *twoo* D), 6543 f (oto C, in *tuoo* D), etc.

fyue (A.S. *ff*), * 2117 f (: vpon lyue), * 6760 f (: dryue *inf.* : blyue *adv.*), * 7252 f (: on lyue); suchë fyue, 1211 f (: thryue *inf.*); swych[e] fyue, 1213 (D †). [Var. BC *fiue*.]

sixe (A.S. *sex*, W.S. *siex, syx*), set the world on sixe and seuene (six B, *sexe* C, *vj* D), 5284.

seuene (A.S. *seofon, siofon, -an, -en*, Ps. *seofen*), the blysfyl goddes seuene², 4045 f (: to heuene); seuene (*dissyl.*) kynges, 7858 (*vij* BD); on sixe (*q.v.*) and seuene (*seue* C, *seuen* D), 5284 f (: to heuene).

nyne (A.S. *nigon, R.*² *níone*), ix. (= *nyn*) nyght, 5250 (*nynë dayis* † ? C); ye sustren nyne, 4651 (ix that D); and othere of here wommen nyne or ten, 3440 (*nynë* or (?) C, ³ a *.ix.* or *.x.* D⁴).

twelue (A.S. *twelf*), * 1193 f, * 2484 f (*twelwe* C), * 6460 f, * 7287 f (*.vij.* † C); swych[e] twelue, 5064 f (*tweine* † C). (All rhyme with *my-, thi-, hym-selue.*)

Note.—But *ten* (cf. 60, 5982, 6602, 7569, 7713). Other numerals,—*thre* (cf. 2021, 3051 f, 3155 f, etc.), *twenty* (cf. 6069), *fyfty* (cf. 7856), *sixty* (cf. 441), *thousand* (cf. 58, 457, 531, 546, 819, 1227, etc.), *thousandys* (8165, -ës BD).

Note.—In Anglo-Saxon, when the cardinal numerals from 4 to 19 are used absolutely, they form cases according to the *i*-declension (see Sievers, § 325 and note).

¹ No cases of the *definite use* included.

² Supply [*tho*] in A.

³ But supply [*othere*] and read *nyne*.

⁴ Supply [*of*] in D.

(e) Monosyllabic participles (see also § 68):

with bygge bowes bente, 4702 f AB (bent D) (: mente 3 *pl.* : wente 3 *pl.*).

with herte and eerys spradde, 6084 f (: he hadde).

But cf. wommen lost thorough, 3140 (C †).

(f) Romance adjectives :

preste wynges, 5323 (-[e] BD). (For sing. cf. 3759, 4824.)

tuskus stoute, 7817 f (: aboute : doute *n.*).

knyghtes stoute, 7856 f (: route *n.* : aboute).

floures blew and, 1136 AB.

Note 1. For examples of the plural of adjectives that end regularly in *-e* in the singular, cf. *grene* (1906 f, 5816 f, 6095 f, 6374 f), *kene* (1143 f), *kynde* (7333 f), *newe* (2554 f, 3893 f, 6192 f), *trewe* (2695 f, 2959 f, 4613 f), *vntrewe* (1871 f). For examples of the plural of adjectives that come under § 49, cf. *bare* (7910), *fayre*, *fresshe* (1136, 3453, 8198), *goode*, *grete*, *hye*, *heyghe* (3460 f, 4910, 7093), *olde* (see note s. v.), *proude* (1487 f). For the plural of Romance adjectives that end in the singular in *-e*, cf. *pale* (3466 f), *straunge* (1109 f), *nyce* (1109), *ryche and pore* (6406 f), *square* (7164 f) (sg. not in the *Troilus*).

Note 2. *Bonde* (A.S. *bónða*, *weak noun*) is used as an adjective (in the plural apparently) in "For as here lyst she pleyeth with free and bonde," 840 (bond D) (: withstonde *inf.*). For the singular, also adjectival, see "She wolde nought ne make hire-self bonde In loue," 2308 f (: vnderstonde *inf.* : in honde).

§ 68. Monosyllabic perfect participles standing in the predicate regularly take no *-e* in the plural. Thus—

(i.) Before consonants and at end of verse :

they be gon, 2243 f (-e BD) (: anoon, or noon A).

they werę born, 4064 f (-e BCD) } (: by-forn).

bothę two be lorn, 4065 f (-e BD) }

they werę born, 5913 f (borne BD, bore C).

we be lost, 3937 (cf. 3140).

ye be brought, 3980 f (-e B, brouȝt CD) (: nought : thought *n.*).

ben . . . laft, 4180 f (last † C, lefte E) (: by-raft *p.p. pred. pl.*);

cf. 4887 f, 4889 f.—ben wylt, 5739 (-ę B), cf. 5681.

they ben met, 4523 f (mette C^o) (: was it bet). So,—i-met, 1671 f (ymette D) (: net *n.* : set *p.p.*).

this wordes seyd, 5573 (-ę BD ; seyde † *dixit* C).

Til we be slayn (sleyne B) and doun ourę walles torn, 6144 (torne D) (: lorn *p.p.* : sworn *p.p.*).

thei be wont to, 7023 (wontę BD, wonę C); cf. werę wonęd to, 4553 (wontę B, wonę C, wont D).

(ii.) Before vowels :

thei ben met, 1237 (mette C ; D †); ben set, 4986.

ben fled, 5530 (fledde D).

Note.—So also when the subject is *ye* in a singular sense : cf. (i.) 4049, 5597 f (: assent *n.* : auysement) ; (ii.) 2191, 2267.

But in two or three cases the -e appears. Thus—

dred(r)es weren . . . fled[de], 463 f (fledde B) (: bredde *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*, bred C †, bred D).

dores were faste y-shette, 3075 f (y-chette B, faste schette C, fast yshet D) (: lette *n.* : sette *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*).

herę speręs were whette, 8123 f AB (whett D) (: mette 3 *pl.*).

And don thyn hod, thi nedes sped[dę] be, 2039 (speddę BC ; D †).
Cf. And fond two othere ladyes sette and she, 1166 A (sete B ; sate *pret.* 3 *pl.* D).

§ 69. Monosyllabic adjectives standing in the predicate do not always take -e in the plural (Child, § 41 ; ten Brink, § 234). Thus—

(a) hem that ben not worth two fecches. 3778 BCD (*sing.* A).

Cf. 3696, 4009, where *worth pl.* is followed by a vowel.¹

wysę men ben war by folys, 635 (-ę D, ware † of B).²

dedę were his iapes, 1076.

shal we ben so fayn, 5983 f (feyne B ; D †) (: ayen : seyn *inf.*).

tonges ben so prest, 1870 f (-e B) (: lest *n.*).

O verrey loues nice and blyndę be ye, 202 (fooles nice and blyndę B Cp. John's ; C † ; ἀλλωϛ D †).

(b) So particularly when the adjective in the predicate refers to a subject *ye* (expressed or implied) used in a singular sense. Thus—
be ye mad, 1198 f (made B, madde C) (: adrad *p.p. sg.*, adradd(e) C).

Note.—In,—Be 3e (*so* C G Cp. ; ye DE John's, *om.* AB) nought (not CD) war (ware BD) how fals (false Cp., that fals D) Polyphete, 2552, *ye* is necessary to the sense. We should read *war* and *falsę*. Cf. § 49. Cases before vowels (as, *glad*, 3019) of course prove nothing.

ye be wroth therefore, 1385 (-ę D). Cf. p. 141.

Now beth nought wroth my blod my nece dere, 1679 (-ę D) ; beth not wroth with me, 6508 ; so, before vowels, in 7972, 7977. [For *sing. wroth*, cf. (i.) 349, 842, 1012, 2158, 3127, 3572 f, 3886 f, 3924, 3952 f, 7827, 8138 ; (ii.) 581 (be † 3e wroth C), etc.]

(ye that) ben so loth to, 2996 (-ę D). [For. *sing. loth*, cf. (i.) 3211, 3574 f, 4181 ; (ii.) 1893, 6384.]

beth al hol || no, 3010 (-ę D, hoolę B).

ye ben to wys || to, 3709 (-[e] ? C, wis B).

¹ For *sing. worth*, cf. 3675, 4382, 5428, 7245.

² For *sing. war*, see p. 146.

beth glad now, 5978 (-e D ; C †).

beth wel war, 4022 (-e D) ; beth war of men, 8148 (-e D). [For sing. war, cf. (i.) 203, 1360, 2266, 4544 f ; (ii.) 2103, 3426, 4464, 7922 ; ware, 6896 (war CD).]

and ye so feyr, 6533 (-e BD).

So occasionally when the plural adjective is used attributively.

Ten Brink's remark, "Im Plural des attributiv stehenden Adjectivs (gleichviel ob starker oder schwacher Flexion) tritt die Apocope [des flexivischen -e] kaum ein ; niemals, wenn der Adjectiv voransteht" (§ 236) is not borne out by the *Troilus* MSS. The following lines are significant :—

And ben of good condicions ther to, 1251 A (goode B, goode condiscionys C, And to be of good c. therto D). We have no warrant to read *condicion*.

Ne for no wyse men but for foles nice, 3166 (no wis man C, wyse man D). Here one is tempted to read *man*. (No note in the Cp. collation.) But *wyse men* is a quasi-compound, cf. 5749.

Hath lordes olde thorough which withinne a throwe, 7824 (old C, high D).

Note.—Cases before a vowel (as *ful*, 4223, 8176) of course prove nothing.

§ 70. For adjectives of more than one syllable which do not stand at the end of the verse, the rule as to -e in the plural is the same as that already stated as to -e in the definite and vocative constructions of such adjectives (§ 56).

Of such adjectives those alone take -e which have a primary or secondary accent on the ultima, and are followed by a word accented on the first syllable (cf. Child, § 40 ; ten Brink, § 233).¹

Note.—For convenience, words in -re (-er), -le, have been included in the following list. A few sporadic cases of -e (as in *levede*) or -e (elided) will be observed.

(a) the worthiest and grettest in degre, 244.

the fresshest and, 4564 (-e B ; C † D †).

strengest folk, 243 (cf. alderwisest han, 247).

¹ In the list that follows, no definite or vocative examples, or examples before a vowel, or *h*, are given without notice.

- (b) confortēd most, 249 (-id C, -yd D) (*predicate*).
 thonked be ye, 1935 (*sq.* CD).
 tresses vubroyden hangen, 5479.
 twynned be we, 5138, 7042.
 herē dorres sperid alle, 6894 (-ed BD, -ede C).
 feyned loues, 8211.
 payens corsed olde vyces, 8212.
 (Cf. also 3931, 5670, 6186, 7482, 7702, 7907, 8143, etc.)
- (c) ȝoure lewēde ðbseruauñces, 198 C (ȝour lewdē obseruauñce † D).
 hire wykkedē werkes, 997 (-ed B, -id D).
 thesē wikkedē tonges, 1870 (-yd D).
 we wrecched wommen, 1867 (wreche[d] C; D †).
 thesē wrecched worldes appetites, 8214 A (this B, the D).
 (Cf. also 1905, 1906, 1907.)
- (d) the blyful goddes, 4045 AB,¹ 7613.
 maisterful or (*pred.*), 1841 (mastirful C, maystrēful D).
 sorwful² sykes, 4203 (sorūful C, sorowful D), 7717 (sorwēful CD).
 sorwēful² teres, 7737 (sorowfuH D).
 the sorwful, 6346 (sorwēfuH D).
 wilful tacches, 3777.
 o wofulle eyen, 4971 (woful B, cruēl † C, wofuH D).
 hisē woful wordes, 1658. (Cf. 5002, 5797.)
 herē woful wery gostes tweyne, 5804 f (wery woofuH D).
- (e) goosish peples speche, 3426 B (gos(y)lychē † A, C † *om.*, gosisshe D)³.
 herē sonnyssh herys, 5478 (-e here B⁴).
- (f) her sydes . . . fleysshly, 4090 (flessly C, fleschly C, fleishely D).
 shaply ben, 6114 (shapely B, shappely D).
 gyddē † apis, 906 C (goddēs apes ABD).
 many wordes, 1233 (-yē BC, meny D).
 In sondry londes sondry ben vsages, 1113 (sundry D).
 sondry formes, 8076.
 to yow angry Parcas, 6366 (angurry D).
 vnthryfty weyes, 6192.
- (For other cases, definite and indefinite, of the plural of adjs. in -y, cf. 233, 251, 742, 1112, 1203, 1233, 2171 A, 2324, 2436, 4046, 4208, 4223, 4287, 6532, 7164, 7332, 8122, 8133, etc.)

¹ Supply [*tho*] in A.² Dissyllable throughout.³ A and D have *peple speche*, haplography for *peples speche*. The *textus receptus* has *goofish*, see Mätzner s.v. *gofisch*. G has *goossish*. E has *gosiss*. Cp. has *goosish* *poeples*.⁴ Read *here[s]* in B (: teres : ceres).

Note.—For *merye*, see above, § 46, p. 113.

(g) bitter¹ bondes, 3958 (bittere¹ C, bittir D); bittere teris, 5800 (bittere C, bittir D); bittere weren, 5798 (-tere C, bitter D); thi bittere peynes smerte, 5088 (-tere ? C, bitter D †).

with-inne tho yonder wallys, 7096 (with-innē 3onē wallis C, with-innē yonder D).

(h) certeyn tymes, 4273; certeyn folk, 6396.

ye do hem cōrteys be, 2868 (carteis B, curteys D).

esy sykes, 4205 (esię C).

tho that ben expèrt in, 2452.

o fatal sustren, 3575 (-e) D †).

gentil hertis, 2847.

ye humble¹ nettes, 4197 (vmbele¹ C).

parfit and, 7333 (-e B; C †; perfite D²).

the subtilę stremes, 305 (subtyl C, sotil D).

folk vngiltyf suffren, 3860 (ongilti C, vngilty D †).

his throwes frēnētÿk and madde, 6569 (feruentike † B, fren[e]tik D, frentyk † he made C).

The plural -e is shown in

the *Troianē* gestes, 145 A (the troyan[e] BC, the troianys. † D),

and perhaps in

Fy on yourę myght and werkes so *diuerse*, 5857 f (: thow fortune aduerse : no werse) (cf. § 52, above; Child, § 42; ten Brink, § 241).

Cf. otherę besye (*dissyll.*) nedes, 355 (-y CD); cf. however, 7352 (A †).

Note.—In *amoureux hem made*, 2859, we have a French plural (*amorous* D). See also § 63.

§ 71. The treatment of the plural of adjectives of more than one syllable at the end of the verse, is illustrated by the following examples. (Cf. also § 70, at the end.)

hem that falsely ben apeÿred, 38 f, *rhyming with*

hem that ben des(es)peÿred, 36 f (despeÿred B, dispeired D).

alderwisest han . . . ben plesed, 247 f (-id C, -yd D) *rhyming with*

thei . . . han ben . . . esed, 249 f (-yd D) (: apesed *p.p. sg.*).

the feste and playes pālestrāl, 6667 f (: funeral).

¹ Dissyllable throughout.

² In C read *parfit* (printed, *parfit*) and supply [and]; in D supply [and].

the thynges tēporèl, 5723 f (temporaH D) (: euery del : èternèl).
other thyng collateral, 262 f (thinges D, thyngis collatrial C).

Note.—*Thei be rungen*, 1890 f A, should read *Thei be runge*.

§ 72. Adjectives in A.S. *-lic* (*-lic*), O.N. *-ligr*, appear in the *Troilus* with the ending *-ly* or *-lich*.

Ten Brink (§ 270) seems inclined to recognize a tendency on Chaucer's part to use *-lich* instead of *-ly* when the following word begins with a vowel¹, but the *Troilus* MSS. do not given evidence in favour of such a tendency: one can only say that the ending *-ly* remains unchanged in the definite use, in the plural, and in the vocative, and that when the poet wishes for metrical or other reasons to add an inflectional *-e*, he employs the form in *-lich*.

In the following list *old-style figures* indicate that a vowel follows; *def.* = definite use (singular); *def. pl.* = definite use (plural); *pl.* = plural (indefinite use); *voc.* = vocative singular. Examples not distinguished by any of these signs are in the indefinite use, singular number, and are followed by a word beginning with a consonant. It will be observed that the *Troilus* affords no instance of an adjective in *-ly* or *-lich* (*-liche*) at the end of a verse.

For forms in *-lich*, *-liche*, see under *estatyche*, *goodly*, *heuenliche*, *gosityche*, *gryssly*, *syklyche*, *wommanlyche*.

dedly, 5533 (dedely B), 5560 (dedely BC).

erthely, 5543 (erthly B, wordely C).

estatyche, 7186 (*-liche* B, statlyche (?) C, estalich D).

fleysshly, 4090 (flessly B, fleschly C †, fleishely D) (*pl.*).

frendly, 538², 1234 (*pl.*), 1417 (lovely † D) (*def.*), 5060. [Var. B frendly, frendely, frendely; C frendli, frendeli.]

goodly, 162 AB³ (*def.*), 173 (*def.*), 277, 373, 405 (sauory B, sauery CD), 446 (*def.*), 458 (*voc.*), 1070, 1366 (goodliche C), 2031 (*perh. adv.*)⁴, 2113, 2210 (C † D †), 2353 (*def.*), 2752 (goode A) (*def.*), 2846 (*voc.*), 2970 (D †) (*voc.*), 3975 (*def. pl.*), 4315 (D †) (*voc.*), 4448, 5072 AB, 7081 (*def. pl.*), 7185. [Var. B godely, goodely; C goodeli, godli, goodli.]

gosityche peple speche, 3426 (goosish peples s. B, gosisshe peple s. D; C †). (See p. 147, footnote 3.)

gryssly, 2785 (gryssely B, grèsëlichë C)⁵, 4817 (grisely B, gresely C).

helply, 6491 AB (helpyn *inf.* C, helpë *inf.* D).

¹ "Aus einem genauen Studium der Ueberlieferung . . . ergibt sich n. a., dass Chaucer . . . vor anlautendem Vocal . . . vielfach *-lich* und *-liche* statt *-ly* gebraucht."

² In 538 C read *gladyth* for *gladede*.

³ In AB the line is too long; CD Cp. Harl. 2392 om. *goodly*. G reads: And to the temple in her goodly best wyse

⁴ In C read *haste* for *laste*.

⁵ But in C supply [I] and read *grèsëliche*.

hèuēliche, 104 C (heuēnysh B, heuēnyssh B, heuēny D).

holy, 1203 (*pl.*).

homeli, 2644 C (*apparently adv. in ABD, homly*).

knyghtly, 1713 (-e- BC).

lovely, 1417 † D (*def.*).

lykly, 4112 (I lykly was to sterue) (lykē to (?) D^c).

manly, 2348 (-li C), 2955 (-li C) (*def.*).

oonly, 6330; saue only Ector, 1825 (oonly B, onli C); oonly worthi-
nesse, 6330 (oonly B, onely D).

shaply, 6114 (-e- B, shappely C) (*pl.*).

softly, 2752 (soft[e] BD, softē C) (*def.*).

sunnelych was, 5398 C (sonnyssh ABD).

syklyche, 2613 (sikliche B, sekly C, sike † D (?)); his syklyche
manère, 2628 (siklych B, seklÿche C, sikly D).

well willy, 4099 ABC † (wel(e) wyly D) (*def.*).

wōmmanlychē wyf, 2948 A (-lich[e] BD, -liche C) (*voc.*); womman-

lichē wyf, 4138 (women lich[e] C, womanlich[e] D) (*voc.*); the

womanlichē thyngis, 5356 (wommanyssh[e] AD, womman[i]sshe B);

youre fresshē wommanlychē face, 6607 (-liche BC, womanly[che]
D); wōmmanly, 287. (In 6940 *wommanly* is apparently an adv.)

worldly, 3655 (wordly B, wordeli C)¹, 3670 (wordly B, wordeli C),

4478 (wordly B, wordelis † C), 5497 (wordly BD, wordely C).

wortheli, 1424 (worthi A, worthy BD).

With these may be compared :

sely, 338 (*om.* † C) (a sely fewe poyntes), 871, 1768, 4033 (*def.*), 5165,
6152 (*pl.*), 6892 (*def.*), 7456 (*def.*). [Var. B cely; C seli.]

vnsely, 35 (vnseely D).

weldy, 1721 (worthi † C).

PRONOUNS.

§ 73. I. Personal Pronouns.

I (A.S. ic). Usually *I* or *y* in all four MSS. But the following cases
of *ich* have been noticed : 678 ABC, 864 A (*iche* here B), 2143 B,
2145 BD, 3474 B, 3549 B, 3715 B, 3770 B, 4319 B, 4660 AB,
4733 B, 4762 B, 4976 B, 4991 B, 5245 AB, 5287 AB, 5294 AB,
5411 B, 5419 B, 5467 B, 5585 B, 5727 A, 5999 A (*iche* B), 6053
AB, 6213 AB, 6312 B (*yeh* A), 6403 AB, 6493 AB, 6589 AB,
6590 AB, 6781 B, 6928 B, 6933 B, 6942 B, 7062 B, 7110 B, 7234

¹ In B supply [*so*].

AB, 7296 B, 7624 B, 7710 A, 7718 A, 7959 A (*iche herte* B), 7988 B, 8130 B. *yeh* also occurs, 6312 A, 7745 A; and, *iche hym*, 5594 B (cf. above 7959).

As *I best kan to yow lord yeue yeh al*, 1914 (I . . . Ich B, I . . . I † 3ow . . . I al C, y . . . y D †).

Clippe *ich* yow thus or elles *I it mete*, 4186 AB (*eche* . . . [ellis] *ich* C, I . . . I D).

Why suffre *ich* it whi nyl *ich* do it redresse

, 6403 (*ich* . . . *ich* B, I . . . I CD; *om.* do BCD).

Note.—*I* occurs in rhyme as follows: (1) with adverbs in *-ly*, 416, 430, 1103, 1269, 1629, 2087, 2511, 2619, 2760, 2910, 3594, 5351, 5545, 5679, 5926, 7436; (2) with *redy*, 983; (3) with *by*, *therby*, 1629, 5679.

thow (A.S. þú), 894, 909 (thou C), 933 (thou CD), 6633 (thou C, thou D), etc., etc.; thou, 898 (thow BD), etc. (In rhyme,—two cases, —thow, 2088 (thou C) (: now : how), 6695 (3ow C, thou D) (: nowe, now BD).)

Thow in the reduced form *-ow* is very often attached to verbs. Thus:—

artow, 509 AB (art thou C, art(e) thou D); ertow, 5079 B (thow art A, are thou D); cf. 731, 5195, 5303, 5757. But,—art thow, 507 (artow B, art thou C, art(e) thou D), 3579 (art tow B), etc.

hastow, 554 (hast thou CD); cf. 617, 904, 962, 3145, 3681, 4297, 4301, 4453, 4945, 5039, 5057, 5148, 5158, 5301, 5751, 5755, 6868 † B, 6951, 6952.

sholdestow, shuldestow, 6714 (schuldist thow C, shuldest thou D); cf. 7651.

maystow, 623 (mayst thou CD); cf. 673, 2101, 3738, 4927, 7522, 8074. But,—mayst thow, 5208 (maistow B, mayst thou C, maist thou D); cf. 7493.

myghtestow, 4924 (mayst thou C, maist thou D).

dostow, 5177 (dost thou C, dost(e) thou D); cf. 7097.

ne hastow, 5512 (ne hast thou ? C, ne haue ye ? D).

ne haddestow, 4938 (ne haddyst thou C, ne haddist thou D).

wiltow, wyltow, 1011 (woltow B, wilt thou CD); cf. 4931.

woltow, 2446 (wiltow B, wilt thou C, wilt thou D); cf. 5513, 7520. But,—wolt thow, 2532 (wiltow B, wilt thou C).

nyltow, 792 (nylt thou C, nelt thou D), 8071 A (nyl to B, nil thou D); cf. 4269, 4912, 4965, 5151.

neltow, 5150 (nyltow B, nylt thou C, nylt(e) thou D).

nodestow, 4106 (noldestow B, noldist thou CD).

wostow, 588 (wost thou C, w. thow D); cf. 611, 775, 781, 843, 851, 855, 901, 956, 967, 3091.

wistow, 4486 (wistist thou C, wist thou D).

oughtestow, 6908 (au3tist thow C, oughtest thou D).

canstow, kanstow, 757 (canst thou C, canst thou D †); cf. 5122 (canstu C), 5192.

darstow, 7642 (dastow A, durst(ist) thow C, darst(e) thou D).

dorstestow, 767 AB (durstyst thou C, trist thow D).

shaltow, 803 (schuldytst thou C, thou shalt D); cf. 5271 (shaltow(e)) B, 6391.

blamestow, 841 (-yst thou CD).

gabbestow, 5143 (-ist thou C, -est thou C).

intendestow, 6841 (entendist thow C, entendest thou D).

listow, 5056 (lyst thou C, liest thou D).

profrestow, 4303 (profrestow B, profrest thow C; D †).

sekestow, 4297 (-yst thou C, -est thou D).

sestow, 2888 AB (seest thou D).

seystow, 7524 (seistow B, seyst thou C, seest thou D); cf. 7654, 7886.

seydestow, seidestow, 912 (seydist thou CD); cf. 917, 918.

slombrestow, 730 (slomberyst thou C, slumbrist thou D).

thenkestow, 2458 (thynkestow B, thinkist thou C, thinkyst thou D); cf. 5511, 5750.

It will be seen that these forms are common in AB, very rare in C (caustu, 5122) and hardly found in D. AB have, however, full forms in *-est*, *-st thou* (*thou*), as well as the contracted forms.

Once the affixed *-ow* (= *thow*) is reduced to *-e*,—*Wher arte?* (art D) (: *carte*), 7524.

Thart (= *thow art*), 4471 (*thow art* A, *thu art* C, *thou art* D).

he (A.S. *hé*), 21, 1164 f, and *passim*. he *Īxiðn*, 6575 (the † I. D; C†).

Note.—The colloquial contraction written *a* occurs (cf. *a for have*), but not in A: And on the Grekes ofte a wold a see, 703 D (ost he woldē se A, oost he wold[e] se B, oftē woldē he se C). Perhaps the scribe intended a † *lough*, 3260 B, for *he lough* (and low AC, or lowē D). For elided or slurred *e* in *he*, see § 125. In 6440 C, *Antendrē* = *Antendr he*; but cf. 5327 f.

she, 178 (scho B, sche C), 679 (sche C), 1166 f, 1689 f (sche C), 2832 f (sche C), 3995 (sho B, sche C † D), 4369 (sche CD), 5829 (sce C), 7479 f (sche C), 7667 (che B, sche C), and *passim*; she Criseyde, 3968 B (cf. 1901 ?). For the elision or slurring of *-e* in *she*, see § 126.

it (A.S. *hit*), nom., acc., and with prepositions.

Usually *it* in all four MSS., cf. 5686 f (: *sit sedet* : *yit*), 5765 f (: *yet* : *wit*), 7124 f (: *wit* : *yit*), and *passim*.

But *hit* occasionally occurs (as, 297 D, 346 D, 1545 D, 2222 D, 3244 D); *yt*, 57 A.

Note.—Ten Brink's rule "dass Chaucer nach einem auslautenden Vocal, der nicht elidirt werden soll, stets *hit*—nicht *it*—schreibt" (§ 270) is not observed in the *Troilus* MSS.

me (A.S. *mé*) dat., acc., and with prepositions. (a) Dat. without prepositions, 142 (?), 403 f, 828, 1120, 1274, 3152 f, 3416, 4744, 5497 f. (b) Other oblique uses, cf. 1578 f, 4324 f, and *passim*. For *mē* with a preposition, see *by me*, 2076 f (: *tyme* : *pryme*). For elided or slurred *-e* in *me*, see § 126.

the (A.S. *pé*), dat., acc., and with prepositions. (a) Dat. without prepositions, 829, 2177, 4299 (thee D), 8094, 8100 f. (b) Other oblique uses, cf. 6771 f and *passim*. What eyleth the, 4993 f.

hym (A.S. *him*), dat., acc., and with prepositions. (a) Dat. without prepositions, 82, 188, 694, etc., etc. (b) Other oblique uses, *passim*. [Var. *him*.]

hire, here (A.S. *hire*), dat. and acc., monosyllabic, not distinguished in spelling from the possessive (cf. (i.) bef. consonants; 126, 131, 177, 286, 315, 361, 370, 388, 454, 481, 840, 976, 1050, 1360, 1687, 1778, 1999, 2010, 2069, 2205, 2239, 2450, 3311, 3398, 3523, 4094, 4824, etc.; cf. (ii.) bef. vowels, 974, 1749, 3408, 3972, 4029,

7223, etc.). Forms without -e occur even in A : thus,—her anoon *acc.*, 116 A ; to hyr spak, 3972 A ; as hir lyste, 3974 A ; sen her laughen, 7144 A.—Notice the following cases in rhyme : here (*eam*), 2876 f (: to were = *weir*) ; of here, 3109 f (hire C) (: swere *inf.*) ; here (*eam*), 4484 f (hire BC) (: bere *inf.* : tere *inf.*), 5274 f (hire BC, her D) (: swere *inf.*).

It may be that when *hire* was emphatic it could be dissyllabic, even in the middle of a verse. Thus—

For-thi som grace I hope yn *herë* fynde, 973 A (hyrë C, hirë Cp., in her y D, in hyrë to B, in hir to G).

Biseching *herë* syn that he was trewe, 7948 A (hirë B, hire that C, hir that D, hir[e] that sithe he Harl. 2392). [*Here* is not really emphatic. No variation in Cp. collation.]

In the following cases, however, a comparison of MSS. shows that the dissyllabic form is to be rejected : 977 C, 1056 A, 2159 C, 4827 A, 5365 C, 7212 C, 7226 C, 7454 AC, 7905 C.

Note.—In the light of the rhymes just cited, I cannot understand ten Brink's remark (§ 250, Ann. 3) : "Sicher, dass für den Sing. Fem. ihm [Chaucer] blos *hire hir* [not *here her*] geläufig war."

we (A.S. wé), 3707, 4856 f, 6176, and *passim*.

ye (A.S. gé), 26 f (3e B), 198 (3e CD), 202 f A (3e BC), 340 f (3e BCD), 5996 f (3e BC), 8055 f (3e BC, yee D) ; cf. 1364 f, 1373 f, 1667 f, 2860 f, 3441 f, and *passim*. For *yë* with a preposition, cf. *yow*. they, thei (O.N. þeir), 60 (theye B), 136 (thai B, the C), 763 ; cf. 134, 1167, 1260, 1302, 4224, etc., etc.

us (A.S. ús), dat., acc., and with prepositions, 1034, 1412, 1526, 1585, 6488, and *passim*. For examples of the dat. without prepositions, see 1181 f (: Pandarus : thus), 1868, 6010. (*Us* rhymes with -us in Pandarus, Troilus, Deiphebus, Tydeus, and with *thus* : cf. 620 f, 1181 f, 1207 f, 1286 f, 1517 f, 2273 f, 2404 f, 2563 f, 6842 f, 7400 f, 7414 f, 7841 f, 7925 f.)

yow, you (A.S. éow), dat., acc., and with prepositions, 331 f (3ow BCD) (: prow *n.* : how), 1329 (3ou B, 3ow C, om. † D), 4975 (3ow B, you D), and *passim*. For examples of the dat. without prepositions, cf. 342, 431, 1421, 7728, etc., etc. [*yowe*, 4763 f (3owe B, 3ou D) (: now).] *yow* rhymes with *now*, *prow*, *how* (cf. 331 f, 2523 f, 2746 f, 3165 f, 3853 f, 4322 f, 4406 f, 4491 f, 4763 f (yowe A), 5540 f, 5988 f, 6492 f, 8103 f).

Yë in *fro ye*, 5 f (: Troye : ioye), is apparently a reduced *yow* (cf. *arte* for *artow*), whatever one may say of *ayeyn ye*, 334 AB (C †, 3e D), where, on the whole, *ye* prob. = *yea*.

hem (A.S. him, heom), 908, 2791, 2805, 4227, 4521, etc., etc.

Note.—*Hem* is found in all MSS.; *him* or *hym* sometimes replaces it (as, 31 A, 303 BD, 518 B, 558 B, 911 B,¹ 1284 (?) CD, 2567 B, 4240 A); *them* is found only in D (see, e. g., 29, 31, 36, 50, 558, 4862, 5805); *theym*, 41 D.

§ 74. II. Possessive Pronouns.

my, myn (A.S. mīn). I. Sing. (a) *my before consonants*: my fo, 837 (myn C, my wo † B); my brother, 2496 (myn C); my lord my brother, 2535 (myn . . . myn C) (cf. 2711); my dere brother, 2760 (myn C), etc., etc.; mi spirit, 423 AB (myn C, the D). (b) *myn before vowels*: 16, 407 (D †), 432 (C †), 683, 772, 1134, 3081 (my D), 6112 (my D), 8081 (myne D), etc., etc. (c) *myn before h*: myn herte, 599, 606, 1652, 1664 (my D), 6593 (my D), etc.; myn hod, 2195 (myne D); myn hows, 3037 (my D); cf. 530, 1845, 1954, 3001, 3157, 6866; my dere hert allas myn hele and hewe, 461 (mi . . . myn B, myn . . . myn C); myn herte ayens my lust, 1560 (myn hest † . . . myn C, my hert . . . my D). (d) *myn before consonants*: myn peyne, 1560 AC (my BD); on myn byhalue, 2543 AC (my BD); myn dere herte, 3685 AC (my BD); go litel myn tregedie, 8149. C, so far as I have observed, uses only *myn*, whether before vowels or consonants²; cf. 527, 612, 616, 2188, 2366, 2705, 2711, 2735, 3018, 3085, 3713, 3788, 3838, etc. (In some of these cases the n is written in C; in others it is represented by the familiar stroke.) Cf. myn swetē herte, 5973 B (myn ownē AD, myne C.) (e) *my before vowels*: my auctor, 394 (myn BCD); cf. the variants under *b*, above. (f) When the possessive follows its noun, *myn* is of course the only form used. Thus,—Com(e) nece myn my lady queene, 2799 ABD (necē myne myn C); cf. 1510, 2280 (myne B), 2320. And so when the possessive stands in the predicate (cf. 21, 3835, 5141 f (myne BD) (: for fyn)), and when the noun is omitted (cf. 3849, 6960). II. Plural: myn peynes, 2984 (my BD, myne C); my sorwes, 4014 (mynne C); my cares, 7705 B (D †, myne C, [my] A); myne othere lordes, 2566 (myn D).—mynē wordes, 4173 ABC (my E);³ cf. 6680 † C.—lordes myne, 4733 A (myn BD).—myn eyen, 7699 ABD (mynne C).

thi, thy, thyn, thin (A.S. þín). I. Singular. (a) *thi bef. cons'ts.*: thi brotheres wyf, 678 (thyn C, thy D); thi bed, 2602 (thin C); thy destene, 520 (thi B, thyn C), etc., etc. (b) *thyn bef. vowels*: thin

¹ "Som of hem took on hym."

² *myne* (5973 C) is merely a graphical variety.

³ No variations noted in Mr. Austin's collation. 9-syl. in E.

owenë cheyne, 509 (thyn CD); thyn aventure, 2604 (thin BD); cf. 513, 795, etc.—thi synne and thyn offence, 556 (thi . . . thin B, thyn . . . thyn C, thi . . . thyn D). [thine, 5751 D.] (c) thyn *bef.* h : thyn help, 672 (thi BD, that † C); thyn hert, 928 (thin BD); thyn hod, 2039 (thin BD). (d) thyn *bef. const's.* : thyn peyne, 589 (thi B thy D). C, so far as my notes indicate, uses *thyn* exclusively,¹ whether before a vowel or a consonant (cf. 346, 524, 587, 653, 677, 801, 926, 935, 1018, 1916, 2481, 2588, 2597, 2696, 2723, 3237, 3580, 4829, 4946, 5079,² etc.). The other MSS. usually have *thi* before a consonant (but cf. thin lif, 5079 D). (e) I have observed no instance of *thy* before vowels. (f) When the possessive is in the predicate, *thyn* is of course used, cf. 861, 1036, 3118 f (-e C) (: engyn), 4354, 6303, 6950. So when it follows its noun : cf. 8232. Cf. to han for thyne, 3255 A (thyn BC, thin D). II. Plural : thi proueres, 756 (thyne C, thy D); thi sorwes, 794 (thyne C); thi bryght eyen, 4295 (thyne C).—thyne olde ensaumples, 760 (thin BD); thyne eeres, 2107 (thyn B, thin D); thyne hestes, 3261 (thine B, thyne C, this † D); thyne † heuenes, 3460 C; thin hornes, 7015 (thyne B, thine D, thyne C); thyn eyen, 7522 (thyne C, thine D); thyn owenë folk, 6951 (thyne C, thin D).—thyne nedis, 2039 C (thi AD, thy B); thyne † dremys, 7651 C.

his (A.S. *his*), so *passim* as possess. pron. with both masc. and neut. nouns sing. and plu. Cf. especially *a friend of his*, 548, 3638 f (: this); *a man of his*, 4883.

Note 1.—No MS., except perhaps D, by far the worst of the four, is free from the spelling *hise* (-e of course never sounded) for the possessive with plural nouns. Examples are : *hise aventures*, 3 AB (cf. 471 AC, 2430 AC, 5535 A); *hise foos*, 994 A; *hise bestë iapes*, 2252 A (cf. 1658 AC, 1808 A (hyse C), 2117 A (hesë C), 2121 A, 2436 AC, 3339 AC, 7410 BC, 7452 AC); *hise hondes*, 3026 AB; *hesë worthi dedes*, 8133 A; *hesë eyzen*, 1948 C; *hesë hondes*, 2059 C, 8165 A; *hyse bony[s]*, 305 C.—C even uses *hise* for the singular : *hise chere*, 7591 C.³

Note 2.—*Is* is occasionally found for *his*. Thus, 637 B, 4206 C, 6071 A, 6167 A. *Delhës* = *deth his* in 469 C (Lo here his lyf and from the *dethes* cure).

hire, here, possessive (= her) (A.S. *hire*).

In the attributive use before consonants A varies between *here* and *hire* : for *here*, cf. 839 (C †), 5764, etc., etc. ; for *hire*, cf. 95, 107, 975, etc., etc. Varieties are, BC *hyre* ; BD *hir* ; C *hyr* ; D *her*. (Cf. also, for further examples, 102, 108, 126, 173, 281, 282, 285,

¹ thynn fo, 4828 C.

² In some of these cases the n is written in C; in others it is represented by the familiar stroke.

³ Supply [so] in C.

427, 542, 846,¹ 1150, 1304, 1688, 1699, 1759, 1853, 1911, 2717, 3439, 6944, etc.) An examination of these cases, which are fair examples of the use of *here*, *hire* before consonants, will show that A has -*e* in all of them (*here_e* or *hire_e*); that the usual form in B is *hire_e*; in C *hire_e* or *hyre_e*; in D *her*.² Forms without the -*e* are not common except in D, and are hardly found in A.

Good lines to illustrate this word are:—*Hire_e* wommen soonë til *hire_e* bed *here_e* broughte, 1999 (*hire_e* . . . *hire_e*? . . . *hire_e* B, *hire_e* . . . *hire_e* . . . *hire_e* C, *her* . . . *her* . . . *her* D). *Hire_e* gouernaunce *hire_e* wit and *here_e* manere, 3058 (*hire_e* BC, *her* D). Al thoughtë she *here_e* seruaunt and *hire_e* knyghte, 3825 (*hire_e* . . . *hire_e* BC, *her* . . . *her* D).³

Note.—Cases before vowels present no interest, for there elision would in any case reduce the word to one syllable. The spellings are in general the same as those already noted. (Cf. *e. g.* 305, 347,⁴ 1335, 1619, 1737, 3060, 3403, 6426, 7228⁵. For cases before *h*, cf. 127, 655, 1742, etc.)

Absolute use:

A kynges herte semeth by *hires* a wrecche, 889 AB (*hire* C, *her* D). And that I thus am *herës* dar I seye, 4450 (*hirës* B, *ȝouris* † C, *her[ë]s* D).

Shal han me holly *heres* til that I deye, 5106 (*hires* B, *his* † C, *hirs* D).

Note 3.—It is doubtful if the possessive singular is ever *hirë* (disyllabic) in this poem. The following cases, which seem to require or admit that pronunciation, disappear as evidence on a comparison of MSS.: 1350 A, 1903 C, 1995 A, 1999 B, 5221 C, 7132 C, 7316 C, 7413 C †, 7510 C.

The following two passages admit of a dissyllabic *hirë*, but may also (if one likes the sound) be scanned as lines of nine syllables: ;
With a certayn of *here* owene men, 3438 (*hire* own B, *hire* owene C, *her* owne D).

I comende *hire* wysdom by myn hood, 7514 ABC (*hir* witte D).

oure (A.S. *úre*), gen., as singular possessive. In the attributive use the regular spelling of ABC is *oure*, D usually has *our* (cf. (i.) before consonants, 171, 558, 559, 1518, 1728, 2506, 5985, etc.; cf. (ii.) before vowels, 710, 1448, etc.). But *oure_e* is also found in D (as, 5721); and neither A nor B is free from *our* (thus, *our* wreche, 7259 ABD (*oure_e* C), cf. 965 B, 8157 B, 8186 B).

All these cases are monosyllabic. Indeed, there seem to be no

¹ This and 847 illustrate the indifference of A with regard to *hire* and *here*: That as *here_e* ioyes moten ouer gone So mote *hire_e* sorwes passen euerychone (*hire_e* . . . *hire_e* B, *hyre_e* . . . *hire_e* C, *her* . . . *her* D).

² *Here_e* is rare in C (see 1853); *hire_e* is rare in D (see 6944).

³ In B, read *though[të s]he*; in D, *thought[ë]*.

⁴ *hyr* B.

⁵ In most of these A has *here*.

cases of dissyllabic attributive *oure* (sing. or pl.) in the *Troilus* (see 5906, where *ourē* would give an intolerable verse, and 3598 C, where comparison of MSS. restores the monosyllable). Cf., however, the following predicate use: she shal bleuen oure, 5201 f (our D) (: owre = *hour*). In the plural possessive use the attributive form is the same as in the singular. Thus,—*oure hierdes*, 3461 (our D); *oure walles*, 6144 (our BD); *oure † cruel foone*, 8229 D; cf. 1598, 2017, 4109, 4955, 5866, 8206.

your, youre (A.S. *éower*). (a) Attributive position:

Both forms are found in A before consonants. Thus: your, 429 (3our BD, 3ore C), 4955 (3our B, 3oure C); yourē (in A the usual form), yowre, 122, 1180, 1219, 1307, 1426, 1508, 2190, 2523, 2801 (oure † C), 3051, 4018, 4830 (-e B), 7099, 7236, etc., etc.. [Var. BCD 3oure; BD 3our; D your, yowr, 3owr; B ioure, 3owre; C 3ourre.] (For *youre*, cf. 337, 2526, etc.; for *youre* where h follows, cf. 334, 1378, etc.) *Youre* is monosyllabic in the attributive position, except perhaps in 2687, 3509; other exceptions (as, 198 AB, 1388 C, 5548 C, 7267 C, 7985 C) vanish on a comparison of MSS.

(b) In the predicate:

he is youre, 1672 f (3oure BC, 3oures D¹) (: oure *horam*); yourēs is Mi spirit which that aught[ē] yourē be, 422-3 (3our[e]s . . . 3our[e]s B, 3ourē . . . 3ourē C, your[is] . . . youris D)²; he that is . . . yourēs fre, 2206 (3oures B, 3ouris C, youris D);³ I haue ben yowrēs also, 2944 (3oures B, 3ouris C, youres D);⁴ cf. 4450 † C; I was youre and, 6342 (3oure B, your D); I am yourē † aH, 6303 D (thyn ABC); I am 3oures † bi, 4354 D (thyn AC, thin B).

hire, here, = their (A.S. *hire*), monosyllabic, not distinguished in spelling from here = her. Cf. (i.) *bef. cons'ts.*, 49, 63, 149, 151, 154, 705, 763, 907, 997, 1126, 1260, 1286, etc., etc. Cf. (ii.) *bef. vowels*, 51, 150, etc. The variant *heir* (5804 D, 7323 D; *heire*, 8218 D) deserves notice. *Their* is sometimes found in D (cf. 4861, 5369, 8123); *therē* occurs in C 5803.

In,—Of *here teris* and the *herte vnswele*, 5808 AC (*hire B, om. † D*), one has one's choice between *herē* and a 9-syl. line. 3304 A, however, should be corrected.

§ 75. III. Reflexive and Intensive Pronouns. The compounds of *self* (A.S. *self*, *sylf*, etc.) appear in the

¹ *rh.* *houris D.*

² In B supply [*that*] in 423; in C dele (*the*) in 423.

³ In C supply [*a*].

⁴ Supply [*al*] in D.

Troilus in the forms *-self*, *-selue*, *-seluen*. (Child, § 46; ten Brink, § 255. Cf. also § 79 below.)

my self, myn self, my selue, my seluen.

myself, (i.) 537 (my silf D, myn seluē C), 669 (-e B, myn self C), 2286 (myn seluēn the † C), 5204 (myn seluē † C; D †), 5286 (myn s. C, my selfe D); cf. 3729, 4495, 4940. (ii.) 628 (myn saeluē † sen C, my seluē † sen D), 927 (myn s. C), 7637 (myn seluyn C); cf. 2225, 3632, 4745; my self hate, 5501 (-e D, myn self C).

myn self wil, 2094 (my s. BD); myn † silf vnnethe, 7770 C.

my selue, 1191 f (myn s. C) (: twelue), 7286 f (meselfue B, myn selluē C, my silf D) (: twelue); my selue I, 5903 (my silf D, myn seluyn wolde C).¹

my seluen, (i.) 5439 (myn self[e] C, my silfe † D), 6108 (myn selue C, my self[e] D), 7635 (my self[e] D, myn self † to C).

thi self, thy self, thyn self, thi selue, thi seluen, thyn seluen.

thi self, thy self, (i.) 963 (thyn s. C), 4466 (thyn s. C, thi silf D),² 6750 (thyn s. C, thin s. D); cf. 717, 768, 2450 CD, 4098, 5079 A, 5266 BD, 5282, 6633. (ii.) Cf. 882, 2542, 5252; thi self hire, 2450 (thi selft B, thyn self preye C, thy s. pray D). thyn self fordon, 5753 (thi s. B, thyn s. C, thine s. D).³

thi selue, 3101 (-en B, thyn -yn C, thy -yn D), 5062 f (thyn s. C, thi silue D) (: swych[e] twelue).—thi self[e], (i.) 5253 (thi seluen B, thynself? C †, thynself[e] D); thi self[ē] helpen, 5190 (-en B, selue (?) C; D †). (ii.) thi selue, thy selue, thi selfe, cf. 3141 (-yn † C), 3212, 5513 (?), 8074.

thyn seluen, (i.) 622 (thi s. B, thyn seluē C, thi self[e] D), cf. 3098 † C.—thi seluēn, (ii.) 852 (thy self[e] D, C †), 5262 (thyn seluyn C, thi self[e] D), 5512 (thyn self[e]? C, youre silf[e]? D), 6700 (thyn seluyn C, thin seluen D), 7669 (thyn -yn C, thi self? D †).

hym self, hym-selue, hym-seluen.

hym-self, (i.) cf. 320, 896, 1460, 1864, 2163, 2249, 2558 BC, 3270, 3397, 5787, 5890, 6401, 6704, 6869, 6969, 6986, 7031, 7536, 7894. [Var. C hym selfe (320); CD hym silf.] (ii.) Cf. 457, 745, 815, 1544, 5746, 5824,⁴ 6626, 6980, 7135 (seluyn C ?), 7148,

¹ Metre doubtful: My (Myn C) selue (self B, seluyn C, silf D, selfe G) I wolde (wolde I C) haue (han B, a C) slayn (slawe C, slayne DG) quod she tho. (No variations in Mr. Austin's collation.)

² Supply [ne] or read *silf[e]* in D.

³ Supply [so] in C.

⁴ Supply [it] in C. D, *himsilfe* (?).

7233. [Var. CD *selfe*; C *selue*.] Before *he, his*, cf. 662, 5890 C, 6572, 8184 AB.

hym-selue, 2485 f (: *twelue*), 6461 f (*hyme*-s. BD) (: *twelue*).
hym self [y]beten, 741 (h. s. ybeten BD, h. s. i-bete C). *hym-self*[e],
 (i.) 2558 (h. self BC), 4907 (-en B, -e C, h. silf to (†) D), 6704 CD,
 7396 (h. self ABD 9-syl.), 7940 (-en B, -e C). *hym seluë sle*, 5581
 (-en B, -[e] D, -[e] fle † C).

hym-seluen, (i.) 256 (-[e] CD), 302 (-[e] D), 604 (-ë C, -[e] D †),
 7586 (-yn C, -[e] D); *himseluy*n, 3397 C (-self ABD).

here-self, *hire-self*, *here-seluen*, *singular feminine*.

here-self, (i.) 7079 (*hire*-s. B, *hir sowlę* D). (ii.) *hire-self*, *here-self*,
 3619 (h. seluyn C, her self D),¹ 5299 (*hir self* D, *hire self*[ë]
 wolde † C), 5418 (h. selue C, *hir selfe* D); *here self hym*, 2716 (*hire*
 s. BC, her self al D).

hire-self[e] *bonde*, 2308 (-en B, *here self*[e] C, her selfe D);² *here*
*seluë excuses*unge, 112 (*hire seluen* B, *hyre seluë* C, *herself*[ë] D).

here seluen, (i.) 3568 (*hire* s. B, *hire seluyn* C, her self D),³ 5197
 (*hire seluën* B, *hire self*[ë] C, *hir self*[ë] D), 5475 (*hire*-s. B, *hir*
self[ë] D).—*hire seluën she*, 1736 (h. self BC, her self D); *here-*
seluën distorben, 5765 (*hire-self* C, *h[i]re self* C, *hir self* D).

oure seluen se, 2416 (-yn C, our seluyn D).

your self, *yow self*, *your selfe*, *your seluen*, *yow seluen*.

your self, (i.) 2368 (*zoure* BC, *zour* D), 3751 (3. BC, your D).
 (ii.) 118 (*zourse* B, *zoure* s. C, *zour* s. D),⁴ 5896 (3. B, 3. sylf C,
your silf quod D); *your self*, 3621 (*zoure* s. BC), cf. 5513 D;
zoure selue †, 2951 C.

yow self, (i.) 1308 (*zoure* s. B, your s. D, *zoure self*[e] † C), 2245
 (*zoure* s. BC; D †), 3847 (*zoure* s. BC).⁵ (ii.) 1323 (*zoure* s. C,
zour self D, *zoure seluën* B).—*yow seluën leste*, 4172 (*zoure* s. B,
zourë † selvyn C, your self[ë] D).

your selfe, (i.) 3510 (3. seluen B, 3. seluyn C, your selvyn D);
your self[e] (†), 5512 D.

your selfe seluen, (i.) 1216 (3. B, *zowre selve* C, *zour self*[e] D), 7244
 (*zoure* B, your self D †, *l. om.* † C), 7247 (*zoure* B, *zoure seluyn* C,
 your self[e] D), 7364 (*zoure* B, *zoure sylf*[e] C, your self D †); *yowre*
seluen, 3967 (*zoure* BD, 3. -yn C).

¹ Supply [e] in A.

² If we read *makë* (-yn C), we shall have *hire-self* in two syllables.

³ In this v. ABC have *dane*, D *diane*, for *Daphne*. In D read *daphne her self*[ë] *shct.*

⁴ Supply [ye] in B.

⁵ *yow self* † D (9-syl. †).

hem self, hem seluen.

hem self, (i.) 4683. (ii.) 915 (hym s. B),¹ 1543, 1875 † D.

hem seluen so, 4710 (h. self[e] D).

§ 76. IV. Demonstrative Pronouns.

that (A.S. *þæt*), as demonstrative pronoun, *passim*. That = the, that oon(e), 5349 A (that oon B, that on C, the toone D).

tho (A.S. *þá*), plural demonstrative (in substantive and adjective uses), cf. 924, 1078, 2452, 3272, 4016, 4223, 4285, 4813, 5087 f, 5293, 5356, 5797, 5835, 6025, 7033, 7096, 7569.

thilke, *sing.*, 185 (the ilke C, that D †),² 939 (-[e] D, thynke † C), 2873 (-[e] D), 3305 (-[e] B, the ilke C, that D †),² 4387 (-[e] BD, theilke C), 4501 (-[e] B, ilke C, that D †),² 5732, 6196 (ilke C †), 6213 (that ilke CD), 6318 (theilke C), 7550 (theilke C), 8053 (-[e] B, that ilke C), 8202; thilkē harme, 3560 (-[e] D).³ [Var. B thylke, thylk[e].]

thilke, *pl.*, 4114 (ilke CD), 5377 (theilke C), 5667, 5711 (-[e] B). [Var. B thylk[e]]. thilke effectes, 2857 (thi[l]ke B, thilk D).

that ilke, *sing.*, 2347 (-[e] D), 5409 AB (that ylke D), 5435 (-[e] B, that ylke D), 5898 (-[e] B), 7466.

this. Singular of course monosyllabic, and almost always written *this* (cf. 424 f (: is : i-wys), 484, 551, 1035, 1509, etc., etc.). *Thisse*, 1010 f A (this BCD) (: i-wysse : ysse *est*), is perhaps due to an attempt to indicate the unvoiced sound of final *s*.

Plural variously written : *this* (7, 540, 5090, 5537, 5573, 6683, etc.), *these* (169, 561, 1188, 2350, 5952, 8086, 8116, etc.), *thise* (2110, 3460);⁴ but always monosyllabic, as well before consonants as before vowels.

For further examples of the plural, cf. 705, 742, 893, 903, 995, 1086, 1870, 1875, 2152, 2391, 2469, 3134, 4299, 4533, 5333, 5347, 5642, 6359, 6707, 6742, 6743, 7423, 7502, 7599, 7711, 7935, 8091, 8142, 8214.

Note 1.—2350 C is corrupt. In 2153 A, transpose *alle* and *these*. In 3193 A, insert [*as*]. In 4332 A, read *werē* and *these*.

this ilke, *sing.*, 2791 (-[e] CD), 4688 AB, 6401 (this ylke D), 7232, 7876, 8115, 8129; cf. 1822 AB.

this ilke, thise ilke, these ilke, *pl.*, 3349 (this ilk[e] BD), 4180 (-[e] B), 5915 (thes ilke D), 7674; cf. 4035, 4156, 4236, 5032, 5810.

¹ Supply [the] in C.

² 9-syl. in D.

³ Supply [a] in C.

⁴ *This* and *these* are common in A; *this* and *thise* in B; D has often *thes* (561, etc.). Varieties are,—*thyse* (919 B, 2110 B), *these* (1971 Cc), *t[h]ese* (5090 D).

Note 2.—A remnant of the A.S. demonstrative *þēm, þām, þān*, is seen in the phrase *for the nonces* (561, 2466 f, 4847 f, 5090). The A.S. instrumental *þǽ* appears in *forthi* (cf. 445, 973, 1127, 4471, 4984, 5052, 5067, 5279), *forthi* (cf. 691, 1114, 1952, 5585).

Note 3.—For *at the written attē*, see § 53. II. Cf. *tother, attother*, § 79.

§ 77. V. Interrogative Pronouns.

who, *nom.* (A.S. *hwá*), 551 (ho C), 2338 (ho CD), 3593 (ho CD), 7626, etc.

whos, *gen.*, 2275 (whas B, hos C), etc.

whom, *dat.*, 6598 (ho *nom.* † C; D †).

whom, *acc.*, 3428 (hom C, what † that D), etc.; whom that I loue, 717 (hom that C).

what, I. *Sbst.*, *nom.*, 828, 1214 f; *acc.*, 320, 356, 3159 f. II. *Adj.*, *nom.*, 401, 3512, etc.; *acc.*, 552; of what man, 3992; what = why, 1347, 1377, cf. 1308. (Rhymes with *that* and *hat*.)

Note.—Remnants of the instrumental *hwǽ* are seen in *why* (cf. 1760 f, 3992 f) and in *for-whi*, *for-whȳ*, 714, 1097, 2601 (also occurring as a variant of *forthi*).

which, see under Relatives.

§ 78. VI. Relative pronouns (and pronominal adjectives), and the interrogative (etc.) *which*.

that, *passim*. that = id quod, 7567. ho at = who that, 3861 C.

whos, *gen.*, 532, 700 (C †), 787 (whois C), 5025, 7680 (whoos D), etc.; the whos, 7339 (whos C †, the woos D), 7722 (whos (?) C).

whom, *dat.* and *acc.*, 189 (whan C), 533 f (-e) D (: from), 937, 2802; cf. 98, 1244, 1912, 6676, etc.; for whom that, 766 (C †).

who so, 147 (ho so C); cf. 77, 603, 857, 2880, 4104, etc.

what so,—in what wyse so yow lyste, 3889 (that 3ow C; D †).

what, as a "general relative,"—of what it be, 2418; eury gentil womman what she be, 8136; or of what wyght that stont, 3338.

which.

I. Interrogative (in both direct and indirect questions and in exclamations).

A. *Singular*. (1) *Adj.*, which hous, 2274 (wiche C, welche D); to enqueren which thyng cause of which thyng be, 5672 (which . . . welche B); welche † opynyoun, 5635 D (whos AB). (2) *Sbst.* which of, 3040 (wiche C). (3) = *qualis, interrog.*, which a labour, 199 BC (swych l. A, such a l. D); what thyng and which is he, 401 CD (-e B, what A); into wiche helle, 5374 C

(vnto which heH D; *st. not in AB*). (4) = *qualis, exclam.*, which a thonk, 803 (wych C; D †); which a dede, 5893 BD (swych A, wich a drede C).

B. *Plural*, which (= *quales* ?) doutances (*ind. quest.*), 200 (-e B, with † D, which dotaunce[s] C).

II. Relative.

A. *Which* (without *the*).

(a) *Which* is used as a relative pronoun for all genders, with or without a following *that*. In the following examples the *which* is a simple relative (not attributive adj.); the presence of a following *that* is indicated by old-style figures in the verse-number.

(1) *Singular*, which, *bef. cons'ts.*, cf. 74, 78, 94, 106 (whiche B), 206, 527,¹ 1471, 7217. [Var. BC *whiche*; C *wich, whych, weche*.]—which, *bef. vowels*, cf. 261 (whych C), 7925 C; in which he, 366 (-e B, wich C); of which hym, 3345 (wich C, of the which D).—*whiche*, 54 (the *whiche* B), 1121 (*weche* B, *om. †* D), 1415 (wich C; D †), 2231 (which [that] ? B; *l. om. †* C), 2492 (which BCD), 2677 (*wiche* B, *wich* C, *which* D), 2689 (which CD), 2843 (which BD), 3374 (which D, *whichë* = *which she, haplography*, C), 5273 (which BD, *wich* C), 7578 (of which † he C, for *whichë †* cause D).—*whiche* he, 1712 (*wiche* B, *quych* C, *which* D).

(2) *Plural*, of *wich* that, 4236 C (whom AB, *wychë †* I E; in which that, 8199; *which* er, 3575; *which* I, 7569 (-e B, the *whiche* C);² *whiche* that 2858 (which B), 3427 (which as B, *wich* that C, *which* that D).

(b) *Which* as a relative adj. (not = *qualis*). (1) *Singular*, by which reson, 5710 (*whichë* D),³ cf. 7578 D. (2) *Plural*, of *whichë †* *sykis*, 4207 C (*wych[ë] †* D, *swichë* A, *shwich[ë]* B *defect.*).

B. *The which*. Used either (a) as a purely relative pronoun, or (b) as a relative adjective (not = *qualis*).

(a) (1) *Singular*, the *whiche*, 3565 (the *which* BD; C †); *bef. cons'ts.*, the *which*, 603 ([the] *whiche* C), 7241 (-e C). (2) *Plural*, the *whiche* he, 4884.

(b) (1) *Singular*, the *whichë* tale, 5328 (-[ë] BC); the *which[ë]* cote, 8016 (-ë C, -e † D †); the *whiche* thyng, 4331 (the *which*

¹ C has the *weche* for *to weche*.

² Supply [of] in A.

³ 9-syl., exc. in D; but we are hardly to read *which[ë]*.

B, the *whech* C).¹ (2) *Plural*, the *whichë frendes*, 6046 (-[e] BD; C †).

Note 1.—In 5930 we are apparently to read: "Soth is the wo the which that we ben inne," but the MSS. vary. *Which* is sometimes miswritten by the scribe for *swich*, as 3299 D (cf. 2435 D).

Note 2.—*Which* . . . *his* is equivalent to *whos* in "The kynges dere sone, The good[e] wyse worthi fressh and fre, *Which* alwey for to do wel is *his* wone," 1401-3. Cf. "*Which* with a thred of gold she wolde *it* bynde," 7175 C (but read *woldë bynde*). Cf., perhaps, "Er deth . . . Dryf out the gost *which* (so in ABD John's, *whiche* G, that CCp.) in myn herte *he* (so in ABDGcp. John's, *om.* C) beteth," 5572.

Note 3.—*As* is used as a relative pronoun (= that) in 3244 C,—*this as thou dost* (this that AB, [this] that D), and in 3427 B,—*thynges which as neuere were* (which(e) that A, *wich* that C, *which* that D).

swich, *such* (A.S. *swile*, *swele*). Examples are,—

I. Singular:

In A, *swich*, *swych*, *such*, (i.) 475, 550, 1794, 1970, 2153, 3338, 6627, 8001, etc.; (ii.) 296, 369, 521, 619, 762, 985, 1750, 1813, etc.—In B, *swich*, *swhich*, *shwich*, *swilch*, (i.) 127, 475, 550, 777, 1794, 1879, 1970, 3338, 3604, etc.; (ii.) 369, 521, 1351, 1750, 3320, 3382, 3604.—In C, *swich*, *swych*, *swech*, (i.) 412, 1794, 1879, 1970, 2153, 3338, 4070, etc.; (ii.) 296, 369, 521, 762, etc.—In D, *such*, (i.) 1794, 2153, 3338, etc.; (ii.) 2245, etc.

Note.—Forms in silent -e occur in all four MSS. Thus,—in A, *swichë* (412)², *suche* (1351); in B, *swiche* (291, 475, 562, 935, 1088, 2216, 2355, 3002, 3236, 7314, 7926), *swichë* (412), *swuchë* (1663), *swiche* (619, 762, 955, 985, 1713, 2245, 3176), *swichë* (296), *shwiche*, (2784); in D, *suchë* (550; cf. 2355, 4070). Cases in which we have an apparent -ë (before a consonant), as, *swichë*, 227 B, 4581 B (cf. 1393 C, 1970 D, 3306 C, 6627 D), all depend on bad readings; so also *swych[ë]* *aventure*, 5991 A (*swich[ë]* C, *suchë* D), in which we should read *swich* (*swych*) *an* (with B cp. John's Hl. 2392; *swiche an* G).

II. Plural³:

The plural ends in -e. Thus,—*swiche fyue*, 1211 (-[e] D, A †); *swyche tweye*, 1267 (*such[e]* D); *suche tales*, 1393 (-[e] B, -[e] D, -[e] *tale[s]* C); *swiche sikes*, 4207 (-[e] B, *whiche* C, *wych[e]* E). So we should read,—*swych[e]* *fyue*, 1213 (-e BC; D †); *swych[e]* *sorwful sykes*, 4203 (-e BE); *swych[e]* *twelue*, 5064 (-e D, -e *tweine* † C). Before vowels this -e is elided and often not written: cf. 1292, 2435, 3523, 3696, 3985, 4009, 4205, 6192, 6737. Cases of apocope occur: *swich thornes*, 2359 (*swechë* C, *suchë* ? D);⁴ if ye be *swych youre*, 1426 (*swichë* B, *swich* C,

¹ Either *the whichë thyng trowëly*, or *the whichë thyng trowëlyð*.

² Supply [*the*] in A.

³ Variations in spelling not registered except as they concern final -e or MS. A.

⁴ It is possible to read *swich[ë]* if we read *sendë* (*mittat*); BD have *send*.

such D); swych festes, 7792 (swich B, sweche C, suche D). For *suche thyngis*, 562 C, read *swech thyng*.

§ 79. VII. Other pronominal words.

same (O.N. samr, *definite* sami; cf. A.S. same, *adv.*); selue (A.S. sylf, self, *definite* -a), in the definite use,—the same prys, 1266; the same thing, 1269; cf. 2606, 4390 (the selue wyse C), 6087 (C †, the self[e] wit BD), 8018; the same hele, 7779; this same wyse, 5706 (the s. D); that selue wyse, 3197 (selwe C, self[e] D); this selue swerd, 5902 (seluyn C, the same D). (Cf. myself, etc., § 75.)

som (A.S. sum), *adj. and subst.* I. Sing. (i.) 33, 555, 844; cf. 973, 1215, 1344, 2210, 2884, 3333, 4658, 7068, 7115, etc. Irrational e's are sometimes found, even in A : as, in some lond, 1123 ABD; somme swych fantasye, 3874 A (som B, sum C, some D †). [Var. BD some; C sum; D somme.] (ii.) 1197 (-e D), 2079 (sum C, some D †). II. Plural, some, (i.) 240 f (: ynome *p.p.* : ouercome *p.p.*), 2234 f (: by-come *pres. subj.* 3 *sg.*), 3449 f (: ycome *p.p.* : nome *p.p.*), 5630 f A (sone † B, som D) (: to come : ouercome *p.p.*), 5730 f (C †, som D) (: come *inf.* : ouer-come *p.p.*), 7246 f (som C, somme D) (: come *inf.*); somme, 5657 f A (some B, som D) (: to come); som men, 1132 (some B, some graue D), 1341 (sum C, some D), 2503 summe C, some D)¹, 7123 (somen CD, somme han A), 7167 (-e BD); some, 1866 † D, 2669 † D, 3333 † D; some, 1132; som, *before vowels* (var. BCD some, D somme), 911, 1042, 2257, 2523, 4403; some han, 913; somme han, 7123 (som men B, somen CD).

And *somē* (somme G) wolē (wold BDG, wolde C Cp. Hl. 4912), mucche (muche B, frete meche C, monche D, methē G, frete Hl. 4912) here (hire B, her D, he G, and Hl. 4912) mete (mone C, brede D, meten G, be hem self Hl. 4912) allone (alon CD, al on G, alone Hl. 4912). See ten Brink, § 327.

And *som* (some BCD) thow seydest hadde a blaunchē feuere, 907, 909.

somwhat, sunwhat (A.S. sumhwæt), *subst.* (used also adverbially), cf. 672, 1646, 2078, 2394, 2410, 5187.

other (A.S. oðer). I. as *adj.* (a) *singular*, other (var. B oother; D othir),² both definite and indefinite, before both vowels and conso-

¹ Read *wold[e]* in D.

² *Otherē* is sometimes found in the singular; see 352 C, 489 C, 4055 A, 4826 C, 7039 A. In 343 C, read *othir enchesoun* for *othir entencioun*.

nants : cf. 348, 352, 444, 489, 577, 702, 707, 709, 1574, 1592, 1639, 1894, 2079, 2251, 2537 f, 2747, 3506 † A, 3586, 3953, 4050, 4573, 4826, 6180, 6493, 7573, 8044 A, 8055; ¹ non other wyse, 5955 (not otherwyse C); o tyme ek and other, 2537 f (: brother); the tother side, 7050 A (that other BCD); at the other out it wente, 5096 (attother C, at other? D); noon nother, 7039 B. (b) In the plural of the attributive use (whether definite or indefinite), *othere* (dissyllabic) is the regular spelling of AC, *other* of B, and *othir* or *other* (var. *odir*) of D : cf. 179, 355, 463, 465, 1583 (ootherē B), 1854 D, 2152, 2260, 2430, 2527, 2566, 3777, 4716, 5539, 5995, 8139 A. But *other* also occurs in A : cf. 26, 314 (other thing) (?), 1860.

II. As substantive : (a) singular, *other*, *another*, regularly : cf. 203, 643, 1449 (*neut.*), 2063, 2703 f, 3093 f, 3521, 3819, 4888, 5068 f, 5118 f, 5271 f, 5792, 5911, 7871 f. [Var. D *othir*.] *othērē* occurs : cf. 203 C, 3093 fB, 5253 A (prob. plural); an othēr in, 3618 (a nothēr B, another C, a nothir D), cf. 5351 A. (b) Plural. Forms as in I. b : cf. 1903, 3440, 5310, 6305, 6735 (oother B), 6738 (oother D); but I have not noted *other* in A.—these *othere* in (*pl.*), 893 A (othēr B; C †; other vertus ? D). For *othērē seyn*, 6735 C, read *othērē seyn [that]*.

Note.—For the genitive singular *otheres* (dissyllable), see 3792, 4532 (othir † D), 8127 (other † D); *otheris*, 3586 † D. [Var. C *otheris dissyll.*] For the genitive plural *otheres* (dissyllable), see 8139 BD (*othere dissyll.* A).

ech (A.S. *élc*), adjective and substantive; *eche*, 510, 2703 (*ich* B, *eūeryche* † C), 3031 (*ich* B, *iche* C); cf. 637, 643, 1127, 3263 A, 3266, 3850 D, 4182, 4890, 5069, 5911 A, 6204; *ech for*, 5074 (*iche* C, *eche* D); *eche rakel dede* and *eche vnbrydled chere*, 3271 (*ech . . . ech* B, *eche . . . eche* C, *eche . . . eke* D). *eche*, 1432 (*ech* BD, *vch* C), 1479, 3819 (*ech* BC), 4532 (*ich* B), 4888, 5000 (*ech* B), 6149 (*ech* BD); cf. 2063, 2567, 3263 C (*ich* B), 3792, 4074, 5911, 7871, 8112; *eche hym*, 1071 (*ech* B, *eche wight* D †); *eche a del*, 3536 (*ech* B); *iche*, 3275 C (*eche* D; *eūery wyght* AB); *ech*, *bef. vowels*, 1078 (*-e* D), 4644 (*-e* BCD).—*echone*, 4880 f (*echon* C, *eūerychon* † D) (: *allone*).

Note.—The *Troilus* MSS. give no evidence for a dat. *eche* (see ten Brink, §§ 255, 260 β).

eūery (A.S. *æfre* + A.S. *élc*) counts as a dissyllable (cf. ten Brink, § 262). The usual spelling is *euery* (cf. 84, 101, 185, 268, 328,

¹ *Another* is variously written *an other*, *another*, *a nother*, *a-nother*, cf. 577, 709, 1894, 3953, 6193.

382, 397, 444, 844, 1097, 1273, 1280, 1478, 1613, 1675, 1686, 1800, 1889, 1975, 2033, 2074, 2262, 2472, 2663, 3023, 3068, 3196, 3275, 3339, 3369, 3445, 3469, 3670, 3850, 4527, 6012, 6341, 6998, 7121, 7478 (var. *euęri*, as 3074¹ C, 3322 C). But *euęrich* (2251 B (*euere-ich*), 4338 B, 6533 AB), *euęrych* (6180 ACD, 6533 D, 7683 B), *euęryche* (512 D, 2703 C †), and *euęryche* (6533 C) also occur. In the following lines we must read *euęrych*, *euęry* as a trisyllable, or regard the verses as consisting of nine syllables :

Euery thing that souned into badde, 6338.

Euerych (euery C) *ioye* or *ese* (*ese* (is) C) in his contrarye, 7742 (D †).

Note.—Certain apparent instances of trisyllabic *euery* (*euęri*) disappear on comparison of MSS. Such are 2676 A, 3074 C, 3334 C, 3362 A, 3671 A.

euęrychon rhymes sometimes with words that have no final -e, sometimes with those that have. Thus,—*euęrichon*, *euęrychon*, 154 f (-oun B) (: Palladion), 5633 f (: on : noon); *euęrichone*, 176 f (-ychon B, *echëon* † D) (: allone); *euęrychone*, 847 f (-on C) (: ouer gon(e) *inf.*), 905 f (-on BCD) (: allone : grone *inf.*), 5611 f (-on CD) (: allone : mone *n. moan*) (cf. also 2683 f, 3254 f, 3507 f, 4880 † f D, 5529 f, 5440 f, 8230 f).

any, ony (A.S. *ænig*), sg. and pl., cf. 20, 23, 848, 963, 1259, 8044, etc. [Var. C oni ; D eny.]

eyther (A.S. *ægðer*), adj. and sbst., (i.) 4792, 7869 (D †), 8127. (ii.) 5695. [Var. BD either ; D eythir.]

Note.—For *eyther* in *zoure eyther loue*, 4830 B, A has *bothere*, C *botheis*, D *bothe*, EG Cp. *brother* †, John's *bothor*, Harl. 2392 *bothes*.

neyther (A.S. *ne* + A.S. *ægðer*), sbst., (i.) 5033 ; (ii.) 5792 (other † C). [Var. BD neither.]

bothe (O.N. *báðir*), *adj. pl.*, 139 f, 4782 f, 5698 f, 6506 f (both BD, *bethe* C) ; *bothe yow*, 983 ; vs *bothe two*, 1034 ; *hem bothe leste*, 4521 (*hem* † *two* † D),² 6880 (-[e] B). (Cf. also 687 (-[e] D),³ 984, 1248 (*bathë* † B), 1412, 1526 AC, 1572, 1585, 2277, 2373 (*bathë* B), 2825, 3262, 3784, 4007, 4065, 4160 BCD, 4312, 5254 † D, 5794, 5894 (-[e] D),⁴ 6176, 6512, 7497) ; *bothe*, 1414 (-ë *apaire* † D ; *bethe* C), 2961 (both BD), 4528 (both BD), 4955 (both BD, *bothe* † *zoure* C), 5546 AD (both B), 5592 (both † with D), 5595 (both B) ; *bothe his*, 2059 (both B) ; -e here (*gen. sg.*), 2914 (both B, -ë † D).

¹ Read *woyd[ed]*.

² brought[e] C, or supply [*that*].

³ Old-style verse numbers indicate that B has *both[e]*.

⁴ Supply [*we*] in D.

Rhyme words.—wrothe *adj. pl. pred.* (all exc. 5698), forsothe (5698).

Note 1.—There are no genuine cases of apocope (cf. 4955 † C, 5592 ‡ D).

In 1526 BD, for *bothe to deye* read *bothe deye* (with AC).

Note 2.—The genitive plural is seen in *oure bothe labour(e)*, 965 (*our bothe* D, *our bothis* C); *hirę bothe auys*, 3295. Cf., however, *yowre bothere loue*, 4830 (*cyther* B, *bothcis* C, *bothe* D, *bother* John's, *bothes* HL. 2392, *brother* † EGCp.).

owene, owen, owne, see § 53, V., p. 126.

men = one. The use of *men* as an indefinite pronoun (= Ger. *man*) is seen in *men is nought alwey (y)pled*, 3288 (man is C, men be D), and in *men was wont*, 5528 (men were wonę C). In such cases as *men clepeth*, 6674 (callyn † C, clepę † an D), 7576 B (-ęth A, -yn C, -ę D), *men seyth* (seyn BD) (see other examples in § 97), the verb may be regarded as plural (cf. *of whos folye men ryme*, 532 f, and see 241, 748, 7105 f). The form *me* does not occur in the *Troilus* (but see 5496 † C).

oon, on, o; noon, non, no (A.S. *án, nán*).¹ I. The full forms are found in all substantive constructions; so also in adjective constructions when the adjective follows its noun or stands by itself in the predicate. Thus,—

of yow oon, 350 f (on(e) BD, on C); to louę swych on, 369 (oon B); so goodly on, 373 (on(ę) B); quod first that oon(e), 5349 (oon B, on C, the toon(e) D); I loue oon(ę) best, 667 (on C, on(ę) D); cf. 203, 521, 619, 626, 955 (an B), 1668, 1923, 2259 f, 2666, 2770 f, 7271 f, 8227 f, etc., etc.

oon (*neut.*) thenketh the bere, 6115; oon (*neut.*) of the tweye, 494 (on BC; D †); auauntoure and a lyere al is on, 3151 f (oon(e) B, on(e) D, is al on C); euęre yn oon, 816 (oon(ę) B, on C, on(ę) D); they felle at oon, 3407 f (atton(e) B, at on C, at on(e) D); on(e) of tho (*neut.*), 5087 (oon B, on C, oon(e) D).

whan ye ben on, 2825 f (oon B, on(e) D); cf. 4247 f, 5254 f.

oon the best, 474 (on(ę) D, on † of the beste C); oon the beste knyght, 1074 (oon(e) B, on D); on(ę) the fairest, 1831 (oon B, on(ę) D † (i), on † of the fayreste C).

clerkes grete many on, 5630 f (oon(e) B, grete cl. m. on(e) D).²

nas noon so faire, 101 (non BC, so fair was non(e) D); cf. 188, 1287, 1587, 1830, 1862, 2826 f, etc.); non(e) of tho, 924 (noon B, non C); thenk not on smert and thow shalt fele noon, 5128 f none B, non C).

pes ther may be noon, 6021 f (non BC, non(e) D); other bote is noon, 4050 f (non BC, noon(e) D); other wolę she non, 3153 f

¹ Cf. ten Brink, §§ 247, 264, 270.

² B † omits *clerkes*.

(noon B, non(e) D); swych a ryng I trowe that ye haue non, 3735 f (noon C, none D); nor other cure canstow noon, 757 (non(e) B, non C, *om.* † D); cf. 1451 f, 1702 f, 1809 f, etc. cause non, 3993 f (noon(e) D); storye noon, 3341 (B † C †, non(e) D); lady noon, 6308 f (non C); bote noon, 7690 f (non BD; C †).

Pl., But whether that sche children hadde (hadde † c. A) or noon, 132 f (non BC, non(e) D) (: goon *inf.*).

II. In the attributive position, *o*, *no* are the forms usually found before a consonant (but C is fond of *non*); *on*, *oon*, *non*, *noon*, before a vowel or *h*. Thus,—

o day, 1573 (a B, oo C); *o* thing, 3725 (on C); not *o* word, 3899 (a B, on C; D †), cf. 1023; *o* god, 6506 (on(e) D, on † good C); cf. 673, 1122, 1253, 2118, etc.

no deuocioun, 187 (non C); *no* man, 238; *no* shame, 374 (ne † CD); *no* maner weye, 495; cf. 437, 590, 600, 631, 640, 670, 685, 689, 714, 722, 733, 737, 1281, 4118, etc.

Pl., *no* dremes, 7644; *no* suche tales, 1393 (non swich tale † C); cf. 7089.

oon entente, 61 (on D); *on* assent, 5008 (oon B, comune † D), etc.

noon other bote, 352 (non BCD); *non* yuel, 1666 (non BCD); *non* other wyse, 5955 (not † C); cf. 1538, 3826, 6805, 7039, 7451, 7573, 8055, etc.

Pl., *none* other fownes, 465 (doon † A, non C, non othir † fantasye D).¹

noon helpe, 695 (non BCD); *non* hosbonde, 1839 (noon B, none (?) D); *noon* harm, 1886 (non CD), cf. 1661; *noon* hope, 3257 (non BC, no D); *non* heuy thought, 3981 (no B); *noon* hede, 4671 (non BD); *noon* honour, 6771 (non BCD); *non*(e) hate, 477 (non CD).

Note 1.—As indefinite article *a* is used before consonants, *an* before a vowel or *h*: an other, 540 (another C, a nother B, other *pl.* † D), cf. *other*, above; an a, 171 (D *om.* † an); an asse, 731; an errour, 1001; etc., etc.; an heuenysh, 104 (a † perfit D); an heuene, 1722, 1911; an hors, 223; an hauk, 671; an hows, 1058; an hed, 1952 (han hed B); an herte, 2956; an hard request, 2990; an heigh matere, 3128 (D †); an halle, 3698; an helle, 7759; etc.

Note 2.—In 645 ABD, *Sith thus of two contraries is a lore* (on lore C), *a* apparently = the numeral rather than the article (see also the variants in the examples under *o*, above).

ought (A.S. *áwih̄t*, *áht*, *ówuht*, *óht*), (i.) cf. 578, 3309, 5947, 8100, etc.; (ii.) cf. 123, 1028, 3366, 7485, etc. [Var. B *aught*, *ou3ght*;

¹ In C, read *desyre* for *desyred*.

C ouȝt, auȝt; D aught, oght.] Woot *ought* my lord . . . this matere, 2711 (-e) B, ouȝt C, oght D); that I haue out myswent, 633 (aught B, ouȝt C, oght D).

nought (A.S. *náwilt*, etc.), (i.) cf. 444 f, 1690 f, 5180, 5729 f, 6463 f, 7483, 7527 f, etc.; (ii.) cf. 4878, etc. [Var. BC nouȝt; D noght.] For *nought*, *nought*, as a strong neg. particle, cf. 576 f, 807 f, 4344 f; an interesting "transitional" case is 1660 f: But for to saue his lyf and elles *nought* (-ȝt C, not D) (: wrought *p.p.*).

§ 80. *Al*, singular.

I. In its strictly adjective use *al* (sg.) is commonest before the definite article (cf. 212, 1192, 1224, 1506, 1833, 1966, 2626, 2844, 3220, 3277, 7581) and other more or less definite words. Thus,—before *this* (cf. 504, 551, 1101, 1262, 1383, 1509, 1934, 2405, 2446, 2580, 2675, 2685, 2798, 2892, 3173, 3302, 3358, 6764)¹; before *that* (cf. 1036, 3071, 4751); before *thilke* (cf. 2873, 3560); before *thi* (cf. 522, 589, 830, 2401, 2597, 3205); before *my* or *myn* (cf. 721, 873, 1954, 1956, 2083, 2770, 2977, 3020, 3085, 3235, 3843, 4140, 4146, 4749, 5602);² before *his* (cf. 265, 327, 665, 994, 1142, 1419, 1657, 2442, 2623, 2637, 3278, 3726, 6438, 6927, 7902); before *here* (*poss. sg.*) (cf. 2214, 2555, 2752, 2757); before *hire* (*poss. pl.*) (cf. 63); before *swych* (cf. 2824, 4241, 7125); before *yourē* (cf. 4741).

Note.—In these uses the word is regularly written *al*; but *alle* (*alle*) is also found.³ Thus,—alle this thyng, 2001 A (al BC, att the thinges D); alle this matere, 2514 AB (of † this m. C; D (?)); alle the richesse, 3191 (al BC, al the † rehetying D (?));⁴ alle this work, 3544 (al CD); alle that tale, 4245 (al BD; C †); alle oure labour, 948 (al C); alle his fulle myȝt, 1419 C (alle his ful[le] C, al his fulle A, al his ful[le] D) (cf. 7046). Cf. also, for *alle* in these uses, B 212, 1192, 1506, 1509, 1934, 1954, 2083, 2405, 2824, 3220, 7125; for *alle his*, B 265, 994, 1142, 2623, 3726, 6927.

II. The half substantive use of the singular *al* (as in: *here is al*, *al is wel*, etc.) requires no special notice. The proper form is of course *al* (cf. 544, 952, 1045 f, 1406, 1757, 2000, 2297, 2583, 3101, 3148, 3370, 3482, 3494, 3687, 4459, 4641, 7378), but *alle* is sometimes found; the final -e, however, has no significance, and is never sounded (thus: alle, 2583 B, 3370 B; alle, 1406 B, 1757 B, 3482 B, 3687 B, 4459 B, 7378 B). For the substantive use of *al* (sg.) as object of a verb, where the proper form is of course *al*, cf.

¹ For cases where no noun follows the *this*, cf. 351, 386, 2544, 2591, 2716, 4638, 5062, 5734.

² Remark 1914 f.

³ B 2626 is unmetrical, unless, with Furnivall, we supply [w].

⁴ Supply [*his*] in B.

1302, 1914 f, 2409, 2680, 3102 BCD, 3766, 4027, 4166 f, 5636, 8180. Here too *alle* is found, both at the end of the verse (cf. 4166 f B) and elsewhere (for *alle*, cf. 1302 B, 3102 A, 3766 B; for *alle*, cf. 4207 B), but the -e is never sounded. For *al* (sg.) used substantively after prepositions (as, *yn al*, *for al*, *ouer al*, *with-al*, etc.), cf. 396, 437 f, 921 f, 1129 f, 2306, 2494, 2655, 2709, 3306, 3319 f, 7183 f, 7682 f. As before, the variants in -e are merely graphical (cf. 921 f B, 1129 f B, 2655 f B, 7183 f B, 7682 f B; for *alle*, cf. 396 B, 3306 C). Exception—with *alle*, 288 f (: *falle inf.*). *This is the only case.*

Note. 1.—Observe: *he al hool*, 3855; *thy ldy vertuous is al*, 891 f (alle B) (: in general : *yn special*); *whos I am al and*, etc., 4449 (*alle* B); *this* (= *this is*) *al and som*, 5855 (*alle & somme* D), cf. 5936.

Note 2.—The spelling of AC is almost uniformly *al* (*aſt* occurs, however, in 386 A, for example). In D *aſt* is very common.

III. The form *allë* in the singular is found or required in the following verses:

In whom that *al[le] vertu lyst abounde*, 1244 (all[e] B, euery D; C is *diff.* †).

As *alle trowthe* and *al[le] gentillesse*, 1245 (alle . . . alle B, al[le] . . . al[le] C, in all[e] trowthe and all[e] ientilnesse D).

To euery wight that *alle prys* hath he, 1273 (al the prys C, al[le] pris D).

By *al[le] right* it may do me no shame, 1848.

In *al[le] ioye* and *surete* out of drede, 1918 (alle . . . seurte B, al[le] . . . seurte CD).

Thurgh which is *al[le] sorwe* fro me ded, 1930 (Thorough [which] is allë s. f. m. d. B, Thour wiche as † al sor f. m. d. C, Thurgh which is al[le] sorow fro me dede D).

To flemen *alle manere vice* and synne, 1937 AB, (To fle[me]n alle maner v. & s. C, To flemë al[lë] manere v. a. s. D).

Of *alle ioye* hadde opned here the yate, 3311 (al[le] B, alle . . . openyd C, al[le] ioy . . . openyd D).

With *alle ioye* and *allë frendës fare*, 3447 ([and] B, al[le] i. & al[le] frendis f. C, al[le] . . . al[le] D).

And in despit hadde *alle wrecchednesse*, 4629 (al[le] C, despite had al[lë] D)

And *alle worldly blysse* as thenketh me, 5497 (And (and) alle B, And euery wordely ioye C, all[e] wordly blisse D).

By *alle right* and in a wordes fewe, 5942 (al[le] BC).¹

¹ In CD supply [a].

As I that *al[le]* *trouthe* in yow entende, 6311 (all[e] D).

Thus Pandarus with *al[le]* *peyne* and wo, 6861 (alle D).

Enlumyned with the sonne of *alle blysse*, 6911 (enlūmyned with sonne of a. b. B, enlūmynyd with the forme of a. b. C, enlūmined with sonne of a. b. D).

And here I dwelle out-cast from *alle ioye*, 6978 (cast out C, out(e) cast(e) D).

And thus despaired out of *alle cure*, 7076 (oute BD; 7 lines om. † C).

But *alle trouthe* and *alle gentilnesse*, 7980 (al[le] . . . al[le] B, alle . . . al[le] C, alle truth and al[le] D).

But subgit be to *alle poesye*, 8153 ABD (*not in C*).

It will be observed that in all these cases *alle* has a natural accent, and consequently needs an ictus, and that the noun that follows is accented on the first syllable. In these circumstances the form *al* is obviously impossible. In other words, the verse will not bear such a phrase as *al sorwe* when *al* is emphatic: the poet must use a form *alle*, or give up the phrase. Child (§ 30) has cited several cases of this *alle*. Ten Brink ignores the idiom. Freudenberger, Ueber das Fehlen des Auftakts in Chaucers heroischem Verse, 1889 (Erlanger Beiträge, iv.), p. 35, remarks that Chaucer "vor Abstrakten im Singular häufig die schwache Form *alle* setzt, was auch die bessern Hss. meist haben," referring to ten places in the *Canterbury Tales* and to eight in the *Troilus* (1848, 1930, 3311, 3447, 4629, 5942, 7980, 8153). As to the grammar of the final -e, one hardly dares to hazard a guess.

If the noun that follows allows an accent on the second syllable, *allē* is of course unnecessary. Thus,—

As to my dome in *al Troyès cyte*, 100 (alle B).

To *al honoür* and bounte to consente, 2529 (alle BC).

Note.—In *al nyght*, either *al* or *nyght* receives the accent, but not both.

Hence,—*al nyght*, 3705 (C (?), alle B), 4308; *al nyght*, 3710 (alle B), 3715 (alle B, al † wold D).

IV. *Al*, whether adjective or substantive, has in the plural (1) regularly the form *alle*, which is of course elided to *alle* before (2) vowels, and (3) *h* in certain cases. When such elision takes place, we sometimes find (4) the -e left off, as in the case of all other words in elided -e.

(1) ye wysē proude . . . folkēs alle, 233 f (folk[es] alle C, folkys alle D) (: thralle *inf.* : bifalle *inf.*).

allē ye, 340 (al[le] D).

of allē louers, 376.

Mystrusten alle or elles allē leue, 688 (al . . . al[le] C, aH . . . al to leue D).

the Grekes alle, 1039 f (: falle *inf.*).

alle prowde (*omnes superbæ*), 1487 (al[le] D).

herē brighte thoughtes alle, 1854 f (aH D) (: falle *inf.*).

this othere termes alle, 2152 f (: calle *inf.*).

alle folk, 2695 (al[le] BD); cf. 2813.

hem alle thre, 2805 (C (?); al[le] D) (cf. 987, 3051).

on alle syke, 2903 (al[le] D).

thyne hestes alle kepe, 3261 (this hestis aH[e] D).

alle tho that lyuen, 3272 (al[le] BD).

of vs alle, 3600 f (of hem alle BC, of hem aH D) (: calle *inf.* : falle *inf.*).

as ye wommen demen alle, 3614 f (aH D) (: calle *inf.* : calle *reticulum*).

amonges alle, 3700 f (aH D) (: halle *n.* : falle *p.p.*); cf. 6614 f.

we shulle ben alle merye, 3794 (al[le] BD).

in alle nedes, 4614 (alle the B, al the D).

the goddes alle, 4930 f (aH D) (: calle *inf.* : falle *p.p.*).

of sorwes alle, 5163 f (: byfalle *inf.* : calle *ind.* 1 *sg.*).

hom they wenten alle, 5392 f (aH D) (: out of the halle : falle *inf.*).

alle, 5670 f (aH D) (: falle *accidunt*); cf. 5712 f.

among vs alle fynde, 6488 (al[le] B).

houses alle, 6910 f (aH D) (: out falle *p.p.*).

this drede I most of alle, 7067 f (aH D) (: by-falle *accidat* : falle *cadam*); cf. 5762 f.

herē corn and vynes alle, 7833 f (aH D) (: in stalle).

(Cf. also 561 f,¹ 903 f, 3527 f, 3530 † B, 5090 f, 5130 f, 6143, 6533 f, 6561, 6725, 6894 f, 6955, 7426 f, 7542 f, 7783.)

(2) men myghte on vs alle y-se, 1439 (alle se C; *om.* † D).²

the goddes alle, 3226 (al D).

his(e) wordes alle, 3339; cf. 4384.

I speke hem alle vnder correccioun, 4174.

myn othere thinges alle yfere, 5995 (al B, aH D)³; cf. 8134.

to fayllen alle yfere, 6114.

(Cf. also 240, 463, 688, 2858, 3449, 3608, 4109 † D, 4609, 5730, 6141, 7246.)

(3) alle herē (*poss. sg.*) lymes, 282 (al D).

¹ In all the cases in rhyme cited is this parenthesis the rhyme-words are infinitives.

² Supply [*myghte*] in B.

³ Supply [*ek*] in B.

alle here (*poss. sg.*) wommen, 3530 (al D, allē † wommen B); alle here sore sykes, 7397 (aH D); cf. 2513.

alle his goodly wordes, 7081 (7 lines *om.* † C, aH D).

alle hire (*poss. pl.*) goddes, 8213 (aH D).

(4) ye lyue al yn lyst, 330 (loue al in rest C^e).¹

al and some, 1448², 2234 (alle C).

al hire folk, 1995 B (alle C, aH D);³ cf. 1704.

aH hire fyngres, 2117 (alle BC, al D).

hire folk weren al aweye, 2279 B (alle C, *om.* † D).³

thei slepten al ifere, 3588 (alle C).

Don olde affeccions al ouer go, 5086 (alle BC, aH D †).¹

late hym haue al yfere, 2562 (alle B). [Singular?]

brethren al yfere, 5868 (alle BCD).⁴

V. But *alle* is the plural form before *the*, *this*, etc., when these words count as a syllable (ten Brink's rule, § 255). Thus,—

alle † the ladyis, 186 C (ay ABD).

alle youre obseruauces, 337 (al D).

alle the men, 838 (al D).

alle these othere, 893 (alle this other B, al the other † D †).

alle the othes, 1384 (al C, aH D; othēs B, othis CD).

alle the weyes, 1907 (al D).

alle the folk, 1973 (al BD). [Plu. verb.]

aH the thinges †, 2001 D (*sg.* is right).

alle the dores, 3075 (aH D).

alle the temples, 3225 (al D).

alle these thynges, 3641 (al this wonder B, of this wonder CD); cf. 2405 C.

alle youre wordes, 4409 (al B, alle these C).

alle the goddes, 4514 (al the goodnes † D).

alle the nedes, 4614 B (al the D, alle nedes AC).

alle youre frendes, 6218 (alle † oure C).

alle this nyghtes two, 6683 (al B, alle these C, aH thes D).

alle these thynges, 8086 (al B, aH D).

Note.—Allē these loueres (?), 2153 † A, needs transposition (*these l. allē*).

al the peple, 1743 (alle B).

aH the thinges, 2001 D † (alle this thyng A, al BC).

aH these thynges, 2350 (al this B, C †, al this thing[es] D).

¹ Can this *al* be adv. ?

³ A † omits *alle*.

² Singular ?

⁴ Supply [*and*] in C.

al this folk, 2652 (alle thise folk C); al the world, 3119 (al BC, al the peple D)¹; cf. 1463, 3119, 3264, 3318, 4765.

al the prophesies, 7857 (alle D, -cy C).

Ten Brink (§ 255) leaves the impression that *alle* pl., is usually apocoped before "syllable-building" article *the* (or pronoun), but *not otherwise*. This is surely not accurate. We should expect such apocope as well when *the* is reduced to *th'*, if the word following the *th'* is accented on the second syllable. Thus we have,—

This yard was large and rayled aH the aleyes, 1905 (alle thalèyes B, alle the aleyes C, D *om.* al).²

Indeed it is hard to see how we can in any circumstances have the order "*allē* ×" without apocope. Accordingly we find,—

Anòther daÿ shal tòrne vs àlle to iòye, 6293 (aH D, com vs al D).

This is o word for al, this Troylus 4502 (al, that B). [Sing. ?]

Now hem he hurte and hem alle down he caste, 1284 (cf. *varr. ll.*), is not a sure case. *Alle* may be merely the adverbial *al*. Similarly the construction of *al* is not entirely unambiguous in,—

And of the furies al she gan hym telle, 7861 (furies also ? C, furiès she † D). [Should we read *als* ?]

Me from disesis from alle peynys smert, 7783 C, should be emended to *disese of allē peynys*, &c., as AD indicate.

On hys by-haluē which that vs alle sowle sende, 2819 A, is also clearly wrong. The reading of G: On his half which(e) that soule vs allē sende, seems right, and is rather supported by B † and C. Cp. and John's read: On (Of J) his halfe (half J) which (*om.* J) that soule vs alle sende.

In 688 D, read *allē leue* for *al to leue*.

Note 1.—In 3765, *Considered allē thingēs as they stode* (al[lē] thing[is] D), is of course to be read, not,—*Considered alle thingēs*, etc. But cf. *Considered aH[lē] thynng it may not be*, 2375 (al[lē] thynng(e) B, *allē thynng(e)* C, *al thing wel(e)* D). In 1920, *al* is doubtless a collective singular.

Note 2.—In the following lines *thynng* is probably to be regarded as a plural.

Ouer al[le] thynng he stood [for] to byholde, 310 (alle thing(e) . . . for to B, alle thynng(e) [he]³ . . . for to C, al[le] thing (s)he stood [for] to D).

Nece al[le] thing hath tyme I dar avowe, 3697 (allē thynng(e) BC).

¹ In the case of collective nouns (like *world* = people), I have assumed that they take plural constructions unless the text has some indication to the contrary (as, e.g., al the world *is* blind, 3370). This remark of course does not apply to *al this world* = this universe, 3215, and such cases (cf. 3302). For doubtful instances, cf. 173, 804, 1573, 4086 (alle this world AB); 4446.

² A reads *garden*, repeated by error from the preceding line. *Yard* is surely right (3erde B, 3erd CD). C omits *was*, which must be supplied.

³ *thynngē* = *thynng he*.

In alle thyng(e) is myn entente clene, 4008 (al[le] B, alle thyng . . . entent[e] C, al[le] thing al D).

That most of allë thing(e) the sothfastnesse, 5742 (of al this thyng(e) B, of al this thyng C, of allë thing(e) D).

As to: Whan that he sey that al[le] thyng was wel, 3538 (alle thyng(e) B, wostë alle thyng(e) C, wist[e] that al thing D), see p. 109.

- § 81. The genitive plural of *al* (cf. Child, § 44; ten Brink, § 255) remains in the *Troilus* in,—
- alderbeste, 4439 f (alder beste B, aldyr best C, altherbest D).
 alder best (*adv.*), 1001 (alder best(e) B, aldyr best C, althermost D).
 alderfirst, 1062¹ (altherferst D), 4736 (alderfirst(e) B, alther ferst D);
 alderferst, 5494 (aldirfirst(e) B, aldirfirst D²); alderfirst[e], 2939
 (aldir ferste C, altherferst[e] D³).
 alder-lest, 604 (alderlest B, al there † lest C, altherlest D).⁴
 alderleuest, 3081 (aldir leueste C, alther levest D), 6939 (aldyr louç-
 lyst † C).
 aldermost, 152 (althermoost D), 248 B (addermost A, aldyrmost C,
 althermoost D), 996 (aldyr most C, althermost D);⁵ althermost,
 4107 † D^c.
 alderwisest, 247 (aldyrwysest C, altherwysest D).

ADVERBS AND OTHER PARTICLES.

- § 82. Anglo-Saxon adverbs in -e preserve their termination in the *Troilus* (Child § 69; ten Brink, § 246, *Ann.*).

Note.—Besides Anglo-Saxon adverbs, the following list includes a few later analogical formations. For *blyue*, *inne*, *oute*, *thanne*, *whanne*, see § 88.

blythe, 4836 f C, is an error for *blyue*.

bryghte (A. S. beorhte), 7383 f (-3t C, light † D) (: alighte *pret.* 3 *sg.* : myghte *pret.* 3 *sg.*); bryght and shene, 4700 (-e B); shyneth bright, 1849 f (-e B, -3t C) (: put . . . to flyght).

clene (A.S. clæne), -e, 4672, 7417,⁶ 7561, 8058.

depe (A.S. déope), 1655 (-e C), 3434, 5251 f (: wepe *pres. subj. sg.*), 6621 f (: wepe *inf.*); -e, 272, 4341 (-e † D).

dere (A.S. déore, W.S. diere, dýre), 8164 f (: pere *n.* : here *inf.*); -e, 810, 7329 (der D); -e haue, 4953. [Var. B deere.]

¹ A 9-syl. verse in ABD (C cut out).

² Supply [the] in D.

³ For *arn* (*are*) C (D), read *erren*.

⁴ Supply [me] in D.

⁵ Supply [him] in D.

⁶ Supply [saule] in B, [is] in C.

faire, fayre (A.S. fæg(e)re), 1413 f (: apeyre subj. 1 pl.), 4398, 5684 f (: necessarie¹); -e, 1971, 6710 (om. † C).

faste (A.S. fæste), 534 f (-t B), 748 f, 917 f, 1038 f, 1229 f, 1282 f, 1361 (om. † A), 1742 f, 1773 f, 1957 f (-t C), 1983 f, 1985 f, 2022 f, 2239 f (-t C), 2249 f (-t C), 2360 (-[e] B), 2443 f, 2650, 2795 (-[e] B), 2999 f (-t C), 3936 f, 4029 (-[e] B, -[ē] † hent D), 4609 (-[e] BE), 4779, 4792², 4884 (-[e] B), 4916 (-[e] B), 5182 f, 5336 f, 5576 (-[e] B), 5892³, 6901, 6959 (-[e] B), 7317 (-e † hadde C), 8004 f (-t C), 8185 f; fast[e] for, 962 (-e C); -e, 3069 (-t BD), 4705 † A (sharpe B, sharp C), 6736 (-t BC), 6817; fast (*before vowels*), 1174 (-e C)⁴, 2789 (-e C), 7019 (-e CD); fast he, 190 (-ë † he C)⁵; -e he, 360 † D, 2180 AB, 7598; -e here (*gen. sg.*), 7374 (-t B; om. † C); -e hadde, 7317 † C; -e homward, 2388 (-t BD).

In all cases registered above in which *faste* occurs at the end of a line D has *fast*, except in 5182 and in 8185 (which is not found in D). Old style figures indicate that D has *fast[e]*. In 1361 D it is possible to scan *fast*.

Rhyme words.—laste *inf.* (534, 1038, 1957, 5336, 8185), the laste, my laste (534, 917, 1038, 1229, 1773, 1957, 2022 (last[e] A), 3936, 5182, 8004), caste *pret. ind. 3 sg.* (1229, 1282, 2443, 3936, 5182), caste *inf.* (748, 1773, 2249, 2999, 5336, 8185), paste *pret. ind. 3 pl.* (1742), thraste *pret. ind. 3 sg.* (2239), faste *pres. ind. 1 sg.* (2249), agaste *inf.* (1982).—faste *adv.*: faste *adv.* (1983-5).

foule, fowle, -e, 5684, 6239 (foul B); -e his, 6129; -e falle(?), 5124 (-ë CD; -ë B †).⁶

fresshe, 2985 D (frosch[e]? C, fresshly A, freshly B).

hard[e] (A.S. hearde), hard or, 1353; hard hym, 4373 (-e C).

heighe, heyhe, hye (A.S. héah, héage), heighe, 1486 f (hie C, hy D); hye, 3026 f (high B, hy3e C), 5861 f (heye B, high D, in † hye C); heighe, 5658 (heigh B, high D), 6371 (?) (heigh B, hie † D), 6622 (heigh B, hye C, hie D); heyhe, 4985 (heighe B, hey C, high D).

Note.—For *hygh and low*, 3260, and *hye or lowe*, 2869, see note to *lowe*.

Rhyme words.—eye (*l. ye*) (1486), pryte *inf.* (1486), glorifie *inf.* (3026), dye *inf.* (5861), melodie (3026), companye (5861):

hote (A.S. háte), drenken (*l. dronken*) hadde as hoot and stronge, 4232 (hote B); cf. I hadde it neuere half so hote as now, 4492 (hote B, hoot D, ofte † C).

i-lyke (A.S. ge-lice), To seruen (-yn B, -e D) and ben (ben(e) D, ay ben C) ay (om. CD) *i-lyke* (*i-lik* C, *y-lyke* D) diligent, 2986; Was euere *y-lyk[e]* (*i-lik[e]* C, yholde † B) prest, 3327. (Cf. *lyk*, § 83.)

¹ So AB; -rye D. We must read *necessaire*.

² Read *ran[ne]* in D.

³ Supply [*hire*] in B, [*her*] in D.

⁴ Supply [*seyde*] in D.

⁵ But supply [*ful*] and read *faste*.

⁶ But *hath* in A is the corrector's insertion.

late (A.S. late), 3310 f (: yate *n.*), 7104,¹ 7504 f (: yate *n.*); late, 1483 (lat B, -ë war C), 3218, 7106; latë † is, 7433 (-e BC, -ë † it (?) D).²

longe (A.S. longe, lange), 59 f (long D), 617 f, 1487, 1630 f (long D), 2212 (langë B), 2325 f (long D), 2330 (-[e] D, -e B), 2475 (-[e] ? D), 2680 (-[e] D), 3043 (long † shal. D), 3647 f (long D), 4988 (-[e] D), 5133, 7054 f, 7225 f, 7495, 7565 f (long D); -e, 2008³, 2075, 3207 (-ë † ich B)⁴, 4159, 4270 (-ë † as BC⁵, -e [as] E), 5770 (alonë † be C), 6350 (-e † D), 6659 (lenger † endure D), 6795; -e he, 723 (long D)⁶; -e hadde, 5832 (-e † hire (*sg.*) C)⁷; longë † of, 2807 A (-e his B, long his D, -e here (*pl.*) C); longë here (*hic*), 3661 C⁸ (-[ë] D, alwey AB).

Rhyme words.—longe *inf.* (617, 1630, 7054), honge *pres. subj.* 2 *pl.* (2325), *inf.* (7565), wronge *adj. pl.* (3647), stronge *adj. pl.* (59, 7054, 7225, 7565).

Note.—In some of the following cases there may be confusion between the adverbial and the adjective construction:

For it were a long disgression.

Fro my matere and you to longe to dwelle, 143-4 (-ë dwelle C, for yow long to dwelle D).

Or that it be ful longe (long D), 832 f (: honge *inf.*).

Long streyght he hyre leyde, 5825 (-e B, a long ? C, longë streyt(e) D).

Ten dayes nys so longë not tabyde, 6716 (-e † to † † C, -ë to D).

How longe it was bytwene, 7449 ABD ([how] longe C).

Think not longe to abyde, 7518.⁸ (*Certainly adj.* = Don't regard it as tedious.)

To longe were it for to dwelle, 7847 (long it B, [al] to longe C, longe it D).

lowe (O.N. adj. lág-r), heng here hed ful lowe, 1774 f (lawe B) (: throwe *n.*); stoupen on hire stalk[e] lowe, 2053 f (: rowe *n.* : throwe *inf.*); lowe lowte, 3525 (-e † to D, low † risit (?) C); she stood ful lowe and stille alone, 178 (low BD); I . . . wol . . . folowe here spirit lowe or hye, 5861 (low B, forth † C).

Note.—In "For *hygh* and *low* withouten ony drede I wole alwey thyne hestes alle kepe," 3260-1 (*heigh* † a *lough* B, *hey* and *low* C, *hy* or *lowe* D), and "And *hye* or *lowe* after (after that D) a wyght entendeth The ioyes that he hath youre myght it sendeth," 2869-70 (*heigh* or *lawe* B, *hye* or *low* D), the construction is probably adverbial rather than adjectival.

lowde loude (A.S. hlúde), 1485 f (-d D, froude † C), 2005 (-[e] D), 2162 f (-d D), 3520 f (-d D), 3585 (-[e] D, -e † C), 7868 f; -e, 390 (-d D)⁹; -e † he, 6568 C (deth ABD), 7607.

Rhyme words.—prowde *adj. pl.* (1485), the proude *sg.* (7868), koude *ind.* 3 *sg.* (2162, 3520).

¹ "But al to latë cometh the letuarye."

² AD easily emended so as to read *late*.

³ Old-style figures indicate that D has *long*.

⁴ But read, *longe ich* [it].

⁵ In BC supply [when] and read *longe*.

⁶ Supply [as] in AD.

⁷ Supply [he] in B.

⁸ Delete the first (to) in A.

⁹ Supply [for] in C.

narwe (A.S. *nearwe*), narwe ymasked, 4576 (*harde* † C, narwe yma[s]ked A).

newe (A.S. *néowe*, W.S. *ní(e)we*, L. *neowe*), 222 (-[e] B, new y-shorn D), 440 f, 2985 f, 4541 f, 6628 f, 7013 f, 7020 (-[e] BD, -e † C)¹, 7696 f (new B), 7935 f (*anewe* † C), 7946 f; newe and newe, 2958 f (new and newe BD); newe, 364 (new B), 1907 (new BD), 5119 (new D), 7373 (new D, *newely* † now C); -e his, 2766 (new B, now † D); new hym, 4388 (-e BCD).

Rhyme words.—*hewe* *n.* (440, 4541, 7935), *trewe* *adj. sg. indef.* (7696, 7946), *sg. def.* (2985), *pl.* (2958, 7013), *vntrewe* *pred. sg.* (7935), *rewe* *inf.* (2958, 6628), *knewe* *incl. 3 pl.* (4541).

rathe (A.S. *hraðe*), 2173 f (: *bathe* *inf.*), 4867 f (: *skathe* *n.* : *bathe* *inf.*), 7300 f (: *skathe* *n.*).

rowe,—*loken* rowe, 206 f (*lokyd* row D) (: *browe* *n.*).

sharpe (A.S. *scearpe*), 729 f (: *harpe* *n.*), 2119 f (: *harpe* *n.* : *harpe* *inf.*); -e, 4705 (*sharp* D, *faste* † A). [Var. B *charpe*; C *scharpe*.]

shene (A.S. *adj. scí(e)ne*, *scéne*), 4700 f (: *bytvene*), 5901 f (: *quene*). [Var. B *sheene*; C *schene*.]

shorte; short[ë] for to syke, 2900 (*schorte* C). Cf. This (= this is) *short* and *pleynę* theeffect of his message, 5552 (-e B, *schort* C, Thus *shorte* D).

smerte, 4905 f (: *herte* : *sterre* *inf.*).

smothe (A.S. *smóðe*), That han here top ful heighe and smothe y-shore, 5658 (*smoth* D).

softe (A.S. *sófte*), 195 f (*soft* D), 279 (-[e] B, -e he C, *soft* he D),² 914 f (*soft* D), 2113 f, 3284 f (*soft* B), 3450 (-[e] BD), 3509 f, 4480 f (-t B), 5202 f (*soft* B), 5884 † C, 6710 f (*soft* B), 6982 f; -e, 1735 (*softly* † *synk* D), 2914 (-t B, *om.* † D),³ 4377 (-t B), 6446 (-t B);⁴ *soft* *vnpynne*, 3540 (-e C); *softe* he, 3408 (-t BD). [*soft* † *gan*, 5024 B.]

Rhyme words.—*ofte* (*all*); a *lofte*, on *lofte*, o *lofte* (914, 3509, 6710).

sore (A.S. *sáre*), 667 f, 751 f, 827 (-e † to D), 1080 f, 1540 f, 1642, 1647 f, 2182 B (*so[re]* A; do † C; *om.* † D), 2988, 3082 f, 3654 (-e † to D), 3748 (*sor(w)e* C), 3814 f, 3842,⁵ 3898 f, 4370, 5378 f, 5487 f (*soor* D), 5559 f (C?), 5783 f, 5848, 5879 (*for* † B),⁶ 6425, 6495, 7101 f, 7241 (D?); -e, 95 (*therfor* † D), 1200; -e he, 3964 (ë † he B, -e I † D), 4313 (*soor* B); -e *hath*, 1618.—*sore*, 1404 † C.

Rhyme words.—*more* *adj., adv., sbst.* (*all except* 7101), *soore* *inf.* (667), *lore* *n.* (751, 1080, 1647, 3082, 7101), of *yore* (5378). [Var. BD *soore*.]

¹ Perhaps adjective.

² *softe* he may be right.

³ *softe* [*ep*] on C.

⁴ Supply [*he*] in B.

⁵ In C read *sore* [*that*] I.

⁶ In C read *therwith*[*al*].

stille (A.S. *stille*),¹ 752 (*stil[le]* BD),² 2213 f (*stiH D*) (: *bille document*), 5183 f (: *distille inf.*); *stille*, 178 (*stil D*), 2000 (*stil BD*), 2579 (*stil D*), 3541 (*stil D*), 3790 (*stille C, stiH D*), 5016,³ 5183 f (: *distille inf.*); *stille* † *gan*, 1627 A (*-e BC, stiH away D*).⁴ [Var. BC *style.*] *stronge* (A.S. *strange*), 4232 f (: *longe pl. : wronge pl.*). [Cf. *hoote.*] *swythe* (A.S. *swiðe*), 5413 f (: *a thousand sithe : lythe inf.*), 7747 f (*swith D*) (: *a thousand sithe : blythe pred. adj. sg.*). [Var. B *swithe.*]

swote (A.S. *swóte*), *swoot[e]* *smellen*, 158 (*swote B, swete C, swete smellyng flouris D*).

thikke (A.S. *þicce*), 1541 f (*thekke C, thik D*) (: *wykke pred. adj. pl. (weke C, wyk D)*); *thikke*, 6018.⁵ [Var. B *thykke.*]

vnnethe, vnethe (A.S. *unéaðe*), 3876 (*-[e] B*), 7583 (*vnneth hym (?) BD*); *-e*, 354, 1089 (*-e † zet D*),⁶ 5485 (*-th B, vnnethis D*), 6394 (*vnnethes B*), 6762 (*-th B, -thē † vs D*),⁷ 7770 (*-th D*); *-e he*, 4095 (*-th B, -this D*), 6398 (*-th B, -th † for D*). [Var. C *onethe.*]—*onethe*, 4920 † C (*wonder is the AB, wondrē is the D*). (Cf. *vmmethes*, § 91).

In 1089 the accent is on the first syllable; in all the other cases, on the second.

warme, though thou *sittē warme*, 4472 f (: *harme inf.*).

wete, *ybathed was ful wete*, 5477 f (: *trete inf.*).

wyde (A.S. *wíde*), 629 f (: *gíde inf.*), 1700 f (: *ryde inf.*), 7458 f (: *ehyde inf.*); *wyde where*, 3246 (*weyde C*)⁸; *wyde*, 384, 1260 (*meche † knowe C, wyde know D*). [Var. BD *wíde.*]

yerne (A.S. *georne*), 2993 f, 3218 f (*3e[r]ne B*), 4774 f, 4863 f.

Rhyme words.—*werne inf.* (2993, 4774), *yerne inf.* (2993, 4863), *gouerne (gouuerne A) inf.* (3218), *deseerne inf.* (4863), *eterne* (3218).

To these may be added the Romance words *clere* and *ferme*.

clere, 1910 f, 6237 f, 6671 f (*cler D*), 6941 f.

Note.—In "*cler stol on a ground of sykernesse*," 3824 (*clere B ; clere D*," which on. *a*), *cler* is doubtless an adjective.

Rhyme words.—*dere adj.* (6237, 6671, 6941), *here inf.* (1910), *here ind. or subj. 1 sg.* (6941). [Var. B *cleere.*]

ferme,—and thow this purpos holde *ferme*, 2610 f (: *conferme inf.*).

¹ Some of the cases cited may be adjectival. It is impossible always to distinguish between *stille* adj. and *stille* adv. even in Anglo-Saxon (cf. Grein, s. v.).

² In C supply [*that*]. ³ Dele (*ouy*) in A.

⁴ Transpose in A and read *stille*; in B supply [*to*].

⁵ Supply [*ten*] in C.

⁶ A has *comynuge*, D *comynug*, for *comynug*.

⁷ In D supply [*it*] and read *vnnethe*. Supply [*wecl*] in A.

⁸ Supply [*so*] in D.

Note 1.—*Deuoute* appears to be an adverb in

Hire old vsage wolde thei not letten
As for to honoure hire goddes ful *deuoute*,

150-151 (: aboute : doute *n.*); but it is possible that the construction is adjectival. In 5552: This (= this is) short and *pleyne* theeffect of my message (pleyn C, Thus . . . pleine D), the construction is perhaps adjectival.

Note 2.—*Scarcē* (with hiatus), 1128 D, should be *scarsly*.

Note 3.—For *maugre* (O. Fr. malgré, maugré), prep., cf. 4713.

§ 83. Exceptions to § 82.

ryght (A.S. rihte), cf. (i.) (ii.) 99 f, 171, 288, 307, 1022, 1200, 2090, 2636 f, 3070 (ʔ) f, 4674, 7614 f; vnright, 7024 f.

Aright (A.S. on riht) has of course no -e: cf. (i.) (ii.) 2085 f (-e B), 2346 f, 3070 ‡ f D, 3494 f, 5073 f, 6125 (-e) B, 6919, 7480 f, 7943.

lyk (cf. A.S. gelice), (i.) 5322 (-e BD); (ii.) 1080 (-e D), 1129, 2700 (-e B, as ‡ D). vnlyk that, 2741 (-e BD). (Cf. *ilyke*, § 82.)

Note 1.—For *fayn* and *loth* in an adverbial sense, see § 85, note 1. For *adown*, see § 88, note 1, p. 201.

Note 2.—*Lest* (A.S. þý læs þe, L. leste) has lost its -e. Thus,—(i.) lest 319, 4013 (-e B), 4032, 4253 (list B, last C, leste E), 4815 (list B), 4828 (-e B), 5333 (-e D, 3if ‡ C); lyst ye, 2680 (list B, lest C, lest ‡ y D); (ii.) lest, 2133 (-e B); l. he, 5091 (list B); lyst it, 321 (lest BCD).

§ 84. Adverbs in *-liche*, *-lich*, *-ly* (A.S. *-lice*, *-lice*, O. N. *-liga*).

Ten Brink (§ 270) thinks he has discovered a tendency on Chaucer's part to use *-lich* or *-liche* before a vowel or *h*.¹ The following lists (I. and II.), which are meant to be exhaustive, exhibit the testimony of the *Troilus* MSS. on this question.

List I. contains all the adverbs which in any of the four MSS. show a form in *-lich* or *-liche*. When the same adverbs have also a form in *-ly*, references are added for that form.

List II. is intended to contain all adverbs in *-ly* not already included in I. Old-style figures indicate that the word that follows begins with a vowel or *h*. Variants in any way significant are registered, but trivial irregularities in spelling are not always noticed. It will be observed that occasionally some MS. has a form in *-lye* or *-lie* (see under *bisily*, *fermely*, *hardlyly*, *lustily*, *preuely*, *shortly*, *sikerly*, *straungely*, *vnhappily*), but this spelling is unknown to A and is chiefly affected by D.

¹ "Dass er vor anlautendem Vocal oder *h* vielfach *-lich* and *-liche* statt *-ly* gebraucht."

The somewhat reckless insertion or omission of an interior *e* deserves attention (see especially *trewely* and *softely*). Some of these interior *-e*'s are due merely to analogy (cf. Child, § 71; ten Brink, § 262).

An examination of I. and II. shows that, so far as the *Troilus* MSS. are admissible as testimony, there is no tendency to use *-lich* or *-liche* before vowels and *h* to the exclusion of *-ly*, but that, on the other hand, *-lich* or *-liche* is not common before consonants. In A *-lich* (*-liche*) occurs 25 times before a vowel or *h*; in B, 39 times; in C, 16 times; in D, 8 times; whereas *-lich* (*-liche*) before a consonant is found only twice each in A and C, three times in B, and once in D. In all MSS. *-ly* is far commoner before a vowel or *h* than *-lich* (*-liche*). In the following cases (*a—c*) none of the four MSS. has *-lich* (*-liche*):—(a) before vowels, 771, 978, 1064, 1357, 1369, 1448, 2200, 2335, 2451, 2691, 2936, 2972, 2998, 3062, 3180, 3201, 3296, 3312, 3351, 3591, 3642, 3643, 3723, 4028, 4187, 4385, 4561, 4656, 4840, 4886, 5042, 5615, 5668, 5950, 6263, 6382, 6423, 6846, 6853, 6922, 6941, 6950, 7189, 7197, 7300, 7304, 7445, 7527, 7656 BCD, 7728, 7853, 8067, 8171, 8209, cf. 1578; (b) before *he*, *his*, *hym*, *hire* (poss. sg.), *heres* (sg.), *hastow*, *hawe*, *hadde*, 89, 209, 274, 306, 366, 1645, 2157, 2344, 2378, 2409, 2504, 3398, 3496, 3632, 3922, 4169, 4416, 4424, 4430, 4458, 4752, 5057, 5106, 5474, 5586, 5612, 5617, 5787, 5855, 6100, 6579, 6869, 6885, 7899, 7947 (*-ly(e)* D), 7998, 8007, 8169; (c) before *helpe*, 2315; before *how*, 7449. In all, then, we have nearly a hundred instances of *-ly* before a vowel or *-h*, not counting those places in which one or more MSS. have variants in *-lich* (*-liche*).

In most of the cases of *-lich* (*-liche*) before a vowel or *h*, the adverb is polysyllabic, and an ictus falls on the termination (as, *certeinliche*). One might be tempted to conjecture that under such circumstances *-lich* would be preferred to *-ly* as a means of avoiding an hiatus which the ictus would make particularly noticeable; but even here *-ly* is very common (see *bisily*, *blyßfully*, *cürteysly*, etc.). In the present state of our knowledge, therefore, it is hardly safe to formulate a rule as to *-lich* or *-ly* before vowels and *h*, even in the cautious words of ten Brink (cf. also supra, § 72).

When the metre requires an additional unaccented syllable, the full form *-liche* is used, never *-lye* (see *sodeynlyche*, *tendrelliche*, *wonderliche*). In rhyme *-ly* only is found.

I.

certeinliche, 6463 B (-ly ACD). certaynly, -eynly, (i.) cf. 713, 1257, 1571, 2763 f, 3401, 4616, 5295, 5459 † D, 5622, 5681 f, 5714 f, 6681, 7197, 8079; (ii.) cf. 2451. certynly † I (with slurred -y), 1531 A (certain *adv.* B, sertyn C, certyn D).

craftyliche, 2111 C (craftily AB, craftly D).

cruwellyche, 5966 A (crueliche B, crewelly C, cruelly D). cruwel[ly], (i.) 8119 (cruely B, cruelly D).

delyuerlyche, 2173 (-ly C, -lich D).

dignëliche, 2109 (dyneleche C, dignlych D †).¹

ententiflych and, 332 (-liche B, -lich D, ententif(ul)ly C).

esilyche he, 317 (-liche B, -ly D). esily, (i.) 2073; (ii.) 2998.

eternaliche, 6202 B (-ly AD, -ally † within C^e). eternally, (i.) 5137, 5449.

fer-forth-lich as, 2943 C (ferforthly D, feythfully AB).²

feruentlyche hym, 6046 A (-liche B, -ly CD).³

formeliche, 5159 B (-ly A, -aly C, formably † D).

fullyche, 316 (-liche B, -ly CD); Therefore as (as a A) frend fullych yn me assure, 680 (-liche B, -ly y[n] D). fully, (i.) cf. 319, 2383, 2611, 2840, 3003, 3100, 3124, 3417, 3635, 3850, 4690, 4942, 4954, 7044, 7129, 7392, 8179; (ii.) cf. 391, 3180, 4656, 7720; fully his, cf. 4424. fully excuse (with slurred -y), 3652 (ful BC).

hasteliche, 5980 C (-ely AD, -ily B); hastileche the, 6787 C (-ely ABD). hastily, (i.) cf. 4284, 5577 f, 7656 † A (-ily a BCD), 7675; (ii.) 4886, 7656 BCD.

nameliche, 743 BC (-ly AD); -elych of, 1297 A (-liche BC, -ly D); -elich, (i.) 5254 C (-ly B, nam[e]ly A, -ely D (?)); -elyche, 5996 (-liche BD, -ly C). namely, (i.) 165, 7466, 7927; nam[e]ly, (i.) 6220 (-ë BCD).

onlyche, 5994 A (-lich B, only † but (?) C, onely it D),⁴ 7040 (-ly BC, onely D). only, oonly, (i.) 480, 1445, 3104 (onely B), 6330 (oonely B, onely D)⁵; (ii.) 3351 (C † D †); al oonly here (*eam*), 5758 ([al] only C, al onely D †).

outrelliche his, 1795 B (vttirly A, vttilliche C, vttillich D). outrely,

¹ C has: I wot thou nyht dyneleche ne mystileche endite. ABD have no *mystileche*.

² In A supply [I]; in D supply [*had*], or read *havë*.

³ In BD, read *The which[ë]* at the beginning of the line. In C the verse consists of nine syllables, unless we read *The wich[ë]* for *ffor wich*.

⁴ CD need correction.

⁵ Perhaps adjective.

- (i.) 8057 (-erly B, vttyrly C, vtterly D); cf. 382 f, 2089 f, 4328 f (outērely C); (ii.) outrely he, 5617 (vttirly D).¹
- pitouslyche, 6676 B (-ly ACD). pitously, pytously, (i.) cf. 2161, 2438, 2584, 5476, 5564, 5574 f (pitusely C), 5836, 6442 f (pitously C), 6623 f, 7244, 7787; (ii.) cf. 5042, 5911, 6922; before *h*, cf. 6100, 6579, 6885, 7947 (pitouslye he D); dispitously hym, 8169 (ful † pitously D).
- pleynlich al, 2708 B (-ly AD †, -li C). pleynly, playnly, (i.) cf. 395, 2211, 4519; (ii.) cf. 1357, 1448; p. hire (*poss. sg.*), cf. 2378.
- rowfullych his, 6353 A (rewfulliche B, pitously D).² rowfully she, 7092 (reu- C, ruē- D, ioiful † B); rufully, 2907 f (reu- BC, rew- D).
- scryvenlich † or, 2111 D (scryuenyssh A, stryuenyssh B, coryously ne C).
- secundelich ther, 2826 A (-ound[e]ly B, -undeli C, -ondly D).³
- sobrelyche he, 1733 A (-liche B, sobirli C, soberly D), 6656 A (-lich B, sobirly D, sobērēlichē † grette C)⁴; sobrellich he, 6869 (sobrely D, soft[e]ly B, softly C); sobrelliche he, 7536 B (-ly AD, soberey C)⁵; sobrelych on, 7292 A (-liche B, -ly D, sobirly C).
- sobrely, (i.) 3796 (-irli C), cf. 3000 f D, 6444 f; (ii.) 3201 (soberey C), 4840 (-irly D); sobrely he, 4430 (-irly C); s. hym, 4458 (-ērely C). [sobrely for, 7372 D (*read* shortly).]
- sodeynlychē red, 2924 A (so deynlyche B, sodeynli[che] C, sodenly[che] D), 3798 B (-lych[e] A, -li[che] C, sodenly[che] D); sodeynliche, 3934 C (-ly AB, sodenly D)⁶, 6617 B (-lych A, -ly CD); -lyche his, 3198 A (-liche B, -li C, sodenly D); -leche his, 8022 C (-ly AD, -li B). sodeynly, (i.) cf. 231, 1758 f, 3636, 3699 (sodeynly A; D (?)), 3801, 4084, 5924 f, 6563, 6855 f; (ii.) cf. 3642, 4028, 6853; before *h*, cf. 209, 274, 306, 1645, 4416, 7899.
- sorwfullyche he, 7996 B (sorwfully AC, sorwēful he D).—sorwfully, (i.) 114 (sorowful † D), 596 A (sorwful *adj.* B, sorwēful C, sorowful D), 605 (sorweful (?) C, sorowfully (?) D †), 1513, 4012, 6421, cf. 1603 † D; (ii.) 3643, 6423 (soberly † D); s. he, 3922 (sorwfulli [he] sight D). [Var. B sorowfully, sorwfully; C sorwēfully, -li; D sorowfully, sorwēfully.]
- sternelych it, 3519 A (-lich BD, -liche C).
- tendrellichē wepte, 5015 A (-lych[ē] B, tenderly † (?) C, tendirly † (?) D)⁷; -lyche, 5031 (-lich B, èntirely C, tendirliche D). tendrely,

¹ In B supply [*to*].² Leaf cut out of C.³ In CD read *deynlych* for *denyeth* C, *deignith* D.⁴ In 6656 C supply [*tho*] and understand *sobrelliche* as = *sobrellich he*.⁵ In B supply [*ful*].⁶ Accent in D †⁷ A certainly has the right reading.

(i.) 111 (-erly BC, pytous † and D), 7088 (-yrly C, -irly D), cf. 6445 f; (ii.) tendrely he, 5612 (-erly B, -erely C, -irly D).
 trewelyche the, 7414 B (-ely ACD); -elyche, 6077 (-eliche B, -ely CD); -eliche, 1249 B (-ely C, -[e]ly A, tru[ë]ly D), 2246 C (-ely AB, tru[ë]ly D); -[ë]liche, 6773 B (-elich (?) C, truëly (?) D, -ewely † A); -[ë]lich as, 7350 B (-ely ACD); -elych it, 246 (-eliche C -[ë]liche B, -[ë]ly D); -eliche he, 6476 BC (-ely AD); trewelyche, 6743 (-elyche † C (?), truëly D). [Var. D truëly.]—trewely, (i.) cf. 1326 f, 1713 f, 2909 f, 3001 f, 3020, 3677, 4331 f, 4778 f,¹ 5349 f, 5601 f, 5717 f, 5725, 6112, 6509, 6857 f, 7179, 7438 f, 7986, 8083; (ii.) cf. 5950, 6382, 6846, 7189, 7350, 7445, 8067; t. how, cf. 7449. [Var. B trew[ë]ly (*common*); C treweli; D. truëly, tru[ë]ly, trew[ë]ly, treüly, treuëly, truëly † (6846), truly † (7445).] trewly, (ii.) 1578 (trorwely † C, trew[ë]ly D); trewely, (i.) 6537 † A (-ëly BC, truëly D), cf. also 8067 (trulye yef D).
 vnkyndelich and, 617 D (-ely A, -[e]ly B, onkendely C).
 verraylyche, 4387 A (-liche B, -ly C, verily D); -lich hym, 6086 A (verrily C, verily [him] D, ver[ray]liche † it B).
 womanliche, 2753 C (-ly AB, -ly † him D).² wommanly with, 6940.
 wondurliche, 729 B (wondyrliche C, wonderly A, -urly D); wonderlychë loude, 3520 A (-lichë B, -irlichë CD).

Note.—In 5466 C *child lichera deface* should be *chylidishly deface*. In 6899, with *chaunged deedlych pale face* (*deellich* † B, *duit* & D, *pale deedlych was* † C), *deedlych* is apparently an adjective.

II.

bisily, bysily, bysyly, cf. 771, 2442, 3995 f, 5148, 5331, 5384, 5603 f, 6815, 6933 f † C, 7046. [Var. C busily, busyly, besyly; D besily, besily(ë).]
 bitterly, cf. 4543.
 blyssfully, 6933 f (busily † C), 8171 AB.
 brennyly, 607 (brennyngly B, brenyngë (?) C, brennyng D †).
 byhouëly, 1346 f (be- CD).
 coryously (*trisyl.*), 2111 † C, see *scryvenlich* in list I., above.
 cowardly, 5858 (couardely C).
 curteysly, cf. 5252 ABD.
 debonairly, 2344 (-erly CD), 2998 f (-erly CD).
 dredfully, 2213.

¹ In 4778 *trewely* is much more probable than *trewely*.

² In C read *saluwe* for *selwyn*.

- falsely, 38 (falsly B), 89 (falsely † C, falsly † broken D); falsly, 5855 (-ely CD).¹
- febely, 518 (fieibly B, feibly CD).
- feithfully, feythfully, cf. 1348 f, 2662, 4514, 4776 f AB, 7439 f (fey(i)thfully C, feiȝtfully D).
- fermely, 4330 f (formely † C), 4385 (formely † C), 6858 f (-lie D, frendely *adj.* † (?) C).
- fiersly, 4602 B (fersely C, freshly † A, fersly D).
- finally, fynally, fynaly, cf. 2409, 3398, 3848, 4877, 5547 f, 6089, 7377, 7398, 7790, 7818, 7998, 8007. finally, 682 (fynali B, fin(i)ally C, final *adj.* D).
- frely, 3484 † C, 4561 (-ly † D).
- frendly, 2972 A (freshely † B, frenli † suntyme C), 3201 (frenly on C, frendly vn D), 3484 † D. (In 6858 † C *frendely* is perhaps an adjective.)
- freshly, freshly, cf. 2985 (frosch[ly] (?) C, fresshe D), 4602 A, 5119, 6753, 7373; freshely, 2972 † B. [Var. C fresschely, froshchely; D freissly.]
- generally, 86 (*line om.* † C).
- gentilly, 1272 f.
- gladly, cf. 1336, 3484 AB, 4187, 6936 † B.
- goodly (goudly, 3832 A), cf. 253, 2347, 2575,² 2691, 2805 f, 2936, 3496, 3832, 3877, 4627, 6936, 6941. [Var. B godely, goodely; C godly, goodely, goodli.]
- gostly, 7393 (gostely D).
- hardely, 1389 (-i C, -ily D), 2510 f (-i C, -ily D), 3055 f (-ily BCD), 6182 (-ily B, -eli [ne] C, -ily [ne] D), 7527 (-ili C †; D †), 7669 (-ily BC); hardyly, 2097 (-ily BCD)³, 2802 f (-ily BD, -ili C), 7487 f (-ily BC, -ely(e) D).
- heighly, 2818 (holy † D, heyly [ȝow] C).
- hertely, 2362 f (-[e]- B, -ily D), 2762 f (-eli C, -ily D); hertely, 7304 (hertly B).
- holly, hoolly, cf. 366, 2206, 2818 † D, 2987, 3118, 4169, 5057, 5106, 5474, 6950, 8209. [Var. CD holy.]
- homly, 2644 AD (in BC prob. adj.).
- humbly, 2342 (humili C); humbely, 2804 f (humblily B, vmbely C, humb[ē]ly D), 7717 (humili C).
- inly, cf. 640 AB, 4448.

¹ In A read *hauē* as = *hauē ye*.² Scansion † In A read *good[ly]*.³ In A read *hardyly* [right] *ym*.

inwardly, 1349 f; ynwardly, 2817 † D.
 largely, 2792 (-li C).
 lightly, lyghtly, cf. 1374, 1753, 2324, 2473, 2732, 3062, 3646, 5131.
 [Var. B lightely; C lyȝtely (-li).]
 lowly, 2207 (louli C), 6537 (lawę- B, louę- C, lou- D); lowely he,
 2157 BC (lowly D, louę- A).¹
 lustily, 6931 f (-li B, -ly(e) D).
 manly, 5284 (nameli † C), 6393.
 mekely, 1101 f.
 myghtily, 428 f, 6625 f (-[i]- D, -ely B).
 nedfully, 5666, 5716 f (nede- D); nede-, 5736 (ned- B).
 nedly, 5632 (nede- B); nede-, 5668 (ned- B, nedfully as † D).
 newely, 7373 † C (l. fresshly).
 nicely, 7515 f.
 openly, 5225 (openly it? D).
 perpetuely (*quadrissyl.*); 4596 (-ualy B, -ueġ *adj.* † C, -ueġ D †).
 platly, cf. 3628, 3723, 5586.
 preciously (*trissyl.*), 5252 † C (*see* curteysly).
 preuely, preuely, pryuely, cf. 80 f, 380 f, 2200, 2261, 3592 f, 4427,
 5316 f (previly(e) D), 5787, 6263, 7513 f.
 richely, 1710 f (-[e]- B).
 sauflly, 5982 (sauely CD); sauely, 6850 † C.
 shortly, cf. 2567, 3018, 3312, 3390, 3543, 3959, 3998, 4278, 5003,
 5312, 5333, 5615, 7372, 7395, 8189. [Var. B shorthly; C
 schortely (-li); D shortly(e).] shortely, 3390 (-ily B, schortli C,
 shortly D); cf. 5544 C (shortly he D).
 sikerly, sykerly, cf. 1605, 3000 f † C, 3588, 4776 f CD,² 5314 f
 (sikirly(e) D), 7485 f. [Var. C sekirli; D sikirly.]
 skarsly, cf. 1128 (scarcē † in D).
 skilfully, 5927 f.
 slelyly, 1547 (sleughtely B, sleli C, slely D), 2270 (sleigh- B, sly- C,
 sle- D)³; sleighly, 6446 (sleighe- B, sly- C, s[ī]e- D).⁴
 softly, 78 f (C? D?), 1604 (-[e]- D, softly † hym A), 1712 f, 2621 f
 (-[e]- (?) B), 2814 (-[e]- D, softly B †), 2817 (softly † D)⁵, 3000 f
 (-[e]- (?) B, sekyrly C, sobrelly D), 3591 (-[e]- BD), 5017 (-[e]- B,
 softly † D), 5577 f † C, 6869 C (-[e]- B, sobrelly A, sobrelly D);
 soft[e]ly, 2335 A (-e- BCD); softly, 1604 † A; cf. 7516 f (where

¹ In AD supply [*this*].² In CD supply [*it*].³ In C dele (*this*).⁴ Supply [*he*] in B.⁵ In B read [*ful*] soft[e]ly; in C, [*ful*] softeli.

softely is no doubt the right reading). [Var. C *softeli*; D *softily*.] *sothly*, cf. 4350, 5459, 5627, 6850, 7372 † C. [Var. BD *sothely*.] *straungely*, cf. 7318 (-li(e) D); cf. 2508 f. *thryftyly*, 3053 f. *vnfelyngly*, 1104 f. *vnhappily*, -*pyly*, 666 (*onhap*[i]ly C, *vnhappy*[ly] D), 7300 (*vnhap*-p[i]ly(e) B, -*happi*[ly] C, -*happely* D). *vulgarly*, 6175 (-[l]y A, *wolgaly* C). *warly*, 3296. *wikkedly*, 1526 (*wekedeli* C). *wofully*, 1603 (*sorow*- † D). *worthily*, 1271 f. *wrongfully*, 414 f (*wronge*- B), 2504 (*wrongli* † C), 7853. *wylfully*, cf. 1369. *wysly*, cf. 205, 949, 1064, 1459, 6710 (*wisely* (?) C), 7654 (*wisē*- † D). [Var. BD *wyse*-; BCD *wisē*-.] *wysly*, cf. 2315, 3555 † D, 3632, 3767, 4343, 4360, 4495, 4752, 5043, 6026, 6106, 6519, 7728 (*wisely* as C †). [Var. BC -e-; D *wiss*-, *wisē*-.]

Rhyme words.—Adverbs in *-ly* rhyme usually with each other, but the following rhyme-words also occur: I (428, 1101, 1104, 1271, 1272, 1626, 2089, 2508, 2510, etc.), *by*, *therby* (380, 382, 1626, 2362, 4776, 4778, 5574, 5577), *why* (1758), *grant mercy* (1326).

Note.—In 2111 AB, one *-ly* seems to be used for two adverbs (cf. Shakespeare's *fresh and merrily*): “*Ne scryuenyssh* (*stryuenyssh* † B, *coryously* C, *scryvenlich* D) or (ne C) *craftily* (*craftyliche* C, *craftly* D) thow it (*om.* C) wryte.”

§ 85. The following adverbs which have *-e* neither in A.S. nor in the *Troilus* deserve notice:

amys (see Mätzner), cf. 491 f, 1398 f, 2133 f, 2593 f, 3015 f, 3112 f, 3687 f, 3876 f, 3967 f, 4022 f, 4471 f, 5933 f, 7102 f, 7430 f, 7549 f, 7641 f, 8047 f, 8090 f.

Rhyme-words.—*is*, *ywys*, *this*.

Note.—Cf. *that yet is mys* and, 5929 (*that is amys* D); *that is mys*, 6010 f (*that is amisse* D) (: *is* : *this*); *al that was mys*, 7789 f (*amys* † CD).

anon (A.S. on *án*), (i.) (ii.) cf. 75, 324, 349 f, 2096 f, 2636 f, 2840, 3396, 3406 f, 3516 f, 3545 f, 3991 f, 4704, etc., etc. CD occasionally have *anon(e)*; B sometimes has *onon*. (Accent in 2636 ?)

ful (A.S. *ful adv.*), (i.) 151, 167, 3589, 5472, 6630, 6633 (*fulle* BD), 7614, 7998; (ii.) 378, 626; *ful humble*, 124. [Var. D *fuH*.]

Note.—Ten Brink, § 246 Anm., notices that “*das steigernde ful* (*ful wel, ful hard* u. s. w.)” has no *-e*. Of the above-cited cases all but two are instances of this “*steigernde ful*.” These two, however, do not come under Ten Brink’s category: they are,—“*Who koude telle aright or ful discryue*,” 6630, and “*But fynally he ful ne trowen myghte*,” 7998.

hom (A.S. háim). See nouns, § 18.

nygh, neigh, neih, ney, *adv.* and *prep.* (A.S. néah, néh, *adv. and prep.*), (i.) (ii.) cf. 108, 180, 499, 543, 582, 2325, 3345, 5019, 5035, 5894, 6895. [Var. B neȝgh, neyghē; C nyȝ, nyh, nyȝh; D ny, nyē, niȝ (4404 † D).]

streight, streyt, straught (A.S. streht, *p.p.*); streight, (i.) 53 (streight B), 4802 (streight B †, streyt C), 5905 (streightē B, streyt C, streite D), 6655 (streight B, streyt C, streyte D); (ii.) 324 (streight B, styrte † C), 607 (streight B, streyt C), 6351 (streite B, streite D); streight[t], (ii.) 2258 (streight B, streyt C, streight † D); streight he, 5825 (streight B, streyt C, streyte = streyt he D).—streyt, (ii.) 2546 (streight B, streight D, [as] streit C).—straught, (ii.) 3394 (streight BD, streyt C).

wys (really neut. adj. used as *adv.*, cf. *y-wys*), god so wys be my saluacioun, 1466 (wis CD); god so wys me saue, 2063 (wis CD); as wys as I the serue, 3555 (wis C, wisly † D); as wys I neuere, etc., 6317 (wis BC, wisse D).

ynough, ynowgh, ynowh, ynow, inow (A.S. genóg, genóh), (i.) 2108 f, 2675 f, 2927 f, 3039 f, 4471, 4796, 5058, 5720, 6462 f, 6654, 7213, 7357, 7459, 7533 f; (ii.) 5346 (inow (of) C).

Rhyme words.—towh, towgh, tough (2108, 2927, 6462), lowh, lough *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (2675, 3039, 7533). [Var. B inough, ynough(e); D ynow(e), inough, inowh.]

y-wys, i-wys (A.S. ge-wis, *adj. neut.*), (i.) cf. 425 f, 802 f, 1213 f, 1313 f, 1814 f ([y-]wys A), 5353 (iwiss(e) D), 8095 (i-wiss(e) D), etc., etc.; i-wysse, 1012 f (i-wis BC, ywys D) (: this(se): ys(se)). Cf. *wys*.

Note.—In *euele*, *yuele*, *-ele* merely represents syllabic *-l*. Thus—*ful yuele fare*, 626 (euele C, evil D). This becomes consonantal before a vowel; as, *euele apayed*, 5304 (yuēl B, euētt D), cf. 649; *yuele as*, 6601 (yuēl B, iuēle C, yuētt D).

A few Romance words are used adverbially without termination :

certeyn, -ayn, -ain, (*a*) with accent on the ultima, (i.) cf. 492, 1475, 1476 † B, 2654 f, 3631 f, 4118, 5720 f, 5780 (-e) D, 7491 f; (ii.) cf. 5266. (*b*) With accent on the penult, (i.) cf. 674, 1809, 3996, 4782; (ii.) cf. 3938, 5864 (-e) D. Cf. the use of *syker* in 2076.

còmplet, cf. 7191 (*perh. rather adj.*).

egál, 5322.

plat, cf. 681, 1664.

seur, al so seur as day comēth, 5083 (*sure D*).

Several adjective formations in *-les* (A.S. *-léas*) are used adverbially (cf. § 49, note 5). These are (i.) (ii.),—

causeles, 779 f (*-lees* B), 3853, 6139 ABD.

douteles, 1499 f (*-[e]-* D), 1579 C (*-[e]-* AD, *trew[e]ly* B), 2614 f, 4220 (*-[e]-* E),¹ 4630 (*-[e]-* D), 4764 f (*-[e]-* D)², 5092 (*dought[e]les* D), 5161 C, 5897 (*douȝt[e]les* D).

dredeles, 1027 B (*-[e]-* ACD), 3368 (*-[e]-* AD)³, 3844 (*-[e]-* AD), 4738 B (*-[e]-* AD), 5940 (*-[e]-* A)⁴; *-lees*, 1041 B (*dred[e]les* AD), 1270 B (*dred[e]les* ACD).

endeles, 4685.

gilteles, 1413 BC (*-[e]-* AD) (perhaps adj.).

knot[te]les, 7132 (*knotteles* C, *knott[e]les †* out D).⁵

nedeles, 2612 f.

Note 1.—*Fayn* and *loth*.—The adjective *fayn* (A.S. *fæg(e)n*) is used in connection with *wol* and *wolde* with the force of an adverb. Thus,—*wolde* I *fayn* remeue, 691 (*fayne* B); I *wol* right *fayn* with al my myght ben oon, 2770. Examples of this use may be seen in 3064 f (*feyne* B, *feyn* CD) (: *ayen* : *seyne* *p.p.*), 3497 f (: *agayn* : *rayn* *n.*), 7358 f (*-e* BD) (: *ayeyn*); cf. 3769, 3854, 3945, 4359, 6432, 6550, 6914, 7595, 8104, in most of which the word that follows begins with a consonant. *Fayn* in this idiom has no proper *-e*, though B and D sometimes add one, which, however, is never sounded (so 2310 A).⁶ (Cf. *fawc*, note 2 at end of § 46.) Similarly the adj. *loth* (A.S. *lāð*) is used with an apparently adverbial force: God wot of thing ful ofte *loth* bygonne Cometh ende good, 2319-20 (*lothe* D †); For trewely ther kan no wight yow serue That half so *loth* yowre wratthe wolde deserue, 6509-10 (*soth †* C).

Note 2.—*Wonder* in connection with adjectives and adverbs (*wonder blyuc*, *wonder wel*, etc.) is sometimes regarded as the first part of a compound; but it was apparently felt as a separate word (cf. the adjectival use of *wonder* in such phrases as *this wonder maladye*, 419). For examples cf. *wonder blyue*, 7912; *w. cruwel*, 7831; *w. faste*, 5336 (*marueilously sturred †* D); *w. ofte*, 139 † A; *w. sore*, 751, 1540, 3964; *w. stronge*, 7564; *w. wcl*, 288.

Note 3. For *scrivenyssh* or *craftily*, see note at end of § 84.

Note 4.—For *half* used adverbially (cf. A.S. *healfe instr.* with compar.; *healf-in comp.* *healf-dead*, etc.), cf. (i.) 6510 (*-e* D), 7101, (ii.) 1152.

Note 5.—The following adverbs, etc., of various formation, are for convenience thrown together in a note:

ay (O.N. *ei*, cf. A.S. *á*, *áwa*, and see *o* below), (i.) cf. 186 (*alle †* C), 2488 f, 3376 f, 6515 f, 7074 f, 7158 f, 7985 f; for ay, cf. 4454 f, 4655 (*aye* D); tho forth ay, 1069 f; (ii.) cf. 180, 5593; for ay and o, 2167 f C (and oo D).

eft (A.S. *eft*), (i.) 137 BC, 4322 (*-e*) CD), 4374 (*-e*) D), 4395 (*-e*) B, *ofte †* D), 4525 † D (*erst* ABC), etc.; (ii.) 6391 (*-e*) D), 6979 (*-e*) D), etc.

est (A.S. *éast*). See *west*.

fer (A.S. *feorr*), (i.) 853, 2203; (ii.) 18⁷, 451, 565 (*ferre* [as] D), 888, 1301, 2305 (*fayre †* C; *om. †* D), 3275, 3325, 3502⁸; *fer han*, 4653 (B †);

¹ In E read *a[ʃ]s[o]*.

² In D, read *ȝe* for *is* (*yis* ?): otherwise *dout[e]les* is adj. †.

³ 9-syl. verse.

⁴ In C † perhaps adj.

⁵ In C read *thour[out]*.

⁶ For 7595 D is to be emended by transposition. In 2310 C we are to insert [to], not to read *fayn[e]*.

⁷ Supply [J] in A.

⁸ Read *lyggen* for *lyn* in C.

fer henne, 5908 (fere B); from a fer his, 313 (from affer C, from ferre her 9-syl. D).¹ [D has usually *ferr(e)*, *ferr(e)*.]
 forth (A.S. forð), cf. 2345, 4809; tho forth ay, 1069 f; emforth, -(e), cf. 1328, 2082, 3841; fro this forth, cf. 1094, 1529, 4976; ferforth (accented on either syllable) in the phrases,—so ferforth, as f. as, so f. that, thus f., how f., cf. 121, 2045, 2191, 4336, 5553, 5960. (In these examples no note as to whether a vowel or *h* or a consonant follows.)
 on . . . along (ylong) (A.S. on (æt) . . . gelang), *On me is nought ylong thin yuel fare*, 2086 (along CD, along(e) B)²; but it werē *on hym along ye*, 3625 (-e) B, on al† a long ye D).
 tho (A.S. þá), cf. 1600 f, 1766 f, 2290 f, 2487 f, 2913 f, 3968, 5402, etc., etc.; er tho, 6811 (or this C, or thoo D).
 wel (A.S. wel), cf. (i.) (ii.) 12, 57, 68, 76, 131, 167, 288, 1177, 1677 f (wele ABD) (: del : stel), 2297 f, 3538 f, 3552 f, etc., etc. (Often written *wel* in BD and sometimes in A (cf. 246, 837, 1677 f), but of course the -e is never sounded.)
 west (A.S. west), est or west, 7795 f (est or weste B, est and west D) (: best *adv.* : lest *ind.* 3 *sg.*) ; est and west (*as subst. acc.*), 2138 f (est and weste B) (: lyst *ind.* 3 *sg.*) ; by est or west, 7114 f (weste B, be(n) est or west C, by este or west D†) (: lest *ind.* 3 *sg.* : best *pred. adj. sg.*) ; by west and ek by este, 7556 f (by weste . . . bi este B, he † west . . . he † est C, by weste . . . by est D) (: byheste n.).
 yond. See note at end of § 86.

§ 86. Comparison of Adverbs (Child, § 70; ten Brink, p. 134). Comparative degree.

Of the "old" adverbial comparatives, A.S. *bet*, *wiers*, *má*, *læs*, *néar* (*nýr*), *der* survive in the Troilus (*a*); for *síð*, see § 88, p. 196. Other adverbial comparatives are adjective forms: (*b*) (I.) *better*, *more*, *lasse*, *derre*; (II.) A.S. comparatives in -or and their analogues.

(*a*) *bet* (A.S. *bet*), (i.) 275³ (*b. hire † C*)⁴, 1363, 2524, 3963, 6832 (but † C), 7284, 7629 (*beste † B*), etc.; the *bet*, 481, 1177 f (*bette* BCD) (: let *p.p.*, *lette* BCD), 1589 (C †), 1921 f (*bett* B, *bete* C) (: *beset p.p.*), 2600, 3819 (the *b. † other (?) C*); cf. 746, 3318, 3332, 4406, 5562, 6020, 7347, 7405; For yf it erst was wel tho was it *bet*, 4525 f (*bette* C) (: *met p.p.*). [Var. B *bett*; BD *bett(e)*.]
bet, (ii.) 3264, 3965 (B † C †), 4333 (the *bettir † endure* D); *bet* and *bet shal*, 3556 (. . . wil C).

wers (A.S. *wiers*, *wyrs*), *wers bygon*, 7691 (*wors* B, *wersē* C, *wursē* D); *wors(e)*, 2703 (*wers(e)* B, *wers(e)* C^c, *wors* D).

In 5856 f, *no werse* (*wurse* D) (: *aduerse voc.* : *dinurse pl.*) is an adjective.

mo (A.S. *má*), *euerē mo*, 1465 f (-*more † D*), 4268 f, 4603 f (*euer morē † moo* E); cf. 418 f, 787 f, 6088 f, 7026 f, 7418 f, 7502 f. *neuerē mo*, 2498 (*neueuermore † C*; D †); cf. 5645 f.

¹ Or supply [a] in D.

² Dele (*al*) in C.

³ Old-style figures indicate that D reads *better*, *betir*, *bettir*, *betre*, though the metre calls for *bet* (cf. 746 C).

⁴ Supply [*gan*] in A.

Rhyme words.—to and fro (418, 6088), two (418), also (5645), so (1465, 4603, 7502), wo (787, 1465, 4268, 7418), go *inf.* (4268, 4603, 6088, 7026, 7502), ago *p.p.* (7418), tho *adv.* (7026). [Var. BE *moo.*]

les (A.S. *lés*), preserved in *nathëles* (A.S. *ná þé lés*), (i.) cf. 19, 170 f (: makeles : prees), 750, 916, 923, 1552, 3011, 3214, 3424, 3827, 3925, 4327, 5185, 5716, 6098, 6462, 6546, 6872, 7141, 7232, 7932, 8002; (ii.) cf. 5536, 5629; n. he, cf. 4814, 7547.

C usually has *neure the les* (trissyllabic, as if *ne'ertheless*). Other variants are *nathelces*, 750 B, 916 B, 3011 A; *nathales*, 5536 B; *nethelcs*, 3925 D, 4327 D; *nathelless*, 5716 D, 7232 D; *newerles*, 6872 C; *nath[e]lcs*, 6098 A.

Note.—For *lest* (A.S. *þý lés þe*), see § 87, n. 3.

ner (A.S. *néar, nýr*), the ner the fyr, 449; the ner he was, 448.

Ner I come, 1647, may be either positive or comparative, and there is a similar uncertainty with regard to 2902 (*nerre D*)¹, 4404 (*niþþ D*), and 6443 (*neer B, nere he D*). For the positive *ner, neer*, cf. 451, 582 C.

(b) II. *bettle, betre* (A.S. *bet(t)re, neut. comp.*), 2300 f (*betere C*); b. plese, 3728 (*better BD, betere C*); *bettle his*, 3729 (*more BC, better D*); the *bettle*, 2780 f (*bettere BC*); the b. *pleyne*, 2616 (*bettere B, betere C, betir D*); the *bettle at*, 6013 (*bettire C, better D*.) (All dissyl. except 3729, 6013.)

Rhyme-words.—*lettre* (2300, 2780), *vnfettle inf.* (2300).

more, (A.S. *máre, neut. comp.*), 647 f, 669 f, 753 f, 883 (C †), 885 (-e C), 931 (-e C † D †), 1082 f, 1820 AB, 2413 (D †), 2424 f, 4061, 5380 f, 5488 f (*mor D*), 6007 f (D †), 6387 f, 6851, 7036 f, 7282 (C †), 7283, 7716 f, 7719 f, 8096 f (cf. 2540 C, 5610 D); -e, 2556, 3324 (D †), 4021, 4494 (-ë † me C), 4919 (*om. † D*), 6007 (*mor B; D †*), 7036, 7329 (-ë † to C; D †), 7744, 7751 CD (*manere † A*); more he, 448; more here (*sing.*), 2717 (C †); but,—*nomorë haue*, 3013 (*namorë han B, no more han C †*).

more than, 376², 532 (-ë † D), 537 (*mor B; D (‡)*), 578 (-e C (‡); *mor † D*), 1425, 3162 (-ë B; C † D †), 3873, 4389, 5654; the more that, 406 (-ë C † D); more † thrust, 406 D; ne more desirede, 567 (*ner more D*); *nomore com*, 1515; for euerë more myn, 1915 (*mo BC*); euerë more whan, 4243 (*mo BC*); *nomore come*, 6130 (*nomor B, no morë † C*); euerë more lo, 4946 (cf. 2498 C)³. But,—*morë than*, 1226 (-e C), 3289; *morë that*, 4493; *morë thing*, 539 (*more þe C, mor ye D*).

Rhyme words.—*lore n.* (647, 753, 1082, 2424, 6387), *sore adv.* (669, 753, 1082, 5380, 5488), *adj. pl.* (2424, 7036, 7716), *soore inf.* (669), of yore (5380 8097), *restore inf.* (6007), *more adv.* (7716), *no more subst.* (8096). [Var. BD *moore.*]

¹ Supply [*in*] in A.

² We can avoid *more* in this verse, but only by reading *alle louers* instead of *alle louers*.

³ *I kan no more but*, 4654, seems to be substantive.

lasse (A.S. læsse, *neut. comp.*), 284 (lesse B; C †), 651 (lesse BD), 1986 (las[se] D, lesse hire B)¹; lasse hadde, 886; the lasse, 2928 f (the les CD), 5278 f, 5794 (the lesse C), 5971 (the lesse D, lasse B, lesse² C); the lasse, 967 (the lesse, B, [the] lasse D).

Rhyme-words.—masse *missam* (2928), passe *inf.* (2928, 5278).

derre (A.S. décorre, *neut. comp.*), boughten they . . . it derre, 136 f (dere BD) (: werre *n.*); to ben presed derre, 174 f (: sterre).

II. depperē (A.S. déoppor), 1570 (depter † B, depper D).

ferther (A.S. furðor), f. go, 3123 (-erē C, forther BD)³; ferther-ouer, 5689 (further o. D, further now B); no ferthere out, 5969 (forther B, further D).

gladlyer (*dissyl.*), (ii.) 8140 (-lier B, gladder D).

hyer (A.S. héa(h)or), 2671 (heighere B, heyzere C, hier D).

lengere, lenger, longere (A.S. leng); lengere, 1065 (langer B), 1683 (neuere C, neuere (‡) D), 2478, 2699 (D †), 3010, 3183,⁴ 3400 (-er B, -ere C, -er aftir D), 6370, 7273, 7562 (cf. 5370 C (-er D †))⁵; lengere, 2603, 2707 (*line om.* † C), 4870⁶, 8029 (langer B); lengere here (*hic*), 4970; longere, 2327 (lengere C). (In all the instances so far cited, unless there is a note to the contrary, B has *longer*, D *lenger*). lenger, (i.) 5610 (nothyng † C, morē † D), 5852 (langer B, more C †).

leuere vnwyst, 2594 (levere D).

rathere, rather (A.S. hraðor), (i.) cf. 835, 865, 3221, 3415, 4825, 5186, 5256, 5589, 5701, 6410; (ii.) rathere, 5650 (-er BD); -ere here (*hic*), 6111 (-er BD); -ere anoon, 5102 (-er sterue B, -ere s. C; *om.* † D).

sonner, 1771 (sonere C).

Note.—For *after* (adv. and prep.) cf. 30, 1581, 2434, 4888, 5597, etc.; for *heder*, *hider*, *hyder*, cf. 5594, 6022, 6849 f, 6977; for *whider*, *wheder*, cf. 3233, 4944, 5309, 6791, 6849 f; for *yonder*, *yender*, cf. 2231 f, 3505 f, 6928 (yende A), 6931, 7032, 7033 (for *yonder* as an adjective cf. *that yonder place*, 6943; *the yonder hill*, 6973; *zondir † he*, 2369 C (*yend* A, *zonde* B, *zend* D †); *yender † I*, 6975 D (*yond* A, *zonde* BC); *zondir is*, 7525 C (*zond is* B, *yond nys* A, *yonde nys* D)⁸; for *outher*, *outher* (*other* . . . or, cf. 1501, 2433, 2436, 5193; for *other* (= or), cf. 3665 A (or BCD); for *neyther* (*neither*) . . . *ne* (*nor*), cf. 312, 1370, 3364, 5433, 5926; for *whether*, cf. 425, 1398, 2237, 5673; for *wher*, *where* (= *whether*), cf. 270, 2348, 2551 C, 2736, 2908, 3888, 5493, 5824, 6356.

¹ This line is best scanned "And ay gan loue hire lassē for to agaste." In B, transpose *lesse* and *hire*.

² BC *om. the*.

⁴ Read *may* for *make* in A.

⁶ D † (supply [*in*] and read *blis[se]*).

⁸ In 6928 B for *zonder saugh ich* (*yender saugh* D, *zondyr say* C, *yende saugh* A) read *yond saugh ich*. 6936 B for *zonder so* (-ir C, *yonder* D), read *yond so* (with A); in 7521 C for *zondir sche*, read *yond she* (-e D, *zonde* B). For *yond*, cf. also 5685.

³ Supply [*wol*] in A.

⁵ This stanza is not in AB.

⁷ In A supply [*ye*].

§ 87. The superlative adverbs *best* and *mest*, when preceded by the definite article, may take an *-ē* after the analogy of adjectives (cf. Child, § 70; ten Brink, p. 137, Anm.).

The following are all the cases in which *the* is used with these superlatives in the *Troilus*:

on the bêst[ē] souned ioly harpe, 2116 (on the bestē sowned B, (vp)on the bestē sounēd(e) (?) C, (vp)on the best[ē] sownyd (?) D).
the beste ynōrissheð, 7184 (best BD); the beste entēchēd, 7195 (best BD); [the] beste yprēsēd, 7836 (the beste C, the best D, the best [y]preysed B).

the mestē stormy life, 1863 (moost[ē] B, mostē C, most[ē] D).

the most[ē] fre, 1073 (moost[ē] BD).

When no *the* precedes, the forms are *best* and *most*. Cf. for *best* (i.) (ii.) 47, 332 f (: lyst n., leste B, rest C^e), 718, 1001 (alderbest), 1322, 1914, 2481 f (: yf the lyste, lest B, lyst CD), 2515, 2667, 2697, 2758, 3196, 3208, 3454, 3901, 4107, 4494, 4822, 4951, 6752, 6792, 6995, 7137, 7145, 7440, 7630, 7677, 7793 f (: west : lest *lubet*), 8064. For *most*, cf. (i.) (ii.) 152, 230, 242, 720 f, 1332, 1748, 2235, 2453 f (: wost *scis*), 2495 f (: wost), 3523, 4617, 4628, 4947, 5223, 5259 f (: ost : wost), 6283 f, 6955, 7067, 7426, 8120, 8143, 8210, etc.

Note 1.—In none of these cases is *best* or *most* preceded by *the* or by a demonstrative or possessive pronoun. In all of them A has the form *best* or *most*. Variants in *-e* occur, but the *-e* is never sounded (for *most(e)*, cf. (i.) 1332 B, 2235 B, 5259 f D, 6283 f, etc.; for *best(e)* (i.) (ii.), see B in 1001, 2515, 2667, 3454, 4494, 7740, 7793 f).

Note 2.—For *almost* *almost* (A.S. eal- æl-mæst), cf. (i.) (ii.) 1855, 2906 f, 2995, 3138 f, 5368.

Note 3.—*Best* and *mest* excepted, no superlative adverbs take an *-e* in the *Troilus*. Examples are (i.) (ii.): *first*, *fyrst*, *ferst* (cf. 381, 659, 1875, 4076, 4834, 6318, 6930, 6944, etc., etc.), var. BD *first(e)*; *last* (cf. 7550 *-(e)* B; D (?)); *erst* (cf. 299, 842, 2425, 4389, 4512, 4518, 4525, 4830), var. BD *arst*; *next*, *next*, as adverb (cf. 2067, 3386, 4098, 4100), as preposition (cf. 399, 941 (9-syl.), 943, 944, 1729); *lest* (cf. 1925, 2236, 4110¹); *strongest feythed*, 1000 (*strongest* B, *strongest fichid* C); see also *alderfirst*, *alderlest*, § 81.

§ 88. The following particles, of various formation, appear in the *Troilus* sometimes or always with an *-e* (cf. Child, § 72).

In this list are thrown together, for convenience: (i.) particles in A.S. *-an*, *-on*,—*aboute*, *abouen*, *-e*, *byforn*, *byfore*, *toforn*, *byhynden*, *-e*,

¹ Perhaps substantive in the accusative case.

bitwene, selde, sithen (etc.), *withinne, withouten, -e*; cf. *aside, byside*; (ii.) particles in A.S. *-a,—soone, yore*; (iii.) *inne, oute, out, thanne, whanne*; (iv.) *nowthe* (A.S. *nú þá*); (v.) *-mele* (A.S. *mælum*); (vi.) *atwynne, yfere, blyue, bothe*; (vii.) *therfore, -for, wherfore, -for*. For *down, adown, gruf, asunder*, see notes at end of list. For *by weste*, see § 85, note 5.

aboute, abowte (A.S. *ymbútan, onbútan*), 149 f, 268 f¹, 1819 f † C, 1904 f, 2478 f, 2556, 3523 f, 3950, 4692 (-[ē] D), 5063 f, 5342 f, 5364 (C †), 5377 f, 5937 f, 6231 f (C †), 6448 f, 6463, 6763 f, 7483 (aboutē C †), 7657 f, 7814 f, 7859 f, 8008 f; *-e*, 2553 (-t D, -ē for? C †), 4072, 6586; *-e his*, 3911, 4575 (D †), 6618, 7588, 7595; *-e hym*, 4562 (hym aboute alwey A, *which transpose*); *-e her* (*sing.*), 3642 (-yn C), 5479², 5531 (*-e* (?) † B); aboutē thin, thi, 863 (-t C), 7019; *-e the*, 4904; but,—abowtē this, 3380 (-ēn B, -[ē] D, -yn his C).

Rhyme-words.—doute *n.* (149, 1819, 2478, 5063, 5937, 6231, 7657, 7814, 8008), route *n.* (268, 1904, 5063, 5342, 5377, 6448, 6763, 7859), deuoute (149), lowte *inf.* (3523), with-oute (268, 3523), stoute *adj. pl.* (7814, 7859).

abouen, aboute (A.S. *on-bufan*); aboute, 230 f, 3720 f, 3869 f, 7367 f, 8193 f, 8207 f; aboutē euery, 6517 (-ēn B, -yn C, *-e?* D †); aboute, 3617 (vpon † C), 8182; aboutē † thi, 3580 A³; *-e the goddess*, 4930 (-ÿn goddis C); aboutēn, (ii.) 6341, 6561 (-ē C, -yn D).

Rhyme words.—loue *n.* (*all*), shone *p.p.* (3869).

aside, asyde (as if A.S. *on sidan*), *-e*, 291 (on syde D; C †), 5886 (*om.* † C); *-e his*, 7290 (*-e a BCD*).

a-twynne (cf. O.N. *tvinnr*), 4508 f (a twyn D) (: *bygynne inf.*), 6276 f (a-twyn C) (: *wynne inf.* : with-inne). (Cf. *atwo*, etc., 6893 f.)

blyue (A.S. *bí lífe*), 595 f (bilyue B), 958 f (bylyue B), 1222 f, 1293 f, 2622 f, 2690 f, 3067 f, 4836 f (blythe † C),⁴ 5157 f (blyf C), 6017 f, 6526 f, 6759 f (bilyue B), 7912 f; b[e]lyue, 2598 f (belyue C, blyue? D).

Rhyme-words.—thriue, thryue *inf.* (958, 1222, 1293, 2690), dryue *inf.* (2598, 2622, 3067, 5157, 6017, 6759, 7912), stryue *inf.* (4836, 6526, 7912), al my lyue⁵ (595), my lyue⁵ (1293), yn al his lyue (2622), his lyue⁵ (6526), on lyue (1222, 5157), of lyue (2690), hyue *n.* (6017), fyue (6759). [Var. D blive.]

bothe (bothen) . . . and (O.N. *báðir pron.*, cf. A.S. *bá, bá-twá*); bothe thow and I, 711 (bothen B); bothe fals and foul is, 6746 (-[e] B); so *bothe . . . and* in 168 (D †), 7131 (-[e] B), 8077 (-[e]

¹ Old-style figures indicate that D has *about*.

² BC have *vpon*, D has *on* (l. *vpon*).

³ Expressing *time*.

⁴ Supply [a] in D.

⁵ In D read a[l]s[ol].

B); bothe . . . and¹, cf. 97, 130, 167, 264, 464, 1396, 1397, 5340, 5705; bothe he . . . and, 1718 (D †); bothe heroner and faukon, 5075 (both B, bothe † goshauk and C^c): But,—As seyden *bothę* the meest and ek the leeste, 6803 BD (bothe meste = both the meste C, A *om.* ek); cf. 167 AB (-e C), 1862 † D, 2423 † D.—bothen worship and seruyse, 82 AB (bothe C; D †).

byforn, biforn (A.S. beforan), 221² f (aforn C), 376 f (byforne D), 1226 f (byfor D), 2356 f (beforne C), 3144 f, 3917 f (aforene C, byforne D), 4062 f (biforne D), 5022 f (aforne C, beforne D), 5636 f, 5755 f (byfore: born A, befor C), 5910 f (byfore C, beforne D), 6520 f (byforne D), 6644 f (beforne D), 7806 f (byfore C, beforne D); b. withouten, 5646 (-forne B), 5663 (bifore B); b. oure, 5641; b. haue, 7463 (before BCD).

Rhyme-words.—corn (221), shorn *p.p.* (221), born, born(e) *p.p.* (376, 1226, 2356, 3144, 3917, 4062, 5755, 5910, 6520), lorn, y-lorn *p.p.* (376, 3917, 4062, 5910, 7806), sworn, i-sworn *p.p.* (5636³, 6644), to-torn *p.p.* (5022), thorn (2356). [Var. CD beforn.]

byfore, 5660 f, 5701 f, 6389 f (to-fore B); byfore, 2051 (beforn C, byfor † he D), 3582 (byforne B, afore C, byfor D), 6120 (bifor B, to-forn C); be-forē certainly (?), 5681 D (? byforn A, † bifor B); byfore the, 1428 (byfor D); -e that, 5739 (-e the BD); -e to, 5639 (befor B, befor D). [Var. BC bifore; CD before.] (Cf. 5755 f A.) byfor noon, 7485 (bifore C, before D).

Rhyme-words.—forlore *p.p.* (6389), yshore *p.p.* (5660), more *root* (6389), therfore (5660, 5701).

byhynden, byhynde (A.S. be-hindan); byhynde, 1604 f (-d D), 1724 f (-d D), 2192 f (-d D), 7174 f.—byhyndēn othere, 179 (-yn C, -[en] D).

Rhyme-words.—mynde (1604), fynde *inf.* (1724), *pl.* (2192), rynde *n.* (1724), bynde *inf.* (7174). [Var. (at end of line) C behynde, -hinde; D behinde, -hind, -hynd.]

byside, bysyde (A.S. be sidan), 1161 f (: gyde *pres. subj.* 2 *sg.*), 4623 f (: ryde *inf.*); -e hire (poss. *sg.*), 1819 A, 3464, (poss. *pl.*) 1819 B; -e hym, 7045 (-ë B⁴, -ë was D⁵); there be sydȳn schal, 3510 † C. [Var. C besyde; D beside.]

by-twene, bi-twene (A.S. betwéonan), 1908 f, 2791 f, 3096 (bytwyxn B, betwixē C, bytwix[ē] D), 3343 f, 4698 f, 6092 f (betwen D), 7449 f (betweyne B, betwen D); by-twen[ē] wyndes, 417 (betwexen B, betwexē C, bytwix[ē] D).

¹ Var. BD both . . . and.

² Old-style figures indicate that B has *byforne* or *biforne*.

³ *swo* A, *sworne* B, *sworn* D.

⁴ But supply [*this*] and read -e (elided).

⁵ But supply [*him*] and read -e (elided) (?).

Rhyme-words.—grene *adj. sg.* and *pl.* (1908, 2791, 6092), shene *adj. def. sg.* (1908), *adj. pred. sg.* (6092¹), shene *adv.* (4698), I wene *pres. ind.* (3343, 7449), queene (2791), contene *inf.* (3343). [Var. BC be-twene.]

inne² (A.S. inne), 387 f (in C, yn D), 821 f (yn D), 1091 f (yn D), 1936 f (in C, yn D), 1960 f (ther † yn D), 3499 f (in C, yn D), 3753 f (in C, yn D), 5422 f, 5568 f (in C), 5921 f, 5930 f; inne, 7882 (in D).

Rhyme-words.—gynne *pres. ind. sg.* (1936), bygynne *inf.* (387, 1960, 3499, 5921), bygynne *ind. 3 pl.* (1091), wynne *inf.* (387, 821), synne *n.* (821, 1936, 3753, 5422), twynne *inf.* (5422, 5568, 5930).

ther-inne (A.S. þær-inne), 3537 f (-in D), 4474 f (-ynne D), 5447 f (-in CD); ther-yn but, 1354 (-in BCD).

Rhyme-words.—bygynne *inf.* (3537), vnpynne *inf.* (3537), wynne *inf.* (4474), twynne *inf.* (5447).

mele (adverbial termination, A.S. -mælum, dat. pl. of mæł, mēł, *n., m.* (?)), stundēmele (A.S. stundmælum), 7037 (stormyal † C).

nowthe (A.S. nú þá), 978 f (nouthe CD, nought † B): youthe: kouthe *posset.*

Note.—*Now* is sometimes spelled *nowe*, even in A, but the -e is never pronounced (cf. 2357, 4674, 5691, 6693 f, 8101 f).

oute (A.S. úte, út, út of), But at the yatę therę she shoulde outę ryde, 6395; the seynt is oute, 6916 f (out D) (: route *n.*); thow art oute, 7882 f (: doute *n.*); oute of, 3857 (out C, out † hym D), 4672 (out D); out of, 3894 (-e B).

out (*adv.*), before consonants, 1061, 4701, 4708³, 4872 (-ę D), 4874 (-ę (?) D), 4919 (-ę BD), 6912 (-ę D), 7733 (-ę D).

thurgh-out, thorough-out; t. a, 3443 (throw-out C?); t. the, 4566 (thourout C); t. Troye, 5323 (thour-out C †).

selde (A.S. seld-, seldan), 1462 f (seld D) (: behelde *pret. subj. 3 sg.*); seldē sęynge, 5085 (*perh. adj.*); seelde, 1253 (selde B, seldē seyn C, seldom seyn D).

sithen, sethen, sith, syn (A.S. sið þám, siððan, etc.).

I. In causal sense:

A almost always has *syn*. Thus, (i.) 520, 1665, 2144, 2953, 3108, 4324, 4954, 5215, 6859, etc. etc.; (ii.) 721, 1133, 1380, 1856, 3429, 4006, 4767, 5081, 5107, 5164. Other forms found in A are: sith,⁴ (i.) 645, 696, 1345; (ii.) 598, 1380, 1524,

¹ A has she[ne].

² Either pure adverb (as in *this Diomedē is inne*), or prepositional (in such phrases as *lyf that I am inne*).

³ Read *brayn[es]* in D.

⁴ That no rule can be formulated as to *syn* or *sith* according as *th* does not or doe, begin the following word may be seen by comparing 645 and 696 with 520, 2144, 2953, 3108, 4324, 6859.

1527, 3211; (*before h*) 1794, 3422; *sithē*, 719; *sithen* that, 934; *sithen* I, 720.

B, like A, commonly has *syn*. Other forms are: *sith*, (i.) 645, 696, 1665, 2144, 3256; *sith*, *syth*, (ii.) 598, 720, 1380, 1524, 1527, 3211; *sith he*, 1794, 3422; *seth*, (i.) 520; *sen*, (i.) 3993, 6859; *seyn*, (i.) 3980; (ii.) 4006; *sithen* thow, 934¹; *sithen* thende, 1345.²

C has usually *sythē* or *sithē* before consonants (for *sythe*, *sithe*, before vowels, see 598, 1380, 1524, 1527, 4006). Other forms are: *syn*, (i.) 4319, 4954, 5057, 6859, etc.; (ii.) 5164; *sith*, (i.) 3422, 5171³; (ii.) 3429; *seth*, (i.) 520; *sithē*, (i.) 960 †, 2953 †, 3256 †, 5231 †, 6717 † (cf. 1345); *sythyn* † *thyn*, 891; *sythyn* that (or *sythyn* that ?), 4971 †; *sythyn* al, 721.

D commonly reads *seth*. Thus,—(i.) 645, 696, 1665, 2144, etc., etc.; (ii.) 1524, 1527, 1856, etc.; *before h*, 1794, 3422.⁴ Other forms are: *syn*, (i.) 4971, 4975, 5057; (ii.) 5087; *synn* your, 4977; *sen*, (i.) 4954, 4994⁵; *sith*, (i.) 520, 6909; *sithē*, 5146, 5171, 5215, 5254; *sythē*, 5174; *sithe*, 5107, 5164; *sithē* † *we*, 6887; *sithen*, (i.) 3980 †, 3993 †; (ii.) 4006; *sithen* † that, 4319, 6859; -*en* I, 5231.

II. Temporal (= *cum*):

sith that, 2354 (-*e* C, *seth* D), 4064 (*syn* they B, *sithē* they ? C, *sethēn* thei ? D); *sith* I, 3627 (*syn* C, *seth* D).

III.

gon *sithen* longē while, 718 (-*e* C^c, *seth* ? D); *sithen* honge, 833 (*sythēn* B, *sethyn* D, *sythē* † *me* C); *sethēn* do, 3086 (*sythē* C, *seth*[*e*] D, *sithen* B †).

IV. Preposition:

sith that day, 2497 (*seth* the D; C †); *syn* mydnyght, 3444⁶ (*sen* B, *sin* C, *tul* D).

soone, *soe* (A.S. *sóna*), 234 (-[*e*] B, C †), 524 f, 553, 1160 f, 1296 f (D †), 2376 f (*soene* B), 2395 f, 3185 (D (?)), 3500 (-[*e* to] B, -*e* † for to D), 3515 f, 4376 f, 4548, 4551 f, 4727 f, 4812 (-[*e*] B), 5432 (C(?); -[*e*] B), 5455, 5743 f, 5789 f, 5838 f, 5922, 5935 (D †), 6074 (C(?); -[*e*] B), 6432 f, 6641 f, 6754 f, 6958 f, 7008 f, 7210 f, 7265 f, 7454 f, 7574⁷, 7578 (D ?), 7662 (-[*e*] B⁸; D †), 7671 f, 8082

¹ Read, *sith* [that] thow ?

² Dele [that].

³ Supply [To].

⁴ Supply [for to] in A.

⁵ Read, *sith* the ende ?

⁶ Supply [that].

⁷ Supply [in] in A.

⁸ Or, *writē* (*pres. subj.* 3 *sg.*) and *soon* *sc.*

(cf. 1999, 5317 C †); soone, sone, 41, 1531¹, 2693, 2951² (D †), 3410³, 4309, 4358, 5938, 8204, etc., etc.; soon as, 2769 (-e CD);⁴ soone he, 6657, 7595 † C; -e hope, 3794 (soon B, -e y D); soonē on, 7727 (-e vpon CD); soone, soņe, 2954 (soon B),⁵ 4368 (-ē C^e; D †), 8030 † A (-ē BCD).⁶—eft soones, eft sones, 2553 (-es † D, -ys † aboute? C), 2736 f (eftt sonys C) (: what to don is); eft-sone hym 4843 (-e hem C, -es hem B, wel † sone hym D).

Rhyme-words.—mone, moone *moon* (524, 1160, 2395, 6641), to done (1160, 1296, 2376, 3515, 4376, 4551, 4727, 5789, 6432, 6641, 6754 f, 7008, 7210, 7265, 7454, 7671), bone *boon* (4727, 6958), trone (5743, 5838).

thanne, thenne, than (A.S. þonne), *temporal and illative*⁷; thenne, 409 f BC (thanne A, than D †) (: brenne *subj.* 1 *sg.*), 1295 f (thanne C) (: henne *adv.*), 2638 f (than C, then D) (: renne *inf.*), 3471 f (than C, then D) (: henne *adv.*); thanne, 7790 f (than CD) (: whanne). *Before consonants*: (1) thenne, 865 (thanne B, than D; C †), 1052 A (than B, tho D); (2) then, 529 (than BD, thanne C), 803 (than BD, *om.* † C); (3) thanne, 849 (D †), 2000 (than B, tho C; D †), 2247 (than BD) (cf. 2510, 3048, 3474,⁸ 4922, 5218, 5496, 5741); (4) than, 221 (thanne B), 349 (3et † D), 2167 (thanne C) (cf. 2461 † D, 2710 † D, 2832, 3347, 5249, 5686, 5693). In the following instances *thanne* (temporal or illative) seems to have two syllables before a word beginning with a consonant,—498 (-[ne] B, -ne † D), 2966 (-[ne] B; D †), 7354 (-[ne] BD); than[ne], 7652 (-ne C); cf. 4585 † C, 5138 † C, 6622 † C. *Before vowels*: (1) thanne, 1489 (than D) (cf. 2973, 3158, 3255, 3346, 3485, 3718, 4845; (2) than, 874 (thanne BC) (cf. 1435, 1670, 2710, 3658, 3927). *Before h*: thanne he, 4313 † D, 4459 (than B), 4585 (than D, thannē † wolde he C); than hauę ye, 1413 (thanne C); than hastow, 4945 (thanne C); thanne hastow, 5301 (than CD).

than = *quam* (A.S. þonne, þon), (i.) 532 (D †), 537, 614, 1226, 2471, 2671, 3014, 3289, 3415, 3873 (thanne B), 4065 (thanne B), 4825, 5050 (then B, than † is D), 5253, 5257 (C †); (ii.) 1425, 3988 (D †), 4497 (er † A); than he, 819, 3332 (thanne B, as C).

whanne, whan, when (A.S. hwonne); whanne, 2067 (when B, whan D), 3874 (when B, whan C, wher D †), 4001 (when B, whan C), 5355 (when B, whan CD) (cf. also, 71, 1002, 1237, 1672, 1689, 1849, 2095, 2255, 2386, 2577, 3445, 3925, 4001, 4257, 4665,

¹ Read *certayn* for *certaynly* in A.

² Old-style figures indicate that B has *soon*.

³ Supply [to] in D.

⁴ Supply [I] in B.

⁵ Before *that*. If we read *soone*, we have *neuere how*; if *soonē*,—*neuere how*.

⁶ Dele (*forth*) in A, and read *soonē*.

⁷ In 2107 A, *than* = *whan* (*whan* CD, *when* B).

⁸ Supply [I] in A.

4693, 4989, 5790, 5909).—whan (*bef. cons'ts*), 155, 1139 (when B), 2278 (when B), 3386 (when B, whi † C), 3513, 4071 (when B, whanne D), 4801 (cf. also 358, 545, 876, 914, 1369, 2107 (than A), 2185, 2209, 2569, 2669, 2805, 2825, 3036, 3044, 3294, 3418, 3450, 3985, 4043, 4076, 4237, 4243, 4423, 4521, 4624, 4915, 5207, 5482).—when (*bef. cons'ts*), 3195 (whan CD), 5249 (whan CD).

Before vowels both *whanne* (*whenne*) and *whan* (*when*) are found. Thus,—*whanne*, 85 (when B, whan C †), 4239 (whan B, when E) (cf. 4270, 4321, 4755); *whan*, 1483 (when B; C †), 1868 (when B) (cf. 2000, 2471, 2474, 3074, 3437, 3698, 4668, 4811); *whenne*, 404 (whanne C, whens † D); *when*, 3083 (whan CD). Similarly before *he*, *here* (poss. sg.), *hem*: *whanne* 505 (when B, whan D) (cf. 1820, 2630, 5330); *whan he*, 323 (when B) (cf. 750, 1731, 2941, 3907, 4080, 4634).

Note 1.—*When* is the usual form in B, whether before a vowel or a consonant; but *whan* also occurs in B (as, 155, 3513, 4239, 4801).

Note 2.—No good case of *whannē* (*whennē*) or *whan[nē]* occurs in the interior of the verse. Apparent cases are to be corrected, usually by the insertion of *that* (cf. 196 AD, 351 AB, 545 C, 1880 A (D ?), 2386 D, 3446 BD (C ?), 3925 C, 4624 D (C ?)). *Whanne* (*whan* CD) occurs once in rhyme, in 7791 (: *thanne*).

therefore, therfor (A.S. *þære* + A.S. *fore*)¹; wherefore, wherfor.¹—therefore, 5661 f, 5699 f (there- B); wherefore, 2496 f (where- C, wherfor D). Before consonants,—therefore, 813 (-for B; C †; therfor † hym (?)) D), 855 (-for B)², cf. 5662, 7365, etc.; therfor, 17 (-e B, om. † D), 574 (-e C), 576 (-e BC), etc.; wherefore, 430 (-for[ē] B, whereforē C, wherfor[ē] D).³ Before vowels,—therefore, 472 (there- B, therfor D †), 680 (-for BD), 761 (-for D †), cf. 133, 1385, 1480, 3180, 5467, 5702, etc.; therfor, 488 (-e C), etc.; wherefore, 981 (wharfor B, therefore C, therefor D), 1100 (-for BD), 2423 (-for BD, wherefore C), cf. 3676; wher-forē † er, 3123 (-fore BC, wherfor D)⁴; cf. wherfor he, 311 (war for C).

Rhyme-words.—to-fore (-forn A) (2496), byfore (5661, 5699), bore *p.p.* (2496), y-shore *p.p.* (5661).

to-forn,⁵ to-fore (cf. by-forn, by-fore); to-forn, (i.) 1381 f (biforne B, before C, byforn D), 1042 (-ne B, -forē † D), 1516 (-ne B), 2448 (-fore C, -for D), 3177, 3691, 4481 f (-ne BC); (ii.) 2077 (-ne B,

¹ These words are accented indifferently on the first or the second syllable.

² In C supply [*what*]; in B read *be[sc]he*.

³ BCD omit [*my*] (not necessary to the sense) before *lord*.

⁴ But supply [*wol*] in A, and read *wher-fore*.

⁵ Commonest in the phrase *God to-forn*.

-for D), 4168 (-ne B, -forn [I] E), 7326 (-ne BD).—to-fore, 2494 f BCD (to-forn † A), 5381 † f C, 6418 † f C.

Rhyme-words.—y-born *p.p.* (1381), sworn(e) *p.p.* (1381), lorn *p.p.* (4481); wherefore (2494), bore *p.p.* (2494) [sore *adv.* (5381), more *adv.* (5381), more *adj. pl.* (6418)].

whanne, whan. See after *thanne, than.*

wherefore, wherefor. See *therefore.*

with-inne¹ (A.S. wið-innan), 1061 f (-yn D), 2462 f (-yn D), 2815 f (her yn D †), 3818 f (-yn D), 4206 f, 4620 f (-in C, -yn D), 6277 f (-in C), 7332, 8023 f; -e, 1108 (-yn D), 1167 (-yn D), 5940 (-in B, that † in C), 6075 (-in D), 7818, 7824 (-in D) (cf. 3443 D); -e here (*sg. poss.*), 1745 (-in BD), 1762² (-in D); -e his, 6837 (-in D)³; -e hym, 7135 (with[in] C).—with-inne the, 267 (-in D), 305 (-yn D), 7544 (-ë nyght BC); -e tho, 7096 (-ë 3onë C, -ë yonder D); -e myn, 8060 (-in D).

Rhyme-words.—bygynne *inf.* (1061, 2462, 2815 (?), 3818), wynne *inf.* (1061, 2462, 4620, 6277), blynnne *inf.* (4206), twynne *inf.* (8023), atwynne *adv.* (6277).

Note.—The form *in-with* is found in *in-with myn*, 4341 (riht † in D), and *in-with here* (*poss. sg.*), 7385 (with-inne CD); and this may perhaps be the right reading in some of the cases where the MSS. have *with-inne* or *with-inne*.

with-outen, -owten, wit-outen,⁴ -owten⁵ (A.S. wið-útan), (i.) 1714,⁶ 1799, 1922, 2477, 3308, 3590, 3815, 4105, 5038 (-ë C), 5162 (-ë D), 5787 (-ën(e) D), 6020 (C †), 6303, 7681 (-ë CD), 8035 (-ë C), etc. [Var. CD -yn.] (ii.) 1757, 3077, 3260, 4655, 5066, 5646, 5663 (-ë D), 5733, 6255, 6258, 7127 (-ë † wordis C), 7560, 8166. [Var. CD -yn.] with-outen awayte, 3421 (B †; -oute C; D †); -en answe're, 5820 (-oute C); withouten his, 2365 (-yn C, -out D); -ën here (*sing.*), 5756 (-yn C); -ën ho, 2168 AB; -ën hond, 3030 (-yn CD). with-oute, -owte, 270 f (-t D), 1321 (-en B), 1696 f (-t D), 2506 (-en B, -yn C), 3076 (-en B, -yn C), 3526 f (-t D), 3587 f, 4703 (-en B)⁷, 4795 (-en B, -yn C, without † (?) D), 5257 (-en B), 5427 (-en B)⁸, 6033 (-en BD, -yn C)⁹, 6430 f, etc.; without[e], 1838 (-en B, -yn C, -out † (?) D); -e, 4827 (-en B, -out thassent D)¹⁰, 7142 (-out B,

¹ Preposition in 267, 305, 1108, 1167, 1745, 1762, 3443 D, 5940, 6075, 6837, 7096, 7135, 7332, 7818, 7824, 8060.

² *Hire* is dative in ABC (in all of which the line seems to consist of nine syllables), possessive in D. The line needs considering.

³ Supply [and] in C.

⁴ 6020.

⁵ 3590.

⁶ Old-style figures indicate that D has *without* (which, before consonants, makes the line short by one syllable in the cases in question).

⁷ *without envy* † D.

⁸ Dele (or slur) *I* in A.

⁹ Read *where[with]* in C.

¹⁰ Supply [ne] in AD.

-en D)¹; -e his, 5430 (-en B, -yn C †); withoute the yates, 7541 (ouer † C); without † bothe, 1862 D.

Rhyme-words.—route *n.* (270, 1696, 6430), route *inf.* (3587), shoute *inf.* (1696), aboute (270, 3526), lowte *inf.* (3526), doute *n.* (6430).

Note.—It will be seen from the foregoing examples that our MSS. use *with-outlën* or *with-outë* indifferently before a consonant, the reading often varying in the same line. Compare also the following cases, in all of which a consonant follows: (1) (*A has -ën*) 361,² 2490, 2563, 2856, 3332, 3541, 3998, 4150, 4200, 4583, 5362, 5839, 6363, 6385, 6419, 6900, 7214, 8035³; (2) (*A has -ë*) 1668, 2651, 2725, 2751, 2974, 4352, 4881, 5326, 6160, 6654, 6751, 7494, 8079. It is to be observed that all the instances of *with-outë*, -*ën*, cited are prepositions, except the four in which *with-outë* (never -*ën*) occurs at the end of a verse. These last are adverbs.

yfere, ifere (*i. e.* i(n) + fere, dat., cf. A.S. gefér, on gefére), 1237 f, 1253 f, 1995 f, 2122 f, 2201 f, 2334 f, 2351 f, 2562 f, 3073 f, 3115 f, 3357 f, 3588 f, 3660 f, 4554 f, 4689 f, 5452 f, 5866 f, 5868 f, 5995 f, 6016 f, 6096 f, 6114 f, 6706 f, 7176 f, 7216 f, 8134 f.

Rhyme-words.—chere *n.* (1237, 2351, 3073, 3588, 4554), deere, dere *adj.* (2562, 3115, 5868, 6016, 6114, 6706), here *inf.* (2201, 3588, 7216, 8134), here *hic* (1253, 3357, 3660, 4689, 5866, 5995), matere (1237, 2122, 2334, 3357), manere (4554), fere *companion* (5452), bere *feretrum* (5868), clere *adj. pl.* (6096, 7176), appere *inf.* (1995). [Var. B i-feere, i-fere, yfeere; CD in fere; D yn fere, in fer.]

yore (A.S. géara, L. 3(e)are), 6159 f, 6418 f (to-fore † C), 6687 f; of yore, 5381 f (tofore † C, of yoor D), 8097 f (of yoor D); yore ago, 6680 (yoor D).

Rhyme words.—more *subst.* (6159), *adj. pl.* (6418), no more (6687, 8097), more, eueremore *adv.* (5381, 8097), sore *adv.* (5381), lore *n.* (6687). [Var. BD yooore; C 3ore.]

Note 1.—*Down, down, adoun, adoun* (A.S. of-dlune, dlune-stígian, adlune, adlun-weard *Chron.* 1083) show no -e (except sometimes -(e) in D): cf. (i.) (ii.) 110 f, 184 f, 299 f, 359, 1065 f, 1284, 1492 (adowyn B), 1744 f, 2202 f, 2938, 3815, 3921, 4434 f, 4625 f, 4896, 6795 f, 6924 f, 7174, 7222 f, 7368 f, 7386 f, 7675 f, 8013 f, etc., etc.

Note 2.—*Gruf* in the phrase *fallen gruf* (O.N. falla á grúfu) occurs once: *fil gruf and* 5574, (grof CD).

Note 3.—For *asunder* (cf. A.S. on-sundron) see 3502 f (a sundyr C, a sundre D), 4181 BE (a sondry A †, a sundir C), 4605 ABE † (asundery C), 7346 f (a sundir C, a sondr D).

Rhyme words.—thondre *n.* (-er B, -yr C, -re D), yonder (-re D), wonder *n.* (-ir C, wondr D).

§ 89. To the list in § 88 may be appended: I. *atwixen*, -e, *bytwyxen*, -e, *aweye*, *eke*, *often*, -e, *saue*; II. *here*, *there*, *where*, and their varieties,—particles in which the form of the termination has been influenced by various analogies (cf. Child, § 72, b).

¹ Supply [nat] in D.

² Delete (*ony*) in A and read *with outlën totte*.

³ Cf. also 1820 CD, 1831 † D, 6131 † C.

atwixen, atwixe (cf. by-twixen), atwixen noon, 6835 (attwexen B, betwixe CD); -e here (*sg.*), 5483. (See variants under *bytwixen*.)
 aweye (A.S. onweg, aweg), 1208 f (-y D), 2279 f (-y D †), 4977 f, 5019 f, 5544 f (-y A, to dey C, to deye D), 6456 f (-y D), 6820 f (-y CD).
 [Var. BD awaye; C awaye.] aweyè, awayè, (i.) 572, 2600, 6263 f, 7431 f. [Var. C awayoy.] (Cf. 574 † C, 1195 † C, 1196 † C.)

Rhyme-words.—pleye *inf.* (1208), deye *ind.* 1 *sg.* (1208), seye *inf.* (5019, 5544, 6456), seye *ind.* 1 *sg.* (2279), tweye (2279, 4977¹), weye (6456), pleye *inf.* (6820), keye *n.* (6820).—day (6263), way (7431), weylawey (7431), may 3 *sg.* (6263).

bytwext. See *by-twixen*.

by-twixen, by-twixen, bi-twixen, be-twixen (A.S. betwix, betweox, betwuxt), 417 B (betwexe C, bytwix[e] D, bytween[e] A), 585 (betwethë C),² 1896 (-e C), 3096 B (betwixe C, bytwene A), 3248 betwethë (? C †), 4157 (betwixe C, bitweyne B, bytwix[e] E), 7249 (atwixen B, betwixe CD); -ën hope, 2392 (betwethë C),³ 6993 (atwixë C, between[ë] D), 7570 (betwixë CD); -ën hem, 135 (betwixë C); bytwixen hem, 7219 (betwethe C, betwixe D)⁴; bytwixe vs, 5771 (betwixe C, bytween D); bi-twixen Orcades, 7334 (betwethë C, between[ë] D). [Var. B betwixen, bytwixen, betwixen.] bytwext vs, 6165 (bytwixe B, atwixe C, bytwixe D).

eke (A.S. éac, éc, cf. A.S. tó éacan), 2761 f (ek C) (: byseche *ind.* 1 *pl.*, bisike B, beseche B), 2918 f (ek C) (: beseche *inf.*, byseke BD, beseke C), 4790 f (ek B) (: cheke *n.*: byseche *inf.*, -seke BD, beseke C), 6296 f (ek C) (: beseche *ind.* 1 *sg.*, beseke BD); ek, 3571 f (eke BCD) (: bysek *ind.* 1 *sg.*, biseke B, beseche C, byseke D); ekë, 475 (ek C, echë D), 1720 (ek BC), 4226 AE (ek BC), etc.; ek, (i.) 32 (*om.* † D), 1827 (ekë D), etc.

ofte (A.S. oft), 135 f (-t D), 196 f,⁵ 212 (-en B, -[e] † D), 625 (-en C, -yn D), 912 f (-t D), 940 f, 1145 (*om.* † D), 2114 f, 2319 (-en B, -e (? C, *om.* † D), 2406, 2466, 3127, 3286 f, 3511 f (-yn † C), 4091 f, 4361 (-[e] B), 4479 f, 4485 (oft to B, al day CD), 4799,⁶ 4876 (-[e] B, ofte D), 5204 f (-t B), 5793 C, 5828 C, 5881 f, 6351 B, 6373 f, 6708 f, 6980 f (-t B), 7030 C (ofte a wold a = oftë wolde he D, ost A, oost B), 7945 (-t † and B); oftë tyme,⁷ 913 (-[e] D), 1850 (-yn C), 1877, 3971 (-yn C; B †), 5823 (-[e] B), 7939 (-[e] B), 7946 (-[e] B), 8121 (-[e] B); oft[e] tyme, 7172 (-e CD); ofte, cf.

¹ *twy(n)e A.*

² Old-style figures indicate that D reads *by-twix[e]*.

³ In D read *des[es]perance*.

⁴ In D read *Troy[e]*.

⁵ Old-style figures indicate that B and D have *oft[e]*.

⁶ Supply [*hem*] in C.

⁷ Variants of *tyme* not registered, see *tyme*, § 2, p. 3.

344, 646, 740, 1782, 1876, 2419, 3168, 3903, 4561, 5164, 5166, 5400, 5828, 6037, 6351, 7052, 7078, 7589, 7685, 7931¹; ofte he, 506 (-t B, offte D), 4579,² 6100 (-t B, -ë † pitouſely C, -e † ful D), 6969 (-t B); -e his, 445, 2343 (oft † C), 3976 (-t B), 4625 (-t B; D †); oftë hastow, 904 (-en B, [-ë] C); ofte, 346 (-t BD), 137 † A (-t † (?) D), 139 † A, 4395 † D, 5828 D (cf. 3171 † D, 4561 † D); ofte tyme, 5986 (oft B, oftyn † there C, ofte ther D).

Rhyme-words.—softe *adj. and adv.* (135, 196, 912, 940, 2114, 3286, 3511, 4091, 4479, 5204, 5881, 6708, 6980), on lofte, a-lofte, o lofte (135, 940, 3511, 5881, 6373, 6708).

often as, 3143 (-t D); -en here-byforn, 3144; -en here (*eam*), 5387 (-[en] B, -ë D; C †); -en harme, 333 (-ë C, [-ë] D).—often for, 2331 (-e C, [-e] D); -en myght[e], 3351 (-[e] † (?) D; C †); -en peyne, 4058 (-e CD, oft † peynës (?) B); -en gan, 5024 (offte D, soft † B); -en was, 7465 (-[e] B, -e CD); -en seyde, 583 (-e C, [-e] D) (cf. 625); -en se, 4056 (-[e] B); oftyn † tyme, 6833 C^c; oftyn as, 3168 C. (Cf. 1876 † C, 2419 † C.) [Var. CD -yn.]

sauē (O. Fr. sauf), -e, 395 (-e † that (?) D), 1241 (D †), 1825, 3351 (C †, D †), 3632, 3729 (saf D), 4617³, 4754, 7040, 8167, 8168; -e here (*poss. sg.*), 7176 (saf C); -e his, 1710 (saf C)⁴, 6573; sauē Troylus, 2489. Cf. Myn honour sauf I wol, etc., 3001 (sauyn † C, savē † I D).

here (= hic) (A.S. hér), 121 f, 292 f, 399 f, 1124 f, 1183 f (heere B), 1252 f (her D), 1337 f, 1577 f, 1680 f, 2058 f, 2189 f, 2714 f, 2729 f, 2836 f, 3355 f, 3483 f, 3489 f, 3661 f, 3678 f, 3790 f, 4053 f, 4149 f, 4690 f (heere B), 4970 f, 5102 f, 5205 f, 5558 f (heere B), 5582 f (heere B, her D), 5865 f (yferē † A, her D), 5870 † C, 5976 f, 5993 f (her D), 6212 f (her D), 6297 f (her D), 6829 f BCD (there † A), 7108 f (her D), 7361 f (her D), 7538 f. [1281 f D † (see *there*), 4990 f D † (see *there*).⁵]

Rhyme-words.—chere *n.* (121, 292, 1124, 3483, 6297), manere (292, 1124, 3678, 5582), matere (1577, 2714, 3355, 4149, 7108, 7361), preyere (3483, 6297), here *inf.* (121, 399, 2189, 2714, 2836, 5205, 6829), yhere *inf.* (5976), lere *inf.* (2729, 5102), ye me lere *inv. or subj.* (1183), yferē *adv.* (1252, 3355, 3661, 4690, 5865, 5870 † C, 5993), dere *adj. sg.* (1337, 1577, 1680, 2058, 2189, 3489 (drede † A), 3790, 4053, 4149, 4970, 5205, 5558, 5870 † C, 5976, 6829), clere *adj. sg. and pl.* (6212, 7361), of fern[e] yere (7538).

¹ In most of these cases B reads *oft*; so sometimes D, and once, at least, C (7931).

² Old-style figures indicate that BD have *oft* (for *ofte*).

³ In D read [*y*]drede.

⁴ In D supply [*ful*].

⁵ For the rhymes of these two lines see under *there*.

Before consonants *here* apocopates its -e, which, however, is regularly written except sometimes in D. For *here* (var. B *heere*; D *her*), cf. 868, 1054, 1096 (A †), 1115, 1188, 1282, 1409, 1462, 1515, 1728, 2076, 2208 (*hire* B), 2338, 2815 (D †), 3235, 3953, 4303 (*hire* C), 4844, 4902, 5139. Cf. also, *here* byform, 2356 f,¹ 5910 f (*there* C, *her* D); *here*-to, 3362 B (*herto* CD, *herē* † *myghte* A); *hertō*, 5734 f BD (*thertō* A); *here* with *al*, 6441 CD (*ther-with-al* AB). For *here*, cf. 432, 1406, 1525, 1569, 2405, 2688, 2814, 2990, 3341, 3476; for *here* in compounds (*here after*, and the like), cf. 938, 3377, 3515, 4805; for *her* in such compounds (the second member beginning with a vowel), cf. 984, 1094 D, 1193, 3407; for *here* before *his*, *hym*, *haue*, cf. 469, 1544, 4415 A.

Instances of *herē* in the body of a verse are at any rate very rare. The strongest case is: "Intendestow that we shul *here* bleue," 6841 AB (but: *here* *beleue* C, *her be-leue* D)² where *here* is emphatic (or at any rate has the ictus). In the following apparent cases comparison of MSS. shows a better reading: 3362 A (*l. here*-to), 5594 A (*l. hyder*), 6826 C.

there (A.S. *þær*, *þér*), 1281 f (*thare* B, *here* D), 2095 f, 3366 f (*thare* B), 3411 f, 3428 f, 3469 f, 3593 f, 4162 f, 4990 f (*here* D), 5305 f (*ther* D), 5359 f (*ther* D), 6024 f (*ther* D), 6146 f (*theere* B), 6186 f (*ther* D), 6829 f † (*here* BCD)³, 7242 f (*ther* D), 7273 f (*ther* D), 7543 f (*ther* D), 7721 f (*ther* D).

Rhyme-words.—*ere*, *eere n.* (1281, 3593, 5305), *gere n.* (2095, 6186), *were ind. 2 sg.* (4162), *ind. 3 pl.* (3428, 3469, 7543), *subj. 1 sg.* (4990), *subj. 3 sg.* (2095, 3366, 3411, 5359, 6024, 7242, 7721), *ferē n.* (3411, 3428, 3469, 3593, 4162, 6024, 7273), *ferē inf.* (6146), *ellys where* (5359, 6186), *tere n.* 7242, 7543).

there, 3993 (*ther* BD); cf. 4049, 4198, 4227, 4368, 4570, 4658, 5111, 5760, 5761, 6022, 7033, 7455, etc.—*ther*, (*i.*) 4483 (-*e* C), 5606 (-*e* BC), 5614 (-*e* D); cf. 5505, 5630, 5649, 5685, 5843, 5859, 6021, 6156, 6308, 6316, 6509, 6532, 7085, 7609, etc.; *ter mot*, 5698 A (*ther* BD).

In compounds before consonants: *thèrby*, 447 (*tharby* B); *therbÿ*, 383 f, 5682 f; *thèrfore*, 472 (*therefore* B, *therfor* D †); *therfòre*, 133 (*therfor* D); cf. for further examples, 17, 243, 247, 266, 274, 488, 574, 576, 627 f, 680, 761, 813, 855, 1161, 1251 f, 1385, 1434, 1480, 1576, 2094, 2137, 2935, 3180, 3378, 4232, 5467, 5662, 5702, 5734 f, 7365, etc., etc.

¹ See also § 88, under *byform*.

² Cp. John's appear to agree with A, but Hl. 2392 has *beleue*.

³ For the rhymes see under *here*, which is the right reading.

there, 273 (ther BD); cf. 892, 1960, 2604 (thare B), 3247, 3406, 3415, 3510, 4902, 5048, etc.; ther, (ii.) 5243 AB (ther but D; C †) (cf. 7341).—there he, 1282 (thar B, that † C) (cf. 1418); there haue (*pres. ind.* 2 *pl.*), 3042 (ther B); ther helpeth, 5962 (-e CD). In compounds in which the second member begins with a vowel *ther* is usual: thus, ther-after, 5208; ther-inne, 5447 f (therin CD); cf. 333, 1354, 1454,¹ 1703, 2282, 4474 f; there-*vp-on*, 4805 C.

The strongest cases of dissyllabic *therë* are: That he cam *therë* || and that he was born, 3915 (ther[ë] B, therë or CD)², and And *ther[e]* lat vs speken of oure wo, 5906 (therë C).³ In 604 † C, 3420 A (*l. therof*), 5357 C (*l. thennes*), 6737 C (*l. therof*), comparison of MSS. affords a corrected reading.

Note.—*ner* (= *ne ther* ?) occurs in 1262 A, but is perhaps merely a slip of the pen for *per*.

where (A.S. *hwær*, *hwér*), 4239 f (whare B), 6582 f (wher D); euery where, 4724 f; ony where, 3534 f; ellys where, elles where, 5360 f (ellis wher D), 6183 f (ellis wher D), 7407 f (elles wher D).

Rhyme-words.—*feere n.* (4239), *ere n.* (4724), *gere n.* (6183), *tere n.* (6582, 7407), *were ind.* 3 *pl.* (3534, 4239, 6582), *subj.* 3 *sg.* (5360), *there* (5360, 6183).

wher, (i.) 357 (-e [that] C), 1880 (-e C) (cf. 1291 A, 3874 † D, 5795); no where, 4302 (no wher B, nower C, nowherë † D); and in compounds of *wher* in which the second member begins with a consonant (as, *wher-so*, *wherby*, *wherfor*), cf. 311 (wherfor A, war for C), 409 (where-to B), 430, 436, 981, 1100, 1387 f, 2423, 2496 f, 3123 (A ?), 3620, 3676, 5774 (whar-with B).

where, 3501 (whare C, wher D); wydë where, 3246 (wher CD); wher, (ii.) 1164 (-e B); where as, 1357 C (wher D, there A, ther B); wher as, 3358 BD (-e C, there A). In composition (*wher-on*, etc.): wher-*on*, 1776; wher-*of*, 4489 (wherof BCD).—where he, 1285 (wher BD); wher he, 1461 (-e BC), 2236 (-e C); wher hym, 1291 BD (-e C, wher that A), 2034 (-e C); where hastow, 5158 (wher BD); wher hastow, 276 (-e BC); no wher hool, 954.

There are no cases of *wherë*. All apparent cases yield to comparison of MSS., as in 357 C (wherë † hem), 1291 C (wherë hym), 1932 A, 4302 D.

Note.—From a comparison of the rhyme-lists to *here*, *there*, and *where* (which are complete), it will be seen that these fall into two classes which do not cross: (a) rhymes to *here* and (b) rhymes to *there*, *where*. A

¹ Seems to be a 9-syl. verse.

² But the reading of Cp. is certainly right: *therë* || and *that that*.

³ No note in Mr. Austin's collation.

striking instance of the difference in the sound of (*a*) and (*b*) is shown by 6581-5, where, the order of rhymes being *ababb*, the rhyme-words are: *dere, where, clere, were* (erant), *lere* (*n.*).

§ 90. *Ever* and *never* (A.S. *ǣfre, nǣfre*) are (as a rule) dissyllabic before consonants and monosyllabic before vowels and weak *h*.

The usual spelling, whether before vowels or consonants, is *euere*, *neuere* in ABC (and so often in D); but *euer* and *neuer* are not uncommon in BD, and *euer* is found in C 3605, *neuer* in A 2843, C 1362.

For the spelling *euer*, see B, 9, 418, 2299, 2494, 2681, 4243, 4268, 5772, 6785, 7892; for *neuer*, see B 294, 501, 534, 675, 910, 970, 3199. There are some petty variants: as, *nevir* (4942 D), *cwere* (7892 C), *evyr* (6025 D).

I. Before consonants both words are regularly dissyllabic: cf. for *euere*, 418, 584, 638, 1151, 1465, 1864, 1915, 1925, 1958, 2117, 2656, 3086, 3121, 3354, 3473, 3519, 3556, 3653, 4021, 4243, 4268, 4440, 4603, 4681, 4942, 4946, 4966, 5049, 5161, 5179, 5772, 5984, 6082, 6126, 6387, 6405, 6593, 6781, 7026, 7181, 7418, 7502, 7691, 7719, 7892, 8096.

For *neuere*, cf. 37, 294, 534, 539, 586, 639, 641, 675, 774, 910, 959, 1219, 1228, 1386, 1653, 1671, 1813, 2316, 2354, 2498, 2545, 2692, 2968, 3093, 3199, 3229, 3331, 3409, 3427, 3626, 3706, 3711, 3712, 3717, 4088, 4503, 4550, 4869, 4961, 5002, 5059, 5135, 5521, 5858, 5862, 6022, 6142, 6486, 6788, 7139, 7143, 7187, 7238, 7341, 7724, 8045. So before consonant *y* in the phrases *euëre yet, neuëre yet*: cf., for *euëre yet*, 1325, 2080, 3135 AB, 7123; for *neuëre yet*, cf. 657, 812, 1278, 1916, 3161, 3548, 3682, 3896, 4288, 4447, 7991.

II. Before a vowel both words are regularly reduced to one syllable by slurring: cf., for *euere*, 9, 318, 513, 541, 816, 1290, 1633, 2229, 2238, 2299, 2494, 2681, 4685, 5749, 6025, 6264, 6306, 6785, 6814, 7119, 7439, 7745, 8224. For *neuere*, cf. 501, 622, 1329, 1362, 1522, 1574, 1643, 2183, 3000, 3236, 3550, 3605 (*neuëre* thoughte A), 4356, 4375, 5250, 6243, 6518, 6804, 7198.

III. Before *he* and *his* the same slur takes place as before a vowel: cf., for *euere*, 541 † C, 2958, 5095, 6799 (C †), 7136, 7534; for *neuere*, cf. 1946, 4188.

But before other *h*'s, the dissyllabic pronunciation seems to be the rule: thus, *euëre haue* (*subj.* 1 *sg.*), 1225 (*euër* B); *neuëre han* (*inf.*), 3414 BC (*neuëre* the AD); *cuëre help*, 1040 D †; *neuëre*

how, 2954 ;¹ neuëre half, 4492 ; neuëre herte, 7746 AC (-ër D). Cf., however, neuëre haue (*inf.*), 6104 AB (neuëre haue C, -er? D †) ; neuëre han (*inf.*), 900 B (neuëre a A ; C †).

Note 1. The only case of *ever* or *never* in rhyme is 7442-4,—*neuere*, 7742 f (-er D) : *euere*, 7444 f (-er D).

Note 2.—The following lines in which there are various readings (some MSS. following the word with a vowel, others with a consonant), may be compared, but are of little utility (presenting no instances which transgress the general rule, except for a manifest corruption or two) : (1) for *euere*, cf. 236, 787, 1205, 5461, 6807, 7003, 7305 ; (2) for *neuere*, cf. 1755, 3605, 5101, 6317, 6528, 6811.

The rule, then, is clear enough. *Euere* and *neuere* are dissyllabic before consonants ; monosyllabic before vowels. This is the enun-
ciated (as to *euere*) by ten Brink, *Compleynte to Pite*, p. 176, n. to v. 33, who indeed makes it so stringent that he changes *euere* to *ay* in that verse. It seems doubtful, however, if the present state of our knowledge allows us to emend in this way (and this is admitted by ten Brink, *Ch's Spr. u. Versk.*, § 263). The *Troilus* contains some cases which seem to show that Chaucer allowed both *euere* and *neuere* to count for a single syllable before consonants. I give the sure, or tolerably sure, cases first :

Quod Troylus for al that *euere* ye konne, 776.

To ben hire helpe yn al that *euere* they myghten, 2709 (*om.* † D).

As *euere* she was shal I fynde yn som route, 5065 (As she euyr was D).

She wolde come as soone as *euere* she myghte, 6874 (*euere* D).

Nas *neuere* yet thing seyn to ben presed derre, 174 (B † ; -er C, -ëre † seyn D).

So hyd it wel I telle it *neuere* to mo, 613 (*neuer* D).

Were hise nayles poynted *neuere* so sharpe, 2119.

Now goode nece be it *neuere* so lyte, 2288 (-er B).

For she was wys and louede hym *neuere* the lasse (not = *natheles*), 2928 (*neuer* C ; D †).

To knowe of this ye were it *neuere* so lite, 7653 (*D om.* ye ; *neuer* D).

Cf. Be she *neuere* so faire or (ne so C) wel ishape (*schape* C), 3253 (no note in Austin).

Cases that are easily emended by comparison of MSS. are : (1) for *euere*, 897 BC, 3316 BD, 4620 C, 7420 C ; (2) for *neuere*, 739 BC (but perh. BC are right), 883 C, 1655 A, 2461 D, 7056 A, 7356 C, 7791 C ; and some cases of *neuere the les* in C (as, 170 C, 750 C, 916 C) where *natheles* is the correct reading. Very doubtful is 1144 ; and one does not like to dogmatize on 3253 or 4406.

Such of the above cases as are certain (for it will be observed that emendation to *ay* is impossible in the four cases 776, 2709, 5065, 6874, and no emendation for *neuere* can be devised) seem sufficient to show that ten Brink's rule is not rigid.

¹ That is, if we read *sonë* (*soon* B) *that*. If we read *sonë that*, we have *neuere how*.

On the other hand in a few cases the dissyllabic forms are found before vowels. Thus,—

God helpe me so I neuëre other mente, 1449.

Fro this forth shal I neuëre eten bred, 1529.

And neuëre other creaturë serue, 5110 (neuër D).

The obseruance euëre yn youre absence, 5445 (C †, euër D).

Less secure are 897 AD, 4763 BD¹; and certainly to be emended (as comparison of MSS. easily allows) are 3103 D, 3146 C, 6816 C.²

Similarly *euëre his*, 6799 C † and *neuëre his*, 4181 C †, are to be corrected.

Note 3.—Such monstrosities as *euërë* and *neuërë*, sometimes perpetrated by this or that scribe, mean nothing, of course, and are easily corrected by comparison of MSS. (cf. *e.g.* the various readings in 2525, 2623, 3234).

§ 91. The following particles end in the *Troilus* sometimes or always in *-es*, *-s* (Child, § 73). This is sometimes an A.S. *-es*, sometimes a formation by analogy.

(i.) *ayens* (*ayeyns*, *ayen*, *agayn*, *afornyeyn*), *elles*, *nedes*, *to medes*, *to wardes* (etc.), *vnnethes*; (ii.) *hennes* (*henne*, *hens*), *thennes*, *uhennes*; (iii.) *ones* (*nones*), *twyes*, *thries* (*thrie*); (iv.) *alweyēs* (*alweys*, *alwey*), *other weyes*, *amonges* (*among*), *togedēres* (*to-gedre*); (v.) *algates* (*algate*), *ascaunces*, *certes*. In the following list the examples cited occur before a consonant (not *h*) unless there is a note to the contrary.

afornyeyn (A.S. *foran*, *on-gægnēs*), *aforn yeyn* vs, 2273 (*a-for-zeynes* B, *aforn* [] C, *aforyens* D). (Cf. *byform*.)

algates (cf. O.N. *alla gøtu*, *adverbial acc.*), *algatēs hem*, 2866 (*-is* D); *algate*, 2049 (*-e †* D), 2754 CD, 7434.

alweyēs, (cf. A.S. *ealne weg*, *adverbial acc.*), *alweyēs arise*, 2754 A (*alwayēs* B, *algate* CD); *alweys a*, 6415 (*alweyēs* B, *alwoy* C, *aH-wey* D). (Cf. *weyes*.)

alwey, (i.) 782, 1403 (D †),³ 1468 (*-oÿ* C, *-eÿ* D), 3084, 4477, 4942 CD (*euëre* AB), 6505; *alwey here* (*hic*), 3661 AB (cf. 1818 † B); *alwey*, (ii.) 1122, 1803. *alwèy* (i.), 1847, 2437 B (A ? C ?; *alwey* C; D †), 5618 f; *alwey hym*, 2169 (*alwey* D †). [Var. B *alway*; C *alwoy*; D *alwei*.] (Cf. *alway*, 6288 f C †; *alwoy † his*, 3328 C.)

amonges (A.S. *ongemang*, *onmang*), (i.) 7835 (*omanges* B, *among[e]* C); (ii.) 893 (*amangē* B, *among[ē]* C, *almong* D †), 2260 (*-ē* B, *-is* C, *-[is]* D), 3700 (*-is* CD), 6614 (*omanges* B, *amongis* C, *amongē* D); *among[ēs]* al, 4765 AD (*-ē* B).

among, 1970 f (*-e* B) (: *song n.* (*-e* BC)), 3110, 3702 (*-e* B), 4658 f

¹ Where A seems to have two light syllables before the caesura : *neuërë* || *yif*.

² So probably 7807 A. In 3327 read *euëre ylyk[ē]*.

³ Supply [*his*] in C.

(: song *n.* (-e B)), 4727 (omange B), 6148 (omange B, amonge D), 7051 (-e D, omange B), 7944 (-e D, omange B); among (*before vowels*), 6488 (-e D, amang B, amongis C), 7911 (-e D,¹ amange B); among his, 5037 (amang B); among hem, 5359 (-e D, amange B, amongis C).

ascaunces (etym. dub.), 205 (asscaunnis C, askauns D), 292 (aschaunis C,² askauns D³).⁴

ayens, ayeÿns, agaÿns, ayèn, (A.S. on-gægnes, on-gægn).

I. As preposition :

(a) *Before consonants*,—(1) ayens, 603,⁵ 1316 (aÿenis B, ayen D), 1561 (aÿeynist B, aÿen C), 2142 (aÿeyn B). [Var. B aÿeins; CD aÿens.] (2) ayeÿns, 3831 (aÿenis B, aÿenys (?) C †, ayens (?) D †). (3) ayèn, 2005 (aÿein B, aÿen CD), 5029 (aÿein B, aÿen C, ayenst D). Cf. here ayens, 2465 (aÿenis B, aÿens C).

(b) *Before vowels*,—ayèn, 4837 (aÿeyn B, aÿen C); ayeÿns, 2499 (aÿeins B, aÿens C, ayens D); aforn yeyn vs, 2273 (a-forÿeynes B, aforn † C, a forÿens D). Cf. ther ayènis, 1454 (aÿeyn B, aÿen C, ayens D).⁶

(c) *Before h*,—agaÿns his, 4362 (aÿeyns B, aÿen C, aÿens D); ayens hire (*poss. sg.*), 5175 (aÿeyns B, aÿens C).

II. As adverb.

(i.) ayèn, 1476 (certeyn † B), 1606,⁷ 1694, 3061 f, 4425, 6972 (ayen † D), 7277, 7964⁸ (cf. 5980 f, 6588 f, 6848 f, 7373 f, 7493 f, 7661 f); agaÿn, 3495 f (-e BC, ayen D), 5665 f (ageyne D); ayeyn, 7360 f (aÿeynne B, aÿeyn C, ayen D). (ii.) ayèn his, 280; agaÿn hym, 1533 B (ayen D; hym àgayn by A⁹). [Var. B aÿeyn, aÿein; C aÿeyn, ageyn, ageyne, aÿein, aÿen, aÿyn, aÿin; D aÿen.] ayènward, 3592 (aÿeynward B, aÿyn- C), 6243 (aÿin- C, aÿeynwarde B, om. † D).

Rhyme-words.—certaÿn (5665, 7493), seyn *ind.* 3 *pl.* (5665), seyn *inf.* (5980, 6848, 7373, 7661), seyn *p.p.* (3061), sleyn *p.p.* (6588), fayn (3061, 3495, 5980, 6848, 7358, 7373), rayn *n.* (3495).

certes (O. Fr. certes), (i.) 572, 773 (D †), 1618, 4108 f (: desertes *pl.*), 4138, 5652, 5687; (ii.) 3651, 4320. [Var. BC certys; CD certis; C sertis, sertys.]

¹ Supply [*the*] in D.

² Supply [*what*] in C.

³ If the reading of D were to be kept, both these lines would consist of nine syllables, and we should have to accent *askauns*.

⁴ In 292 *ascaunces* translates Boccaccio's *quasi dicesse*.

⁵ Perhaps 9-syl. Supply [*the*] in C.

⁶ 9-syl.

⁷ Supply [*now*] in CD.

⁸ Supply [*ne*] in ACD.

⁹ Transpose, and read *agaÿn*.

elles, ellys, ellis (A.S. elles), (i.) (ii.) 345,¹ 688, 728, 948, 972, 1564, 1660, 2160, 2237,² 2775,³ 3408, 3433, 3661, 3811 (D †), 3933,⁴ 3996, 4183, 4186 (*om.* † C), 4204,⁵ 4268,⁶ 4353 (C †), 4622 (*om.* † D), 5085, 5718, 5729,⁷ 5931, 7740 f (cf. 1501 C †, 5992, 5999, 6418, 6701, 7033, 7067, 7407, 7519, 7664, 7844, 8160). [Var. C eH (= ellis).]—elles-where, ellys-where, ellis-where, 5360 f, 6138 f, 7612, 7681. [Var. C eH (= ellis).]

Rhyme-words.—wellys *pl.* (7740), helle ys (7740).

Note.—I do not think a good case of *elles* (monosyllable) occurs (cf. 371, 3517 D, 4268 E, 4353 C).

hennes, henne (A.S. heonon, L.W.S. heonone); hennes, 4679 (-nis D), 7624 (henys † C, hens † D); hen[ne]s, 3009, 6766, 6970, 7016 (hens † (?) D), 7254 (hennes D), 7258, 8080 (*leaf gone in C*)⁸; hen[ne]s hye, 6852 (hennes B, henys C)⁹; hens away, 572 (henne B, hene C); hens (*before consonants*), 574 † D, 4267 A † (hennēs B, henys C, hen[ne]s E), 7220 † D (*l. he*).—henne, 1294 f (: thenne), 3472 f (hende † B, hen CD) (: thenne), 5908 f (: brenne *inf.*).

medes, in *to medes* (A.S. tó médes, Siev. § 320), Myself *to medes* wolę the lettre sowe, 2286 (Myn seluen † the medis C, My self † the medis D).

nedes, nede (A.S. néde, nēde, nédes, nēdes); nedes, 1524 (nede C), 3458 (nedes (?) A), 4004, 4362, 4551 (D †), 6015, 6681 (C † D †), 7715,¹⁰ 8025, cf. 5277 † C. [Var. CD nedis.]—nede, 1756 f (: drede *n.*); nede, 4129 (nedis C), 6261 (C †; nedes † D).

nones. See *ones*.

ones, onys (A.S. éne, *Pet. Chron.* ánes), 472 (D †), 549¹¹ (*om.* † D),¹² 792, 2742, 4429, 4499 (D †), 6129, 6933, 6934, 7402; onys haue, 1566¹³;—at ones, at onys, 90 f, 804 f 2024 f, 2468 f, 2708 (D †),¹⁴ 3192 (-es † thei D), 4845 f, 5503 f, 6404 (D †), 6406; at ones er, 2961 (-ys or CD). [Var. BD oones; CD onis; B atonees.¹⁵]

Rhyme-words.—bones *pl.* (90, 804), stones *pl.* (2024, 2468), the nones, nonys (2468, 4845), non is (5503).

for the nones, nonys, 561, 2466 f, 4847 f, 5090. [Var. B noones.]

other weyes. See *weyes*.

thennes (A.S. þanon), 3987 (thenē C, thennē D), 5396 (then[ne]s CD);

¹ D has for good †.

² Supply [that] in D, and read *line* for *dye*.

³ A is defective. Hiatus in D.

⁴ Supply [of] in C.

⁵ Supply [that] in C.

⁶ *elles* (?) E.

⁷ Supply [it] in B; l. [co]me in D.

⁸ In these cases (3009-8080), except when otherwise noted, B reads *hennes*, C *henys*, D *hen[ne]s*.

⁹ Supply [if] in D.

¹⁰ Supply [me] in D.

¹¹ Old-style figures indicate that a vowel follows.

¹² Supply [in] in B.

¹³ Supply [haue] in B.

¹⁴ 9-syl.

¹⁵ As to the pronunciation of *atones*, cf. the division *a-tonys* in C 2024.

then[ne]s, 5357 (tennes B, therē † B, thense *dissyl.* D), 6924 (tennes B), 7034 (thennes B, thenys C), 7143 (thennes B), 7248 (thennes B, thens † D), 8177 (thennes B). [then[ne]s † wolde he, 6839 C.] thriēs, thrie, thrye (A.S. *þriwa*); thries hadde, 6372 (cf. 2484 † D); thrie, thrye, 1174 f (thry D), 1548 f (threye B), 2370 f.

Rhyme-words.—*compane* (1174), *iupartie* (1548), *folye* (2370), *yn hye* (1174), *lye mentior* (2370).

togedēres, togedre (A.S. *æt-, tō-gædre*), togedēres cuere, 5984 (-gidēres B, -gedir D, -gederē d[w]elle C); to-gedre¹ so, (to-giderē B, to-gederē C, to-gider D).²

to medes. See *medes*.

towārdes (A.S. *tō-weardes*), etc.; towārdes, (i.) 523³; (ii.) t. hire, 2307; t. hym, 6080. [Var. BCD *towardis*; C -ys.] towārd, (i.) 5017 (-ē BD), 6054 (-ē B, -ēs D; C †), 7004 (-ē B); to Troyewārdes and, 59 (*troy[e] wardis* D); to meward shal, 6328 (-ē BD).—thēderwārdēs † gan, 2335 (*thiderward* B, *thedirward* C, *thidirward* D)⁴; cf. *whedirwārdēs*, 4944 D (*wheder* A, *whedir(e)* B, *whedyr* C); *vpwārdis* † at, 3047 D; *her-āftirwārdis* † for, 984 D (*her afterward* A, *here efterwardē* B, *here aftyward* C), cf. 6193, 7291.⁵

Note.—Other words in *-ward*⁶ are: *ayēnward*, 3592, 5689, 6243; *bākward(e)*, 6215; *downward*, 1991, 2790, 6211; *ēstward*, 4261 BE, 6640; *hōmward*, 2388, 3463, 6845, 7545; *inward*, 2810, 2817; *ōutward*, 2789; *ēpward*, *ēpwārd*, 2913, 3047, 5821, 7471, 7723.

twyēs (A.S. *twiwa*, *Chron.* 1120 *twiges*), 2484 (*thriēs* † D), 2940 (D †), 6460 (*twiis* C),⁷ 6760 (*twyē* B), 7252. [Var. BCD *twiēs*; B *tweyes*; C *twiȝis*, *twyis*.]

vnnēthes, vnēthes (A.S. *unēaþe*), 301 (-ē (?) C, -is D),⁸ 1651 (-is D, *onnethis* C), 4911 (-ē C, -is D). (Cf. *vnnethe*, § 82.)

-wardes, -ward. See *to-wardes*.

weyes. He feleth other weyes dar I leye, 4500 (*otherē wayes* B, *otherē woyis* C, *other-wisē* D). (Cf. *alweyes*, *algates*.)

whennes (A.S. *hwanon*), 408 (*whenys* C †, *when[ne]s* D); *when[ne]s*, 402 (*whennes* B, *whennys* C, *when[ne]s* D).⁹—*whens* † eucry, 404 D (*whenne* AB, *whanne* C).

¹ Dissyllable.

² Supply [*me*] or [*I*] in D.

³ Read *a[I]s[o]* in D.

⁴ Read *soft[ē]ly* in A; dele (*he*) in D.

⁵ *Afterward* † *ros*, 4261 A (*aftyward* † C, *estward* BE).

⁶ Variants not noted, but no MS. has *-es*, *-is*, in the cases cited. In some MSS., however, *-e* is at times written, though never sounded. In this note no distinction is made as to whether vowel or consonant follows.

⁷ Dele (*he*) in B. In C, dele (*be-*) and (*de*); then read *twiis*.

⁸ Supply [*how*] in C. ("A later *to* stuck in." Furnivall.)

⁹ In both 402 and 408 we may reduce *whennes* to one syllable by reading *comēth* instead of *comēth*.

VERBS.

§ 92. Present Indicative.—The First Person Singular of the Present Indicative ends regularly in -e (Child, § 48; ten Brink, § 184). Thus,—

I. In rhyme :

beseche, byseche, 855 f (be[se]che B) (: leche *n.*), 2505 f (: speche);
cf. 1331 f, 3235 f, 3597 f, 4178 f, 5116 f, 6749 f, 7492 f, 7972 f;
be[se]che, 5811 f (biseche B, beseche C, besheche D) (: speche);
beseche, 6294 f (beseke BD) (: eke *adv.*); bysek[e], 3573 f (biseke
B, beseche C, byseke D) (: ek *adv.* A, eke BCD).

defende, 2818 f (: amende *subj.* 3 *sg.* : sende *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*).

defyne, 5052 f (: ruyne *n.* : deuyne *inf.*).

desire, 6954 f (: ire).

deuyse, 3277 f (: seruyse), 4921 f (: suffise *inf.*).

directe, 8219 f (: corecte *inf.*).

dye, 420 f (deye AC) (: maladye); cf. til I dye, 5061 f (deye C, dey
D) (: eye); til that I dye, 6319 f (deye BC^e, dey D) (: ywrye *p.p.* :
eye); cf. also 4449 f, 5106 f.

gesse, 989 f (: goodnesse : wikkednesse), 1803 f (: dronkēnesse :
distresse).

grete (A.S. grétan), 4100 f (: the swete : planete).

herye, 3793 f (herie CD) (: merye *pred. pl.*).

hope, 932 f (: drope *n.*).

leue (*credo*), 993 f (: greue *inf.*), 4743 f (: acheue *inf.* : leue *adj. pl.*).

leye, 1046 f (ley D) (: seye *inf.*).

loue, 927 f (: loue *n.*), 1935 f (: loue *n.*).

lye (*mentior*), 2368 f (: thrye : folye); cf. 1385 f (: eye).

mene, 1666 f (: clene *pred. sg.*).

mete (A.S. métan), 4186 f (: swete *voc.*).

pace, 5467 f (pase C) (: deface *inf.*).

recomaunde, 7777 f (: comaunde *inf.*).

rede (*lego*), 159 f (: mede *pratum* : rede *adj. pl.*).

rede (*moneo*), 258 f (: lede *inf.*).

requere, 1443 f (-ire CD) (: chere *n.*).

resigne, 432 f (resyne C^e) (: digne : benygne).

sacrēfise, 6786 f (: aryse *inf.*).

sayle, 7004 f (: bewayle *inf.* : fayle *subj.* 1. *sg.*).

serue, 15 f (: sterue *inf.*), 3555 f (: til I sterue).

seye, 3124 f (dey *inf.* † D) (: though I preye : wreye *subj.* 2 *sg.*), 4236 f (seyde † B) (: pleye *inf.*). (Cf. note, below.)
 stere, 1089 f (: clere *inf.* : matere).
 suppose, 2339 f (: rose).
 swere, 3214 f (: spere).
 swete,¹ 2550 f (: Polyphete : plete *inf.*).
 telle, 2681 f (: dwelle *inf.*).
 trowe, 2106 f (: glowe *inf.*).
 warye, 7741 f (: contrarye).
 wene, 3249 f (: Polixene), 3341 f (: bytwene : contene *inf.*), 5455 f (: sustene *inf.* : tene).
 write, 4675 f (: endite *inf.*), 7989 f (wryȝte C) (: endite *inf.* : lite *adj.*).

II. Before consonants :

bidde, 3717 AB (preyē to (?) C, pray to D), 4312.	mene, 4637, 7367.
breke, 3157 BC (A? D?).	quake, 3213.
combre, 4941 (combere C ; D †) ; cf. suffre, 2947 (-er B, -ere C).	recche, 5460, 8082 (-[e] B ; rekke D).
fele, 6679, 7632.	seche, 7303 (seke D).
graunte, 785 (-[e] D), 1575 (-[e] B? D?).	sterue, 2615.
iape, 1225.	thanke, 1240 (-[e] D, -e it B).
kepe, 676.	thenke, 991 (thynkē † to C, thank <i>inv.</i> † D), 3249 (thynkē BC, thank it D).
loue, 2495, 5421, 6283.	vouchē sauf, 2268 (wouchē † D), 4752 (D †).

Before *th* :

bydde the, 1020 (-[de] D) ; coniuere the, 3035 (D †) ; fynde that, 8121 ; mene this, 6168 (-e thus † C ; D ?) ; pose that, 3413 ABC^c (suppose? D †) ; preyē the, 6963 (-[e] D) ; reioyse thus, 7528 (reioyē C).

Before *y* (consonant) :

telle yow, 3620 ; trowe ye, 5538 (-e I C †).

III. This -e is regularly elided before a vowel. Thus,—

clepe, 8, 7126 ; hope, 47 (B † (?) †), 2139, 2357,² 2610³ ; late, 133 (latt B) ; fele 400⁴ ; pleyne, 409 (C † D †), 534⁵ ; consente, 414 ; compleyne, 415 ; hide, 581 (hid(d)e B) ; loue, 667, 1382 ; hope I (: redy), 983 ; drede, 1012 ; hate, 1018, 5501, 8095 ; answeere, 1454⁶ ; make, 1569, 7966⁷ ; yeue, 1914 (C † D †) ; fare, 2593⁸ ;

¹ Perhaps subjunctive.³ Read *hold[e]*, later in line, in CD.⁵ *pleyn taught* † D ; *pleynē caught* B.⁷ Supply [æ] in C.² -e C ; D †.⁴ Supply [no] in A (D †).⁶ 9-syl in D †.⁸ Supply [her] in D, or read *farē a mys*.

· passe, 2680 ; mene, 2712 ; recche, 2954 ; warne, 3011 ; here, 3031 ;
cause, 3113 ; rede, 3500¹ ; excuse, 3878 ; clippe, 4186² ; ende, 4660
(D †) ; suffre, 6403 (-fere C) ; write 7695 ; speke, 8225.³

I knowe also and alday here and se, 1818 (know D).

Nece I coniuere and heighly yow defende, 2818 (O nece I coniouere &
heily defende C).

Yet eft I the *by-seche* and fully seye, 3124 (The pray y eft althogh
thow shuldest dey D †).

For that I *tarye* || is al for wykked speche, 7973 (-ie is CD).

IV. Elision before *h* : counte hem, 6726.

by-come here (*poss. sg.*), 434. holde hym, 7734.

speke hem, 4174 (cf. 4176 E). hope his, 8068.

loue hym, 5562 B (loueth † A).⁴

V. Exceptions.

There are several genuine cases of -e :

deye ye, 6594 (dey D).

preye the, 6693 (pray D) ; pray the, 6668 (-e B, -e 3ow C) ; pray to,
930 (-e B), 1667 (-e C) ; pray to god (?), 5101 A (preye god BC,
pray g. D) ; pray yow, prey yow, 1101 (-e B), 2362 (-e (?) B), 2491
(-e B, -e † that C),⁵ 6301 (-e † quod B),⁶ 6494 (-e B), 7984 (-e B).
Cf. also,—preye to, 7726 C (prey[ë] god A, pray to D) ; pray to,
3717 D (preye C, biddë god AB) ; pray with, 2145 A (-e I C, pray
ich BD).⁷

seye yow, 7361 (sey CD) ; seye that, 5640 (sey D), 5692 (sey BD) ;
-e though, 5703 (sey D) ; sey nought, 1758 ; sey for, 2738 ; sey not,
7365, 7366, 8142 ; sey no, 7771 ; sey this, 3165 (-e nought B, sei
not C, sey not D).

knowe not, 1267 (note † not D).

loue parde, 717 ; loue yow, 6296 (C † ? D † ?). Cf. also *loue*, 1332 †
B (-e ACD).⁸

menē that, 4133 (-e 3e † B, -e † wil C, thus he † wyll E).

rede that, 495 (-e I CD).

sette the, 1452 (set BD).

Cf. also dwelle, 6978 † C (-e ABD) ; hope, 973 † D (-e B ; A ? C ?),
3794 † D (-e ABC) ; leue, 7418 † D ; lyue, 3647 † D (-e ABC) ;
make, 3183 † A (*l. may*) ; plight † my, 6272 D (*p.p.* ABC) ; trowe,

¹ Read in B, *soon*[e to]. (D ?)

³ Supply [to] in A ; [I] in B.

⁵ D ridiculously inserts *deiphibus*.

⁶ *Preyë*, with -e fully sounded, may well enough stand for *prey ye = prey yow*.

⁷ In B, read *god* for *and*.

² Insert [*ellis*] in C.

⁴ D too long. C has a different line.

⁸ Supply [*that*] in C.

3735 A (trow I B, trow y D, -e C). In 1491 *bidde* appears to be the right reading.

Note 1.—The final -e is often omitted at the end of a line in one or another MS. Thus,—assent, 2143 f C (-e ABD) *rh.* entent CD (-e AB); begyn 1934 f C (synne AB, y bathē † yn D) *rh.* in C (inne AB, yn D) *rh.* syn C (synne ABD); bryng, 2394 f D (-e ABC) *rh.* incomyng D (-e ABC); bysek, 3573 f A (-e BD, besече C) *rh.* ek A (eke BCD); consent, 929 f CD (-e AB) *rh.* repente *ind.* 1 *sg.* ABC (-t D) *rh.* entent CD (-e AB); fast, 2251 f (-e AB) *rh.* fast *adv.* CD (-e AB) *rh.* cast *inf.* CD (-e AB); feynt, 410 f D (-e ABC) *rh.* pleynt D (-e ABC) *rh.* qweynt D (-e ABC); ges, 1372 f C (gesse ABD) *rh.* wrechednes CD (-sse AB); ges, 4569 f D (gesse ABC) *rh.* largesse ABCD *rh.* gladnes D (-sse ABC); repent, 926 f D (-e ABC) (see *consent*); repent, 1610 f CD (-e AB) *rh.* entent CD (-e AB); thenk, 2498 f D (-e A, thynke BC) *rh.* forthenk *inf.* D (-tlynke ABC); trow, 2284 f D (-e ABC) *rh.* sow *inf.* D (-e ABC) *rh.* on know D (-e ABC); trost, 3208 f C (trist D, triste AB) *rh.* lest *subj.* *pres.* 3 *sg.* C (lyste AB, list D) *rh.* wost *pret. subj.* 2 *sg.* C (wyste AB, wyst D); trust, 1332 f CD (-e A, triste B) *rh.* lyst *pres. subj.* 3 *sg.* (-e AB, lust D) *rh.* kyst *ind.* 3 *sg.* (keste A, kiste B, kust D *later hand*).—So especially in verbs ending in -eye, -aye. Thus D has *prey*, *pray* in the following places in which the other MSS. have -e,—760 f *rh.* sey dico D (-e ABC) *rh.* deye *inf.* AC (dye BD), 1588 f *rh.* purvey *inf.* D (-e AC, pleye † B), 2218 f *rh.* say *inf.* D (-e ABC), 2244 f *rh.* twey D (-e AB, to † C) *rh.* purvey *inv. pl.* D (-e ABC), 2293 f *rh.* sey *inf.* D (-e ABC) *rh.* dey *inf.* D (-e ABC), 2755 f *rh.* pleye † D (pleye *inf.* ABC) *rh.* lay *inf.* D (-e ABC), 2813 f *rh.* play *inv. pl.* D (-e ABC), 6531 f *rh.* obey *inf.* D (-e ABC), 8105 f *rh.* sey *inf.* D (-e AB), 8147 f *rh.* sey *ind.* 1 *sg.* D (-e AB), 8224 f *rh.* sey dico D (-e AB). So also,—sey, 1266 f D (-e ABC) *rh.* twey D (-e ABC), 1525 f *rh.* dey *inf.* D (-e ABC), 2280 f *rh.* twey D (-e AB, tweyne C) *rh.* awey D (-e ABC), 5431 f D (-e ABC) *rh.* deye *inf.* ACID (dye B); ley, 1046 f D (-e AB) *rh.* sey *inf.* D (-e AB); dey, 1209 f D (-e ABC) *rh.* pley *inf.* D (-e ABC) *rh.* awey D (-e ABC), 1512 f D *rh.* purvey *inv. or subj.* *sg.* D (-e ABC), 2954 f D (-e ABC) *rh.* sey *inf.* (-e ABC). In 1394 f, A has *prey*, D *pray*, while BC have *preye* (: sey *inf.* ABC, say D). Cf. *prey*, 5955 f CD (-e AB) *rh.* say *inf.* C (sey D, seye AB) *rh.* sey *acc.* CD (-e AB), 6935 f D (pray C, preye AB) *rh.* pley *inf.* D (play C, pleye AB) *rh.* sey *inf.* D (say C, seye AB); sey dico, 5585 f CD (-e AB) *rh.* dey *inf.* CD (-e A, dye B).—In the interior of the verse an -e necessary to the metre is sometimes omitted by the scribe: as,—*trouf*[e], 1881 BD (-e AC); cf. 601 AD, 1020 D, 7726 A, etc.

Note 2.—The omission of elided -e is not uncommon. Cases of it occur in all the MSS. Cf. the following lines (old-style figures indicate that A omits the elided -e): I. before vowels: 240, 263, 406, 424, 759, 864, 1103, 1191, 1269, 1807, 1818, 1836, 1837, 2423, 2533, 2590, 2879, 2951, 3090, 3102, 3124, 3249 D, 3347, 3474, 3478, 3689, 3735, 4020, 4191, 5585, 5908, 7448, 7608, 7734. II. Before *h*: 3649.

Note 3.—Hiatus is very rare. “I *fyndē ek* in storyes ellys where,” 7407, seems a pretty certain instance, though B has *fynde*, saving the metre by the insertion of *the* before *storyes*. Cf. also *louē oon*, 1923 AD (-e B, leue † C); *menē † I*, 3463 A (-e B, -e it CD); *bathē † yn*, 1934 D (bathe *inf.* AB, -e † *inf.* C); *takē † it*, 7951 A (-e BD, tok † C).

Note 4.—For the monosyllabic *se*, cf. (i.) 842 f, 1517, 1818 f, 2909, 5907, 5986, 6261, 6268, 7355, 7432, 7498, 7525, 7736 f, 8058; (ii.) *se hym*, 1418; *se here* (*eam*), 7521. [Var. BCD sec.]

§ 93. The Second Person Singular of the Present Indicative ends in *-est* (*-ist*, *-yst*), *-st* (*-est*) (Child, § 49; ten Brink, §§ 184, 186, 259). Thus,—

- I. *-est* :
- | | |
|--------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| abydest, 7538 (-yst C). ¹ | knowest, 4951 (-yn † C, -ist D). |
| biddest, 5118 (-yst C, counsel-
lest † D). | ledest, 1612 (-ist D †). |
| coniestest, 5688 (-iect- B, comit-
tist † D). | louest, 2481 (-is C, -ist D). |
| counseylest, 2613 (-ist C, -ist
D †). | menest, 3179 (-ist C, -yst D). ⁴ |
| desirest, 7821 (-ist † C). | regnest, 8227. ⁵ |
| deuysest, 5205 (demys † C,
demist † D). | semest, 2601 (-yst C, -ist D). |
| deynest, 4277 (-yst C). | sorwest, 5302 (-ist CD), 5763
(-ist C). ⁶ |
| dremest, 7645 (-yst C). | stondest, 3089 (-ist CD). |
| endurest, 785 (-yst C, -ist D). | suffrest, 3863 (-ferēd † C, -frist
D), 4309 (-frist D, sufferyst C,
sooffrist(e) B). |
| errest, 4964 (-yst C). | thinkest, 2591 (-ist CD). |
| farest, 5125 (-[e]st C). ² | tornest, 196 (-yst CD). ⁷ |
| feynest, 6776 (-yst C). | tristest, 720 (-yst C †, -ist D †). |
| hyēst, 4283 (hiġest D). ³ | waylest, 556 (-yst C, -ist D). |
| | wenest, 5688 (-ist D), 7885
(-yst † C, -est † D). |

II. *-st*, *-est* :

(a) Monosyllables :

- flest, 4277 (fleest BD).⁸
lyst (*jaces*), 2076 (list B, lyest D).
seist, seyst (*dicis*), 834, 932 (sest C) (?), 1033 (seyst(e) B), 5111
(seyest (?) D), 5784 (sest C), 7526 (seyest D), 7883; cf. 720 CD.
sleest, 5174 (slest BC); slest(e), 5117 A (slest BC, sleest D).

Note.—In 8154,—“And kys the steppes there as thow *seest* pace,”—it is perhaps better to read *steppes* and *seest*.

(b) *spekeſt*, 2508 (-ist CD).

- renneſt, 6211 AB (-yst C; D (?)).
ēntermētyst, 1019 † C (?) (entremetist † (?) D).

Cf. also the variants under I.

Note.—Forms in *-is*, *-ys*, un-Chaucerian and due to the scribes, are *lowis*, 2481 C (-est AB, -ist D), and *demys* †, 5205 C (demist † D, deuysest AB).

¹ Supply [*that*] in CD (?).

² Supply [*so*] in C; [*for*] in D?

³ Supply [*æ*] in D.

⁷ Supply [*fu*] in AD (?).

² Supply [*thow*] in C.

⁴ Supply [*ucl*] in A.

⁶ 9-syl. in C.

⁸ Supply [*thou*] in C; dele (*niſt*) in D.

§ 94. The Third Person Singular of the Present Indicative ends in *-eth* (*-ith*, *-yth*), *-th* (*-eth*, *-ith*, *-yth*) (Child, § 50; ten Brink, §§ 184, 186). Examples are:

I. *-eth* (*-ith*, *-yth*):

He *spenleth iusteth maketh festeynynges*

He *yeueth frely ofte and chaungeth wede*, 4560-1 (all ending in *-yth* in C, in *-ith* in D¹).

weneth, 216 (*-yth* C, *-ith* D).

gynneþ, 218 (*-yth* CD).

priketh, 219 (*-yth* C, *-ith* D).

turneth, 324 f (*-yth* C, *-ith* D); soïðrñeth (*-yth* C, *-ith* D): borneth *-yth* C, vnournith † D.²

serueth, 332 (*-yth* C, *-ith* D).

asketh, 339 (*-yth* C, *-ith* D).

thenketh, 403 (*-yth* C,³ *-ith* D).

knoweth, 450 (*-yth* C, *-ith* D).

causeth, 551 (*-ith* D).

defendeth, 603 (*-yth* C, offendith † D): offendeth (*-yth* C, *-ith* D).

auayleth, 604 (*-yth* C): sailleth (*-yth* C, ffayleth † A): assaylleth (*-yth* C, *-ith* D); etc., etc.

The above cases are chosen from lines which all four MSS. give. Cf. also the following examples, also from such lines, in which AB have *-eth*, CD *-yth* or *-ith* or both: 625, 632, 667, 764 f, 766 f, 858, 1296, 1458 f, 1850, 1882 f, 2002, 2065, 2072, 2142, 2216, 2471, 2510, 2536, 3877, 4493, 4494, 4981 f, 7876, etc., etc.

It appears, then, that the usual ending in unsynopated cases is *-eth* for A and B, *-yth* or *-ith* for C and D. But C sometimes has *-eth*: as, *seseth*, 1873; *axeth*, 2156; *desireth*, 2235; *causeth*, 2331; *crieth*, 4979, etc. That D sometimes has *-eth* is shown by the first list of examples; others are: *ncdeth*, 2626; *endeth*, 5166; *beteth*, 5572; *floureth*, 6239; *dredeth* 7026, etc. The usual ending of D is *-ith*, as that of C is usually *-yth*.

Note 1.—Forms in *-it*, *et*, *-yt* are occasionally found. Thus,—*breystyt*, 258 C (read *breſt*); *comyt*, 402 C (read *comth*); *fallit*, 142 C; *fallyt*, 212 C; *pruēt*, 7311 B (perhaps meant for preterite); *louēt*, 8001 B (possibly meant for preterite); *rennet*, 2839 B; *turnyt*, 1883 f C (: *spornyth*); *wexit*, 942 C. *Brennyt*, 5340 C, is probably meant for a preterite, and so perhaps *entendit*, 6832 C. It is barely worth while to note such spellings as,—*dauentht*, 1484 B; *forzetht*, 1460 f B; *getht*, 1461 f B; *hany[e]ht*, 2071 B; *louyzt*, 8001 C; *pleyght*, 840 B; *styntht*, 3740 B; *thenketh*, 221 A; *doutheth*, 6251 B; *etheth*, 1458 f B; *sermountheth*, 3880 B; *chasiþe*, 5077 D; *occupie þe* (for *occupieth*), 7685 D.

Note 2.—A few examples of the third person singular in *-es*, *-s*, occur in B: *comes*, 5715 B (*comth* AD); *has*, 3457 B (*hath* BCD); *loues*, 1753 B (*-ede* AC, *-yd* D); *thankes*, 2306 B (*thouked* A, *thankede* hym C; *thoukyd* D). *Reples*, *meddles*, *wrces*, in A, 4956 f, 5001, 4744, are mere

¹ But *iustith* † D.

² Cf. 4979-81-82.

³ Supply [*rykke*] in C.

scribes' blunders for *repeled*, *meddled*, *weren*. In 5100 C, *trowis* should be *trewe is*. (Cf. Child, § 50 ; ten Brink, § 185.)

Rhyme words.—The ending *-eth*, 3 sg., rhymes usually with itself : cf., besides the places already cited, 1892-4-5, 2869-70, 4493-4, 4979-81-83, 5235-6, 5571-2, 6574-6, 7146-7. But see also *semeth*, 643 f (-yth C, -ith D) (: the wyse it demeth AB, thes clerkis demith D), and *occupieth*, 5498 f (C †) (: men lieth).

II. The Present Indicative Third Person Singular in *-eth*, *-th* (-e-syncopeated) is not uncommon. As we should expect, we find instances of it (a) in verbs ending in a vowel, or (b) in *m*, *r*, *v* (or *f*) ; but (c) it is not confined to such verbs.

(a) Verbs ending in a vowel :

lyth, lith, 1550,¹ 1800 (ly3t C), 1826, 2658,² 2823 (ly3th C),³ 4890 (lith(e) D), 5005 (lieth D), 5078 (lyeth D),⁴ 5120 (leyth C, lieth D), 5530 (lieth D ?),⁵ 5816, 7648 (lieth D), 7650 (lieth † D),⁶ 7780 (lieth D). (Cf. 1551 A, 7633 CD, 7782 C.)

pleyeth, 840 (-eht B, pleyth D).

purreieth, 5728 (-ueyth D, -ueyed † A).

seth, seeth,⁷ (*videt*), 4082 (sey † C), 4410 (seeth (?) D),⁸ 5625, 5636, 6595 (sey † C), 7546 (sey *pret.* C) ; seyth, 2339 (seth B, sey C, seyd † D) ; cf. 6820 C.

Whoso me *seth* he *seth* sorwe al at onys, 5503 (seeth . . . seeth B, seeth . . . seyth D).

seyth, seith (*dicat*), 1004 (syth B, sey † C), 1181 (syth B), 1755, 1940 (sayith C), 2461, 3110 (soith B), 3153, 3344, 3638, 3876, 6265,⁹ 7042, 7246 (sithe † C), 8014 ; *seith*, 1103 D, seems to be dissyllabic, but read *seydē* (cf. AB). In 2394 : He song as who *seyth* (seith BD, seth C) sumwhat I brynge, are we to insert *he* before *who* or to read *seyeth* ? Mr. Austin's collation makes no note.

sleth, 7706 (sleeth D).

Note.—*fleth*, 5323 C, is a wrong reading. In D 4410 we are hardly to read *knoweth*.

(b) Verbs in *m*, *r*, *v* (*f*) :

cometh, 402 (comth B, comyt C, -ith D),¹⁰ 405,¹¹ 408 (-yth (?) C, -ith (?) D),¹² 1369, 1461 (comth B), 1728 (-yth B), 2320 (comth B),

¹ *li[ē]th* (?) C ; but supply [*now*] and read *lith*. ² Supply [*to*] in CD.

³ Supply [*of*] in B. ⁴ But read *new[ē]* and *lyeth* in D.

⁵ But supply [*now*] in D, and read *lieth*.

⁶ But supply [*him*] in D, and read *lieth*.

⁷ *Seeth* is always monosyllabic in this list. A has usually *seth*, but *seeth* in 6595 ; D has usually *seeth*.

⁸ Not a very certain line as to metre ; apparently a nine-syllable verse.

⁹ Supply [*that*] in A.

¹⁰ If we read *whens* (so AD), we must read *cometh* (-ith) ; if *whennēs* B (-ys C), *comth*.

¹¹ Old-style figures indicate that CD have *-yth* or *-ith*. ¹² Cf. 402.

2338 (comth B, -yth (†) C, -ith D), 2420 (comth B), 2470, 2877¹ (D †), 3721 (comth B), 5083 (-yth C), 5166, 6754 (come B, comth D), 6789 (comth D, -yth C),² 7104 (-yth C, comth D), 7505 B (-yth B, comth D, com(e) † A). (Cf. 4067 † B, 5761 † C, 7486 B); bicometh, 1880 BC (-eth A †, -ith D †), 1882; ouercometh, 6246 (-yth (†) C †, -comth D †).

comth, 5704 (-eth B), 5715 (comes B), 7034 (-eth B, -yth C),³ 7516 (-yth C), 7532 (-yth C).⁴ (Cf. 7486 D, 7506 † D.)

For al that cometh comth by necessite, 5620 (comth . . . comth D). sem^{eth}, 889 (-yth C, -ith (†) D), 3030 (-yth C, -ith D); cf. 7969 D. men^{eth}, 1472 A (-ith D, mene † B, mene 2 *pl.* C^e). Cf. 1806 † D, 7513 C † D †.

ber^{eth}, 939, 940, 1272 (-ith (†) C, -ith D †), 1486 (berth B †), 6823 (-yth C, kepⁱth † D).

far^{eth}, 956.

swer^{eth}, 1739 (swerth B), 7793 (swerth B).

byhou^{eth}, 5666, 5716; cf. 5967 CD.

dryfth, 7695 (dryuyth C, dryu^{eth} D).

lou^{eth}, 4605 (-yth C, -eth E⁵), 7793 (-yth C),⁶ 8109 (-e^d † D); cf. 5562 † A.

But,—

com^{eth}, 7486 (-yth C, -eth B, comth D); cf. 3904 † D.

sem^{eth}, 1201 (-yth C, -ith D), 5549 (-yth C),⁷ 6664 (-yst † C, -yth D).⁸

men^{eth}, 1806 (leuyth † C, menⁱth D), 7798 (-yth C).

far^{eth}, 1080 (-ith D); cf. 652.

dryu^{eth}, 7464 (drieth C †, driu^{eth} D †). (Cf. 1085, 7903.)

lou^{eth}, 1404 (-yth (†) C, -ith D), 1815 (-yth C, -ith D), 1862 (-y^t C, -ith D), 2854 (-ith D).

(c) Other verbs :

lik^{eth}, 3227 B (-ith C, -eth † A, lyke † D); cf. 7729 C (D (†)).

mak^{eth}, 1318 (-eth B, -yth C, -ith D)⁹; cf. 2468 C.

ned^{eth}, 1261 AB (-ith C † D †), 2475 AB (-ith † C, -ith (†) D)¹⁰; cf. 6699 † C.

spek^{eth}, 6599 (-eⁿ † B, -ith C).

thenk^{eth} (*videtur*), 1292 (-yth C, -ith D),¹¹ 1486 (B †; -ith C), 2714

¹ Supply [*that*] in B.

² But supply [*that*] in C, and read -yth.

³ In AD read *then[ne]*.

⁴ Supply [*that*] in D.

⁵ Supply [*now*] in E.

⁶ "That wonder was and *sucreth* she *loueth* hym best."

⁷ Supply [*me*] in C.

⁸ Supply [*for*] in BD.

⁹ Dele (*to*) in C.

¹⁰ In D, read *long[ē]*.

¹¹ Supply [*for*] in D.

eth † B, -ith C, -ith † D),¹ 5146 (-yth C, thinkest † D), 6942 (-ith C; D (?)); me of-thynkēth, 1043 (mathynkēth B, me athinkith † D).

But,—

likēth, 1247 (-yth C, -ith D), 1527 (likē † 3ow C, -ith D), 1615 (-ith CD),² 3196 AB, 4809 (-ith CD).

makēth, 4669 (-ith D).

nedēth, 1096 (-ith D),³ 1547 (-ith CD), 1582 (-ith CD), 3791 (-ith CD), 4305 (C †; -ēth D), 4485 (-yth C, -ith D), 4518 (-yth C, -ith D), 8211 (-ēth D). (Cf. 740 A, 3699 CD.)

thenkēth (*videtur*), cf. 1392 † D, 2714, 3222, 5497, 5772, 5926, 6483, 7235. Cf. thenketh (*putat*), 1118 (thynketh B, thenkyth D).

Note.—In some cases of apparent *-eth* (*-yth*, *-ith*), a comparison of MSS. makes it certain or probable that the unsynocopated form is right. See 142 D, 195 C, 868 D, 1087 B, 1397 D, 1464 CD (*perhaps right*), 1568 C, 1876 C, 4674 B, 4901 D, 5967 CD; and cf. also 1631 † C (?), 3084 † C, 3792 † B (?), 4479 † CD, 5390 C †, 6598 C †. See other cases of synocopated *-yth* in the variants under § 95.

§ 95. The following examples of the third person singular in *-t* from verbs in *t*, *d*, *s*, occur in the *Troilus* (Child, § 51; ten Brink, § 186):

ablt, 1084.

bet, 1498 (let B, redith C, ret D).

bitit, 1133 (betýt D); by-týt, 6708 (bitit B, be-týdyth C, betidde † D).

(Cf. *tyt*, below.)

bytrēt, 4073 (be- C; bi- D (?)); cf. 5532 (?).

blent, 4667 (blent(e) B).

brest, 258 (brestyt C, brestith D), 4479 (brestyth C, brekith D).

drat, 3170 (dredith D).

forbēt, 1802 (forbed(e) C, forbod(e) D †).

halt, 1122 (holt D), 3849 (holdyth C, holt D), 4216 BE (holt AC), 4478 (haldyth C †, holt D), 4589 (hast † C), 4606 (holt E), 6711 (holt C, halt(e) D); holt, 4562 D (held AC, hold B).

hent, 4667 (hent(e) B).

hurt, 6713 (hirt C).⁴ (*Preterite* ?)

last, 5250 (lestyth (?) C, last(e) D).

lat, 4862 (lat(e) them [not] D).

let, 1967 BC.⁵

¹ In B read *sith* for *soth*.

³ Insert [*other*] in A (D ?).

² In CD read *des[es]perance*.

⁴ Supply [*a*] in D.

⁵ But AD have *led*, and a past tense seems almost necessary: "*led here lyf*."

lyst, lest, lust, cf. 518, 840, 852, 1308, 2136 f, 2233, 2479 f, 3243 f, 3417, 3493, 3781 f, 5753, 7716 f, 7796 f, etc. ; lyst(e), cf. 2479 f.

ouer-sprat, 1852 (ouersprad D).

put, 5683.

ret, 1498 D (see *bet*).

rist, 937 (ryseþh C), 1897, 4894 (ryst(e) B, risiþh D), 5825 (rist(e) D) ;
vp rist, 6105 (rist vp C).

ritt, 2369 (ride þ B, rit C, ridiþh D) ; right, 6423 (rit(e) B, rauzt þ C, ritt(e) D),—read *rit*.

sent, 2208 ABCD ; but the metre is short by one syllable except in D, which reads *sent to*. Perhaps we should read *sent[ē]*, pret.

sit, 12 (sitt D), 246 (sitt B, seyth þ C, syt D), 976 (sitt B), 2020 (syt D), 3869 (is þ B, syt D), 5685, 5688 f (: it : yit), 5693, 5699, 5701, 6596 (sitt(e) D), 7367 (sitt B, sitt(e) D), 7675 (settiþh D), 8207 (sitt BD).

smert, 6780 (-e) D). Perhaps noun.

stant, 602 (stonde þ B, stondiþh C), 2273 (C (?); stont D), 2463 (stond C, stont D),¹ 2477 (stont C, stond D þ), 2698 (stont D), 3338 (stont AD), 3627 (stont C), 3745 C (stont AD, stant(e) B), 4404 (stont AC), 5212 (stont C), 5679, 6048 (stant(e) B),² 6596 (stant(e) B, stont C), 8091 (stont B, stant(e) D) ; vndirstant þ, 8005 C (-stod A, -stood B, -stood(e) D).

tret, 1432.

tyt, 333 (tit B). (Cf. *bitit*, above.)

went, 1121 f (went(e) B) (: shent *p.p.*), 1897 (*om.* þ B, wentē C).³

writ, 394 (writ(e) B, wryt CD).

wryth(e), 4073 (writh(e) B, writen þ (?) D).

yelt, 385 (zelt B, zillyth C, yeldiþh D).

But forms in *-eth* are found. Thus,⁴—

beteth, 5572 f.

biteth, 4493 f (: delyteth).

dredeth, 7026.

eteth, 1458 f : foryeteth : geteth. (Cf. *et*, Leg. G. W., 1389.)

knetteth, 4590 (endytyth þ C, kennyth þ D).

lasteth, 4664.

¹ Supply [*she*] in D.

² Supply [*thus*] in D.

³ May perhaps be preterite (*went[e] here*).

⁴ Trifling variations in spelling are not registered.

lysteth, listeth, 671, 1785 (leste *pret.* C, lest D †), 4659 (lest[e] *pret.* (†) D).

nedeth, 1096, etc.

rideth, 1773, 6924 (redyn † C).

sendeth, 2870 f (: entendeth).

smerteth, 667 (cf. *smert*, Ch's. ABC, 152).

spredeþ, 2065.

stenteth, 3740; stynteth, 4076.

stondeþ, 2231 (l. om. C).

Cf. also hasteth, 949, 4549 (-iþh † D); threteth, 5571 f B (-yth C, treteth A, treth † D); thursteth, 7769 (trustyth † C); wasteth, 1478; and the Romance verb,—iusteth, 4560.

§ 96. The Plural of the Present Indicative ends regularly in *-en* or *-e*; but forms occur in *-eth* (and rarely in *-es*) (cf. Child, § 52; ten Brink, § 186).

Before consonants, *-en* is commoner than *-e*; in rhyme, *-e* is commoner than *-en*. Before vowels or *h*, *-en* and *-e* (elided) are regular, *-en* (apocoped) is rare. For *-eth*, *-es*, see § 97.

The following list is arranged as follows: I. *-en* before consonants. II. *-en* in rhyme. III. *-en* before vowels. IV. *-en* before *h*. V. Syncope: *-en*, *-n*. VI. *-e* before consonants. VII. *-e* in rhyme. VIII. Elision: *-e* before vowels. IX. Elision: *-e* before *h*. X. Apocope: *-e*. XI. Present plural of A.S. *fléon*, *séon*, *sléan*, *wréon*.

I. *-en* before consonants: (a) First Person:

seggen we, 4856 (siggen B, seyde † C, sey we D).

seruen bothe, 6506 (*-e* D, were † C).

departen ye and I, 7436 (*-yn* 2 *pl.* C).

(b) Second Person:

preysen thus, 1180 (*-in* D, pryse C).

lyuen by, 1435 (*-yn* CD).¹

slepen so, 1632 (*-in* C, *-yn* D).

faren wel, 2234 (*-e* C †, *-yn* D).

felen wel, 2368 (*-e* C, *-yn* D).

holden regne, 2871 (*-yn* D).

heren wel, 2994 (*-yn* CD).

liggen wel, 3511 (*-yn* C, *-e* D). (Conditional sentence.)

lysten for, 4652 (lest[e] to D).

comen be, 4989 (*-[e]* D, *-yn* to C).

louyn most, 5259 C (*-eth* AB, *-eth* 3 *sg.* D).²

¹ Dele (*that*) in A.

² Query this line?

knowen wel, 6030 (-e C); cf. 2737 B †.

mystrusten me, 6268 (-yn C^c).

touchen nought, 7359 (-e C, -[e] D).¹

yeuen me, 7778 (-yn C, -e D).¹

requeren me, 7963 (-yn C, -e D).

(c) Third Person :

reden not, 241 (-yn C, -ith D; B †).

slepen softe, 914 (-e C, -(t)en B; D †).

writen clerkes, 954 (-e C, -yn D), 3694 (-yn CD), 4041 (-yn C); w.

folk, 4680 (-yn D); w. they, 6083 (-e CD);² w. that, 7179
(wotyn † C).

fareen wel, 1248 (-e C, -yn D).

tellen that, 1270 (-e CD); t. xx., 6069 (-e C †, -[e] D), t. this, 6728
(-yn C, -e D).

fallen thikke, 1541 (-es A, -e C, -yn D); f. chaunces, 5760 (-yn C (?),
-en D (?)).

louen wommen, 1819 B (-yn CD, -en † a A); l. nouellerye, 1841
(-yn CD).

defamen loue, 1945 (-yn CD).

speken but, 1946 (-yn CD).

curen folk, 2665 (-e C, -ith D).

dreden shame, 2867 (-yn D).³

wondren so, 2874 (-in D).⁴

seruen the, 2882 (-yn D); s. best, 4107 (-yn CD^c).

techen bokes, 2933 (-in C, -yn D).

lyuen soth, 3272 (-yn CD).

dremen thynges, 3427 (-yn D, demyn C).

callen fals, 3656 (-yn D, tellen B, -yn C); c. loue, 4224 (-e C,
elepen E).

comen nough[t], 3660 (-yn D (?), -[e] C).

bryngen folk, 4046 (-yn C, -eth B).

commenden so, 4534 (-yn CD).

drawen forth, 4546 (-yn CD, -[e]n B).⁵

desiren now, 4864 (-yn C).

vsen frendes, 5343 (-yn C).

bytiden by, 5719.

semen dede, 5754 (-yn C, -ë D).

¹ Subjunctive ?

² Supply [of] in C.

³ In 4718 *dredulen* (*dreden* B, *drededyn* D) is of course preterite.

⁴ Read *thing[es]* in A.

⁵ Apparently a 9-syl. verse.

purpòsen pes, 6012 (-yn C, -ed † D).
 proceden thei, 6733 (-yn C, -en † D).
 wenen lese, 6744 (-e C^e D).
 knowen folk, 6778 (-en D (?), -yn C (?)); cf. 4951 C).
 stonden for, 7482 (stodę they C).
 showen bothe, 8077 (-yn D).

II. -en in rhyme. Third Person :

dryen, 303 f (: eyen : dyen *inf.*).
 treten, 742 f (-e C, -yn D) (: beten *p.p.*).
 deseyuen, 1370 f (-e C; D †) (: receyuen *inf.* : weyuen *inf.* B
 (weylen † A)).
 dremen, 1885 f (demen † CD) (: semen 3 *pl.* : quemen 3 *pl.*).
 semen, 1887 f (-yth † (?), C, -yn D).
 quemen, 1888 f (-yn CD).
 erien, 1950 f (eryzen C) (: eyen *pl.* : dryen *inf.*).¹
 vsen, 3865 f (-yn CD) (: excusen *inf.*).
 labouren, 4107 f (-on B, -yn CD^e) (: honouren *inf.* : socouren *inf.*).
 grauen, 4304 f A (-ë BCD) (: hauen *inf.* (-e BCD)).
 growen, 4602 f (-yn C, grevyn † E) (: flowen *inf.*).

III. -en before vowels. (a) Second Person :

apeysen, 2864 (-yn D). ²	shenden, 1675 (-yn C, -ë D).
bathen, 22.	slepen, 1630 (-in C, -yn D).
compleynen, 4685 B (-ës A, -yn D).	stonden, 428 (-yn CD).
demen, 3614 (-yn CD).	suffren, 6195 (suffere <i>dissyl.</i> C, suffryn D).
knowen, 240 (-ë C, -yn D).	

(b) Third Person :

wepen, 7 (-yn D).	hakkyn, 2466 D (-ë C ^e , -eth AB).
stonden, 418 (-yn CD).	lyuen, 2858 (-in D).
techen, 698 (-yn D, cechyn † C).	lyggen, 3527 (-yn CD).
tiren, 787 (-yn C, -in D).	slepen, 3608 (-in C, slepe that † D).
erren, 996 (arn C †, arë D †).	reden, 3905 (-yn C, -e in D).
wenen, 1356 (-yn CD), 1977 (-ë CD).	drynken, 4058 (-yn C, -eth D).
stoupen, 2053 (-ë C, -yn [on] D).	holden, 4596 (-ith E †, hold † in C).
sprenden, 2055 (-yn D, spryngin † C).	encressen, 5241 (-yn C).
longyn, 2431 D (-eth AB, -ith C).	hangen, 5479 (-ë [al] D).

¹ Subjunctive †

² Read *fers[e]* in D.

fallen, 5667.

comen, 5712.

deliten, 6095 (-ë C).

passen, 6360.

lasten, 6764 (treüs lestith D).

speken, 6795 (spokë they C).

blamen, 7123 BD (-ë C, -ëd *p.p.*
A).

commenden, 7124 (-yn C, com-
aundyn † D).

tellen, 7841 (-yn C), 7925 (-yn
C).

IV. *-en* before *h*.

(a) First Person : vsen here (*hic*), 4844 (-yn CD).

(b) Second Person :

maken hertes, 2865 (-yn D).

(c) Third Person :

redressen hem, 2054 (-yn D).

demen hot, 2618 (-ë CD).

knowyn hym, 3162 CD (*pret.* AB).

reuesten hem, 3195 (-yn CD).

suffren here, 3860 (-re B, -fere C, -fryn D †).

seruen here, 3978 (-yn C, -eth D †).¹

bryngen hors, 4707 (-[en] D).

deliten hem, 6097 (-es B, -ë C, -ed D).

expounden hem, 7641 (-poungyn † C, -pounë D).

V. *-en, -n*. (a) Second Person :

seyn ye, 1558 (sey D †); cf. 1275 C, 2367 D.

(b) Third Person :

seyn, (i.) 708, 5632, 5659, 5668 f (seyne B) (: agayn : in certayn), 6035 (seyne) B, say D), 6115 (say D, seith B, sen † C), 6246 (say D; C †),² 6732 (seyne) A, seyn(e) D), 8002 (say D, seyn [that] C); cf. 1886 † C. (ii.) 1833 (s. thour C), 5636, 7413 (sey D, sen † C);³ seyn he, 7167 (sein(e) D; C †).

Note.—*Seyn* (dissyllabic) appears not to occur in the *Troilus* (cf. *seyn* †, 6735 C, 8002 (†) C).

speken in, 6068 (-yn CD).

proceden of, 6723 (-yn C, -e B; D †).

comen ayen, 7495 (-yn C).

Note.—Such cases as the last three are rare except as mere variants. Cf., for the 2nd person : knowyn ek, 3757 C, 5993 C; takyn it, 7969 C; knowen how, 7688 D.⁴ For the 3rd person, cf. lyuen vnder, 1259 B (-yn C, -eth A; *sg.* † D); louen a, 1819 A; anauntyn of, 3160 C; fighten and, 4707 B; takyn it, 6710 C; tellyn iwis, 6730 C; dremyn and, 6740 C; spekyng of, 7216 C; speken for, 6599 B (*sg.* ACD). cf. §§ 136, e, 139.

¹ Supply [ne] in C.

² Supply [that] in D.

³ Delete (*the proude*) in D.

⁴ Read long[e] in D.

VI. -e before consonants. (a) Second Person
 make me, 1200 (-en B, -yn C); -e this, 3714.
 mende ye, 1414 (wyn[ne] † D (?)).
 wene ye, 1975, 7267 (C?).
 slepe 3e, 2180 CD.
 recche lest, 2236 (-yn D).
 like † ye, 2281 D.
 wite † what, 2737 D.
 trowe ye, 3441 (-[e] D),¹ 4215 (-[e] B; D †), 6000 (-[e] B).
 knowe ye, 4743 (-yn D).
 thinke † ye, 5511 D.
 lyue ye, 5877.
 speke not, 5988 (-[e] B, spake D).

(b) Third Person :

hunte faste, 748 (-ith D).²
 wake whan, 914 (-en B; D †).
 know[e] folk, 4860 † D (weten A, witen B, wetyn C).
 gynne sprynge, 7020 (-en B, -yn D, begynne † C).
 bytrayse yow, 8146.

VII. -e in rhyme. (a) First Person :

pleyne, 711 f (pleyn D) (: peyne *n.* : to seyne).
 rede, 1185 f (: dede *n.* : rede *inf.*).
 drinke, 1869 † f C (*inf.* ABD).
 byseche, 2759 f (bisike B, beseche C) (: eke, ek C).
 deuyse, 6191 † f C (2 *pers.* ABD).
 hye, 6852 f (: vilonye). (Perh. *subjunc.*)

(b) Second Person :

eschuwe, 344 f (-ewe BCD) (: mysconstrue *inf.*, -ewe BC, -ew D)
 2340 f (-ewe BCD) (: saluwe *inf.*, -ewe D, salwe B, salue C).
 endure, 682 f (: assure *imv. pl.*).
 fare, 1194 f (: care *n.* : bare), 6601 f (: care *n.*).
 mene, 1218 f (meue † CD) (: lene *adj. pred. sg.*, eue † C, leve † D).
 auyse, 1361 f (: wise *n.*).
 requere, 1558 f (: chere : dere).
 swete, 2028 f (smete † C) (: y-bete *p.p.* : hete *n.*).
 leue *creditit*, 2226 f (: repreue *n.*).
 constreyne, 2317 f (: peyne *n.*).
 chese, 4851 f (: lese *inf.*).
 deuyse, 6191 f (1 *pl.* † C) (: wyse *n.*).

¹ Supply [now] in C.

² The first part of 748 D is corrupt.

deface, 7278 f (: pace *inf.* : face).

speke, 7325 f (: wreke *inf.*).

(c) Third Person :

endure, 34 f (: aaventure *n.*).

write, 147 f (: Dite *nom. prop.*).

ryme, 532 f (: tyme).

plye, 732 f (pleye C, pley D) (: lytargie : melodye).

kepe, 763 f (-yn C) (: by-wepe *inf.* (-yn C)).

knowe, 1945 f (know D) (: bowe *noun* (bow D)).

resigne, 2867 f (: digne *adj. pred. pl.* : benigne *adj. pred. pl.*).

make, 4203 f (: take *inf.*).

lye *mentiuntur*, 4222 f (: folye), 4682 f (: vilonye),¹ 7844 f (: enuye *n.* : dye *inf.*).

ake, 4403 f (: wake *inf.*).

erre, 4616 f (: werre *n.*). (Subjunctive ?)

quelle, 4708 f (: felle (fele A) *adj. pl.* : telle *inf.*).

procede, 4809 f (*inf.* † D) (: nede *n.*).

dwelle, 5347 f (: telle *inf.*).

bynde, 5525 f (: kynde *n.* : fynde *inf.*).

preue, 5631 f (: leue *inf.*).

falle, 5711 f (: alle *pl.*).

preye, 6046 f (prey CD) (: seye *inf.* : tweye).

rede, 6306 f (: drede *n.*).

mene, 6727 f (: bene *n.*). (Indirect question.)

carye, 7105 f (-ie D, om † C) (: letuarye).

declare, 7162 f (: square *adj. pl.*).

cape, 7496 f (gape CD) (: iape *inf.*).

reyne, 7699 f (: pleyne *inf.*).

Cf. also the following cases of -e (3 *pl.*) in rhyme : 705, 788, 1092, 2153, 2452, 3131, 3143, 3432, 4063, 4229, 4271, 5508, 6046, 6382, 7153, 7640, 7826, 7896.

VIII. -e elided before vowels. (a) Second Person :

lyue, 330 (loue † C).

knowe, 340 (know BD, -yn C) ;² cf. 1107, 2873, 3757, 5993.

mene, 1311. [Indirect question.]

speke, 6217 (spek B, -ë † away C).

hate, 6508 (-ë † be D).³

take, 7969 (-yn C).

¹ Perhaps subjunctive.

² Read *all[le]* in D.

³ Subjunctive ?

(b) Third Person :

graue, 1132 (somö graue D).

iangle of, 1885 (iangēle C, ianglyn (?) D).

deuÿne, 2830 (deuÿne † C).

fele, 2853 B (feld † A, fele *inf.* † D).

yelpe, 3149 (zelp C, yelp D).

anaunte, 3160 (-ë † wommen B, -yn of C).

take, 4252 † C (toke *pret.* ABE), 6710 (-yn it (?) | C).

twynne, 4553 (twyn CD).

fyghte, 4707 (-en B, fight D).

trete, 6008

telle, 6730 (-yn C).

dreme, 6740 (-yn C).

speke 72,16 (-yn C).

clepe, 7262.

write, 7992.

IX. -e elided before h. Second Person :

yeue hym, 2861 (zaf † *pret.* D).

suffre hym, 3705 (suffere C),¹ 3723 (suffere C).²

Note 1.—*knowe hem*, 3 pl., 4240 B (-yn C), should be preterite (*knewe* A, *knew* D).

Note 2.—Elided -e is occasionally omitted in writing.—Thus,—2nd pers., *know how*, 7688 (-e BC, -en D)³; 3rd pers., *com and*, 5761 (-en (?) D, -yth *sg.* (?) C), *lat hem*, 1820 A (lat hym = hem B). Cf. also the variants under VIII., above.

X. Cases of apocope of -e are rare. (a) Second Person :

settē lite, 1517 (settē C, set[tē] D).

trowē ye, 6231 (trow B, -ë C; D (?)).⁴

yeuē ye, 6598 (zeuÿth † zow 3 *sg.* C, frome † your D).

sey right, 1275 (-ē B, seyn C, sey D †).

sey me, 2367 (say BC, seyn ful D).

Cf. also know wel, 3757 † D, 5993 † D.

(b) Third Person :

say may, 1707 (seyn(e) B, seyn C, sey D).

begynne † to, 7020 C.

Note 1.—In the case of *sey*, *say*, 2, 3 *pl.*, the correct reading may be *seyn* (see V., above, and observe the variants there cited).

Note 2.—For the omission of -e at the end of the verse where the rhyme requires -e, see variants in the places cited under VII., above (*no cases in A*); cf. also *turment* †, 5003 f D. An -e necessary to the metre is occasionally omitted in the interior of the verse (*not in A*): see variants under VI., above (in particular, *trow[e] ye*, 2 pl., 4215 B).

¹ Subjunctive? Supply [*that*] in C.

³ Read *long[e]* in D.

² Subjunctive?

⁴ Dele (*ek*) in A.

XI. The A.S. verbs *fléon*, *séon*, *sléan*, *wréon*, show in the *Troilus* the following monosyllabic contracted forms in the plural of the present indicative :

2nd person : sen that, 6007 (seen B, see D †, se † ek (?) C) ; sen hym, 2995 (sen(e) D) ; se, see, cf. 1424 f (1 *pl.* † D), 3508 f, 7247 f, 7765 f ; se ye (?), 995 A.

sle me, 6267.

3rd person : seen, sen,— s. swete, 2618 (se D) ; s. alday, 3905 (sen(e) D) ; s. in, 5342 (see D, seyn C) ; s. here, 6707 (sen(e) D) ; s. hem, 6709 (sen(e) D).

wrien with, 1624 (wren B, wryen D). (Monosyllable.)

flen (= flyen, see ten Brink, § 158) from, 6018 (fleen B, flien, D ; C †).

§ 97. The Plural of the Present Indicative ends occasionally in *-eth* (*-ith*, *-yth*), *-th*.

The following list is meant to be exhaustive for the four MSS. Old-style figures indicate that the subject is *men*. An asterisk indicates that the verb precedes its subject.

(a) Second Person :

knoweth what, 2737 A (-en B, wite D, knowith *inv. pl.* † C).

causeth al, 4408 D (-es A, -ed B, can syre † C^c).

loueth most, 5259 AB (-yn C, -eth *sg.* D).

grauntyth that, 7307 C (-e *inf.* AB, -e *subj.* 2 *pl.* D).

doth(e) me, 8063 B (do A, don C, don(e) D).

(b) Third Person :

redith not, 241 D (-en A, -yn C, -en [not] B).

hath ben, 242 BC (han A, haue with D) ; hath this, * 4299 B (han AC, haue D) ; hath go, 4547 D (han ABC) ; cf. 2467 D (?).

demeth, 644 f (-yn † C, -ith D) (: semeth *sg.*).¹

seyth wo, 694 (seyeth C)² ; s. eche, 1127 (seyn BD) ; s. men, * 1809 (*om.* † D) ; s. impression[e]s, 2323 (sey C, seyn D) ; seith that, 6115 B (seyn A, sen C, say D).³

maketh of[t], 740 B (-yth C, -yn D ; -eth *sg.* A).

huntith fast, 748 D (-e ABC).⁴

lyueth vnder, 1259 A (-en B, -yn C ; -ith *sg.* D).

to suche as hym thenketh able, 1292 (thynketh B, thynkyth C, thinkith † D).

¹ Subject : *the wyse*. Supply [and] in D.

² Subject : *thise wyse A, the wise BCD*. Perhaps singular.

³ Supply [the] in D. ⁴ D has *for thy with* for *fro thyng which*.

- bereth lyf, 1920 (-ith CD).¹
 gydeth yow, 2189 (-ith C ; *sg.* D).²
 doth these, * 2391 A (dos(e) B, don(e) D, don 3e 2 *pl.* C).
 longeth yn, 2431 (-ith C, -yn D).³
 furthereth most, 2453 (forthreth B, fer-rerith † C, furthrih D).⁴
 hakketh ofte, 2466 AB (-ë C^c, -yn D).
 curith folk, 2665 D (-en AB, -e C).
 adorneth al, 2844 (-ith D).
 bryngeth folk, 4046 D (-en AB, -yn C).
 drinketh ofte, 4058 D (-en AB, -yn C).
 holdith a, 4596 E (-en AB, hold in C).⁵
 lieth, 5496 f ABD (me hey † C) (: occupieth *sg.*).
 goth plesaunce[s] (?), * 5761 C (gon plesaunces AB, gon(e) plesauns[cs]
 (?) D).
 clepeth an, 6674 (callyn † [an] C, clepë † an D) ; clepeth wode, 7576 B
 (-yn C, -e D, clepeth the A).
 cometh swich, * 6737 AB (-yth C, -e D) ; cf. * 5761 C (?).
 treüs lestith al, 6764 C (trewes lasten ABD).
 weneth best, 7630 (-yn C, -e D).⁶
 sleth my, 7706 ABC (sleeth D).
 astreyneth me (?), 8146 D (commeueth *sg.* AB).

Note 1.—In 1887 f C, *semyth* was doubtless meant for a singular by the scribe.

Note 2.—In 217 C *faylyt* seems meant for a plural : *faylyt thyngys*.

The notes to the foregoing lists, together with the various diacritical marks, show that many of the examples are cases of the indefinite subject *men*, that others may be sing., and that still others may be accounted for in various ways (as perhaps by a confusion of constructions).

§ 98. The Northern Plural in *-es* occurs very rarely in the *Troilus* MSS.

Second Person :

- causes al, 4408 A (-ed B, -eth D ; C †).
 compleynes euere, 4685 A (-en B, -yn D).

¹ Perhaps singular : "al that bereth lyf."

² "What maner wyndes gydeth yow (wynd D)."

³ "And dide also hise other obseruaunces That to a louere longeth yn this cas."

⁴ "It is oon of the thynges that furthereth most." In this succession of words there is often a confusion of numbers in modern speech.

⁵ In E (Harl. 1239), read *bond* for *boute*, and *duryng* for *doynng*.

⁶ Supply [to] in D.

Third Person :

bigiles, 7640 f B (-e ACD) (: while).

falles thikke, 1541 A (-en B, -e C, -yn D).

delites hem, 6097 B (-en A, -ë C, -ed D).

dos(e) this, 2391 B (doth A, don(e) D, don 3e 2 pl. C).

§ 99. The following Indicative Preterites (first and third person) of Anglo-Saxon verbs of the First Weak Conjugation occur in the *Troilus* (cf. Child, § 53; ten Brink, §§ 162, 165, 168-70).

(a) Stems originally short,—*lette*, *leyde*, *sette*, *shette*; (b) stems originally long,—*aylte*, *alighte*, *ayled*, *bente*, *bledde*, *blente* (A.S. *blende*), *blente* (A.S. *blencte*), *bredde*, *bytydde*, *demedede*, *dyghte*, *dreynete*, *fedde*, *felte*, *ferde*, *grette*, *hente*, *herde*, *kepte*, *knette*, *kydde*, *kyste* (*keste*, *cussed*), *ladde* (*ledde*), *laste*, *lefte* (*lafte*), *lente*, *lyste* (*leste*), *mente*, *mette* (A.S. *métte*), *mette* (A.S. *métte*), *myssed*, *nedede*, *radde*, *rente*, *reste*, *reynede*, *semed*, *sente*, *shente*, *spedde*, *spradde*, *stente* (*stynete*), *thruste*, *wende*, *wente*; (c) irregular verbs,—*boughte*, *broughte*, *dwelled*, *raughte*, *roughte*, *soughte*, *taughte*, *thoughte* (A.S. *þóhte*), *thoughte* (A.S. *þúhte*), *tolde*, *wroughte*. For *hitte* (O.N. *hitta*), *thriste* (O.N. *þrýsta*), *trusted* (cf. O.N. *treysta*), see § 100.

Of these *ayled*, *demedede*, *myssed*, *nedede*, *reynede*, *semed*,¹ are unsynopated preterites formed on the analogy of the second weak conjugation (A.S. *-ode*) and replacing the proper Anglo-Saxon forms *egl(e)de*, *démde*, *miste*, *nédde* (but cf. *néadian*, *-ode*), *rínde*, *sémle*. For *cussed* (*kyssed*), a similar formation, see *kyste*. In these *-ed*, *-ede* preterites final *-e* is not sounded except in *nedede* (q.v.) and is often not even written.

Dwelled corresponds to A.S. *dwelede* (*-ode*), inf. *dwelian* (Siev., § 407, Anm. 1); *dwelte* (A.S. *dwealde*, inf. *dwellan*) does not occur in the *Troilus*.

In *bente*, *blente* (A.S. *blende*, inf. *blenulen*), *felte*, *lefte* (*lafte*), *lente*, *mente*, *rente*, *sente* (but also *sende*), *shente*, *wente*, A.S. *-de* is replaced by *-te* (cf. ten Brink, § 170 ε, ζ). *Brennen* (O.N. *brenna*, cf. A.S. *barnan*) has both *brende* (: *amende* inf., etc.) and *brente* (: *sente* ind. 3 sg.) : see § 100.²

Several preterites of weak verbs belonging properly to the second conjugation show synopated forms after the analogy of the first. These

¹ Ten Brink (§ 165) notices *demed*, *semed*.

² Ten Brink (§ 170 ζ) appears to recognize only *brente*.

are,—*answærd* (-*swerede*), *caste* (O.N.), *mæde*, *pleyde*, *putte*, *rafte*, *shapte* (O.N.), *twyghte* : see § 101.¹

Syncopated perfects, after the analogy of the first weak conjugation, are shown by several verbs strong in Anglo-Saxon : *breyde*, *dredde*, *fledde*, *leppe* (var. *lep*), *loste*, *sighte* (*sighed*, *siked*), *slepte* (but also *slæp*), *smerte*, [*swelte*,] *wæpte* (but also *wæp*) : see § 103. So also *deyde* (O.N. *dæyja*, pret. *dó*). For *highte*, see § 103. For *shapte*, see § 101.

For other syncopated preterites from verbs of Germanic origin see *glente*, *plighte*, *swapte*, *twyste* (§ 100). For syncopated preterites from Romance verbs, see *aspyde*, *caughte*, *cryde*, *hurte*, *paste*, *preyde* (§ 104).

For *rong* (A.S. *hringde*), see § 103, note 2.

In the following lists (§§ 99-104) the cases cited are in the third person unless the contrary is indicated. In the infinitives given no attempt is made at exhaustiveness of reference, and elision is not indicated.

agylte (A.S. *ágyltan*, -*gylte*), 1st pers., -*e* hym, 3682 (-t CD).

alighte (A.S. *álihtan*, -*lihte*), 7380 f (-t D, -ly₃te C) (: yf she myghte : bryghte *adv.*) ; she alighte, 6552 f (shalighte B, sche aly₃t C †, she light D) (: myghte *pret.* 3 *sg.*).

ayled (A.S. *egl(i)an*, *egl(e)de*, see Cosijn, *Altws. Gr.*, II, 163, § 120), ayled the, 4993 B (ailid D, eyleth A, aylyth C).

bente (A.S. *bendan*, *bende*), -*e* his, 725 C (bent D, lente AB).

bithoughte, see *thoughte*.

bledde (A.S. *blédan*, *blédde*), 2035 f (bled D) (: vnto bedde : he spedde *ind.*), 7563 f (: fledde *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*, is fledde † A). [Inf. blede, cf. 4674 f, 7410 f.]

blente (A.S. *blendan*, *blende*), 7558 f (-t CD) (: wente *ind.* 3 *sg.* : wente *n.*). [Inf. blende, 2581 f, 5310 f (blynde BCD), 6889 f (blynde C) ; blynde, 3049 f (blende BCD).²]

blente (A.S. *blencan*, *blencte*), 4188 (blynte BC, blent[e] E).³

bought[e] (A.S. *bycgan*, *bohte*), bought vs, 4007 AB (wrowte C, wrou₃t D).⁴ [Inf. beye, 8206 f.]

brede (A.S. *brédan*, *brédde*), 465 f (bred CD) (: weren fled, weren fledde B). [Inf. brede, 4388 f.]

brende, see § 100.

broughte (A.S. *bringan*, *bróhte*), 3524 f (-t BCD), 5332 f (-t *pl.* † D), 7143 f (-t D) ; [-*ē*] there, 3428 (-e C, -t † D)⁵ ; brought in, 3584 broute C, broght D) ; brought || whan, 4521 (-[*ē*] C, -[*ē*] (?) D). [Var. C brou₃te ; CD brou₃t ; D broght.] [Inf. brynge, -en, cf. 623, 3087, 3356, 5937, etc.]

Rhyme words.—hym oughte *ind.* (3524), roughte *ind.* 3 *sg.* (5332), by-soughte *ind.* 3 *sg.* (5332), he thoughte *ind.* (7143).

bysette, see *sette*.

¹ Cf. ten Brink, §§ 173, 176.

² The rhymes show the correct form to be *blende*.

³ Supply [*ne*] in C or read *neüere hls.* In E (Harl. 1239), read *neuer*.

⁴ Supply [*thal*] in C. ⁵ Perhaps subjunctive.

- bytydde (A.S. *tídan*, *tídde*), 1140 f (-tyd D) (: the *thridde*); bytidde, 8004 (bited B, betyd C †, betide D); be-tidde † ful, 6708 D (bytyt *pres.* 3 *sg.* A, bitit C, betydyth D).¹ [Inf. bytyden, betyde, cf. 1708, 3486 f.]
- demedede (A.S. *déman*, *démde*), demede as, 4569 (-ed B, -yd CD). [Inf. deme, -e[n], cf. 799, 1457, etc.]
- dreynte (A.S. *drenčan*, *drencte*), 543 f (drenkte C) (: compleynte : pleynthe). [Inf. drenche, -en, cf. 4603, 5172 f.]
- dwelled (A.S. *dwellan*, *dwealde*; but also, later, *dwelian*, *dwelede*, -ode, *Siev.* § 407, *Ann.* 1), whil [that] she dwelled yn, 129 (-yd D, was *dwellynge* BCCp.); she duellid ay, 7074 † D. [Inf. dwelle, -en, cf. 144 f, 2699 f, 3489, 6369.]
- dyghte (A.S. *dihtan*, *dihte*, from Lat. *dictare*), 2033 f (-t BD, diȝt C) (: they *myghte ind.*).
- fedde (A.S. *fédan*, *fédde*), -e hem, 2655 (fed[dē] † hem D), 6802 (fed BD). [Inf. fede, 5001 f.]
- felte (A.S. *félan*, *félde*), 3187 f (-t D) (: swelte *inf.* : to-melte *inf.*), 3833 (-[e] D) (1st. pers.), 4118 (-[e] D), 4285 f (: melte *inf.*), 5027 f (-t C) (: melte *inf.*), 6354; -[e], 306 B (sholde A †, shold[e] D †), 5560 (-eth B, -ith CD); -e, 3192 (-t D); -e his, 2389 (-t BD); -e he, 3321 (-t D, wiste † C); felt (*before vowels*), 1143, 2361 (ffelte the † thorn C, felt the *iryn* (†) D),² 7531 (-e CD) (1st pers.); felt his, 502 AB (-e D), 4513 (-e C, -t † in D); felt this, 498 (-e *Troilus* D, fel to C³); felt † that, 1146 A (fil B, fil † hym D). feltē † here (*eam*), 4043 A (-e BC, -t D). [Inf. fele, -en, cf. 4539, 5128, 7671, etc.]
- ferde (A.S. *féran*, *férde*), 739 f (-d D)⁴, 1238 f (-d D)⁴, 4371 f (-d D), 4633 f (feerde B); ferd (*before vowels*), 225 (-e C), 491 (-e BC),⁵ 2092 (-e C).⁶
- Rhyme words.—*answèrde ind.* 3 *sg.* (739, 4371), *herde ind.* 3 *sg.* (4633), *yerde n.* (739, 1238).
- grette (A.S. *grétan*, *grétte*), 3797 f (-t D) (: sette *ind.* 3 *sg.*), 4430 f (: sette *ind.* 3 *sg.*), 6656 f (grete B, gret D) (: sette *inf.*). [Inf. grete, 4398 f.]
- hente (A.S. *hentan*, *hente*; cf. *gehendan*), 2009 f (-t CD), 2863 f (-t D), 4029 f (-t CD), 6453 f (hynte B, hent CD); -[e] faste, 1038 AD (-e B); hent here (*eam*), 2239 -e C, hynte B), cf. 4388 † D.

¹ In B supply [it].³ In B read *than[ne]*.⁵ Indirect discourse. Dele (al) in C.² In D read [be]gan.⁴ Indirect question.⁶ Indirect discourse. First Person.

Rhyme words.—*entente n.* (2009, 4029), *sente ind. 2 pl.* (2863), *mente ind. 3 pl.* (4029), *wente ind. 3 sg.* (6453).

herde (A.S. *hieran*, etc., *híerde*, *hýrde*, *ge-hérde*), 1731 (-[e] B, -e the C, -d the D), 1984 f, 2185 f (-d D), 3641 f (-d D), 3907 f (-d D), 4458 f, 4634 f, 4838 f, 6541 f, 8086 f; -[e], 544 (-e C, -e D), 1301 (-e C); -e, 106 (-d BD), 1536 (-d BD), 2675 (-d D, -ë † *alwoy C*); *herd (before vowels)*, 1602 (-e BC),¹ 1643 (-e BC; D (?)), 4501 (-e BC, *herd † ferst (?) D*); -e *his*, 2920 (-d D, -e † *preye C°*); *herd hym*, 549 (-e B, -ë † *hym D*, *herdde C*)², 1471 (-e C). [Inf. *here*, -en, cf. 30, 279 f, 398 (*hire A*), 2662, 3521, 3598, etc.; *yhere*, 5975 f (*yheere B*, [y]*here C*).]

Rhyme words.—*yerde n.* (3907), *answèrde*, -*swèrde ind. 3 sg.* (1984, 2185, 3641, 4458, 4838, 6541, 8086), *ferde ind. or subj. 3 sg.* (4634).

kepte (A.S. *cépan*, *cépte*), 5013 f (: *wepte ind. 3 sg.*); *kept hire (poss. sg.)*, 130 AC (-e B). [Inf. *kepe*, -en, cf. 1553 f, 3136, 3261 f, 7411 B, etc.]

keste, see *kyste*.

knette (A.S. *cnyttan*, *cnytte*), *yn knette*, 3930 f (*inknitt D*) (: *shette ind. 3 sg.*).

kydde (A.S. *cýðan*, *cýðde*, *cýdde*), *kyd anoon*, 208 A (*kydde B*, *ked C*).

kyste, keste, cussed (A.S. *cyssan*, *cyste*); *kyste*, 812 f (-t CD), 3971 f (*kyssed B*, *kist D*), 4094 f (*kist D*), 4117 f (*kiste CD*), 4192 f (-t C), 5823 f (*kiste D*); *keste*, 1335 f (*kiste B*, *kyst C*, *kust D*)³, 4361 f (*kyste B*, *kyst C*, *kist D*), 4417 f (*kyste B*, *kyst C*, *kist D*); *kyste*, 3067 (-t D, *kist C*), 3814 (*kist C*, *kyssid D*), 6440⁴; *cussed tho*, 2175 (*kiste B*, *kyssid D*, *kyste the C*). [Inf. *kysse*, cf. 3024 f, 6914 f.]

Rhyme words.—*reste n.* (3971, 4361), *wyste ind. 3 sg.* (812, 4094), *subj. 1 sg.* (4117), *ind. 3 pl.* (5823), *nyste ind. 3 sg.* (4192), *lyste pres. subj. 3 sg.* (*liste B*, *lyst C*, *lust D*) (1335), *lyste pret. ind. 3 sg.* (*leste B*, *lest C*, *list D*) (3971), *truste pres. ind. 1 sg.* (-t CD, *triste B*) (1335), *thriste pret. ind. 3 sg.* (*threst C*, *thrist D*) (4417).

ladde, ledde (A.S. *lédan*, *lédde*); *ladde*, 4556 (*ledde B*, *led C*, *byd † D*); *ladde hem*, 184 (-d CD, *led B*); *ladde here (eam)*, 6455 (-d C, *ledde BD*); *ladde here (poss. sg.)*, 7077 (*ledde B*); *lad here (eam)*, 2901 (*ledde BC*, *led D*); *ledde*, 7581 f (: *fledde ind. 3 sg.*); *led here (poss. sg.)*, 1967 (*let BC*); *ledde*, 8027 † C (*l. leyde*). [Inf. *lede*, -yn, cf. 2534, 4559 f, etc.]

laste (A.S. *lástan*, *láste*), 315 f (-t D) (: *caste ind. 3 sg.*). [Inf. *laste*, -en, cf. 2606, 5339 f, 8187 f.]

¹ First Person. Supply [*that*] in D.

³ "Rather late hand."—Furnivall.

² Supply [*in*] in B.

⁴ *Antenorë (Antenor he) C*.

lefte, lafte (A.S. *læfan*, *læfde*); *lefte*, 5813 B (lost[e] A, loste CD); *lefte*, 7947 (-t B, lafte D, lefte † not C); *lefte* his, 1645 (-t D); *lafte* allas, 4754 A (*lefte* B, left D) (1st pers.); *laft* || for, 3364 (left BD, lest † C). [Inf. *leuen*, cf. 5997.]

lente (A.S. *lénan*, *lénde*), -e his, 725 (*bente* C, bent D).

lette (A.S. *lettan*, *lette*), 2174 f (: *sette* : *shette*, both *pret. ind. 3 sg.*), 3315 f (let CD) (: *bysette* : *mette* A.S. *métte*, both *pret. ind. 3 sg.*). [Inf. *lette*, -en, cf. 150 f, 1817, 5191, 5963.]

leyde (A.S. *lecgan*, *legde*, *léde*), 2633 f (-d *p.p.* † D),¹ 3897 f (-d D), 3970 f, 4797 f, 4842 f, 4886 f, 5825 f, 7236 f,² 7397 f, 7508 f, 7802 f; -e, 5813, 7140 (-e † C), 8027 (*ledde* † C); -e hym, 1600 (-d CD). [Inf. *leye*, cf. 2756 f, 2914 f, 3501 f, 4447 f, etc.]

Rhyme words.—*Criseyde* (2633, 3897, 4797, 5825, 7236, 7397, 7508, 7802), *seyde ind. 3 sg.* (3897, 3970, 4842, 4886, 7236, 7397, 7508, 7802), *prayde ind. 3 sg.* (4797). [Var. B *layde*; D *leide*, *laide*.]

lyste, *liste*, *leste* (A.S. *lystan*, *lyste*). *Pret. 3 sg. Ind. and Subj.* (no attempt is made to register the moods separately in this case. (a) Forms at end of verse,—A *leste*, *lyste*, *liste*; B *leste*, *liste*; C *lest*, *lyst*, *leste*, *list*; D *lest*, *list*, *leste*, *lyst*: 189 f, 357 f, 1169 f, 1694 f, 1998 f, 3065 f, 3294 f, 3974 f, 4521 f, 4608 f, 4833 f, 6880 f, 7203 f (*caste* † D), 7469 f, 8099 f. (b) Before consonants,—*lyste*, 977³, 4155 (*liste* B, *lust* to D, they *luste* C), 8051 (*list[e]* B, *leste* C, *list[e]* (?) D), cf. 1785 C; *lyst[e]*, 1423 (*liste* B, *ze liste* C, *ze lyst[e]* D), 3908 (*list[e]* B, *liste* C, *lest[e]* D); *lyste*, 3985 (*list* B (?), *leste* C, *list* D); *leste*, 4243 † C; *lyst* not, 3345 (*liste* B, *list* C, *lest* D) is very likely present. (c) Before vowels,—*liste*, 1302 (*luste* C, *lyst* D); *lyst*, *lest* (B *leste*, *liste*; C *lust*, *liste*; D *list*), cf. 2034 (-e B), 4612 (-e B), 6414 (-e BC). (d) Before *h* (in *he*, *his*, *hym*, *here* dat., *hem*),—*lyste*, 2863 (*list* B, *ze list* D),⁴ 5785 (*liste* BD); *lyst*, *lest* (B *liste*, *lest*; C *list*, *lust*, *lyst*; D *lest*, *liste*), cf. 2666 (-e B), 3365, 6548 (-e BD).⁵

Rhyme words.—*reste n.* (189, 1998, 3065, 3974, 4521, 6880, 7469, 8099), *gest[e] n.* (1169), in *geste* (3294), the *beste* (3294, 4833, 7203), *wyste*, *nyste ind. 3 sg.* (357, 4608), *kyste ind. 3 sg.* (3974), *twiste pres. or pret. subj. 3 sg.*⁶ (4608), *to-breste inf.* (1694).

mente (A.S. *mánan*, *mánde*), 320 f (-t CD), 1449 f (-t D) (1st pers.), 1677 (-t D †) (1st pers.), 2306 f (-t CD), 2646 f (-t CD), 2968 f (-t CD), 4027 f (-t CD), 5095 f (-t CD), 6080 f (-t CD), 7231 f (-t

¹ Possibly subjunctive.

² First person. In D read *hand* for *have*.

³ Supply [though] in C. D has *lest and*, but is quite unmetrical.

⁴ In B supply [whom].

⁵ In D supply [here].

⁶ A has *it wyste* for *twyste*.

C † D); -e, 3274 (-t CD), 7210 (-t C)¹; *mente* harm (?), 1523 (-t (?), B, -ë C, -t D) (1st person). [Inf. *mene*, cf. 3006, 3098 f CD.]

Rhyme words.—*descente* (320), *entente* (1449, 2306, 2646, 2968, 4027, 6080 (entent ABCD), 7231), *wente* *ind.* 3 *sg.* (320, 5095, 6080), *hente* *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (4027).

mette (A.S. *métan*, *métte*), 3316 f (-t CD), 4393 f; *mette* that, 1068 A (met with D, *mette* a B). [Inf. *mete*, -en, cf. 4512 f, 6347, 8066.]

Rhyme words.—*bysette* *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (3316, 4393), or *she* *lette* (3316), *shette* *inf.* (4393).

mette (A.S. *métan*, *métte*), 362 f (-t D), 1175 f (1st pers.), 2010 f (-t D); -e *he*, 6612 † C (*mete* *inf.* AB, *dreme* † *inf.* D), 7601 (*mett* D); *mett[e]* † that, 6614 D (*inf.* ABC). [Inf. *mete*, -en, cf. 4401 f, 6612, 6614.]

Rhyme words.—*lette* *n.* (362), *sette* *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (362, 1175, 2010).

myssed (A.S. *missan*, *miste*), *m. han*, 3287 (*mys(e)sid* C, *myssid* have D). [Inf. *mysse*, 4466 f.]

nedede (A.S. *nédan*, *nýdan*, *nédan*, -dde), *nedëdë* *no*, 7089 (*neded[ë]* BD, *nedit* (?), C).

radde (A.S. *rédan*, *rédde* (so always in W.S.), but also *réd*), -e, 2170 AB. [Inf. *rede*, -en, cf. 83 f, 668, 1188 f, 1214, 2261 f, 2407 f, etc.]

raughte (A.S. *récán*, *ráhte*), 1532 f (*rau3te* C, *raght* D); *ouer* *raughte*, 7381 f (-t D, *rau3te* C); *rau3t ful*, 6423 C (*right* A, *rit(e)* B, *ritt(e)* D).³

Rhyme words.—*caughte* *ind.* 3 *sg.* (1532), *taughte* *ind.* 3 *sg.* (7381).

rente (A.S. *rendan*, *rende*), 6362 f (-t D) (: *wente* *ind.* 3 *sg.*); -e, 2013 (-t BD), 3941, 5399.⁴

reste (A.S. *restan*, *reste*), -e *here* (*eam*), 7399 (*ref* B, *reuyth* C, *rafte* (?), D). [Inf. *reste*, 2411 f.]

reynede (A.S. *rignan*, *rínan*, *rínde*), *reynede* *it*, 4399 (-ed B, -yd C, -ød † D). But also a strong *pret.* (A.S. *rán*), *ron*, 3482 (*ron(e)* D, *reyne* † *inf.* C), 3519 f (*rone* D) (: *anoon* : *gon* *inf.*). [Inf. *reyne*, 3393 f, 4961 f.]

roughte (A.S. *récán*, *reccan*, *róhte*), 496 f (*roght* D),⁵ 5329 f (-t D), 6813 f (-t D); *rowhte*, 5610 f (*roughte* B, *roughthe* C^c, *rought* D); *rought[e]* *not*, 5093 (*rou3te* C, *route* † *he* (?), D).⁶ [Inf. *recche*, cf. 797 f, 1423 f, 1519 f, 2558 f, 6109 f, 6250 f.]

¹ First Person.

² All the cases of *mente* cited (except 1449 2306, 4027, 4699) are in indirect questions : some of them may well be subjunctive.

³ The correct reading is *rit* = *rideth*.

⁴ Supply [*her*] in D.

⁵ Hardly subjunctive.

⁶ Supply [*that*] in A.

Rhyme words.—thoughte *ind. and subj.* (?) 3 *sg.* (496, 6813), soughte *ind.* 3 *sg.* (5610, 6813), by-soughte *ind.* 3 *sg.* (5329), broughte *ind.* 3 *sg.* (5329). [Var. C rouȝte.]

semed (A.S. ge-séman, -sémde), s. she, 103 (-ede C, -yd D); s. that, 6086 (-yd CD)¹; s. not, 7231 (-ede C †, -yd D); semed (*before vowels*), 496 (-yd D),² 2906 (-yd D); -ed he, 1721 (-ede C, -yd D); -ed here (*dat.*), 3307 (-ede C, -yd D). [Inf. seme, cf. 703, 747.]

sente, sende (A.S. sendan, sende); (a) sente, 1421 f (-t CD), 1916 f (-t CD †), 2421 f (-de C, -t D), 4801 f (-t CD), 5516 f (-t CD), 6650 f (-t CD), 7474 f (-t CD), 7813 f (-t D), 7840 f (-t CD); -e, 4427 (-t D); (b) sende, 2819 f (: amende *subj.* 3 *sg.* : defende *ind.* 1 *sg.*).³ [Inf. sende[n], cf. 6047.]

Rhyme words.—entente *n.* (1916, 5516, 7474), to rente (1916), assente *inf.* (1421), brente *ind.* 3 *sg.* (2421), wente *ind.* 3 *sg.* (6650, 7474), *ind.* 3 *pl.* (4801), stente *inf.* (7840), stente *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (7813).

sette (A.S. settan, sette), 359 f (-t D), 1176 f, 2012 f (-t D), 2172 f, 3078 f (-t D), 3542 f (-t D), 3795 f (-t D), 4431 f, 4896 f (sett BD), 7212 f (sett D); bysette, 3313 f (-set D, beset C), 4394 f (be- C); sette, 4673 (-t D); sett at, 444 (-e C, set D); sette hym, 2548 (sat C, sate D); -e here (*eam*), 1685 (-t B, sate there D †), 2303 (sat C, sat(e) D), 2313 (-t D); -e here (*poss. sg.*), 7083 (sett D);⁴ set hym, 2149 (sette B, sat C, sete D). [Inf. sette[n], -en, cf. 3742, 5152, 5443.]

Rhyme words.—lette *n.* (359, 3078, 3542, 7212), mette *A.S. mette pret. ind.* 1 and 3 *sg.* (359, 1176, 2012), mette *A.S. mette pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (3313, 3542, 4394), er he lette, or she lette (2172, 3313), shette *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (2172, 4896), shette *inf.* (4394), y-shette *p.p. pret. pl.* (3078), grette *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (3795, 4431), fette *pret. ind.* 3 *pl.* (7212).

shente (A.S. scendan, scende), 7586 f (-t CD) (: wente *ind.* 3 *sg.* : potente *n.*).

shette (A.S. scyttan, scytte), 2175 f (-t D, schette *p.p.* C), 3568 f (-t D), 3591 f (-t D), 3928 f (swelt † D), 4894 f (shett D); -e, 2311 (-t D, schette C).⁵ [Inf. shette, 4391 f, etc.]

Rhyme words.—lette *n.* (3591), sette *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (2175, 4894), fette *pret. ind.* 2 *sg.* (3568), yn knette *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (3928), er he lette (2175), thow ne lette (3568).

soughte (A.S. sécan, sóhte), 388 f (-t D), 5361 f (-t D, sout C), 5608 f (-t D, southe C), 6815 f (-t D), 7600 f (-t D), 8120 f (-t D); bi-, bysoughte, 3422 f (-t D, besoute C), 5331 f (be- C, besowte D);

¹ Supply [*him*] in D.

² "Ne semed it that she of hym roughte." I cannot scan this line.

³ On (of John's) his by-halue (half BDG John's, halue C, halfe Cp.) which (-e G, with B, om. C John's) that (om. D) vs alle sowle (soule vs alle CGCp. John's, same vs al B, vs soule hath D) sende.—The correct reading is doubtless: On his halue which that soule vs alle sende.

⁴ Supply [*wo*] in A.

⁵ In D read *gan* for *to*.

soughte, 7935 (-t B, thouȝt † D); bi-, hysoughte, 2439 (-t D, besoute C), 7816 (-t B, besouȝte C, besouȝt D). [Inf. seche, -en, seke, -en, be- (by-) seche (-seke),¹ cf. 704 f, 707, 763, 886 f, 2919 f, 3424 f, 4349 f, 4630 f, 4793 f, 5605, 6472 f, 7160 f, 7220 f, 7495 f, 7901 f, 8081 f, 8211 f.]

Rhyme words.—thoughte *A.S.* þóhte (388, 5361, 6815), *A.S.* þáhte (7600), wroughte (7600), rouȝhte (5331, 5608, 6815), broughte (5331), ouȝhte (3422), —*all ind.* 3 *sg.*; aboughte, *ind.* 3 *pl.* (8120). [Var. C souȝte, besouȝte; D soght, besouȝt, bysoght.]

spedde (*A.S.* ge-spédan, ge-spédde), 482 f (-d D), 2034 f (-d D), 2388 f (-d D), 4365 f (spede C); spede hym, 4882 (spedde BD); spedde he, 1771 (-[dē] D). [Inf. spede, 4737 f.]

Rhyme words.—vnto hedde (2034), abedde (2388), bledde *ind.* (?) 3 *sg.* (2034), *subj.* 3 *sg.* (4365), cledde *ind.* 3 *sg.* (4365), dredde *ind.* 3 *pl.* (482).

spradde (*A.S.* sprædan, sprædde), ouer-spradde here (*poss. sg.*), 1854 (-d CD); ouer-sprad † the sonne, 1852 D (ouer-sprat *pres.* 3 *sg.* ABC). [Inf. sprede, 1139 f.]

stente, stynte (*A.S.* for-styntan, ge-stentan, *-stynte, *-stente); stente, 273 f (-t D), 736 f (stynt D),² 1683 f (-t D), 7815 f, 7848 f; stent, 2716 † f D (*l. wente*); stente, 1492 (stynte B, stint CD); stynte, 1554 (-[e] D, stinte C), 1961 f (-t D, stente BC), 4080 f (stint D, stente B); stynte, 2941 (-t D), 7291. [Inf. stynte, -en, cf. 2446, 4732, etc.]

Rhyme words.—entente (736, 1961, 4080), wente *ind.* 3 *sg.* (273, 1683, 7848), sente *ind.* 3 *sg.* (7815).

taughte (*A.S.* tæcan, tæhte), 7379 f (-t D, tauȝte C) (: ouer raughte *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*). [Inf. teche, -en, cf. 2666 f, 4234, 6137 f.]

thoughte (*A.S.* þencan, þóhte), 386 f (-t BD), 497 f (-t BD), 1063 f (-t D), 2000 f (-t CD), 3307 f (-t BCD), 4640 f (-t D), 5385 f (fele † C), 6816 f (-t D), 7141 f (-t D); -e somewhat, 1784 (-[e] BD, thoute C); -e she, 3825 (-[e] D, thought[e] [s]he B); -e thus, 1541 (-[e] BD), 1695 (-[e] BD, seyde † C); -e this, 6868 (-[e] D; B †); -[e] now, 1364 (-e C, -[e] not³ D thought[e] not¹ B) (1st pers.); -[e] best, 2667 (-e BC)⁴; -[e] wel, 1786 (-[e] ferst D, -e C); -e, 361 (-t D, -e so C), 2381 (-t BD), 3483 (-t BD), 7535 (-t BD); thought (*before vowels*), 1472 (-e B, now † C), 1749 (-e C, -t (?) D), 2839 (-[ē] † a D, seyde † o C), cf. 7935 † D; bithought on, 545 (-t (hym) of D, thouȝte C †); thoughte he, 276 (-t D), 380 (-t BD, seyde † C), 1352 (-t BD), 2263 (-t D, thoute C), 3918 (-t B, -t † it D), 7548

¹ *Seke, seche, by-seche, by-seke*, are all vouched for by the rhyme words, which include *speche, eke, meke*, etc.

² In C read *with* for *why*.

³ Read *now*.

⁴ Supply [I] in D.

(-t † amys D, seyde † he C); -t he, 3539 (-e C), 5026 † D.—thoughte ‖ that, 3310 (tought B, thought † althogh D); thouhtē ‖ ther, 5614 (-ghtē B, -3tē CD); thought ‖ whan, 3418 (-[e] B, -e C). thoughtē his, 2035 (-[ē] B, -e C, -t † that (‡) D).¹—thoughte ‖ how, 3282 (-t BD). (Cf. also the variants under *thoughte* = *þūhte*.) [Inf. thynke (: drynke), thenke (: synke, swynke), by-thynke, by-thenke (: inke), forthynke (: I thenke, *var.* thynke), thenken (not in rhyme), athynken (not in rhyme), cf. 405 f, 975, 1859, 1868 f, 2340, 2499 f, 4536 f, 6154 f, 6636 f, 7241.]

Rhyme words.—roughte *subj.* (‡) 3 *sg.* (497), *ind.* 3 *sg.* (6816), wroughte *ind.* 3 *sg.* (1063, 4640), *pl.* (3307, 5385), broughte *ind.* 3 *sg.* (7141), *pl.* (2000), soughte *ind.* 3 *sg.* (386, 6316), besoughte *ind.* 3 *pl.* (5385), oughte *ind.* 3 *pl.* (2000). [Var. BCD thouȝt; CD thouȝte; D thoght.]

thoughte (A.S. þyncan, þūhte), 3105 f (-t CD), 7223 f (-t BCD)³, 7597 f (he thought D); -e felen, 4539 (-[e] B, -t † thei D; C †); thowghte by, 3237 (thoughte B, -3t[e] C, thought[e] D); thought[e] tho, 3986 (-e C); -e, 6337 (-t BD), 7997 (-t BD), cf. 2683 † D; -e he, 2411 (-t B, -e *pers' l.* C, -t *pers' l.* D); -e hym, 3909 (-t ~~BD~~)⁴; -e his, 6893 (-t BD), 7563 (-t BD); -t he, 502 (-e † his (‡) *pers' l.* C); -t hym, 294 (-e BC; D †), 5026 (-e BC, thought he *pers' l.* D); -t here (*poss. sg.*), 2193 (-e B, -e *pers' l.* C; D †); thoughtē † that, 306 (-e he B, -t † he D, -e for C). [Inf. thynke, 405 f.]

Rhyme words.—wroughte *ind.* 1 *sg.* (3105), *ind.* 3 *sg.* (7597), *ind.* 3 *pl.* (7223), soughte *ind.* 3 *sg.* (7597), the oughte *pres. sense* (3105). [Var. CD thouȝt; C thouȝte; D thoght.]

thraste (A.S. þræstan, þræste), 2240 f (-t C, cast † D) (: faste *adv.*). cf. thriste, threste, § 100, p. 241 and note.

tolde (A.S. tellan, tealde), 261 f (-d BD) (1st pers.), 312 f, 2019 f (-d D) (1st pers.), 2051 f (-d D), 2275 f (-d D), 5889 f, 6920 f (-d B), 7012 f, 7569 f (1st pers.), 7616 f, 7875 f; -[e] tales, 3456 (-e C, -d † the tale D); -[e] she, 7854 (-e D); -e, 613 B (C (‡), -d D, telle † A); -d ek, 7848 (-e D, -e C †), 7855 (-e CD); -e here (*dat.*), 7815 (-d B); -d hym, 2580, 3650 (-e BC), 4081 (-e D, tok † C); toldē ‖ who (*or* toldē who), 1656 (-[ē] *or* -d BCD)⁵; who told † yow, 3684 (-e hym B, -d him C, D (‡)). [Inf. telle, -en, cf. 142 f, 260, 794, 3155, etc.]

Rhyme words.—colde *adj. pl.* (261), olde *adj. pl.* (6920, 7012, 7569, 7875), holde *inf.* (261, 312, 2051, 7569), byholde *inf.* (312, 2275, 5889, 6920), holde *subj.* 1 *pl.* (2019), byholde *p.p.* (7616), folde *inf.* (5889).

¹ Supply [*But*] in C.

² Perhaps -ē (-[ē]).

³ Perhaps subjunctive: "To asken here yf that here straunge thoughte. Strictly, the verb is plural here.

⁴ Supply [*a*] in A.

⁵ "Or he me *tolde* (told BCD) who *myght* (-e BC) ben his leche."

wende (A.S. wénan, wénde), 447 f, 1497 f (-d D)¹, 2254 (went[e] D), 3644 (-[e] D)¹, 4182 CE (-en *pl.* AB), 4382 f, 7056 f¹, 7974 f (-d D)¹, 8011; -e, 7627 (-d D)¹, 8048 (C †)¹; -d it, 3918 (-e BC, went D). [Inf. wene, -e, cf. 3333 A, 6775.]

Rhyme words.—brende *ind.* 3 *sg.* (447, 4382), defende *inf.* (1497), amende *inf.* (7056, 7974).

wente (A.S. wendan, wende), 272 f (C †), 317 f, 1147 f, 1681 f (went † *p.p.* D), 1898 f (-t C), 2625 f (-t C), 2716 f (-t C), 2810 f (-t C), 3394 f, 3627 f (-t C)¹, 4423 f (-t C), 4749 f¹, 5012 f (-t D †), 5096 f (-t C), 5516 f (-t C), 5882 f (-t C), 6363 f, 6454 f (-t C), 6649 f (-t C), 6966 f (-t C), 7384 f (-t C), 7471 f (-t C), 7555 f (-t C), 7583 f, 7666 f (-t C), 7850 f (-t C). In all the above, except 2716, 6454, 7850, D has *went*; cf. also 3329 † D. Before consonants,—wente, 2487 † C (for *went he*), 2576 † C, 2622 (-[e] C, -t † to (‡) D), 6988 (-[e] D), 8189; -[e], 163 (-e BC, went † *euery* D). Before vowels,—ABC have regularly *wente*, D has regularly *went*: cf. 1285, 2301, 2576, 2726, 3068; but,—went, 1684 A, 2301 C. Before *h* (in *he, his, here*),—e, 2487 (-t D, -ë *tho* C), 7937 (-t D); went, 267 (-e BC), 1055, 1897 (om. † B, -ë for C)², 2264 (-e BC). [Inf. wende, cf. 2578 f, 3458 f, etc.]

Rhyme words.—descente (317), wente, went[e] *n.* (1147, 1898, 3627, 6966, 7555), tente *n.* (7384), potente *n.* (7583), entente, -[e] (2810, 3394, 4423, 5516, 5882, 7471, 7666), rente *n.* (4749), stente *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (272, 1681, 7850), mente *pret. ind.* (and *subj. †*) 3 *sg.* (317, 5012, 5096), rente *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (6363), hente *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (6454), sente *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (6649, 7471), blente *caecavit* (7555), shente *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (7583), glente *pret. ind.* 3 *pl.* (5882), assente *inf.* (2625, 2716).

wroughte (A.S. wyrcan, worhte), 1064 f (-t D), 3103 f (-t CD, I-wroughte † B) (1st pers.), 4641 f (-t CD), 7356 f (-t D), 7599 f (-t D); wrowte, 4007 C (-t D, bought AB). [Inf. werke, -en, -yn, cf. 380, 2486, 4067, 4480 (werchyn C), 4836, 4899, 7356.]

Rhyme words.—thoughte *A. S. póhte ind.* 3 *sg.* (1064, 4641), thoughte *A. S. púhte ind.* 3 *sg.* (3103, 7599), soughte *ind.* 3 *sg.* (7599), oughte 3 *sg. pres. sense* (3103, 7356). [Var. B wroughte; CD wrouzt; C wrouzte; D wroght.]

§ 100. A few Indicative Preterites (first and third persons) of Old Norse verbs of the First Weak Conjugation occur in the *Troilus*. With these may be associated several other verbs that form their preterites in *-te*, but are not found in Anglo-Saxon or Old Norse.

¹ First Person.

² But in 1897 AD *went* appears to be *pres.* 3 *sg.*

(a) O.N. first conjugation,—*brende* (*brente*), *cledde* (*cladde*), *hitte*, *sterte* (?), *thriste* (cf. *threste*, *thraсте*), *trusted* (from the noun, cf. O.N. *treysta*); (b) *glente*, *plighte*, *swapte*, *twyste*.

The preterites in this list are all syncopated (*-de*, *-te*), except *trusted*.

Note.—For *caste*, *shapte*, see § 101. For *deyde*, see § 103.

asterte, see *sterte*.

brende, *brente* (O.N. *brenna*, *brende*; cf. A.S. *bærnan*, and see ten Brink, § 141), 448 f, 490 f, 3267 f (-d D)¹, 4381 f (D †), 5366 f; *-e*, 4388 (hent † D); *brend* hym, 440 (*brinde* B, *brende* C, *brent* (?)) D.—*brente*, 2422 f (-de C, -t D). [Inf. *brenne*, cf. 5907 f, 6666.]

Rhyme words.—*wende* *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (448, 4381), 3 *pl.* (5366), *subj.* 3 *pl.* (490), *amende inf.* (3267), *entende inf.* (3267), *spende inf.* (5366).—*sente ind.* 3 *sg.* (-de C, -t D) (2422).

Note.—Ten Brink (§ 170 ζ) seems to recognize only *brente*, not *brende*, though he registers *brend* (p.p.) among the corrections, etc., at the end of his book (p. 225).

cledde, *cladde* (O.N. *klæða*, *klædda*; cf. A.S. *cláðian*, -ode), *cledde*, 4363 f (*clede* C) (: *spedde ind.* 3 *sg.* : *bledde subj.* 3 *sg.*); *cladde*, 6352 f (: *hadde ind.* 3 *pl.*). [Inf. *clothen* = A.S. *cláðian*, cf. 7781.]

Note.—*Clothed* does not occur in the *Troilus*. Ten Brink (§ 173) notices *cladde*, but overlooks *cledde*, though he registers *clad*, p.p., B. Duch. 252.

glente (cf. Swed. *glänta*), 5885 f BD (*pl.* A, *glent pl.* C) (: *entente n.* : *wente ind.* 3 *sg.*).

hitte (O.N. *hitta*, *hitta*), *hit* hym, 209 A (*hitte* B); cf. 1284 C.

plighte (*pret.* of *plicchen*, quasi A.S. * *plyccan*), 2205 f (-t D, *plizte* C) (: *myghte ind.* 3 *sg.*). [Inf. *plukke* (A.S. *pluccian*), cf. 6065.]

sterte (cf. O.N. *sterta*, *sterta*), 2179 f, 4755 f (-t D) (1st pers.), 6073 f (*sterede* † C^e), 6563 f (*i-stert* † p.p. C), 7899 f; *-e*, 1532 (-t D, *stirte* C); *vp stirte*, 4845 (*vp sterte* C, *stert* † *vp* D)²; *asterte*, 2939 f (*asferte* † B, *ouersterte* C, *astert* D), 3912 f (-t D), 7855 f (-t C); *me asterte*, 1043 f (*me stert* D, *may* † *sterte* B). [Inf. *sterte*, 2719 f, 3791 f.]

Rhyme words.—*herte n.* (2179, 2939, 3912, 4755, 6073, 6563, 7855, 7899), *sherte n.* (4755), *smerte pres. subj.* 3 *sg.* (2179), *inf.* (1043), *smerte adj. pl.* (6563), *conuerte inf.* (6073).

swapte (cf. Eng. *swoop*, *sweep*), *-e* him, 4907 (*swappid* (?) D, *schop* C).³ *thriste*, *thraсте*, *threste* (O.N. *þrýsta*, -ta); *thriste*, 4416 f (*thryste* B, *threst* C, *thrist* D) (: *keste ind.* 3 *sg.*, *kyste* B, *kyst* C, *kist* D); *threste*, 4916 f (*thryst* C) (: *to reste inf.* : *breste inf.*); *thraсте*, 2240 f (-t C, *cast* † D) (: *faste adv.*).

¹ Line out of order in ABC, but easily emended.

² "The noyse of peple vp stirte thanne at onys."

³ Read *him seluen* for *him self* in AD. Then read *swappid* in D.

Note.—*Thriste*, 4416 f, and *thruste*, 2240 f, have the meaning of *thrust*; *threste* that of the A.S. *þræstan*. Forms from O.N. *þrýsta* and forms from A.S. *þræstan* appear to have become confounded.

trusted (from the noun; cf. O.N. *treysta*, *treysta*), -ed most, 7611 (*trostedę* C) (1st pers.). [Inf. *tryste*, *triste*, cf. 692 f, 3100 f, 3758 f, 4069 f, 8029 f; *vntriste*, cf. 3681 f; *trust[e]*, cf. 1576; *trusten*, *mystrusten*, cf. 688, 690, 6132, etc.]

twyste (cf. A.S. -*twist*, *subst.*, and M.L.G. *twisten*), -e 4916 (*twiste* BD).

§ 101. The following Indicative Preterites (first and third persons) of Anglo-Saxon verbs of the Second Weak Conjugation occur in the *Troilus* (cf. Child, § 53; ten Brink, §§ 172-3).

answèręde (-*swerde*, -*swèred*), *asked*, *brydded*, *called*, *cursed*, *flekęred*, *folwede*, *gladede* (-*ed*), *herkened*, *hied*, *huntede*, *liked*, *loked* (-*ęd*), *louede* (-*ęd*), *made* (cf. pl. *makkeden*), *opened*, *pleyde*, *putte*, *refte* (*rafte*), *shewed*, *thanked*, *twyghte*, *welcōmed*. In the following alphabetical list are included also (a) from the Old Norse second declension,—*caste*, *gayned*, *shapte*, *wanted*, (b) four words of Germanic origin, not found in Anglo-Saxon, that form preterites after the analogy of the second declension,—*bekked* (see the word), *houede*, *lakked*, *poked* (?).

Synocopated preterites in -*de*, -*te*, after the analogy of the first conjugation, are *answèręde* (-*swerde*), *caste* (O.N.), *made*, *pleyde*, *putte*, *refte* (*rafte*), *shapte* (O.N.), *twyghte*. The other preterites of this declension end in -*ęd*, -*ęde*, -*ęde*: no case of -*ędę* occurs.

Several verbs of the first declension form unsynocopated preterites on the analogy of the second. For these, see *ayled*, *demedę*, *cussed* (s.v. *kyste*), *myssed*, *nededę* (!), *reynede*, *semed* (§ 99). Cf. also *trusted* (from the noun, cf. O.N. *treysta*, pret. -*ta*) (§ 100).

Note 1.—For *clędde*, *cladde*, see § 100.

Note 2.—For the weak preterite *walkęde* from the strong verb *walken* (A.S. *walcan*), see § 103. For *quakęd*, *quok* (A.S. *cwacian*, -*ode*), see § 103, note 2.

answèręde, *answèrde*, *answèred*, (A.S. *andswarode*); *answèręde*, 737 f (-*rde* B, -*ryd* C, -*rd* D), 1982 f (-*rde* CD, -*r[d]ę* B), 2187 f (-*rde* BC, -*rd* D), 3643 f (-*rde* BC, -*rd* D), 4369 f (-*rde* BC, -*rd* D), 4840 f (-*rde* BC, -*rd* D), 8088 f (-*swarde* B, -*swerd* D); *answèrde*, 4459 f, 6539 f (-*d* D); *answèred*, 1030 f (-*rde* BC, -*rd* D). *Before consonants*,—*answèręde*, 5244 (-*rde* B, -*rd[e]* D), 6315 (-*rde* B, -*rd[e]* D, -*rde* † C), 7523 (-*rde* B, -*rd[c]* D); -*swèrde*, 5876 (-[*e*] D, [*he*]

answerdē † herte C), cf. 5202 CD (*below*); -swèred, 4005 (-swarde B, -swerēd him C, -swerīde him D), 4051 (-rde BC, -rīde D), 4334 (-rde B, -rid D, -rīde † and C), 5302 (-rde C, -rde hym B, -rd him D), 6847 (-rde B, -rd[e] D, -rede C †). *Before vowels*,—answèrēde, 4498 (-rde B, -rēd C, -rd D), 5042 (-rde BCD), 5783 (-rde BC, -rd D), 5897 (-swarde B, -swerde C, -swerd D), 7638 (-rde BC, -rd D); answèrde, 2507 (-rēd C, -rd D †), 2703 B (-r[d]e A, rr[d]e C^c, -rd D), 6686; answèrēd, 2530 (-rde B, -rēde C, -rd D), 3767 (-rēde BC, -rd D), 4019 (-rde B, -rēde C, -rīde D), 6190 (-rde B, -rēde C, -rd D), 6777 (-swarde B, -swerde C †, -swerd D), 7491 (-swarde B, -swerde CD), 7533 (-rd BD, -rde C); *he* answèrēd and, 5097 (-rde B, *he* answerde C, *he* answerd D). *Before h*,—answèrēde hym, 5202 (-rde B, -rdē Troilus C, -rd[e] T. D); -swèrēd hym, 2030 (-rde B, -rd[e] do CD), 3974 (-rde BC, -ride † as D), 7230 (-rde B, -swèrēdē † C, -rīd D). answèrēd || yf, 829 AB (-swerd[ē] D, -swerdē 3yf C), 2136 (-swerdē B, -swerid if D, -swerde Pandarus C). [Inf. answère, 2070.]

Rhyme words.—yerde *n.* (737), ferde *ind.* 3 *sg.* (737, 4369), herde *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (1982, 2187, 3643, 4459, 4840, 6539, 8088), *pret. subj.* 3 *sg.* (1030).

asked (A.S. *áscian*, *áxian*, -ode), (i.) 3593 (*axen* † B, *seydē ho C*, *seid[ē] ho D*), 6471 (*aixed B*, *axede C*, *axed D*); (ii.) asked him, 3411 (*axed B*, *axēd † C*, *axid D*), 5888 (*axede C* (?)); *axed hym*, 7587 BD (*asketh A*, *axē C*).¹ [Inf. *aske*, -en, *axe*, -en, cf. 1232, 1979, 3700, 5217, 5334, etc.]

bekked (cf. A.S. *bíecnan*, *bécnan*, I., later *béacnian*, -ode, II.), b. on, 2345 (-ede C, -yd D).²

brydded (A.S. *ge-bríddlian*, -ode), b. *youre*, 6340 A (*brideled BD*).

called (A.S. *ceallian*, -ode, from O.N. *kalla*, *kallaða*), c. *euere*, 541 (*clepid † D*, *callyd in C*). [Inf. *calle*, 902 f, etc.]

caste (O.N. *kasta*, -aða), 314 f (-t D), 1227 f (-t D), 1284 f (-t BC † D), 1733 (-t adoun CD)³, 2344 f (-t D), 2442 f (-t † *inf.* D), 3939 f (-t CD), 5184 f (-t C), 8183 f AB⁴; *cast †*, 2240 f D (*thraste AB*, *thrust C*); -e, 75 (-t BD), 1492 (-t CD), 4696 (-t BD); *cast (before vowels)*, 1159 (-e B), 7290 (-e BCD); -e *he*, 726 (-t BD); -e *his*, 1064 (-t *inf.* D †), 7292 † D (*threw AB*, *throwe inf.* C); -e *hym*, 4672 (-t BD); -t *here (poss. sg.)*, 7368 (-e B, *kiste D*)⁵; *cast || how*,

¹ In D read *wher[af]*.

² AB read *castē down*.

³ Supply [a] in A, and read *ey[en]*.

⁴ Supply [he] in A.

⁵ Supply [was] in B.

4823 (-e B, -e he C, -t he D).¹ [Inf. caste, -en, cf. 1338 f, 1598, etc.]

Rhyme words.—faste *adv.* (1227, 1284, 2240, 2442, 3939, 5184), at the laste (1227, 3939, 5184, 8183), laste *ind.* 3 *sg.* (314), paste *ind.* 3 *sg.* (2344).

clepid (A.S. cleopian, -ode). See *called*.

curssed (A.S. cursian, -ode), (i.) 6570 (-eth B, -ede C, -ed D), 6571 (-eth B, -ede C, -ed (?) D). [Inf. cursen, cf. 3738.]

flekered (A.S. flicerian, -ode), flekered ay, 5883 (fliked B, flekerede C, f[l]ykered D).

folwede (A.S. folgian, -ode), fol(e)wede, 7379 (folwed B, folwede C, folowed D). [Inf. folwe, -en, cf. 614, 3903, 5838, etc.]

gayned (O.N. gagna, -aða), 352 f (-yd D) (: feyned *ind.* 3 *sg.* : destrayned *ind.* 3 *pl.*).

gladed, -e (A.S. gladian, -ode), -ede, 173 (-yd D, gladde[d] B); gladed her (*eam*), 116 (-ede C, -id D, gladded B); gladed hym, 7547 (-ede C, -eth D, gladded B). [Inf. glade, -en, cf. 734, 2064, 2630 f, 2659 f, etc.]

herkened (A.S. hércnian, -ode), herkened she, 2008 (herkned B, -enyd D). [Inf. herkenen, cf. 164; herken, cf. 1180.]

hied (A.S. hígian, -ode), h. not, 2999 (hyed B, hyed her D; C †). [Inf. hye, cf. 3463 f.]

houede (cf. M.L.G. hoven), -e here (*eam*), 6396 (-ed BD). [Inf. houe, 4269 f.]

huntede (A.S. huntian, -ode), -ede hem, 1282 (-ed B, -yd D). [Inf. hunten, cf. 4622.]

lakked (cf. M. Dutch laken), l. routhe, 2365 (lak of *n.* CD); l. alwey, 7108 (-id C); -ede here (=her), 7187 (-ed BD). [Inf. lakke, -en, cf. 189, 5607, 6185.]

liked, lyked (A.S. lícian, -ode), (i.) liked wel, 2129 (-ëde C, -yd D); (ii.) -ëd, 2351 (-yd D, they likëde † in C), 6994 (-id C); -ëd hire (*dat.*), 1996 (-yd D, -ede C). [Inf. like, lyke, lyken, cf. 431, 1130, 2655 f, 3455, 6496, etc.]

loked (A.S. lócian, -ode), -ede forth, 7507 C (-ed D (?), -eth AB); -ed, (ii.) 1071 (-yd † D (?)), 1359 (-yd CD), 7073 (-ede C), 7092 (-ede C; B †); -ed he, 2833 (-ede C, -yd D); -ed in to, 2312 (-ede C, -yd D). [Inf. loke, -en, cf. 206, 629, 1350.]

louede (A.S. lufian, -ode), -ede Troylus, 1753 (-yd D, -es B); -ede neuer, 6520 (-ed BD) (1st pers.); -ede so, 7838 (-ed BD); -ed

¹ In AB it is possible to read *castë* (-[ɛ] A), whether we allow the "extra syllable before the cæsura" or not.

so, 2489 (-yd C, -id D); loueðe || that, 1071 (-eð B, -id D (?)); -eð † the, 8109 D (-eþ AB); -eðe hym, 2928 (-eð BC, -id D)¹; -eðe ek, 4991 (-eð BC, -yd D) (1st pers.). [Inf. loue, -en, cf. 798, 1944, 2854, 3639, etc.; vnlouen, cf. 8061.]

made (A.S. macian, -ode), 312², 1137 f, 1585 f (mode † B), 1963 (-e B), 2627 f, 2660 f, 3455 f, 6333, 6440 (-e D), 7415, 7792 (?); [-e], 5898 (-e BCD); -e, cf. 1148, 2160, 3220, 6341, 8203; made his, etc., cf. 479, 1145 (D †), 1153, 1637, 2007, 2253 (-e † her D), 3189, 4070 (-e † D), 6862 (mad(yn) hym C), 6968, 7406; -e † suche, 4070 D; -e this, 5324 (mad C); -e the, 7878; -e † and (?), 2170 CD. *Maked* seems not to occur, but cf. pl. *makkeden*, 4783 B. [Inf. make, -en, cf. 4177, 6825, etc.]

Rhyme words.—glade *adj. pl.* (1137, 1585, 3455), glade *inf.* (2627, 2660), lade *inf.* (2627).

opened (A.S. openian, -ode), opened here herte, 4081 (opned B, openid C).

pleyde (A.S. plegian, -ode, North. also plægde), 1067 (pleyed D), 6872 † f D (seyde ABC), 7537 f (pleyede C); pleyde he, 3456 (-eð C, pleyd D). [Inf. pleye, -en, cf. 671 f, 1206 f, 1902, 2599 f, 5122, etc.]

Rhyme words.—seyde (6872 D, 7537), Cresseide (6872 D).

poked (cf. M.L.G. poken), p. euere, 2958 (-ede C, puked † B, procurid † D).

putte (A.S. potian, -ode), -e, 2264 (put D); put al, 4027 (putte BD). (Cf. 1985 D †.) [Inf. putten, putte, cf. 6170, 6174 (puten B).]

refte, rafte (A.S. réafian, -ode), refte hym, 484 AC (-t B); rafte hir (*eam*), 7399 D (reste A, ref[t] B, reuyth C). [Inf. reue, -en, cf. 188, 2744 f.]

shapt[e] (O.N. skapa, skapaða; skepja, skapði; cf. A.S. scieppan, sceppan, scóp, O.N. skapa, skóp), shapt here (*eam*), 2642 (-e B, schop C, schop(e) D (?)). For *shop*, cf. 207, 1146, 3393, 5617. [Inf. shape, cf. 3038.]

shewed (A.S. scéawian, -ode), (i.) 286 (-eðe C, -yd D),³ 7383 (-eth B, -eðe C); (ii.) 487 (semede † C). [Inf. shewe, -en, cf. 5943 f, 5953, 6052, 6994 f, 8057.]

thonked (A.S. þancian, -ode), (i.) 124 (thankked B, thankede C, thonkyd † oft D), 3316 (-id D, thanked B, thankede C), 6546

¹ Supply [*and*] in D.

² "He neither chere (schyr C, cher G) ne (*om.* BCDG) made ne word (-e BG) tolde." No note in Austin. Are we to read "He neither cherë madë ne word ne (*or* he?) tolde"?

³ 9-syl., except in D, which has an ungrammatical *she* before the verb.

(thankede C, thanked D); (ii.) -ed hym, 2306 (-yd D, thanks B, thankede C); -ed here (*dat.*), 2318 (-yd D, thanked B, thankede C), 2576 (-id D, thanked B, thankede C), 3972 (thankede C, thanked D). [Inf. thanke, -en, thonken, cf. 1933, 4045, 4436.]

twyghte (A.S. *twiccian*, -*ode), 5847 f (twyzt C, twight D) (: myghte 3 *sg.* : dyghte *inf.*).

wanted (O.N. *vanta*, -aða), ne wanted neuere, 6230 D ([ne] wantede C, ne wanteth A, ne wanthe (?) B).

welcomed (A.S. *wilcumian*, -ode), w. hym, 7212 (-ede C, -[ed] B).

§ 102. The following Indicative Preterites (first and second persons) of Anglo-Saxon verbs of the Third Weak Conjugation occur in the *Troilus*,—*hadde*, *leuede*, *seyde* (cf. Child, § 53; ten Brink, § 162).

hadde (A.S. *habban*, *hæfde*), 92 (had[de] BD), 477 f (-d D), 2435 f (-d CD), 3517 (-d † not D), 3712 A (B †; -e I C, -d y D),¹ 4231 ABC, 6567 f, 7008 (hadde † C, had[de] D), 7389 (-[de] D); cf. 2634 † C, 4424 † D; hadde, 1649 (-d B; D (?))¹, 3557 (-d D)¹, 4937, 7745¹, etc.; had (*before vowels*), 6989 (hadde BCD)², 8017 (-de CD, haddē † rent B); hade, 1718 C (hadde AB, had [a] D), 4635 † C (had † D, held AB); hadde (*before he, his, hym, here (poss. sg.), here-vp-on*), cf. 89, 188, 304, 663, 1992, 2783 (hade A), 3377, 4069, 5335, 7316, 7467; had hym, 2634 (-dē † preižed C), 6834 (-dē † hym BD, -dē † sent C)³; hadde herd, 5007 (adde B); had herd, 750 (-de BC), 1002 (-de C), 5329 (-de BC); but,—haddē horn, 1727 (-dē hed C; D †); cf. hadē † it, 5888 C; haddē ay, 7074 (-[dē] B, -e C, *om.* D); -ē † hym, 4069 A (?),⁴ 6834 † B; -ē † his, 6927 C; hauēde † in (?), 5155 C.—hadde, 500 (hadde C; D †), 1687 (-d BD), 2355 (-dē BC, -[dē] D),⁵ 4835 (had BD); cf. 132 † A, 2229 † C, 7317 † C; hadde, 89 † C, 1992 † C; had (*before consonants*), 7102 (-de C)⁶; cf. 663 † (?) D, 6927 † D, 7229 † D. [Inf. haue, hauen, han, cf. 13, 120 f, 122, 4305 f, etc., etc.]

Rhyme words.—gladde *adj. pl.* (2435), madde *adj. pl.* (6567), madde *inf.* (477).

leuede (A.S. *libban*, *lifgan*, *lifde*, L.W.S. *lifede*, *liofode*), -ēde yn, 5155 (-ēd D, lyuēde B, hauēde † C)⁷; lyuēd in, 5142 B (-ēd D (?), leue

¹ First Person.

² Supply [*seye*] in D.

³ 9-syl. in C.

⁴ Read *iust[e] cause* and *hadde hym*.

⁵ Or (?) *ne haddē she AB*.

⁶ First person.

⁷ First Person. 9-syl., if read as suggested: "I that leuēde yn lust and in plesaunce."

inf. A, lyuyn C). [Inf. lyue, -en, leue, -en, cf. 427, 520, 1635, 1663 f, 2066 f, 2212, 3626, 5142, 5430, 5852, 6660, 7444.]

seyde (A.S. *secgan*, *sægde*, *sáede*), cf. 457 f, 722 f, 1005 f, 1184 f, 1964 f, 2159 f (*seyde* C), 2318 f, 2429 f¹, 2500 f, 3894 f, 3972 f, 4016 f², 4263 f, 4313 f, 4814 f, 4841 f, 4885 f, 5007 f, 5039 f, 5489 f, 5536 f, 5622 f, 5810 f, 5915 f, 6315 f, 6580 f, 6869 f, 6872 f, 6885 f, 7052 f, 7097 f, 7233 f, 7295 f (*seyde* A), 7309 f, 7337 f, 7396 f, 7484 f, 7534 f, 7536 f, 7607 f, 7787 f, 7803 f, 8039 f, 8076 f, 8093 f; *seyde*, 752 (-[e] D),³ 1361 (-[e] D, *sayd*[e] B),⁴ 2037 (-[e] D), cf. 117, 330, 822, 870, 877, 1039, 1103, 1336, 1340, 1587, 1591, 1695 † C, 1970, 2057 CD, 2060, 2176, 2181 † C, 2215, 2228, 2248, 2250, 2267, 2284, 2338, 2362, 2378, 2395, 2404, 2444, 2509, 2686 (*seyde* A), 2690, 2692, 2713, 2959, 3202, 3413, 3418, 3490², 3510², 4490, 5042, 5097 BCD, 6418², 6686; *seyde* (before *th*), cf. 1174, 1548, 1998, 2025, 2130, 2205 C, 3065, 3420, 3471, 4498, 5036, 7318; *seyde*, cf. 397, 507, 583, 873, 1052, 1294, 1412, 1494, 1912 AB, 2057 AB, 2162, 4641, 5097 A, 6421, 7146, 7549, 8087; -[e], 5188 (-e CD); -e *he*, 491 (-d BD)⁵, cf. 380 C, 561, 1164, 1294 C, 1599, 2130 C, 4429, 7594; -e *hym*, 7790, cf. 195 C, 1230; -e *here* (*dat.*), 2241 (-ë B, -ë *caste* C, -[ë] *cast* D)⁶, 3596 (-d D); *seyd here* (*dat.*), 2205 (-ë *thus* C, -[e] *thus* D), cf. 2713 D; -e *how*, 5419 (-d B, *om.* † C), 5831. (In almost all the cases so far cited D omits final -e.)

seyde || *who*, 1736 (-e *ho* C, -d *ho* D)⁷; *seyde* || *lord*, 2028 (-d D, -ë C)⁸; *seyde* *farwel*, 4367 (*seyde* CD); -e † *furst*, 5349 D (*quod* ABC); -e † *to fore*, 6418 C (1st pers.); -e || *nought*, 7146 B (-e AD; C †); -e † *to*, 7315 C; *seyd* † *than*, 2710 D; *seyd* † *wol*, 2713 D; *seyd* † *god*, 2798 D. The construction of *seyd* in *seyd welawey*, 3146 (*sayd* C) is very curious.

seyde (*hiatus*),—*seyde* *he*, 421 (-[ë] D)⁹, cf. 7548 † C; *seyde* || *em*, 2244 (-e *hym* B, -d *hym* D); *seyde* † *hire* (*dat.*), 2241 B. [Inf. *seye*, *seye*, *sey*, *seyn*, cf. 492 f, 512, 574 f, 672 f, 3095, 3280, 7740, etc., etc.; see § 119, XIII.

Rhyme words.—*Criseyde* (457, 1005, 1964, 2318, 2500, 3894, 4016, 4263, 4313, 4814, 4841, 5007, 5039, 5489, 5536, 5622, 5810, 5915, 6315, 6580, 6868, 6872, 6885, 7052, 7097, 7233, 7295, 7309, 7396, 7484, 7607, 7787, 7803, 8040, 8076, 8093), *mayde n.* (1964), *refreyde inf.* (2429), *breyde*,

¹ Hardly subjunctive.

² First Person.

³ Supply [*that*] in C.

⁴ Supply [*faste*] in A.

⁵ Dele (*al*) in C.

⁶ But supply [*it*] in B, and read *seyde*.

⁷ In A read *self* for *seluen*. Cf. *seyde ho*, 3593 C.

⁸ In C read *swete* for *smete*.

⁹ "And to the god of *loue* thus *seyde he*," or *loue* and *seyde he*.

abreyde *inf.* (5007, 6885), vpbreyde *inf.* (8076), deyde *ind.* 3 *sg.* (1184, 4814, 7337), -de, -ede *subj.* 1, 3 *sg.* (457, 4016), pleyde *ind. and subj.* (?) 3 *sg.* (1005, 7534, 7536), preyde *ind.* 3 *sg.* (2159), leyde *ind.* 1, 3 *sg.* (3894, 3972, 4841, 4885, 7233, 7396, 7803), seyde *ind.* 3 *sg.* (6868, 6872, 7534, 7536), breyde, abreyde *ind.* 3 *sg.* (722, 7607). [Var. CD seide; D seid.]

§ 103. Several verbs that are strong in Anglo-Saxon show weak preterites in the *Troilus* (cf. Child, § 54, a; ten Brink, § 167).

(a) Syncopated preterites in -de, -te: *breyde, fledde, highte, lepte, loste, sighte (sighed siked), slepte, smerte, wepte* (to which add *dredde*, sometimes weak in A.S., and *deyde*, O.N.); (b) unsyncopated preterites in -ed: *lyed* (q. v.), *walked* (q. v.).

Note 1.—For *shapte*, see § 101. For *radde*, see § 99. *Swell*, 3928 f D, is an error for *shette*.

Note 2.—*Quake* (*inf. quake*, cf. 2406 f, 3384 f, 4042 f, 6619 f), A.S. *cwacian, -ode*, shows a strong preterite *quok*, 6399 (-oo-B, quok(e) D), 7289 f (-e) D, quook(e) B, *quook(e)*, 2935 (quook B, quok C, quok(e) D)¹, cf. ten Brink, § 152; but the weak preterite *quaked* does not occur in the *Troilus*. *Rynge* (*inf. rynge*, cf. 4079 f), A.S. *hringan, hringde*, has pret. *rong*, cf. 2700², 4567.

abreyde, see *breyde*.

breyde (A.S. bregdan, brægd, bræd), 7606 f; abreyde, 724 f (vpbrayd D); she abreyde, 5874 f (she brayde B, sche brayd C).³ (For strong pret. *abrayd*, see *B. Duch.* 192, *Ho. F.* 110, and cf. ten Brink, § 140.) [Inf. breyde, cf. 4892 f, 5010 f; abreyde, cf. 3955 f, 6883 f.]

Rhyme words.—Criseyde (5874, 7606), seyde *ind.* 3 *sg.* (724, 7606).

deyde (O.N. deyja, dó, late deyða), 56 f (deyed B), 875 f (-d D, deyde BC), 1186 f (-ed B, -ede C, -d D), 4013 f (-ede B, deiede C, dredde † D), 4813 f (dyede B, deyede C, deide D), 5094 f (dyed B, deyede C, deyed D), 7339 f (deyede C, deyed D, seyde † B), 8197 f (deyed B). [Inf. deye, dye, cf. 573 f, 728 f, 758 f, 1027 f, 1257 f, 1524 f, 1526 f⁴, 2160 f, etc., etc.; deyen, dyen, cf. 306 f, 1412 f, 8127, etc.]

Rhyme words.—Criseyde (56, 875, 4013, 4813, 8197), seyde *ind.* 1, 3 *sg.* (1186, 4013, 4813, 7339), *subj.* (?) 3 *sg.* (5094), deyde *subj.* (?) 3 *sg.* (5094).

dredde, dradde (A.S. on-drædan, on-dréd, sometimes -drædde), dredde, 1959 (dredē † I C, dred D),⁵ 4489 (dred BD)⁶; -e hire (*acc.*), 2165 (dradde BC, drad D); dradde ay, 7933 (*drede inf.* BCD): -e hire (*acc.*), 1540 (dredded B, dredde C, drede *inf.* (?) D). [Inf. drede, -en, cf. 84 f, 252, 6748.]

fledde (A.S. fléon, fléah), 7561 f BCD (fledde *p.p.* A) (: bledde *ind.*

¹ Supply [ek] in D.

² Supply [hem] in CD.

³ *I breyde*, 7625 f, is apparently present.

⁴ Noteworthy is the occurrence of *dye* in 1524 f (: *crye ind.* 1 *sg.* : *vilonye*) followed by *deye* (: *seye ind.* 1 *sg.*) in 1526 f.

⁵ After *al* (= although).

⁶ In an indirect question.

or *subj.* 3 *sg.*), 7580 f (: *ledde ind.* 3 *sg.*); *fledde he*, 3192 (*thei † fled pl. D*). (*Is fleȳ †*, 5264 C, meant for a pret. ?) [*Inf. fle, flen*, cf. 747 f, 1279 f, 1795 f, 4105, etc.]

highte, *byhight[e]* (A.S. *hátan*, *heht*, *hét*; cf. *ten Brink*, § 135); *highte promisit*, 7999 f (*hyȝt C*, *hight D*); *byhight*, *byhyght promisit*, 6873 f (*be- D*, *bihighte B*, *behyȝte C*), 7567 f (*-highte B*, *behyȝt C*, *behight D*).—*highte vocatus est*, 69 D (*hyghte B*, *high[te] A*), 2701 (*[-e] D*, *hiȝte C †*); so, with ellipsis of the relative,—*thei hadde a relik hight (heet B, hyȝt C) Palladion*, 153. Cf. *hight Elȳsos, vocatur*, 5452 AD (*height B*), and,—*highte vòlturis, vocatur*, 788 (*-en B*, *-yn D*, *hyȝte C*). *Hatte* (A.S. *hátte*, used both as pres. and as pret.) also occurs: *The owle ek which that hatte Escaphilo*, 6682 (*hette B*, *hiȝte C*, *hete D*); *How that ye louen sholde on that hatte Horaste*, 3639 (*hat D (?)*). For *heet*, *vocatus est*, see 153 B (above).

Rhyme words.—*myghte*, *[-e] 3 sg.* (6873, 7567, 7999), *he sighte ind.* (7999). *lepte* (A.S. *hléapan*, *hléop*), *-e*, 2722 (*lep C*, *lep(e) D*). [*Inf. lepe*, 2040 f.]

loste (A.S. *for-léosan*, *-léas*), *[-e] speche*, 5813 (*-e CD*, *lefte B*); *-e his*, 441 (*-t BD*). [*Inf. lese*, *-en*, cf. 4850 f, 7161.]

lyed (A.S. *léogan*, *léah*), *lyëd † loude*, 2162 D (*ley ful AC*, *leigh ful B*).² [*Inf. lye*, *lyen*, cf. 4775 f, 7887 f, 7890.]

sighte, *sighed*, *siked* (A.S. *sícan*, *sác*); *sighte, syghte*, 3922 f (*-t CD*), 5376 f D, 5879 f (*-t D*, *seyȝt C*), 7996 f (*-t CD*, *sigchte B*); *sight[e] sore*, 5783 (*-e B*, *sighed D*, *seyde † C*); *sight and*, 4313 (*-e B*, *seyȝt C*, *siȝeð D*), 6421 (*-e B*, *syhede C*, *sighede B*).—*sighed lest*, 279 (*sykyd CD*); *-ed sore*, 3898 (*-id D*, *sight[e] B*, *sikede C*), 5559 (*sighte B*, *-t[e] D*; *C †*).—*siked sore*, 3814 (*-yd C*, *syghid D*);³ *syked sore*, 5378 (*syȝede C*, *syhed D*)⁴; *syked for*, 7078 (*sighte B*, *sihed eke D*). [*Inf. syke*, cf. 596 f, 751, 827 f, 1513 f, 1969 f,⁵ 2658 f, 2900 f, 3654 f, 4012 f, 4202 f.]

slepte (A.S. *sléapan*, *slép*, North. *slépte*, W.S. sometimes *onslépte*), *slepte*, 7602 (*slep C*); cf. *pl. slepten al*, 3588 (*-yn C*, *slepyn*⁶ D). But,—*slep*, (i.) 7803 (*slep(e) B (?)*, *sleptë (?) D*, no † word C); (ii.) 2010 (*-(e) BD*). [*Inf. slepe*, *-en*, cf. 1998, 2183, 3262 f, 3499, 3509, 4378.]

smerte (A.S. *smeortan*, **smeart*), 2015 f (*-t D*, *sinerte † C*) (: *herte n.*). [*Inf. smerte*, cf. 1042 f, 2373 f, 4024 f, 6110 f, 6280 f.]

¹ Indirect discourse.² In D supply [*that*].³ After *al-though*.⁴ Indirect discourse, 9-syl. verse.⁵ Rhymes with *endite*, *inf.*, and *the white*.⁶ Perhaps intended by the scribe for a present.

walkede (A.S. walcan, wéolc), -ede †, 7585 C (-ed D, -eth AB); -ede †, 1908 C (-eth AB, -ith D). But,—welk, (i.) 7598 (welk(e) B, walkede C, walked D)¹; (ii.) I welk allone, 1602 (-e B, walkyd D).² [Inf. walke, cf. 7029 f.]

Note.—Ten Brink (§ 134) remarks that *walken* is “ausschliesslich schwach flectiert.”

wep(e) (A.S. wépan, wéop), 5015 f (: kepte *ind.* 3 *sg.*); wepte sore, 1647 (-[e] D)³; -e, 5383 (-e for C †, -e for D); wepte || bothe, 7088 (wepid C); -e she, 7409 (wep C).—But,—weep nought, 5800 (wep(e) B, wepyn † C, -ith † D); wep || ful, 7945 (wep(e) BCD); wep || as, 2957 (-e D, wepte C). [Inf. wepe, -en, cf. 5591, 6445, 7598 f, etc.]

§ 104. A few Romance verbs show syncopated preterites in *-de*, *-te*, after the analogy of the First Weak Conjugation (cf. Child, § 53; ten Brink, § 180, 182).

aspýde, 2337 f (-piede BC) (: ryde *inf.*); aspide, 6902 f (espied B, asspiede C, espide D) (: ryde *inf.*).—aspíde wel, 2927 (-piéd B, -pýéd D). [Inf. espye, espie, aspye, aspíe, aspíen, espyen, cf. 1734 f, 2592 f, 3415 f, 3677 f, 3977, 4815 f, 5886 f, 6544 f, 7177 f, etc.]

caughte (O. Fr. cachier), 1533 f (kaughte B, cauhte C^c, caught D) (: he raughte *pret. ind.*); -e, 280 (cauhte C, caght D); caught his, 7917 (-e B, -t D, cauhte? C †).—kaught[ē] first, 6930 (caught[e] BD, cauhte C). [Inf. kecche, 4217 f A.]

cride, 5875 f (cried D, cryede BC), 6568 f (cried BD, creyde C); cryde loude, 7868 (cried BD, cryede C).—cride, 729 (criede B, cryede C, cried D), 6579 (cried BD, cryede C), 7607 (criede BC, cried D); cride his, 8036 (cried BD, cryede C); cried a, 5415 (cryed BD, cryede † C). [Inf. crie, crye, cryen, cf. 806, 1485, 3864 f, 5887 f, etc.]

Rhyme words.—glide *inf.* (5875), Cupide (5875, 6568), Cipryde (6568).

hurte -e, 1284 (-t D, hitte C †).—hurt || a, 6713 (hirt C, hurt || [a] tyme D).

paste, 1483 f (at last † D), 2345 f (passede C : caste C, past D).—passed nought, 456 (-ede C, -yd D); -ede forth, 1639 (-ed BC, -id D). [Inf. passe, pace, passen, cf. 41 f, 371 f, 847, 1165 f, 2931 f, 3062 f, 4114 f, etc.; trespace, cf. 4017.]

Rhyme words.—at the laste (1483), caste *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (2345).

¹ Indirect discourse.

² In D supply [*that*].

³ Indirect discourse.

preyde, 2687 f (preyede C, prayd D)¹, 4799 f (preyede C), 6100 f (preyede C, preid D); preyede, prayede, 2157 f (preyde B, preyed C, prayd D), 4876 f (preyde B, praide D)¹; preyede hem, 2786 (-ed B, preied C, prayed D).²—preyde here (*acc.*), 6480 (preyēdē || sche C †, preide she (?) D).—praide † god, 5400 D (bad ABC).³ [Inf. preye, preyen, preye, -en, prey, cf. 48, 2521 (?), 2841 f, 2920 f, 2926, 6678, etc.]

Rhyme words.—Criseyde (2687, 4799, 4876, 6100), leyde *ind.* 3 *sg.* (4799), seyde *ind.* 3 *sg.* (2157), withseyde *pret. subj.* (?) 3 *sg.* (4876).

§ 105. Most verbs of Romance derivation make their preterites singular in *-ed*, *-ede*, *-ede*, without synco-pation (cf. Child, § 53; ten Brink, § 179).

acceptid it, 6549 C (-eth AB, acceptē † hit D).

acused, 2166 f (ascused C, accusid D) (: excused *p.p.*).

alterēd his, 4620 (-yd ? C, -id D).

argumented he, 377 (-tedē B, -tid C, -tyd D).⁴

assentyd, 1002 (-ed B) (: vntormentid *p.p.*).

avisid her, 2999 † D.

causede, 7938 (-ed CD).

chaunged al, 2555 (-id D, chonged C).

compleyned ek, 2661 (-ede C, -id D).

comytted to, 6367 A (committed D, -eth B).

coueited † so, 6001 D (*pres.* ABC).

couēred she, 2412 (-id D). [Perh. subj.]

dampned al, 8186 AB.

declamed this, 2332 A (*pl.* BC, declarid *pl.* D).

departed hem, 4508 (-yd C, -id D).⁵

descendede Tydeus 7843 (-ed BD, dessendede C);⁶ -ed † doun, 7874 D (*pres.* ABC), cf. 7222 D †.

desirede worthinesse, 567 (-ed BD); -ed she, 1229 (-id D); -yred but, 1417 B (*pres.* ACD).

deynede sparen, 435 (-ed B, -yd D, -ed to C).⁷

dressede hym, 2913 (-ed B, -id D).

entended bet, 6832 B (-it C †, -eth A, -eth D †).

falsede Troylus, 7416 (-ed BD, -ēdē † C).

feyned, 354 f (fayned B, -id C, feynid D) (: gayned *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* :

¹ First Person. ² B has *hym* for *hem* (as often). ³ Supply [*fu*] in C.

⁴ Read (*by*)*gynnyng* in D.

⁵ Supply [*the*] in C.

⁶ 9-syl. in A only.

⁷ In D read *in* for *if*.

- destrayned *ind.* 3 *pl.*); -ed here (*acc.*), 494 (-ede C, -yd D †) ¹; -ed hym, 7209 (*fynede* † C).
 formede, 2138 (-ed B, fourmyd D).²
 graunted the, 3181 (-id D); -ed hym, 3422 (-yd D, -id it C)³; -ed on, 7312 (-yd C).⁴—grauntede || anoon, 2636 (-ed B, C †; -id he D †).
 ymagyned he, 6980.
 impressid in, 4385 D.
 iaped thus, 6872 (-et B, -ede C, -ed † he D).
 obeyed as, 3423 (-ede C).
 percede and, 272 B (*procede* † A, *perceyvid* † D, *perseydyn* † *pl.* C).
 peyned hym, 2659 (-id D, p(l)eyned C); -ede hym, 6438 (-ed BD; -yde C).⁵
 pleynynd and, 6594 C.
 plitede she, 1782 (*plyted* B, *pleytede* C, *plytid* D).
 purposed [pes], 6012 D (-en *pres. pl.* ABC).
 pùrueyed † thyng, 5728 A? (-ueieth B, -ueyth D).
 receyued † vnto, 6944 D. [Hardly to be scanned.]
 rehearsede †, 2767 C (*inf.* ABD).
 remembered me, 7109 (-id C).
 scorned hem, 303 (-ede C, -yd D).
 sorted hym, 8190 AB.
 souned into, 6338. [9-syl.]
 streynede † him, 3913 C.
 tariëd † so, 7225 D (*pres.* ABC).
 tasted, 639 (-id C, -yd D).
 torned here (*acc.*), 5517 (*turnede* C, *turned* D); -ed hym, 7509 (*turnede* C, -ed D); *tornede* on, 3286 (-ed B, *turned* C, -id D); *torned* he, 6448 (*turned* BD,⁶ -ede hym † C).
 vaylydë † this, 6812 C.
 venged † hir (*acc.*), 7831 D (*wrak* AB, *wrok* C).
 waytede on, 3376 (-ed B, -id CD).

§ 106. The Indicative Second Person Singular of Weak Preterites ends in *-est* (Child, § 53, c; ten Brink, § 194).

iapedèst, 508 (-yst C, -ist D), 917 (-ist C, iaped[est] B, ympedist † D).

¹ In C read [s]he.

³ Supply [that] in D.

⁵ Supply [al] in B.

² A is a bad 9-syl. verse.

⁴ 9-syl.

⁶ Supply [that] in D.

seydest, 909 (-ist CD), 5143 (-ist C); seydestow, seidestow, 912 (-ist thou CD), 917 (-ist thou CD), 918 (-ist thou CD).¹

preyēdest, 910 (-ist C, praydist D, preydest B).²

deydest, 3105 (-ist D, dydest B, deyēdist C).

louēdest, 3562 (-ist CD).

bysoughtest, 8097 (be- D).

dedest, 3205 (-ist CD, didest B); dedyst, 6960 C.

koudest, 622 (-yst C, -ist D).

woldest, 5103 (-yst C).³

myghtestow, 4924 AB.

But,—thow fette, 3565 f (fet D) (: thow . . . lette *imv. subj. sg.* : shette *pret. ind. 3 sg.*).

myght, 619 AB, seems meant by the scribe for *pret. ind. 2 sg.*, but C has *mayzt*, D *mayst*.

The indicative preterite form in *-est* is often used in constructions properly subjunctive, as in late Anglo-Saxon (cf. Sievers, § 365, Anm. 2; ten Brink, § 195). Thus,—

I nolde that thou . . . wendest, 1024 (-yst C, -ist D).

ne haddestow, 4938 (-yst thou C, -ist thou D).

wististow, 4486 C. AB (*wistow*) and D (*wist thow*) are unmetrical.

Read, perhaps, *wistē thow*, and cf. *wyste pret. subj. 2 sg.*, 3211 f (*wiste B*, *wost C †*, *wyst D*) (: *triste pres. ind. 1 sg.* : *lyste pres. subj. 3 sg.*).

dorstestow, 767 (*durstyst thou C*, *trist † thow D*).⁴

woldest, 4944 (-ist C, *wilt † C*); cf. 4487, 5103.

nodestow, 4106 (*noldestow B*, *noldist thou CD*).

sholdest, 774 (*schuldyst C*, *sholdist D*); cf. 6714, 7651.

myghtest, 7890 (*myztist C*, *mightest D †*).

Cf. *oughtest*, 8069; *oughtestow*, 6908 (*auztist thow C*, *oughtest thou D*).

§ 107. Second Person Singular of the Indicative Preterite of Strong Verbs (cf. Child, § 54 b; ten Brink, § 193).

thow foundē me, 3204 (*fond[e] B*, *fondist C*).

thow me bere on, 5425 AB (*bare D*).

were, 4160 f (*you were E*) (: there : *fere timor*); *-e*, 510 (*wer † wont(e)*)

¹ Supply [*that*] in A.

² Dele (*to*) in C.

³ Perh. for subjunctive. Supply [*thus*] in C.

⁴ Supply [*hire*] in B; 9-syl. in D.

D), 3559¹, 5424 ABD; werę wonęd, 901 (werę wont(ę) B, werę † wonę C, werę wont D)². But,—was thou, 4996 (art(ę) † thou D).

§ 108. In the First and Third Persons Singular of the Indicative Preterite of Strong Verbs no MS. is free from occasional forms in -e, which, however, is of course never pronounced (cf. Child, § 54). Thus,—

stod(ę) she, 172 (stood(ę) B, stod C, stood D).

tok(e) hede, 820 (took B, tok C)³; -(e) hire (*poss. sg.*), 126 (tok C), 3053 (tok C), 3067 (tok C); -(e) his, 2387 (tok C), 2545 (tok C), 3436 (took(e) B, tok C); -(e) he, 379 (tok C), 6565 (took B, tok C); tok(e) and, 3024 (took B, tok C); -(e) it, 3811 (tok C).⁴—tok(ę), 1646 (tok C).

com(ę), 1640 (cam C), 2024, 2682 (com B)⁵; bycom(ę), 1072⁶; com(e), 1629, 1647,⁷ 2647 (com B),⁸ 3592, 7515 A; -(e) here (*dat.*), 1687 (cam to D); -(e) hire (*acc.*), 2572 (com B; com(e) C (?)).

wrot(ę), 2299 (wrot C); wrot(e), 7787 (wrot C).

wax(e), 2341 (wex BC, wax D).

quook(e), 2935 (quook B, quok C, quok(e) D)⁹; see § 103, note 2.

fill(ę), 4243 (fel B, lestę C, fillę † *pl.* E).

shop(ę), 4914 (schop C).

Other examples are : (1) in B, -(e), before vowels or *h*,—1360, 1641, 1724, 1774, 2275, 3593, 3821, 3921, 4419, 6392, 6609, 6890, 7441, etc., etc.; -(ę), 826, 1640, 1690, 1787, 2645, 2789, 3207, 3437, 3836, 4725, 6838, 7093, 7534, 7565, 7579, 7803, etc.; (2) in C, -(e), as before, 549, 1677, 2547, 3070, 4563, 6925, etc.; -(ę), 141, 2645, 2902, 3612, 7208, 7506, etc.; (3) in D, -(e) and -(ę), *passim*. The phenomenon is commonest in D, and B comes next. For examples of this -(e) in rhyme, cf. 2265 BD, 2410 B, 2413 B, 2689 B, 2691 B, 3519 D, 3803 B, 4677 BD, 6652 B 7289 BD.

For weak preterites from strong verbs, see § 103. For *quok* and *rong* from verbs weak in Anglo-Saxon, see § 103, note 2.

¹ Protasis. Read *were* [*in*] in A.

³ 9-syl. in AB. Read *hed*[*e*] in CD.

⁵ Supply [*for*] in D.

⁷ Read *wep*[*e*] in D.

⁹ Supply [*ek*] in D.

² But supply [*whi*] in B, and read *were*.

⁴ Perhaps subjunctive.

⁶ Read *frendlyest*[*e*] in BD.

⁸ Read *Criscid*[*e*] || *innocent* in D, or supply [*a*].

§ 109. The Plural of the Preterite Indicative of both Strong and Weak Verbs ends in *-en*, *-e*, for all persons (Child, § 55; ten Brink, § 194).

In the following list the *persons* are not distinguished. The examples given are arranged as follows (cf. § 96): I. *-en* before consonants; II. *-en* in rhyme; III. *-en* before vowels; IV. *-en* before *h*; V. syncope: *-en*, *-n*; VI. *-e* before consonants; VII. *-e* in rhyme; VIII. *-e* elided before vowels; IX. *-e* elided before *h*; X. apocope of *-e*.

The examples comprise the following preterites: (a) A.S. First Weak Conjugation (cf. § 99),—*alighte* (VII.), *bente* (VI., X.), *boughte* (I., VII.), *broughte* (VI., VII., VIII., IX.), *felle* (I., III.), *fette* (VII.), *herde* (III.), *kyste* (VII.), *laste* (VIII.), *-ledde* (II.), *mente* (VII.), *mette* (A.S. *métton*) (VII.), *redde* (*radde*) (IV., VIII., X.), *-rente* (VII.), *sente* (VII.), *sette* (I., VII., IX.), *shette* (II.), *soughte* (*bysoughte*) (VII., IX. n.), *spedde* (IV. VIII., IX. and n.), *stente* (III., VII.), *thoughte* (A.S. *póhton*) (VII.), *thoughte* (A.S. *púhton*) (VI., VII.), *tolde* (VII., VIII.), *wende* (II., IV., VI., VII.), *wente* (III., VII., VIII., IX. n.), *wroughte* (III., VI., VII., VIII.); cf. *yede* (II.); (b) *glente* (cf. § 100) (VII.); (c) Second Weak Conjugation, A.S. and other verbs of Germanic origin (cf. § 101), *caste* (I.), *folwede* (V.), *lyked* (VIII., IX. n.), *made* (I., III., VI., VII., IX.), *pleyde* (VII., VIII.), *rafte* (VIII.), *shewed* (VIII., IX.), *strenede* (III.); (d) A.S. Third Weak Conjugation (cf. § 102),—*hadde* (I., III., VI., VII., VIII., IX.), *seyde* (I., III., IV., VI., VII., VIII., X.); (e) Weak preterites from Strong Verbs (cf. § 103), *dredde* (I., VII.), *stedde* (II.), *highte* (*byhighte*) (II., IV., VI., IX.), *slepte* (III.), *wepde* (I.); (f) Romance verbs with syncopated preterites (cf. § 104),—*caughte* (IX.), *cryede* (VIII., IX.), *paste* (VII.), *preyde* (VII.), *quytte* (IX.); (g) Romance verbs with unsyncopated preterites (cf. § 105),—*apoynteden* (I.), *assegeden* (I.), *assembled* (VIII.), *bisegede* (VIII.), *caused* (VIII.), *comeneden* (III.), *commendeden* (III.), *declamed* (X.), *destrayned* (X.), *entrechaungeden* (IV.), *ioyneden* (III.), *turnede* (VIII.); (h) Strong Verbs,—*braste* (VIII.), *come* (V., VIII., IX.), *droue* (VIII.), *ete* (VII.), *felle* (*fille*) (I., II., III., VII., VIII., X.), *founde* (I., VIII.), *gonne* (*gan*) (*bygonne*) (I., III., IV., VI., VIII., IX. and n., X.), *hange* (III.), *bihelde* (III.), *knewe* (VII., VIII., IX.), *laye* (III., VIII.), *lete* (I.), *quod* (X.), *ride* (II.), *ronne* (I.), *aryse* (IX. n.), *sete* (III. VIII.), *seygh* (*say*, *sey*) (IX., X.), *spake* (*spoke*, *speke*) (II., III., VI., VIII., IX., X.), *sponne* (VII.), *stode* (I., VII., X.), *syde* (II.), *toke* (VIII., IX.), *were* (I. III., VI., VII., VIII., IX., X.), *wesse* (I.), *yaf* (IX.).

I. *-en* before consonants:

assègèdèn neigh, 60 (-3e- C, assegid wel D †); bysègèdèn the, 7859

(be- B, besègèdè C, besegèd[è] D).

casten to, 88 AB (-yn C); -en what, 2570 (-yn CD).

boughten they, 136 (-3te C, boght[e] D); cf. 8164.

founden no, 137 (-yn † the (?) D).

weren to, 283 (wherè C, weryn D); cf. 463, 3531, 4744 (A †), 7892, 7942.¹

¹ Subjunctive?

hadden prys, 1109 (-yn D).
 gonnen, 1184 (gunne C, gun[ne] D); gunnen, 1235 (gon- B, gonë C, gun[ne] D); cf. 2668, 2704, 3452, 4541, 4720, 6891.
 wesshen they, 2269 (wesche C, wysshyn D).
 fillen forth, 2276 (-yn D, fellyn C); cf. 1583.
 apoynteden ful, 3296 (-yn D; C †).
 felten sith, 4064 (-yn C).
 wenden ben, 4182 AB.
 setten tyme, 4554 (-e C, -yn D).
 dredden to, 4718 (-yn D, dreden B).
 makkëden the, 4783 B (made A †, madyn alle CD); maden dye, 8165.
 ronnen doun, 4792 (-e C, ran[nen] D).
 leten falle, 5797 (-yn CD).
 seyden, 6803 (C †), 6854 (-e C, -e D (?)), 7712 (-e CD).
 stoden for, 7477 (-e C, stood[ë] B).
 wepten for, 8185 AB; cf. 4909 C.

II. -en in rhyme :

fellen, 3 f (: tellen *inf.*).
 shetten, 148 f (C †; *line om.* † D) (: letten *inf.*). [After *though.*]
 wenden, 217 f (-yn C; D †) (: descenden *inf.*).
 riden, 473 f (-yn D) (: diden 3 *pl. ind.* : abyden *p.p.*).
 spaken, 565 f (-yn C, -e D) (: maken *inf.* : awaken *inf.*).
 yeden, 2021 f (3eden B, 3edyn D, ridyn C) (: ryden *p.p.* : abyden *p.p.*).
 hyghten, 2708 f (-yn D, hiztyn C) (: myghten 3 *pl.*).
 mysledden, 4710 f (-yn D, -lelen B) (: flodden, -yn D, 3 *pl.*, 4711).
 syen, 7179 f (seyen C) (: espyen *inf.* : (e)yen).

III. -en before vowels :

Cf. wroughten, 63; fellen, 134; bihelden, 177; herden, 1168; stenten, 1188; seten, 2277; comëueden, 2859; spaken, 3056, 6879, cf. 6795; commendeden, 3059; slepten, 3588; weren, 4632, 5798, cf. 2279 † A; madyn, 4783 CD; stremeden, 4909; wenten, 5392; hangen, 5479; hadden, 5912; gonnen, 6578; ioyneden, 7176; seyden, 7479. (Variants not registered.)

In some of these cases hiatus occurs in one or another MS. (not A): as, wentë alle, 5392 B; spekë in, 3056 D; feltë in, 4158 C; cf. leyë at, 3587 C (lay[en] A, layen B, lyen D). See also IX. note.

IV. -en before h (in *hym*, *here acc.*, *hem*, *here pl.*) :—

Cf. redden, 2791; èntrechaungëden, 4210; wenden, 5345, 5363, 5386; gonnen, 5384; bihyghten, 6859; spedden, 6864. (Vari-

ants not registered.) Hiatus,—speddē hem, 6864 D (cf. also IX., note). Thus *seyden* here and *howne*, 4872 (-e BC, saidē D).

V. -en (syncope) :

folēwēden yn, 1904 (folwēden B, folwēde C, folōwdyn D).

comēn vpwārd, 3047 (-yn C, come D).

(Cf. 3470 † C, and the references under VIII., IX.)

VI. -e before consonants :

were wrothe, 140 (-ē B, -yn D); were neuere, 1671 (-[e] D); were they, 1997 (-en B, -in C †); were faste, 3075; were bothe, 5894 (-en B, were we C; D †); were sene, 6637 (waren B, wer ysen D).

broute me, 424 † C.

highte volturis, 788 (-en B, -yn D, -3te C) (in pres. sense).

gonne fro, 1279 (gunne C, ded[e] † D); cf. 4238, 5371 C (D †), 5790.¹—bygonne we, 1597 (B † C †; bygun † we D).

made louē, 1762 (-ē D); m. many, 1900 (-yn CD); m. † swich, 3468 C (-yn D).

bente neuere, 1946 (-en B, -yn C, -t † D).

spoke no, 2204 A.

wroughte me, 4196 (-[e] B, -en E, -3tyn C).

hadde worthynesse, 4631 (-yn CD); hadde ye, 8055 (-yn C); cf.

hadde neuere 3712 † B.

wende that, 5378 (-en B).²

seyde softe, 6982 (-yn C).³

thoughte (= seemed) tho, 7023 (-[e] B, -3te C, 3t[e] *sg.* D †).

VII. -e in rhyme :

stente, 60 f (stynt D) (: went *ind.* 3 *pl.*, -e B : entente), 5002 f (-t C) (: wente *ind.* 3 *pl.* : to-rente *pret. ind.* 3 *pl.*).

tolde, 131 f (: holde *inf.* : olde *pl.*), 7328 f (: holde *p.p.*).

felle, 145 f (: telle *inf.* : dwelle *inf.*).

dredde, 483 f (-d D) (: speddē *ind.* 3 *sg.*).

paste, 1743 f (-t C, †ast † D) (: faste *inf.*).

broughte, 1999 f (-3t C, broght D) (: oughte 3 *pl.* : thoughte †*oh*te *ind.* 3 *sg.*).

ete, 2269 f (*inf.* † D) (: strete *n.*).

made, 2859 f (: glade *adj. pl.*).

sente, 2862 f (-t D) (: hente *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*).

wroughte, 3305 f (-t B, -3t C, wroght D), 3604 f (-3t C, wroghtyn D), 5388 f (-3t C, wroght D), 7224 f (-3t CD).

¹ *gan* C (l. *gunne*), *ganne* D.

² 9-syl.

³ Subjunctive †

Rhyme words.—thoughte þóhte *ind.* 3 *sg.* (5388), 3 *sg. indir. quest.* (3305), þóhton *ind.* 3 *pl.* (3604), þúhton 3 *pl. indir. quest.* (7224), bysoughte *ind.* 3 *pl.* (5388).

were, 3427 f, 3467 f, 3535 f (ware B), 3931 f, 4237 f, 6584 f (wer D), 7541 f (wer D).

Rhyme words.—fere, feere *fear n.* (3427, 3467, 3931, 4237), there (3427, 3467, 7541), where (3535, 4237, 6584), tere *n.* (3931, 7541), eyen clere (6584).

sette, 3450 f (set D) (: fette *inf.*).

sponne, 3576 f (spunne C) (: bygonne *p.p.*).

thoughte (A.S. þóhton), 3605 f (-3t C, thoghtyn D) (: wroughte 3 *pl. ind.*).

stode, 3765 f (stood D) (: for gode).

wende, 4528 f (-d D) (: complende *inf.* A, comprehende BC, comprehend D), 5367 f (: spende *inf.* : brende *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*).

knewe, 4538 f (knowe † B) (: hewe *n.* : newe *adv.*), 6083 f (knowe † B) (: trewe *pred. adj. sg.*), 6486 f (: newe *adj.* : trewe *adj.*).

mente, 4699 f (-t D) (: wente *ind.* 3 *pl.* : bente *p.p. pl.*), 4834 f (-t D), (: wente *subj.* 3 *sg.* : entente), 8056 f (-t C †, D) (: entente).

wente, 4701 f (-t D), 4802 f (-t CD), 5000 f (-t C), 6797 f (-t D); went[e], 58 f (-e B), 2751 f (-e B; C †).

Rhyme words.—entente, -[e] *n.* (58, 2751), sente *ind.* 3 *sg.* (4802), mente *ind.* 3 *pl.* (4701), stente *pret. ind.* 3 *pl.* (58, 5000), to-rente *ind. pret.* 3 *pl.* (5000), assente *inf.* (6797), bente *p.p. pl.* (4701).

mette (A.S. méttton), 4704 f (met D) (: lette *n.*), 8121 f (: whette *p.p. pred. pl.*).

preyde, 4858 f (preyede C) (: Criseyde).

stente, 5002 f (stent C) (cf. next word).

to-rente, 5003 f (-t C, turment † D) (: wente *ind.* 3 *pl.* : stente *pret. ind.* 3 *pl.*).

bysoughte, 5387 f AB (besou3te D) (: thoughte þóhte *ind.* 3 *sg.* : wroughte *ind.* 3 *pl.*).

kyste, 5793 f (: twyste *inf.* : nyste *ind.* 3 *sg.*).

glente, 5835 f (-t C, glente *sg.* BD) (: entente : wente *ind.* 3 *sg.*).

hadde, 6336 f (: into badde), 6350 f (: cladde *ind.* 3 *sg.*).

fette, 7215 f (fett D) (: sette *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* : lette *n.*).

thoughte (= seemed), 7223 f (-t B, -3t CD) (: wroughte *ind.* 3 *pl.*).

[Ind. question.]

pleyde, 7475 f (pleyede C) (: Criseyde).

seyde, 7628 f (*sg.* † C) (: breyde *pres. ind.* 1 *sg.* : Criseyde).

aboutghte, 8119 f (aboute D) (: soughte *ind.* 3 *sg.*).

Final -e is to be supplied in *alight*[e]¹, 6876 f (-e B, aly; t? C, light D) (: *nyghte inf.* : *brighte def. adj.*).

VIII. -e elided before vowels.

Cf. *bisegede*, 149; *hadde*, 153, 909, 1302, 4528, 5381; *seyde*, 176, 5348; *fille*, *felle*, 470, 3407, 3894, 5413; *wente*, 473; *toke*, 911, 4252; *were*, 916, 3073, 3265, 4247, 5909, 6875; *tolde*, 1165; *pleyede*, 1235; *cryede*, 1697; *founde*, 2023; *sete*, 2336; *turnede*, 2432; *gonne*, 2684, 5364; *knewe*, 2750; *spake*, 3305, 6096, cf. 4208; *laye*, 3591; *rafte*, 4911; *wroughte*, 5789; *radde*, 7100; *come*, 7237; *lafte*, 7689. (Variants not registered.)

In all these instances A has -e (elided). In several, D omits -e; as,—had, 153, 909, 4528; fil, 470; told, 1165; crięd, 1697; gun, 2684; wer, 5909; etc. So sometimes B: as,—beseged, 149; had, 153; went, 473; took, 911; crięd, 1697; torned, 2432; fel, 3407; com, 7237; left, 7689; cf. caused, 4408;—and C: as,—tok, 911; lay, 3591. -yn (syncopated) is found in C 153, 916, 1302, 1697, 2750, 3073, 3894, and in D 2023, 2432; -yn in C 5909, D 176; -e in D 3265.—*Drowe* pret. ind. 3 pl., 3516 D (drew C), should be *p.p.* (as in AB).—For the omission of elided -e in A, see,—shewed, 159 (-ede C, -yd D); sped, 1111 (spedde B, did † D); brast, 1411 (bruste B, brostyn C, brest D); lyked, 2351 (-ęde † in C, -yd † *sg.* D); assembled, 2652 (-bledin in C, -blid D, assemlede B); gon, 2793 (gonnē † it B, gan on C, gun on D); wrought, 4555 (-jte C, wroght D); tok, 5793 (tooke B, hent C, toke D); went, 7690 (-e BC), cf. 1995; cf. *ye* caused al, 4408 B.

IX. -e elided before *h* (in *he*, *his*, *hym*, *here* acc., *here* pl., *here* adv., *hem*).

Cf. *made*, 472, 6097; *come*, 1704; *cryede*, 1728; *sette*, 2269, 5348; *were*, 2436, 3523, 7564; *hadde*, 3706; *knewe*, 4240; *gonne*, *bygonne*, 4919, 7590, 7830; *toke*, 6863; *spedde*, 6881. (Variants not registered.)

In all these instances A has -e. Cf. *were*, 6829 B (wer D, werē † here C, were † there A). D omits -e in 1728, 3706, 4240, 5348, 6097, 7564, 7590; B, in 4919, 5348, 6863; C, in 1728, 7590, 7830. C has -yn in 472, 3706, 4240, 6881 †, 7564. For the omission of elided -e in A, see—*spak hem*, 1110 (-e B); *brought hym*, 2023 (-e B, -jte C, broghtyn † at D); *gan hym*, 2629; *byhight hem*, 3161 (biheighte B, behyzt C, behight D); *shewed his*, 4206 (-id is C, sweyd † E); *yaf hym*, 4795 (zaf C; B † D †), cf. 2861 D; *quyt hym*, 4867 (-tt D, quite B); *seygh here* (acc.), 5382 (seigh B, saw C, say her [so] D); *tok here* (poss. sg.), 5392 (took B; toke C, D (?)); *caught here* (pl.), 6965 (-zt C †).²

Note.—A few cases of hiatus occur in one or another MS., but these are easily corrected. Thus,—*wentē arm*, 2201 (-en B, -yn C, om. † D); *arysē euerychon*, 2683 (-en B, -yn C, risyn D); *gonnē † it*, 2793 B; *likēde † in*, 2351 C; *sought[ē] hym*, 2022 (-jte C, soughten B, soghtyn D); *speddē hem*, 2032 (spede B, sped[ē] from D); *werē † here* (hic), 6829 C. See also III., IV., above.

X. Apocope. A few genuine cases occur :

¹ Perhaps present tense.

² Supply [the] in D.

were born, 4064 (-ë BC), 5913 (wer D); were woned, 4553 (be D);
war caught(e), 2267 B.¹

say (*vidistis*) the, 656 (say CD); sey ye, 1362 (sey[e] † 3e D).
gan to, 3957.

quod they, 4856 ABC (D †).

declamed this, 2332 B (-ede C, declarid D, declamed † *sg.* A).

destrayned, 355 f (-yd D) (: gayned : feyned, *both pret. ind. 3 sg.*).
[Indir. discourse.]

Cf. bygun † we, 1597 D; gunne † to, 1994 C (gan † to D); gun †
they, 3452 D; gunne † the, 5791 C (gan the peynes † A); gan †
to, 6891 D; had † that, 1302 D; hadde † ye, 3711 A; bent †
neuere his, 1946 D; redde † me, 7100 C; seide † that, 7479 D;
stode † they, 7482 C; were † wrothe, 140 B; were † clerkes,
5634 D; were † there, 6829 A; were † wont(e), 7023 D.

§ 110. The Singular of the Present Subjunctive of both
strong and weak verbs ends in *-e* in all persons
(Child, § 56; ten Brink, §§ 184, 188).

I. First Person.

(a) Before consonants :

er that I parte, 5 (or [that] I p. D).

lest thow deme I trust[e] not, 601 (tryste B, truste C).

thow I desir[e], 650 (-e BD, desese † C).

as euere I thriue, 1205 (as euere thryue I BC).²

if that I breke, 2980.

er that I departe, 6297.³

(b) In rhyme :

whil I leue, 931 f (lyue BD) (: foryeue *subj. 2 sg., inf.* D).

er that I sterue, 1007 f (er than C) (: deserue *inf.*).

now is tymë (is it tyme CD) I wende, 1305 f (: to an ende).

yf I . . . endite, 1352 f (B †) (: lyte, litel † A).

wene I lye, 1385 f (ly D) (: eye).

counseylest me . . . that . . . I me feyne, 2613 f (: peyne *u. :*
pleyne *inf.*).

though I . . . preye, 3127 f (prey D) (: seye *ind. 1 sg. :* wreye
subj. 2 sg.).

til I sterue, 3556 f (sterwe C) (: serue *ind. 1 sg.*).

¹ In ACD supply [that] and read were.

² Supply [this] in AD.

³ Supply [that] in C.

though I . . . compleyne, 3847 f (pleyn † D) (: to seyn[e] AD,
to seyne BC : peyne n.).

but I retourne, 4325 f (-tourne B, -turne CD) (: sojourne *inf.*).

yf I . . . twynne, 5420 f (: inne : synne n.).

til I . . . vnshethe, 5438 f (C †) (: to dethe).

yf so be that I . . . passe, 7059 f (pace BD, pase C) (: grace n.).

yf . . . I falle, 7068 f (faʃ D) (: byfalle *subj.* 3 *sg.* : of alle).

(c) Elision :

though I praunce, 221 (how † y p. D).

though I speke, 1104 (yf I † spak D).

yf I lye, 3216.

so thriue I, 3552.¹

though that I tarye a yer, 4037.

or I soo werche, 5013 D (do ABC).²

al sey I nought, 3098 A (-e B).

yf that I me put in, 7064 (putte C).

II. Second Person.

(a) Before consonants :

but thow it fynde, 831 (fyndē † it C, but if thow fynd it D).

se that thow . . . requere, 895.

and thow . . . holde, 2610 (-[e] CD).

if thow remembre the, 3203 D (if it r. the B, if it remembreid †
be C, if it remembreth the A).

that . . . thow deme, 3236.

though thou sitte, 4472 (sit[te] D).

that thow retourne, 6215 (C †).

that thow . . . sende, 6958 (C †).

(b) In rhyme :

that thou dwelle, 789 f (: helle n. : telle *ind.* 3 *pl.*).

(I) . . . pray . . . thow foryeue, 930 f (-ziue B, -zeue C ; *inf.*
D) (: leue *subj.* 1 *sg.*).

that thou me recomaunde, 1049 f (: comaunde *inf.*).

that thow . . . wreye, 3126 f (wrey D) (: seye *ind.* 1 *sg.* : preye
subj. 1 *sg.*).

whider so thow wende, 3233 f (wynde C) (: ende n.).

how thow pleye, 3663 f (pley CD) (: tweye : seye *inf.*).

that . . . thow wynde, 4282 f (wende B) (: kynde n. : bynde
subj. 3 *sg.*).

or thou olde †, 5079 f C.

¹ In C read *this* for *wis*.

² Supply [*thus*] in C.

what so thow seye, 5104 f (sey D) (: deye *subj.* 1 *sg.*).

That prey I the thow take (tak B) and it conserue, 6673 f (: serue *ind.* 1 *sg.* : sterue *ind.* 1 *sg.*).

I the beseche . . . that thow foryeue, 6750 f (-yieue B, - $\frac{3}{4}$ if C) (: dreue *p.p.* : leue *vivere*).

that thow . . . write, 7656 f (: lete : endite *inf.*).

(c) Elision :

if thou wene, 575.

lest thow deme, 601 (C †).

if thow . . . deye, 800 (dy D).

yf thow late hym, 1408 (lat B, late C, lete D, *all three plural*).

yf thow write, 2113.

that thow knowe, 3249 (know D).

that thow . . . cause, 4466 (causē † it D).

yf thow deye, 5285 (dey D).

my conseyl is . . . thow . . . go and make, 5777 (mak BC).

if that thow trowe, 6694 (C †).

if thow . . . ligge, 6774 (leve C, lyē thus D).¹

whe[the]r yet thou thenke, 7098 A.

if thow werk yn, 952 (wyrke B, were † C, work on D).

III. Third Person.

(a) Before consonants :

touche † loue, 744 C (*l.* toucheth).

god forbede, 1198 ; cf. 2775, 3603.

cesse cause ay cesseth maladye, 1568 B (-eth . . . -eth A, sese . . . sesēth the C, cesyd *p.p.* . . . cecith D) ; cf. cesse wynde it wold aryse, 2473 (sese C^c, cesid (?) D).

though a man forbede, 1801 (D †).

god sende, 2359 (-[e] BD), 8065 ; god . . . so sende, 8151 ; cf. 3163 (-ē hele), 3185, 6871.

though she bende, 2463 (-[e] D).²

wher it be bet she byde, 2736 (sche abide C, to † bydē *inf.* (?) D).

if that she vouche saf, 2776 (-eth B, -ith D, thou † vouche C).

I pose a womman graunte me, 3152 (-edē C, -ith D).

if it remembre the, 3203 B (cf. II., above) ; er deth delyuere me, 7763 (-uereh D ; C^c (?)) ; mysmetre for, 8159 A (-metere B, misse-metre D).

god . . . brynge, 3808 (bryng † at D).

god . . . so quenche, 4298 (D †).

¹ In later hand in C. Supply [or] in D.

² Supply [she] in D.

so . . . that it cause, 4347 (is † cause CD).
 god vs graunte, 4368 (C (?); graunt D †).
 yif that it lyke yow, 4763 (if it like B, if it likith D); cf. 1527 †
 C, 4144 † A.
 God leue that, 4987 (len[e] D, leue † ay C).
 if Criseyde . . . now loue the, 5274 (-eth BD, -yth C).
 but yf . . . remorde yow, 6153 (-moue C †).
 god . . . as wysly glade so, 6519.
 though he wepe and make, 6779.
 er Calkas sende, 6871.
 bytyde what bityde, 7113 f (: syde).
 although she come, 7504.
 though . . . commeue, 7749 (re- C, remorde D).
 that noon mysywryte the, 8158 (miss(e)-write D)¹.

(b) In rhyme :

god me blysse, 436 f (blys C, blesse D) (: prowesse : distresse *n.*);
 god vs blesse, 7575 (blisse BD, blys C) (: heuynesse).
 thowh . . . breste, 599 f (-t C, or (that) † . . . to-brest D)
 (: my beste : reste *n.*).
 yf the lyke, 829 f (: syke *inf.*); cf. 3653 f.
 but if . . . shende, 965 f (-d D) (: ende *n.*).
 so god you saue, 1199 f (: ye raue : caue *n.*).
 lest . . . slake, 1376 f (: take *inf.* : make *inf.*).
 if . . . assente, 1420 f (-t (?) D, -e *inf.* AC) (: sente *ind.* 3 *sg.*).
 er [that] . . . deuoure, 1480 f (er that BC) (: heure).
 so she . . . saue, 1823 f (: haue *inf.*); cf. 2944 f, 4220 f, 4343 f.
 so god me spede, 1829 f (: drede *n.* : hede *n.*).
 who-so it rewe, 1874 f (rew D) (: vntrewe *pl.* : an newe).
 god so wys me saue, 2063 f (: haue *ind.* 1 *sg.* : yaue *subj.* 3 *sg.*)²
 til that . . . departe, 2075 f (: Marte).
 although it . . . smerte, 2182 f (-t D †, -e † *inf.* C) (: sterte *ind.*
 3 *sg.* : herte)³.
 recche . . . wher he bycome, 2236 f (: some *pl.*).
 whether that he lyue or elles sterue, 2237 f (leue . . . sterue C,
 dye † . . . sterue D) (: serue *inf.* : deserue *inf.*).
 whan that so he bygynne, 2569 f (whan so that he bygyn D,
 whan so euere † he gynne (?) C) (: wynne *inf.*).
 god hym amende, 2816 f (: defende *ind.* 1 *sg.* : sende *subj.* 3 *sg.*).

¹ Dele (to) in BD, or read *mysywryte*.² In C, read *cche* for *sche*.³ In A read *so[rc]*.

- god hym brynge, 2891 f (bring D) (: heriynge).
 yf this . . . displese, 2949 f (-plees B) (: ese *n.* : apese *inf.*).
 how sore that me smerte, 2988 f (-t CD) (: herte *n.*); cf. 3748 f,
 3842 f, 6495 f, 7587 f.
 god forbede, 3387 f (: nede *n.*), 4819 f (: drede *n.*), 6218 f (: nede
n. : hede *n.*).
 til the sonne shyne, 3610 f (: deuyne *inf.* : myne *inf.*).
 er that . . . breke, 3750 f (to-breke † D) (: wreke : speke *infs.*).
 til . . . sende, 3773 f (: ende *n.*); cf. 6865 f.
 Ioue . . . hym race, 3857 f (arace BC) (: place *n.*).
 (god) . . . auaunce, 4228 f (avance E) (: myschaunce *n.*).
 god . . . bynde, 4281 f (: kynde *n.* : wynde *subj. pres. 2 sg.*).
 til that fayle, 4935 f (: bywayle *inf.*).
 though the body sterue, 4984 f (: serue *inf.*).
 rather than my felawe deye, 5186 f (dey D) (: seye *inf.*).
 that . . . wepe, 5253 f (: depe *adv.*).
 the deucl spedē hym (spede hym BD, hauē hym C)¹ that recche,
 5292 f (: wrecche *n.*).
 god . . . gyde, 5355 f (guide D) (: side *n.*).
 til deth me mete, 5444 f (: swete *adj.* : in quiète).
 that he . . . fynde, 5578 f (i-fynde C) (: out of his mynde).
 yf . . . compleyne, 5917 f (: peyne *n.* : tweyne)².
 yf so be that . . . take, 6224 f (: make *inf.*).
 yf that . . . me assayle, 6257 f (messaile B, me asayle C; D †)
 (: fayle *n.*).
 though . . . smerte, 6425 f (-t C) (: herte *n.*); cf. 6495 f, 7587 f.
 that . . . he dryue, 7028 f (: on lyue).
 yf that it byfalle, 7065 f (so falle C) (: of alle : falle *subj. 1 sg.*).
 bytyde what bityde, 7113 f (: syde *n.*).
 yf . . . masterte, 7706 f (me asterte C, me astert D) (: herte *n.*).
 god encesse, 7722 f (-cresse CD) (: cesse *subj. 3 sg.*).
 so that it neuere cesse, 7724 f (sease D, sere † C).
 god . . . auaunce, 7798 f (-ns D) (: myschaunce *n.*); cf. 4228 f.
 though hym greue, 8001 f (: leue *inf. lēfan*).
 er that he dye, 8150 f (: thow nenuye).
 liste, lyste, lyst (1843), leste A (liste, lyste, leste B; liste, lyste,
 leste, lest, lyst, lest C; liste, leste, list, lyst, lest, lust D), 679 f
 (as thou lyste C), 693 f (yf thow lyste AC), 1022 f (as thou
 lest C), 1334 f, 1843 f, 2030 f (3e lest C), 2195 f, 2268 f (ye

¹ In D read *Adieu* for *And dey*.² Supply [3if] in C.

list D), 2534 f, 3101 f, 3210 f (thou lest C), 3430 f (ye lyst D), 3513 f (ye lyst D), 3688 f (ye lest D), 3759 f (ye lyst D), 3807 f, 3889 f (ye lest D), 4172 f, 6209 f (thow leste AC, ye leste D), 7629 f (sche luste C), 8074 f (thow lyst A), 8140 f.

Rhyme words.—*wyste pret. subj.* 1, 2 *sg.* (679, 3210), *er ye wiste* (2268), *tryste, triste inf.* (693, 3101, 3759, 7629, 8074), *truste, triste pres. ind.* 1 *sg.* (1334, 3210, 3430), *geste n.* (2195), *Alceste* (8140), *beste def. adj. sg.* (1022, 2534, 3513, 3688, 3889, 4172), *the worthieste*, (1843), *at, to, for reste* (1843, 2030, 3807, 3889), *keste pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (1334), *brest[e] (-e B) pret. subj.* 3 *sg.* (2195).

(c) Elision.

For examples of elision before a vowel, cf. 31, 44, 597, 1034, 1114, 1472 B, 1673, 1941, 2104, 2237, 2297, 2721, 2798, 3217, 3637, 3768, 3782, 4066, 4360, 4735 (remembre I), 6223, 6779, 6787, 7321 (deliuere it), 7500, 7724, 7797, 8113.

For examples of elision before pronouns beginning with *h*, cf. 45, 558, 695, 1248, 2898, 3387, 4227, 5124, 6703, 7490; *happe how happè may*, 7159 (*happen how happyn may D*).

Note 1.—In cases of elision *-e* is sometimes omitted in writing. Thus,—(a) before vowels,—*sey*, 1004 † C (*seyth A*, *syth B*, *seith D*); *com*, 2519 (*-e C*, *-e D* (?)); *prey*, 3388 (*-e BC*, *prayeth † inv. D*); *set*, 3674 (*sette B*, *set* (not) *D*); *lat*, 4088 (*B †*, *let C*); *worth*, 5409 (*wurth D*, *wurthe † C*); *dryf*, 5572 (*-ue BD*); *glad*, 6317 (*-e CD*); *tak*, 7452 (*-e CD*);—(b) before *hym*,—*war*, 1953 (*-e D*); *lat*, 2692 (*let C*, *lete D*); *bryng*, 2693 (*-e B*). There are no good cases of hiatus: *who-so axē † hym*, 7587 C (*-eth A*, *-ed B*, *-ed him wher[of] D*), and *the deucl spedē hym*, 5292 A (*hauē C*, *spede B*; *D †*) should be corrected; *so god me sendē hele*, 3163, is regular.

Note 2.—Before a vowel or *h* it is not always possible to determine whether *lyst* (ind.) or *lyste* (subj.) should be read: cf. *e.g.*, 119, 398, 857, 1379, 2860, 4018, 4589, 8133, where *A* has *lyst*, *list*, with 3528, 4134, 5291, 6062, 6685, 8133, where *A* has *lyste*.

IV. Contracted forms (all persons).

Monosyllabic (contracted) forms are seen in *se*, *see*, and *sle*. Thus,—1st Pers., *se ich neue[r]* Ioues face, 5999, cf. 3652 f, 7748; 2nd Pers., *I wol now that thow se*, 990 f, cf. 6769; 3rd Pers., *god yow see*, 1170 f (*se CD*); *though he se a man*, 1457 (9-syl. in *A*); *yf this man sle here hym self*, 1544 (*sla B*, *herē sle hym D*). Cf. § 111, III, note 2.

§ 111. Exceptions to § 110.

I. First Person.

But if that I consentē that it so be, 413 (*consentē that it be BC*, *if [that] I consent that hit so be D*).

II. Second Person.

the best is that thow telle me, 830 (*telle CD*).

whether thow thy[n]kē zet vpon, 7098 B (*thynkē zit [vp]on C*, *thinkist yet vpon D*, *whe[the]r yet thou thenke vpon A*).

III. Third Person.

helpē me (in *God helpē me so, as helpē me god*, and similar phrases), 1449 (-p BC), 1675 (-p D), 2089 (-p D), 2211 (-p D) 2298 (-p CD), 2315 (-p BC^cD), 2367 (-p BD), 2397 (-p BCD), 4408 (C †), 5275 (-p B), 6194 (-p BC), 6256 (-p B)¹, 6726 (-p BC), 6849 (-p B), 7340 (-p B), 7362.²

help me (in *God help me so*, etc.), 1218 (-ē B, help † y D), 1267 (-ē me C †), 3706 (-ē C), 4463 (-ē CD), 6516 (-ē BCD), 6755 (-ē D).³

help god, 3900 (-ē B, om. † D).

God yelde the, 1048 (zeld D).

sende yow, 1489 (-d D; C †).

yf the lyke than, 2101 (lestē B, lystē C, if thou list D); cf. 3227 † D.

Ioues . . . yeuē me sorwe, 2694 (gif C); Ioues yeuē the sorwe, 7888; god yeuē youre, 4407 (zif C, zeuē zow † D); I bidde god so yeuē yow, 4312 ([so] C)⁴; preye I god so yeuē yow, 7437 (zeuē zou C, to † yeuē you *inf.* D)⁵, 7774 (zeuē zow C); cf. 33 † D.

yf it comē to, 4067 (-ēth B).⁶

loue . . . bynd this acord, 4592 (*line om.* E).

ne trust no wyght, 5053 (-ē B; C †).

wo worth that day, 5425 AB (-ē D); cf. 1429-32 (*four cases*); cf. 5409 † C.

Venus lat me, 6323 (let CD).

yf she writē thow, 7662 (writē D, zif † that sche writē C).⁷

Note 1.—*Red* seems to be imperative in “*Hesē worthi dedes who-so list hem here Red Dares*,” 8133-4 (redē D).—In several passages it is impossible to determine with certainty whether *lestē* (*lystē*), subjunctive, or *lest* (*lyst*), indicative, is to be read: cf. for example, 686, 1407, 1820, 2245, 2865, 2978, 3215, 3888, 4104, 5245, 6020, 6295, 7360, 7751, 7780; see § 95, p. 221.

Note 2.—In *If harm(e) agree me*, 409 (agre CD), *agree* has of course but two syllables.

§ 112. The Plural of the present Subjunctive of both strong and weak verbs ends in *-en*, *-e* for all persons (Child, § 56, *c*; ten Brink, §§ 184, 188). Thus,—

I. First Person :

though we comen in, 6184 (-yn C) (pret. ?).

¹ D ridiculously reads *Ioue heuen quene*.

² In A insert [*here*].

³ Supply [*the*] in C.

⁴ *so* later hand in D.

⁵ In B supply [*I*]; in C, [*ri:zif*].

⁶ B has *of †* for *if*.

⁷ Read *soo[ne]* in D.

whil we dwellen there, 6186 (-e CD, dwelten A).

though that we . . . apeyre, 1414 f (if that B; C (?)) (: faire *adv.*).

we our tales holde, 2017 f (-d D) (: tolde *ind.* 1 *sg.*).

turne we, 2794 (torne B); torne we, 3061 (turne CD)¹, 4425 (turne CD).

lest we . . . reue, 2807 (byreue BD, be- C) (: leue *n.*).

it is tyme that we wende, 3050 f (: ende *n.* : blynde, blende *cœcare*).

yf we . . . hye, 6852 f (: vilonye).

er that we . . . wende, 7254 f (wynde C) (: shende *inf.* : ende *n.*);
cf. 2961 † f D.

but that we shape vs, 5935 (D †).

II. Second Person :

though . . . by-hete, 539 f (be- CD) (: swete *voc.*).

but . . . telle what, 1216 (-e vs BC; D (?)).

though that ye sterue, 1572.²

so ye endite, 2247 f (: write *inf.*).

that ye . . . honge, 2327 f (-g D) (: longe *adv.*).

he wolę . . . that ye brynge, 2728 f (bring CD) (: rekenyng :
taryng).

er that ye wende, 2961 f (winde C, wende † 1 *pl.* D) (: ende *n.*);

yf that ye wende, 6157 f (: rende *inf.* : shende *inf.*).

digne me, 2981 (deigne (?)) B, digne (?) C, deigne D †).

whil that ye me serue, 3016 f (: deserue 2 *pl. subj. or ind.*). [Ind. ?]

so that . . . greue, 3846 f (: at preue).

what so ye me comaunde, 5956 f (: demaunde *n.*).

yf that ye drecche, 6108 f (: wrecche *n.* : recche *inf.*).

er that . . . cause, 6110 (-yn D; *n.* † C).

er ye . . . fynde, 6313 f (: vnkynde *pred. adj.*)³

tyme is that ye ryse, 6349 (C †) (: suffice *inf.*).

yf ye vouche sauf, 7285 (*line om.* C).

lest [that] ye . . . breke, 7395 f (*om.* † B; C †; lest that, etc.,
D) (: speke *inf.*).

that . . . ye not holde, 7702 f (-d B, vnfolde C^e †) (: byholde *inf.*
: colde *adj. pl.*).

graunte it that ye . . . rewe, 7727 f (: trewe *pred. adj. sg.*).

that . . . ye . . . recomforte, 7758 f (-con- C) (: comporte *inf.* :
desporte *inf.*).

that ye ne take, 7988 f (B †) (: make *inf.*).

¹ Supply [to] in B.

² Supply [that] in CD.

³ C has *3if* † for *er*.

yf . . . seche, 8218 f (: speche *n.*).

For instances of *-e*, elided before a vowel, cf. 1385, 1405, 1472 C^c, 1476, 3771, 3942, 4760, 4987, 5460, 6103, 6608. For *-e*, elided before *hym*, see *make hym*, 1445 (mak B); *lat hym*, 1408 B (*-e* C, lete D, late † *sg.* A); *suffre hym* (*-fere* C), 3723 (cf. 3705). But *-e* is of course preserved in,—loke that ye *thonkë humbely*, 2804 (*-en*, B, *-[ë]* D, thankë C).

III. Third person :

though wrecches on it crien, 1950 f (cryzen C) (: eyen *n. pl.* : dryen *inf.*).

though women dreden with, 3164 B (*-in* C, *-e* AD).¹

how-so it be that . . . delite, 1341 f (: a lyte : endite *inf.*).

though . . . to-rende, 1875 f (vnrende † D) (: ende *n.*).

lest more folk aryse, 4032 f (: wyse *pred. adj. pl.*).

who wot . . . what they signifie, 6734 f (: glotonye).

er that thei fynde, 7496 (ffynden D).

but men lye, 7891 f (: iupartie : dye *inf.*).

although they holde hem, 4235 AC (hold B).

that they ne fynde in, 4861 (*-yn* C).

IV. Contracted forms :

fle we, 2649 (flee B, fle [we] D).

whan ye . . . se, 7765 f (see D).

V. Apocope of *-e* :

And coyë (*inf.*) (koy D) hem they (that they D) sey noon harm of me, 1886 (seyë B, seyn † *ind. 3 pl.* C).

Cf. letë † we her, 2017 D (*inv.* ABC); letë † we, 3060 D (*inv.* ABC); ne stond † we, 3405 f D (*inv.* ABC).

§ 113. The Preterite Subjunctive Singular of Strong Verbs ends in *-e* for all persons. The Preterite Subjunctive Singular of Weak Verbs shows in the first and third persons the endings *-de*, *-te*, *-ede*, *-ed* (cf. Child, § 56; ten Brink, § 195). For the indicative form *-est* in subjunctive constructions in the second person singular of weak preterites, see § 106, above.

I. Strong Verbs.

(a) First Person :

¹ A erroneously reads *womman* for *wommen*.

yf that I so withstode, 5214 f (: for the townes goode).

were, 4053, 4991 f (wer D) (: there); -e, 526, 529, etc.; -e here
(*poss. pl.*), 51 (-e † their D); nere I, 1494 (ner D).

(b) Second Person :

er thow me slowe, 5168 (slewe B, slouȝ D, slow † 3 sg. C).

wolde neuereȝ god but thow were, 936 ; cf. 521.

(c) Third Person :

were, 226 f, 723 f (where C), 765 f, 2098 f, 3302 f, 3367 f, 3409 f
(there † D), 3413 f (there † D), 3949 f, 3984 f, 4181 f, 5357 f
(wer D), 6022 f (-ee- B, wer D), 7240 f (wer D), 7720 f (wer
D), 7944 f (-ee- B), 7965 f ; were (*before consonants*), 528 (-e
BCD), 1027 (ware B, were (?) D), 1749 † D (were C, was
a A, as † a B), 2715 (D †), 3379 (-e CD), 3416 (B ?), 4011 †
A (-e BCD), 4332, 4359 (-e † D), cf. 7847 BCD ; -e, 608 (C †),
836 (-e C), 860 (wer D)¹, 3359 (wer B)², 4353 (-e † C (?)),
6236 (-e † C), etc. ; -e he, 2705 (-e it C)³ : -e hym, 3433 (wer
D, -e † he C) ; -e here (*poss. sg.*), 1777 (-ë D)⁴ ; -e here (*hic*),
143 C (-e a D ; A ? B ?) ; -e honour, 1790⁵ ; were † and,
5070 A (-e BCD).—nere, 4184 f (were BC ; D †), 6011 (ner
D †) ; -e, 2128 (were A), 2495, 2559 (*ne were* C, ner D), 6285
ner D) ; -e he, 2929 (ner B) ; -e his, 6437 (ner D).

Rhyme words.—a-ferre (226), fere, feere *n. fear* (723, 765, 3302, 3413, 3984
4181, 6022, 7965), ere, eere (723, 765, 3302, 3409, 3949), gere *n.* (2098),
tere *n.* (7240, 7944), nere *subj.* 3 *sg.* (4181), there (2098, 3367, 3413,
5357, 6022, 7240, 7720), where (5357), stere *inf.* (226, dere † A).

me were leuere dye Than she . . . vnderstode, 1028 f (: sownen
ynto gode) ; though that she stode, 1032 (stod C).⁶

it sat[e] me, 1202 (-e BD) ;⁷ although . . . sat among, 5359
(-e BD).

who so that me yaue, 2062 f (: haue *ind.* 1 *sg.* : saue *subj.* 3 *sg.*).

spake, 2204 B (*ind. pl.* A, his wordis † CD).

al-though he lay[e] softe, 3284 (?); as thow he leye, 6575 †
C ; as though . . . lay on, 772 (-e C) ; lay in (*apodosis*), 6222
(leye C, were † D).

al come it, 3310 (-ë late D †).

lest . . . fille, 320 (fel C, fil D).⁸

yf she toke it, 3811 (that . . . toke B, that . . . tok C, ellis †
she toke D).

¹ 9-syl. verse in ABC (unless one reads *werë it*) ; *wer it* in D = *wer't*.

² In D read *were at [the] ful.*

³ In D read [*an*] *hangid.*

⁴ But read *were her em(e) n[e w]old[e]* in D.

⁵ In C supply [*with*].

⁶ Supply [*that*] in C.

⁷ Supply [*a*] in AB.

⁸ Supply [*self*] in D.

yf that loue . . . late his, 4604 (lete B, let C; D †).
 er that . . . spak out, 3385 (-e B, speke † *pres.* C, spakë †
 out D).
 or . . . slow I, 5168 † C (2 *sg.* ABC).

(d) Exceptions:

First Person: nerę but (*apodosis*), 6313 (werę C, ner D).

Third Person: werę sent, 105 (war B, was D); werę wyst, 321,
 615, 6222 (wer D); werę there, 1223 A (is BCD), 3411 (wer
 B, was C); werę leuere, leuest, 1274, 1437, 5227 (C (?), wer
 D)¹; werę to, 1440, 3479 (-e † C); werę † worthi, 2784 C (was
 ABD); werę brought, 3149 (D †); werę my, me, 3217,
 4943 (wer D); werę right, 3840 (C?); werę lost, 4606 (-e
 BCE); werę wel, 5099 (wer D); werę rathere, 5650 (wer D);
 werę fals, 5656; werę routhe, 6244; werę † folye, 6626 C
 (was ABD).—nerę no, 5649 (ner B, wer D).

II. Weak Verbs.

(a) First Conjugation (cf. § 99):

as his herte bledde, 4366 f (bledde C) (: cledde *vestivit* : spedde
ind. 3 *sg.*).

whom he brought[e] there, 3428 (-e C, broght D).

bysought on, 1st pers., 769 (besouthe C).

al dredde I, 1959 (dredde BC, dred D).²

as . . . dwelled here (*hic*), 3rd pers., 121 (-ede C, -yd[ë] al † D);
 duelled † ther, 3rd pers., 7242 D (-eth AB, -yn † C).

til that he herde, 2036 (-[e] D).³

though that she . . . herde, 1032 f (-d D) (: answered *ind.* 3 *sg.*,
 -swerde BC, -sward D).⁴

lyste, see § 99.

yf that he mente, 1750 (-t † but D, myzte † C); cf. 5011 f (?).

vs nedede for, 6006 (-ed BD, -ith † not C).

I rought[e] not, 1032 (-e BC),⁵ 2513 (-zte C, roght[e] D); nought
 rought[ë] || I, 4944 (-e C, -t D). Cf. § 145, III.

yf I . . . sente, 2532 f (-t CD) (: consente *inf.* : entente *n.*).

that . . . shente, 3rd pers., 1442 f (-t CD) (: assente *inf.*); yf
 here whiel stynte, 848 (-t D, styntyn † C).

were it thyng that me thoughte vnsittyng, 1392 (-t B, -ë † C,
 thinkith † D).

if I it tolde, 1314 (-d D); cf. 767 BCD; who-so tales tolde,

¹ Dele (*be*) in D.

³ In D supply [*that*].

² In C supply [*to*].

⁴ In C supply [*that*].

⁵ In C supply [*that*].

3644 f BC (-d D, tolle † A) (: colde *inf.* : holde *inf.*); she told here-self, 2716 (-e C, told † hym D).

wolde I that he twyste, 4611 f (-t C) (: lyste *pret. subj.* 3 *sg.* : wyste *pret. subj.* 3 *sg.*).¹

yf that ych . . . wende, 6312 f (: defende *subj.* 3 *sg.* : entende *ind.* 1 *sg.*); yf I wend[e], 5581 f (-e BCD) (: despende *inf.* : pretende *inf.*); though . . . wende, 3rd pers., 227 (-[e] *ind.* † D).

er she wente, 2716 f (-t C, stent † D) (: assente *inf.*); that . . . ne wente, 2739 (wend[e] D †); cf. 4832 f (-t D).

(b) Second Conjugation (cf. § 101):

al lakkede here, 522 (-ed B, -id D).

al . . . made it, 3rd pers., 2929.

although . . . pleyde, 3rd pers., 1006 f (-d D, -ede C) (: Criseyde : seyde *ind.* 3 *sg.*).

put out, 3rd pers., 3810 (putte BC).

(c) Third Conjugation (cf. § 102):

hadde, 1st and 3rd pers., 3770 (-[de] D, had for B; C †), 4998 BC (-[de] D, -de A), 7296 (-[de] D), 7900 (hadd ymade B, had ymade D)²; cf. 6590 † D, 8047 † C; hadde, 1628 (had D), 2594 (had D), cf. 3117, 5145, 5245, 6419, 6590, 6646 A, 7296, 8047, 8128 A; had I, 7101 (-de B, -dē † I C); hadde his, 3496 (had † myght D), 7548 (had D); had herd, 7086 (-de B, hade C (?)); haddē had, 227 (-[dē] had (?)) BD, -de had C).—yf I ne haddē spoken, 5895 (nadde i-spoken B, ne had[dē] spoken D); I ne haddē trowed, 7099 (madde ytrowed B, that I ne haddē trowid C, I me haddē trowed D); I ne hadde y-brought, 4758 (ne haddē brought B, ne had † her broght D); ne hadde I, 4052 (nad I CD), 4161 (nade I BE, naddi C).³

though I lyuēde, 6242 (-ed BD, leuēde C).

what wyght that it with-seyde, 4877 f (: Criseyde : preyede *ind.* or *subj.* 3 *sg.*); lest I seyde, 2133 (seyd D); yf he seyde, 3420 (-[e] D).⁴

(d) Strong verbs with weak preterites (cf. § 103):

er that I deyeēde, 460 f (dyēde B, deyd D) (: seyde *ind.* 3 *sg.* : Criseyde); lest he . . . deyde, 5091 f (dyed B, died D, deyeēde

¹ A has *it wyste †* for *twyste*.

² Doubtful case. Impossible to decide between *haddē mad* and *hadde ymad*. Similar cases are 6646, 8128; cf. also 4758, 5895, 7099.

³ In C supply [my].

⁴ In A read *there[of]*.

C) (: seyde *subj.* 3 *sg.* : deyde (dyed B, deyede C, deyed D) *ind.* 3 *sg.*); whanne he deyde, 5330 f (deyed BD, deyede C) (: Criseyde).

how sore that hym smerte, 5848 f (-t C) (: herte).

it semed as he wepte, 2906 (-t CD, vepte B).

(e) Romance verbs with syncopated preterites (cf. § 104) :

al cost it, 6801 (-e CD).

(f) Other Romance verbs :

cessede she (*apodosis*), 849 (cessed B, sesed C, sesid D †); cesid †
the, 3rd *pers.*, 2473 D.

lest any wight devynid † or, 3300 D (*inf.* ABC).

I pose a woman grauntede me, 3152 C (graunte AB, -ith D).

as though I labourde me, 5671 AB (-borede D).

but yf . . . passed oure, 3rd *pers.*, 4109 A (-id C, passe † D).

(g) Exceptions :

and (=if) it hadde ben, 125 (had D).

though he . . . hadde poured, 299 (hade C, had D); hadde nedde,
886 (had D).¹

who-so hadde with hym ben, 1276 (had D).²

(yf that I) . . . had loued, 1501 (hadde BC).

(wolde . . . Ioue) . . . That I the hadde where, 4998 (haddē BC, -[dē] D); and (=if) ich hadde swych, 5727 (had D).

lest . . . seyde, 3rd *pers.*, 4829 † B. Cf. nedede (*a*, above).

For *lyste*, see § 99.

§ 114. The Plural of the Preterite Subjunctive of both strong and weak verbs ends, like that of the present, in, -en, -e for all persons (cf. Child, § 56, c; ten Brink, § 195).

that ye dredden this, 1452 (-yn D; dreden B, drede C).

though we comen in, 6184 (-yn C) (pres. ?).

while we dwelten there, 6186 (dwellen B, dwelle C, duelle D).

lest . . . men wende, 489 f (: brende *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*).

though al the town behelde, 1463 f (-d D) (: selde *adv.*).

though alle here foos it herde, 2513 f (-d D) (: with yerde).

(god forbode) . . . that ye . . . wroughte, 3604 f (-t C, -tyn D)
(: thoughte *ind.* 3 *pl.*).

to aske . . . yf that they blythe were, 4524 f (: enquere *inf.* : fere

¹ Perhaps indicative.

² In C *haddē* or 9- syl. ; but read *this day* for *yesterday* and *adde* is preserved.

n.); lest this tales . . . were, 5333 f (: fere *n.*); assayinge how here speres were whette, 8123 (-en B, [-e] D); Were hise nayles poynted neuere so sharpe, 2119.¹

though 3e . . . dreynte, 5592 f B (-t D, drenche † A, drenk † C) (: pleynte *n.* AB, pleynt CD).

he dorste not ye dwelte lengere, 7273 (-[e] B, duelle no C, dwelle † there *inf.* C).

(if thei) . . . seyde hire (*poss. pl.*), 1126 (seying † D).

if [that] thei ferd in, 1124 (-e B, fer † with D).²

if . . . ye it toke, 1314 (told † B).

were hanged, 1 *pl.*, 1438; were (*before vowels*), 2 *pl.*, 4011 (-e bete C), 6309 (wer D).

hadde, 3 *pl.*, 4230,³ 4232, 5638 (had D).⁴

wyst he that ye ferde, 5580. [Indic. †]

though al this town criede, 5247 (cryed BCD).

that we tok oure leue, 6843 (-e BCD).

who that ther come, 7478.

Exceptions :

al seyde men soth, 3143 (seyd B, seid as D, seidyn as C).

Note.—In *lest it folk aspied*, 6050 f (espied D, asprie † A, aspiede † *sg.* C), we should read *aspyde* (: bytyde *pres. subj.* 3 *sg.* : syde *n.*). In 1438 (see above), *were honged* may be regarded as a case either of apocope or of elision. In 4065 D *were* should be *be* (*so* AB, ben Cc); in 4358 † C, *after 3e were go* should be *after that 3e go*.

§ 115. The Imperative second person Singular of Weak Verbs in the *Troilus* usually follows the Anglo-Saxon inflections : that is, it shows -e (A.S. -a) in the Second and Third Conjugations, and in the First Conjugation either ends in -e (A.S. -e) or has no ending, according as the stem-syllable was originally short or long (cf. Child, § 58; ten Brink, § 189).

In the following lists the examples given occur *before consonants* in the places cited, unless the contrary is indicated. An accompanying *thou*, *so*, or *as* is noted. As to the possibility that the construction with a preceding *thou* is subjunctive, see below, V, note, and § 117, II.

¹ Either *Werē his* or 9-syl.

² Supply [that] in A, as indicated. BD have *that*. C is cut out here.

³ Read a[l]s[o] in C.

⁴ Read swo[rrn] in A.

I. First Conjugation,—(a) verbs with stem originally short :

leye (A.S. lege), 2079 f (lay C, ley D) (: seye *inf.*), 2602 f (ley D) (: pleye *inf.* : to seye).

telle (A.S. tele), tel[le] which, 3254 (tel me CD)¹; telle, 595. But,—telle, 681 (tel? D), 693 (tel BC, *om.* † D), 862 (tel C, tellē † me D), 864 (tel C, teH D), 2479 (tel B, tellē † D), 3210 (tel C, tellē † if D); cf. 765, 1010, 2514, 5146, 6693²; tel me, 721, 5055 (telle C, teH[ē] † D), 5301 (-H D); tel thi, 696; tel thou, 2696 CD (teH † yow A, tel † how B).

lette (A.S. lete), thow me nought ne lette, 3567 (that † thou ne lette *subj.* D) (: fette *pret. ind.* 2 *sg.* : shette *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*).

selle (A.S. sele), -e, 4304 (so † selle C).

Note.—For the imperatives of *bidden*, *lyen*, see V. *Heve* (A. S. hefe) occurs only with elided -e (7522).

II. First Conjugation,—(b) verbs with stem originally long :

bryng (A.S. bring), 5744 (-(e) BD).

hyd (A.S. hýd), h. not, 595 (-(e) BD); so hyd it, 613 (-(e) BCD).

But,—Be diligent and trewe and ay wel *hide*, 950 f (: tyde *n.* : abyde *inf.*).

kep (A.S. cép), 3174 (-(e) BD); k. hire (*eam*), 3107 (-(e) BC, so † help D); so kep alwey, 3108 C (*sauē* ABD).³

kys (A.S. cys), 8154 (-(se) BD).

kyth (A.S. cýð), 5200 (-(e) CD, right † B); kygh now, 5281 (right † B, kith D, kith (k)now(e) C).

lef, leef (A. S. léf); leef, 7881 (lef C, lef(e) BD); lef al, 5514 (leef B, leu(e) C, leueth *pl.* D †).⁴ But,—lev(e), 5194 (lef C), 2585 † D (lat AB, let C); leu(e), 2093.

lef (A.S. lýf, léf), 6741 (leu(e) BCD). But,—bileu(e), 2587 (beleuē † and C); so leu(e) it, 7322 (len(e) † B).

red (A.S. réd), 8134 (-(e) D).⁵

send (A.S. send), send(e) me, 1614 (-d B, send[ē] me D).⁶ But,—thow me grace sende, 3547 (synde C) (: ende *n.* : wende *inf.*).

thynk, think (A.S. þenc); thynk, 937 (-(e) BC, thenk D); thenk, (i.) 1436 (thynk(e) B, thynkyth † C), 3130 (thynk B, think C),⁷ 5128

¹ Tel (Telle G) which (-e G) thou wylt of euerychone AB (the Cp. collation has no note on this line); Tel me, etc. CD. If we read tel[lē] in ABG and tel in CD, all five MSS. have 9-syl. verses. *Tel* is unmetrical in AB; tel[lē] in CD would make a full verse. ² In 6693, *telle* might be taken for an infinitive.

³ No so in AB.

⁴ In A read *wel[r]k*.

⁵ Might be construed as subjunctive. If imperative, the verb may be either singular or plural.

⁶ But insert [*swich*] in D and read *send(e)*.

⁷ Supply [*what*] in D.

(-e) D, thynk(e) BC), cf. 2595, 3568, 4128, 5279, 5759, 7518 (thynkith † C); thenk, (ii.) 890 (thynk B, thyng C), 1053, cf. 5079, 5262, 5270; thenk here (*hic*), 2465 (thynk(e) C).

werk (A.S. wyre), (i.) 2078 (work D).¹

trow (A.S. tréow), trow(e), 6209 (-e *pl.* B, -eþ *pl.* D).²

Note.—For *dred(e)*, imperative of *dreden* (weak in Chaucer), see 3550 (*dred* C), 6719 (*dred* C).

III. Second Conjugation :

bridle (A.S. ge-brídla), bridle alwey, 4477 (brydele C, bridel D).

calle (A.S. cealla), -e, 3244 (cal CD);³ -e hym, 3243 (cal CD, cal † hem B).

glade (A.S. glada), 870 (-dde BC).

herkene, herke (A.S. heorcna, hercna); herkene (*or* herkene) for, 5691 (-enyth † *pl.* D); herkene it, 658 (-en B, herkenyt it *pl.* C, herkenith it *pl.* D); herkene of, 5515 (-yn † with D, werkene † C). herke, 602 (-[e] D, herkene *or* -ene C), 624 (-[e] D, -ene *or* -ene C), 1023 (-[e] BD).

loke (A.S. lóca), 946 (-oo- B, loke D †); -e, 862, 2405 (se † thes D).

loue (A.S. lufa), -e, 807; -e hire (*eam*), 679, 5278; loue || for, 1481; -e me, 6935.

make (A.S. maca), 2102 (-e thow B, thow make D); so make vs, 8231 (mak B, or take † D); make the, 3545 (mak C); -e no, 5112 (mak C); -e redy thou, 5870 AD (mak B).⁴

pulle (A. S. pulla), -e, 958 (pul D, fellë † it C).

Note.—For the imperative of *rewen* (a weak verb in Chaucer), see § 117, II.

IV. Third Conjugation :

fecche (A.S. feta, see *Siev.*, § 416, *n.* 9), 6685 f (feche CD) (: wrecche *n.*).

folwe (A.S. folga), -ewe me, 3581 (-owe B, -ow D, folwe C); folwe alwey, 4969 (-ow B, -owe D).

V. Exceptions :

To I. See under *telle*, above, and compare,—

byd (A.S. bide), byd for, 3184; but,—bidde hym, 5571 (bid BC).

ly (A.S. lige), ly stille, 2038 (li BC); but,—lye right, 2604 (ly C, be † D).

set (A.S. sete), set the, 5284 (sett D); set a cas (=put case, suppose), 1814 (sette C, set y *inul.* D †).⁵

¹ In C read *for-thy* for *for thyn*; in D supply [*shal*].

² In AC change *þow* (*þou*) to *yow* and *trouē* becomes *pl.*

³ Supply [*thal*] in D.

⁴ In D read *my ber[e]* for *me her † ber*.

⁵ In A read *y[wys]*.

To II. See under *hyt*, *send*, *throw(e)*, above, and compare,—

quenche (A.S. *á-cwenc*), thou . . . quenche, 5173 f (-ch D) (: *drenche inf.*)

so spede it, 2147 (-ë † it C, -e D †).

wende (A. S. *wend*), thow wende, 5308 (: *blende cæcare* : *sende inf.*).

To III. See under *loue*, *make*, above, and compare,—

put (from A.S. *potian*?) not, 783; put thyn, 5781 (C †).

To IV. *haue* (A.S. *hafa*), 831, 1608¹, 3183, 3262, 5282 (D †); -e al, 3173 (-ë † al D); -e here (*hic*), 1054 (D †), 1409 † A, 2405, 3953 (†), 7521.

seye (A.S. *saga*), 925 (*sey* BCD); *sey*, 928 (-e B), 2496, 2603 (-e B), 2605 (-[ë] † C). [Var. C *say*, *sei*.]

Note.—With regard to the exceptions above noticed, it should be observed that forms like *dème*, *hyre*, *telle*, *cwell* occur in Late West Saxon, and forms like *ner*, *sel*, etc., in Northumbrian (Sievers, § 410, *n.* 3). In phrases like *thou sende*, *thou wende*, one is tempted to regard the verb as subjunctive (cf. § 117, II). *Fellë it*, 958 C, is an error for *pulle it*.

VI. Verbs of Germanic origin, but not found in Anglo-Saxon :

beblotte, 2112.²

iompre ek, 2122 (*iumpere* C).

trust (O.N. *treysta*, *inv.* *treyst*), *ne trust no*, 5053 (-e) B)³; *thow trust to*, 6773 (-ë me CD).⁴

vnneste, 4967 f (-t D, *wonest* † C) (: *the wofulleste* : *breste inf.*).

§ 116. The Imperative second person Singular of Verbs of Latin or Romance derivation ends in the *Troilus* in -e (cf. ten Brink, § 189).

In the following lists an accompanying *thou*, *so*, or *as* is noted (cf. § 118, p. 280).

I. Before consonants or in rhyme :

scorene, 576 (-e me CD).

repreue, 669 (*reproue* † *thow* D).

assure, 680 f (-eure B; *assure* † *ind.* 1 *sg.* D) (: *endure ind.* 2 *pl.*).

delite, 704 (A †).

suffre, 755 (-fere C, *lete* † D), cf. 947.

thow hym gyde, 1162 f (: *by syde*).

thow . . . *purueye*, 1511 f (-vey D) (: *deye ind.* 1 *sg.*).

eschuwe, 2103 f (-ue B; *that thou eschewe subj.* CD) (: *saluwe inf.*).

¹ In A read [*vp*]om, thus avoiding hiatus.

² Supply [*ek*] in C, [*thy*] in D.

³ Perhaps 3 *sg. subj.*

⁴ No *thou* in BCD.

But,—escheweþ thou, 634 (esheweþ B, -chew D, excuseþ † C).
 compleyne, 2584 f (: peyne *n.*).
 thow me enspire, 3554 f (thou me en- D, thou me this nyzt enspire C)
 (: desire *inf.* : in the fyre).
 delyuere, 5177 (-er D; C?).
 deuyne, 5251.
 receyue, 5872.
 thow dispone, 6663 f (: to done).
 offre, 6669 (-fere C).
 thow nenuye, 8152 f (thou † enuye D) (: dye *subj.* 3 *sg.* : poesyel).

II. Before vowels :

persèuere in, 951.
 plaunte, 957.
 accepte, 1614 (D?).
 rehearse, 2114.
 saue, 3108 (so save D, so kep † C).
 departe, 3246 (-ë † it D).¹
 parfome, 3259 (-forne BC, -fourme D).²
 prey, 3560 (prey [al] C).
 gide, 6685 (guide D, gyde † *pl.* C).
 defende, 8230.

III. Before *h* :

pray hym, 2543 (prey C, preye B).
 distreyne here (poss. *sg.*), 6959.
 delýuere here (acc.), 8106 (-er BD).

IV. Apocope :

prey || now, 2584 (-e B, pray D, preye C) ; cf. II., III.

§ 117. The Imperative second person Singular of Strong Verbs has in the *Troilus*, as in Anglo-Saxon, no *-e* (Child, § 18, b ; ten Brink, § 189).

An accompanying *thou*, *so*, or *as* is noted (cf. § 118, p. 280).

I. Regular :

abyd, (i.) 2070 (-(e) D ; quod † C), 2075 (-(e) D, abit C), 2604 † C.
 (ii.) 2070 AB (-(e) C, -(e) D) (Cf. *byd(e)*, under II, below.)
 beet, (i.) 925 (bet(e) CD).
 com, (i.) 5164 (-(e) CD). But,—com(e), 7501.
 dryf, (ii.) 6722 (-u(e) BD).

¹ But supply [so] in D, and read *departe*.

² Read *most[è] nede* in ABCD.

farwel,¹ 1053 (-e) D; farewel, 1033, 2609 (far C), 3703 (far C), 4367 (pl. ?) (far BCD), 6916 (far C), cf. 6390, 7539; far(e) now wel, 5320 (far C); far(e), 878, 2084 (do † A).

gnaw, (i.) 509 (-e) B, gnow(e) D.

help, (i.) 10 (-e) D, 2093 (-e) B, 5252 (-e) BD; so help † her, 3107 D (kep A, kepe BC); thow help(e) me, 6 (thow help B); helpē me god, 2211 (*perh. subj. 3 sg.*) (help D, helpē god *subj. C*).

Note.—The imperative *help* in some cases become almost a mere interjection (see 533, 1007, 3566, 3573, 5812); but lines like 1047, 3570, 3573, allow us to see the original construction (cf. *helpē, subst.*, p. 17, *noté*). In 3900 we perhaps have a *subj. 3 sg.*

hold, (i.) 2105 (D †), 4311 (-e) D, -e 3ow(?) C, 5782 (-e) D; so hold, 5117 (-e) BD, held C. (ii.) 2124; hold here (*acc.*), 5194 (-e) D.

But,—hold(e), 2619 (-d CD), 4474 (-d BC).

lat, (i.) 616 (-e) D, 701, 760, 2038 (-e) D, (-e) A, 2585 (leve † D), 5199 (lett D), 5759 AB (let D)²; cf. 856, 1021, 2137, 2141, 2486, 2515, 2607, 5061, 5112, 5283, 5313, 7644. [Var. CD let; D let(e).] (ii.) 702 (let(e) D; C †); cf. 4968, 6752, 6756, 6844, 6845, 7492; lat here (*acc.*), 5193 (let(e) D)³ (cf. 5249 C, 5500, 6722).

But,—lat(e), 3255 (lat B, let CD), 3582 (lat BC, let(e) D); cf. 2038 A, 3262; lat(e) hym, 2562 (?) (lat B, let C, let(e) D).

Note.—How completely the adhortative first person plural and the periphrasis with *lat* had become synonymous may be seen from such passages as the following:

But *fle we* now prolixite best is

For loue of God and *lat vs* faste go. . .

And *late vs* of here saluynges pace, 2649-50, 2653, (lat . . . let C, let(e) . . . let D).

So *go we* seen the paleys of Criseyde

For syn we yet may haue nomore feste

So *lat vs seen* here paleys at the leste, 6886-88 (As go B, As goo D, Go C; Yett let(e) ys goo se D). Compare also,—

Now *late here slepe* and *we* oure tales holde, 2107 (lat BC; Now lete we her slepe & forth our talis hold D).

Now *late hem rede* and *turne we* a-noon, 2794 (lat B, let(e) D).

Now *late here wende vn* to here owne place

And *torne we* to Troylus a-yen, 3060-1 (lat B, let C, Now let(e) we her wend to, etc. D); cf. 1772-3.

In all these cases, as well as those in which Chaucer addresses his audience, we should probably regard the *lat* as imperative plural (see 1079, 4515).

ren, (i.) 7019 (ren(ne) BD).

ryd, (i.) 2098 (-e) BD; rid(e), 2105 (ryd C, ride D †).

¹ The variations noted concern merely *far*; the second part of this quasi-compound is written *wel*, *weth*, or *wete* (never dissyllabic). The accent is on *far* in 1033, 3703, 4367 CD, 6916, 6390 BD, 7539; on *wel* in 1053, 2609, 4367 AB, 6390 A.

² Supply [*thi*] in A.

³ Supply [*of*] in B.

rys, (i.) 6756 (-e) D, 6770 (r. † vp C, ris(e) D). (ii.) 5199 (-e) BD; cf. 5255, 5307, 6751 A. But,—rys(e), 6751 B (rys C, aris(e) † D).

se, (i.) 894, 1697 ABC (*perh. pl.*), 2405 † D, 7659.

spek, (i.) 2542 (-e) D, 2584 (-e) BCD, 3954 (-e) CD (*perh. pl.*).

stonde, (i.) 962 (-e) B.

tak, (i.) 344 (-e) BD, *om.* † C). (ii.) tak it, 4463 (-e) B, -e) D, tak now C); tak herte, 5279 (-e) BD; C †). But,—tak(e), 5514 (tak C, -eth D †), cf. 6668; tak(e), 8231 † D; tak(e) hede, 5769 (tak C †).

wassh, (i.) 5308 (wessh B, wasch C, waiss(e) D).

wep, (ii.) 7881 (-e) B, -e) CD).

worth, (ii.) 2096 (-e) C, worth thow B, worth(e) thou D).

yef, (i.) 6671 (3ef B, 3if C, yif D); y. thow, 2148 (3if BC, 3ev(e) D).¹

But,—yeu(e), 1035 (3if BC, yef D); so yeu(e), 6677 (3eu(e) BC).

II. Exceptions.

In a few cases forms in -e (sounded) occur. These cases are,—

thow breste, 6208 f (to-breste *pres. subj.* 3 *sg.* BCG Cp. John's, which is no doubt the correct reading) (: leste *subj. pres.* 2 *sg.* AC, 3 *sg.* B, 2 *pl.* D).

thow . . . rewe, 7070 f (: trewe *pred. adj. sg.*).

thow write, 2111 f (: endite *inf.* : a lyte).

In these instances it will be observed that *thow* precedes the verb, and we are perhaps justified in regarding the forms as jussive subjunctives (cf. § 115, V, note). *Thow helpe me*, 6 (thow help B) cannot well be used as an argument against this view, for apocope is frequent in the subjunctive mood (see § 111). The imperatives *rewe*, 5743 (rew C), 5838 (rew BD), and *writ(e) here* (*dat.*), 7671 (*writ(e)* (to) hire C), are indecisive, since they stand before a vowel or *h*. It should be remembered, however, that *rewen* is a weak verb in Chaucer. There are many other cases in which -e is written in the imperative singular of strong verbs, even in MS. A, but in none of these instances is the -e pronounced: see above (I.) under *com*, *far*, *help*, *hold*, *lat*, *ryd*, *rys*, *tak*, *yef*, and add,—

awak(e), 729; awak(e) he, 751 (awak B, -ë † he D).

ber(e), 6212 (ber B).

byd(e), 2604 (-d B, abyd † C, tabide † *inf.* D); byd(e), 3582 (bid B, byd C).

ches(e), 2040 (sches C).²

writ(e) here (*dat.*), 7671 (-e) (to) hire C).

¹ In C read *wit* for *will*.

² Supply [*And*] in A.

wyt(e), 2085.

Note.—For the imperatives of *bidden*, *lyen*, see § 115, V. For the imperative of *heuen*, see § 115, I, note. For the imperative of *dreden*, see § 115, II, note. *Flen* (cf. §§ 96, 103) has *fle* (4968).

§ 118. The Imperative second person Plural of verbs, strong or weak, native or naturalized, ends in the *Troilus* in *-eth*, *-ēth*, *-th*; but forms in *-e* and forms without any termination are very common (cf. Child, § 59; ten Brink, § 189).¹

Commands in the second person plural are expressed in Anglo-Saxon in three ways: (1) by the regular imperative plural in *-að*, (2) by the regular subjunctive plural in *-en*, and (3) by a form in *-e*. This last form is used only when the subject *ge* immediately follows the verb and is especially common in prohibitions, but in no construction or situation is it employed to the exclusion of the forms in *-að* and *-en*. It was doubtless originally a subjunctive, but in West Saxon it became indistinguishable from the imperative and indeed it is sometimes co-ordinated with *-að* in the same sentence (as,— *nime ge . . . ond settað*, *Cura Past.*, 345, 15; *ne fare ge né ne fyliað*, *Luc.* 17, 23)². See Sievers, § 360, Anm.; Cosijn, *Altus Gr.*, II, §§ 75, 77; Mätzner, *Engl. Gr.*, II, i, p. 138, ed. 1864; Hennicke, *Der Coniunctiv im Altenglischen*, Göttingen, 1878, pp. 11, 12; Hotz, *On the Use of the Subjunctive Mood in Anglo-Saxon and its further History in Old English*, Zürich, 1882, pp. 13-15; Fleischhauer, *Ueber den Gebrauch des Coniunctivs in Alfred's altengl. Uebersetzung von Gregor's Cura Past.*, Erlangen, 1885, pp. 4, 5, 87; Wohlfahrt, *Die Syntax des Verbums in Ælfric's Uebersetzung des Heptateuch und des Buches Hiob*, München, 1885, pp. 2, 3; Prollius, *Ueber den syntact. Gebrauch des Conj. in den Cynevulfsehen Dichtungen Elene, Juliana u. Crist*, Marburg, 1888, p. 5; P. T. Kühn, *Die Syntax des Verbums in Ælfrics Heiligenleben*, Leipzig-Reudnitz, 1889, p. 10.

In the *Troilus* the form in *-eth* and the form in *-e* are both common, and they are often joined in the same sentence. The form in *-e* is usually felt as an imperative; but when *ye* precedes (as in *ye me lere*, 1182) the construction may have retained some of its original subjunctive force (cf. in the singular, *thou quenche*, etc.; see §§ 115, V, and note, 116, 117, II). Forms in *-e* (apocopated) or without ending also occur, and some of these may be due to an extension of the singular form to the plural or to the petrification of a singular in an idiomatic use. Cf. especially *lat* in the periphrasis *lat us* with inf. (*latteth* is altogether unknown to Chaucer).

In the examples that follow (I.—IV.) an accompanying *so* or *ye* is noted.

I. *-eth* (var. CD *-ith*, *-yth*)³:

preyeth, 29 (-[e]th), 32.

biddeth, 40 (-ith † D), 43.

ye . . . dwelleth, 119 (-yt B;

D †).

refuseth, 255 (-eth † C, grucchith

D), 2296 (refuse † it C).

douteth, 683 (-eht B).

disblameth, 1102 (des- B).

¹ *Rewcs*, 6163 A, is a scribe's error.

² So also the imperative and the subjunctive in *-n* may be co-ordinated in the same sentence. Thus,— *ne ondrédað éow né gé ne onforhtion*, *Ælfric*, *Deuter.* 31, 6.

³ Before consonants unless the contrary is noted. Old-style figures indicate that a vowel follows.

sitteth, 1298 (sitheth B).
 quaketh, 1387.¹
 herkeneth, 1400² (cf. 52, 2195,
 5958, 6034 (bef. *how*), 8148).
 loketh, 2220.
 letteth, 2221 (-e[t]h B).
 thanketh hym, 2293 (thouk[ith]
 D).
 abydeh, 2800.
 so techeth, 2883, 4135.
 draweth, 3019 (-et B).
 careth, 3512.
 wyrcheth, 3785 (werk- B, werch-
 ith C, wurkith D).
 liggeth, 3790 (lith C).
 kneleth, 3807.

swowneth, 4032.
 iuggeth ye, 4154.
 helpeth, 4688.
 so . . . shappeth, 5587; so s.
 how, 5596 (-eth ? D).
 suffreth, 5866 (-feryth C).
 taketh, 5955 (B ?), cf. 3790.
 so reweth, 6163 BD (-ith C,
 rewes A).
 thenketh, 6238 (thynk- B, thynk-
 yth C, thinketh D).
 maketh, 6248.
 leueth, 6278.
 vp casteth, 8201 (D ?).
 loueth hym, 8205.³

Compare also 232, 259 D (bef. *him*), 538, 687, 1388, 2511, 2737
 C, 3790 (bef. *hym*), 4050, 4990, 6182, 6221 (bef. *hede*), 6252, 6525,
 6668 C (bef. *hede*), 7250, 7266 (bef. *heed*), 7281, 7749, 7762, 8200
 (bef. *hom*), 8203, and the examples cited under II.—IV.

Note.—Observe the variations of ending in B 119, B 683, and cf.—takyt,
 232 C; herkenyt, 658 C; trusteht, 2330 B; herknet, 8148 B; herkenet,
 2195 B; douteht, 683 B.

II. Syncopated forms⁴:

refuseth, 255 C (-eth not AB, grucehith not D).
 aryseth, 1306 (-e D, -eth lat B).
 castith, 1307 D (cast ABC).
 biddeth, 1659 C (byd AB, bid D).
 takyth hede, 1666 C (tak A, take BD), cf. 1376 D; -eth, 2801 C
 (take AD, tak B); -yth, 3051 C (tak AB, -e D).
 tellith, 2190 C (tel AB, tel D †).
 bryngyth, 2217 C (bryng A, -e B, bring D).
 spekiht, 2372 D (spek AB, speke C).
 sleth, 2821 C (sle ABD).
 comith, 3511 D (-e ABC).
 haueth, 3595 (-yth C, haue BD); -yth, 2218 C (haue ABD); havith
 here (*hic*), 3727 D (-e ABC).
 seth, 3805 (se B, sey C, y-sey D).

¹ Supply [*not*] in B.

² In A cut out (*yow*).

³ Supply [*that*] in B, [*the*] in D.

⁴ Old-style figures indicate that a vowel follows.

seith, 4018 C (do AB, doth D).

so shapeth you, 5596 D (-eth how AB, -yth to C).

duellēth, 6111 D (dwellē ABC).

trowēth, 6209 D.

thynkith, 6249 C (thenk A, thynkē B, thinkē D); cf. 1436 C, 5979 C, 7518 C.

dryuēth, 6277 C (dryf A, dryfe B, dryue D).

fareth now wel, 6349 AD (B?), 7784 C (fare AD), 7994 (farth B, farith C); -ēth wel, 7775 AD (farwel C). But cf. 5869.

comaundith, 6495 C (-ēth me ABD).

merueilēth, 6525 D (wondreth AB, -dērith C).

Note.—It will be observed that syncopated forms are not common in A.

III. Forms in -e :

ye me lere, 1182 (leere B, lere *inf.* D).

loke ye, 2733 (-eth B, -ith C, -ith [ye] D), 2737 (-ith CD, lakketh † B);

loke that, 2804 (-ith D); loke thanne, 3158, 3718¹; lookē || alwey, 2194 B (lokē D, lokē that C, lok [that] A).

avise yow, 2815 (-eth BC, -ith D).

so help[e] to, 3577 (-eth B, now helpyth C, now helpith D).

styntē † al, 3948 B (stynt *p.p.* ACD).

think[e] thowgh, 4128 (thynk that B, -eth thouz D; C †).

smytē of, 4415.

take not, 6498 (-eth B, -yth C)²; cf. 3704.

hērkene it, 658 (-en B, herkenyt C, herkenith D).

telle it, 1181 (tel BD).

cache, 1376 (tache C, takith D).

late, 2029 (lat BC, lete D); cf. 4148 (?), 5905.

refuse, 2239 (refuse 3e it = 3e't D); cf., however, 2296.

aquyte hym, 2285 (aquit it C).

ye . . . inhelde, 2886 (in hielde B, inheld D).

rewe, 4766 (-ith D, rew? B).

so yeue hym, 4772 (3if B, grauntith † me D); foryeue, 5948 (-3eue BC, -yeveth me D), 7707 (-3eue BC, -yef D).

receyue, 4983.

so loue here (*acc.*), 5278.

IV. Forms in -e or without ending :

(a) Before consonants :

help me, 535 (-e D).

yif me, 1378 (3if BC, yevē D); yeue me, 6515 (3eue C, 3if C, yef D).

¹ Supply [that] in BD.

² In 6498 A *take* might easily be construed as infinitive.

vnderstonde for, 1443 (-ë † B, -d CD)¹; stond not, 3405 (stant B, stond we *subj.* 1 *pl.* D).²

tel me, 1586, 1589 (B †); telle me, 1395 (tel BC), 2363 (tel CD).³

lat youre, 1469 (C †, lete ? D); lat this, 1482 (lete D); so lat me, 1522 (lete D); lat be, 2229 (let C, lete D), 3405 (let CD)⁴; lat preue, 3890 (let CD); lat now, 3981 (lete D); lat sle, 4143 (let C); cf. 117, 1194, 1204, 1399, 1635, 3040, 3598, 3602, 4855, 5586 † C.

awake || ye slepen, 1630.

hyd me, 1659 (biddeth C, bid 3e D).

loke that, 2194 C (lok [that] A, lookë || alwey B, lokë al wey D).

ne bryng me, 2217 (-e B, -yth C).

yif me, 2289 (3if BC, 3ef D).

stynte that, 2327 (stynt D).

thenk which, 2822 (thynke B, think C, thenk † one D); so thynk that, 4128 B (thenk[e] thowgh A, -eth thou; D; C †).

foryet this, 5458 (-3et BC, -yete D).

so lef this, 5558 (leuyth C, leue D), 5586 (leue D, lat be C).

farewel, 5869 (far BC; D †)⁵; fare now wel, 7784 AD (-eþ C). But cf. 6349, 7775, 7994.

dwellë rathere, 6111 (duelleth D).

trowë me, 6209 B (-eþ D; -e *sg.* AC).

hold forward, 6860 (-e BD), cf. 6447.

make good, 7276.

wre you, 1465 (were † B, wri C, couere † D).

y-se who, 2338 (I-see B, lo † C); se ye, 995 (se now BC).⁶

o fle not, 2339.

sle nought, 2821 (sleth C).

(b) Before vowels or h :

rys, 1196 (-e BD),⁷ 2029 (-e D); arys, 5577 (-e D).

tel, 1207 (-telle B, -H D; C †).

tel, 2190 (-ith C; D †), 2280.

trist, 1391 (trustith † me D).

com, 1395 (-e D), 2823 (-e CD, com [of] B), 2827 (-e C, -ë † of D).

thenk, 1478 (thynk B, think C); thynk, 7749 C (-eth AD); so thenk, 6160 (thynke BC, thinke D). Cf. 1459, 2824.

¹ In B we should supply [*yow*] and read -e.

² In A supply [*ne*].

³ Infinitive ?

⁴ In A supply [*ue*].

⁵ Dele (*now*) in A; insert [*my*] in B.

⁶ Probably the correction *ye* to *now* should be made and *se* regarded as singular.

⁷ Supply [*and*] in D.

tak hede, 1666 (-e BD, -yth C); tak it, 1337 (-e CD).

ber, 2226 (-e CD).

cast, 2241 (-e C, -e [it] B), cf. 1700.

se how, 3804¹, 6594 ABD.

sey, 3948 (sei C, seie D).

lat, 4346 (let C); cf. 5906, 5963, 5964, 6263, 6858, 6860; lat hem, 4164 (let D).

Further examples of the imperative plural in -e or without an ending may be seen in,—

But *lat* be this and *telle* me how ye fare
Do wey yourę barbe and *shewe* yourę face bare
Do wey yourę book *rys* vp and *late* vs daunce
 And *lat* vs don to may som obseruaunce, 1194-7 (tel . . . swow † . . .
 ryse . . . lat . . . lat B; tel . . . schew . . . lat . . . lat C, let . . .
 shew . . . risę vp . . . let . . . lete D).

Lat be [to me]² yourę frendly³ manerę speche
 And *sey* to me, etc., 1333-4 (lat . . . say B, let . . . sey CD).

. . . em I preye

Swych answer as yow lyst yow self *purueye*, 2244-5 (D †).

Lat be yourę nice shame and yourę folye
 And *spek* with hym in esyng of his herte
Lat nicete not do yow bothe smerte, 2371-3 (let . . . speke . . . let C, lete
 . . . spekith . . . lete D).

For lone of god *make* of this thyng an ende
 Or *sle* vs bothe, 2960-1 (mak . . . slo C; D †).

Loke al be wel and *do* now as yow lyste, 3430 (look . . . [and] do B, loke . . .
 y do *ind.* D).

Lat Troye an Troian fro yourę herte pace
Dryf out that bittre hope and *make* good chere
 And *clepe* ayen the beaute of yourę face, 7275-7 (late . . . dryue . . . make
 . . . clepe B; let . . . dryue . . . make . . . clepe D).

The freedom with which imperatives in *-eth* are co-ordinated with these truncated forms is shown by the following passages,—

remembre yow . . . and *thenketh*, 24-26 A (-breth . . . thenketh B, remem-
 bre . . . thynke D †).

. . . *aryseth* and *lat* vs daunce

And *cast* yourę wydwes habit to myschaunce, 1306-7 (arisseth lat . . . cast B,
 arise and lete . . . castith D).

Sey on *lat* me not yn this fere dwelle

So wol I don now *herkeneth* I shal yow (*om.* BCD) *telle*, 1399-1400 (let . . .
 herkenyth C, let . . . herkenith D).

Awiseth you on it whan ye han space

And of som goodly answerę yow *purchase*, 2209-10 (avise 3ow . . . purchase
 C, avisith . . . purchace D); cf. 2815.

¹ Supply [*can*] in B.

² to me *om.* in A, but found in BCD.

³ frende B, frendely C, frend[e] D. Read *fremde*.

Nay nece quod Pandare sey not so
 Yet at the leste *thanketh* hym I preye
 Of his good wil and *doth* hym not to deye
 Now for the loue of me my nece dere
Refuseth not at this tyme my preyere, 2292-6 (thonketh B, thankith . . .
 refuse † it C, thonk[ë] . . . refusith D).

Now *stynle* that ye

But *hasteth* yow to don hym ioye haue
 For *trusteth* wel to longe don hardnesse, etc., 2327-9-30 (trusteht B, hastyth
 . . . trosteth C, stynt . . . hastith . . . trustith D).

Rys take with yow yowre nece Antigone

The lasse pres the bet *come* forth with me
 And *loke* that ye thonke humbely
 Hem alle thre and whan ye may goodly
 Your tyme y-se *taketh* of hem youre leue, 2801-3-4-5-6 (ris tak . . . com . . .
 loke . . . taketh B, rys taketh . . . come . . . loke . . . takyth C, rys
 take . . . com . . . lokith . . . takith D).

Stynteth right here and softly yow *pleye*, 2814 (stynteth . . . om. † B,
 styntith . . . 3e pleye C, styntith . . . soft[e]ly 3ow play D) (: I preye *ind.*).

Com of therfore and *bryngeth* hym to hele, 2835 (bryngë C, come . . . bring
 3e hym D).

Now *beth* al hol no lengere ye ne *pleyne*, 3010 (peyne C, no lenger that 3e pleyn
 D) (: feyne *inf.*, feyn D).

And *eseth* there youre hertes right y-nough
 And *lat* se which, etc., 3039-40 (ese † . . . lat C, esith . . . let D).

Tak nece myn youre leue at alle thre
 And *late* hem speke and *cometh* forth with me, 3051-2 (lat B, takyth . . .
 comyth C, take . . . let . . . comith D).

And yf ye lyggen wel to nyght *come* ofte
 And *careth* not what weder is on lofte, 3511-12 (carith C, comith . . . carith
 D).

Ne *wondreth* not ne *haueth* of it no fere

Lat no wight rysen, 3595-8 (-dereth . . . haue . . . lat B, -deryth . . .
 hauyth . . . let hem C, -drith . . . have . . . let no (?) D).

Haue here and *bereth* hym this blewe ryng

And *sey* my, etc., 3727-30 (haue . . . berë . . . sey C, havith . . . berith
 . . . sey [my] D).

For *trusteth* wel . . . So (To † A) *speke* youre self, 3748-51 (spek B, trostyth
 . . . speke C, trustith . . . speke D).

. . . *se* how this lord kan knele

Now for youre trouthe *seth* this gentil man

And seyde *kneleth* now, 3804-5-7 (se . . . se . . . kneleth B, how wel . . .
 sey 3one . . . knelith C, how wel . . . y sey (=y-se?) . . . knelith D).

And euere more on this nyght yow *recorde*

And *beth* wel war. . .

Foryeue it me, etc., 4021-2-5 (ffor-3if C, 3e † recorde D) (: mysericorde *n.*).

Beth glad forthi and *lyue* in sykernesse, 4355 (leuyth C, be . . . lyueth D).

And *shappeth* yow his sorwe for to a-bregge

And nought encesse leue nece swete

Buth rather to hym [cause] of flat than egge

And with som wysdom *ye* his sorwes *bete*, 5587-90 (shapeth . . . beth . . . beete B, schapyth . . . be . . . bete C, shapeth . . . beth . . . bete D).

So *shappeth* how distourbe this goynge

And *lat* sen now, etc., 5596-9 (shapeth B, schapyth to . . . let C, shapeth you . . . lett D).

. . . *beth* glad now yf ye konne

¹ And *thynk* right thus, 5978-9 (thynk B, thynkith C, thenkē D).²

So *rewes* on myn aspre peynes smerte

And *doth* somewhat. . .

And *lat* vs stele away by-twext vs tweye

And *think* that folye is, etc., 6163-6 (reweth . . . thynkē B, rewith . . . thyng C, reweth . . . lete . . . thinkē D).

And forthi *sle* with reson al this hete

Thus *maketh* vertue of necessite

By pacient and *think* that lord is he, 6245-8-9 (by paciens . . . thynkē B, this makyth . . . beth pacient . . . thynkith C, be pacient . . . thinkē D).

And *thanketh* wel. . .

Dryf out the fantasies yow with-inne

And *trusteth* me and *leueth* ek yourē sorwe

Or *her* my trouthe I wol not lyuē til morwe, 6273-7-8-9 (thynketh . . . dryfe . . . here C, thynkyth . . . dryueth . . . trostyth . . . lenyth . . . here D, me thinketh † *ind.* . . . dryue D).

Now *hold* yowrē day and *doth* me not to deye, 6447 (do B, help † this day and do C, holdeth . . . letē † D).

Now *writeth* swete and *lat* me thus not pleyne, 7762 (-yth . . . let C, -eth . . . letē D).

§ 119. The Infinitive ends in the *Troilus* in *-en*, *-en*, *-e*, *-e* (cf. Child, § 60; ten Brink, § 190). In *to seyne*, *to sene*, *to done*, the *-ne* of the A.S. gerund or dative-infinitive is preserved.

Variants in *-yn*, *-in* are found; *-yn* is particularly common in C.

The spelling *-ene* in *for to trostene*, 690 C, *to chaungen* . . . and . . . *zeuene*, 4721-2 B, is rather a scribe's eccentricity than a reminiscence of the gerundial ending.

Note.—The prefix *y-* (very common with the *p. p.*, see §§ 121-2 *passim*) is occasionally found with the infinitive: *y-se*, see § 119, XII.; *y-the*, 1755 f (the ACD); *i-the*, 5101 f B (the A, be † C, thee D) (cf. § 119, XI.); *y-here*, 5975 f (yheere B, [y]here C, here D). But in 1439, 5500 (*y-se*), the *-e* of the preceding word may have been carried over, and in 1755, 5101, we may choose between *neuër the* and *neuër y-the*.

¹ Here begins a new stanza, but the construction continues.

² D omits *And*.

The examples are arranged as follows,—I. -en before consonants; II. -en in rhyme; III. -en before vowels; IV. -en before *h*; V. syncope, -en; VI. -e before consonants; VII. -e in rhyme; VIII. -e (elided) before vowels; IX. -e (elided) before *h*; X. apocope of -e; XI. hiatus; XII. contracted forms,—*fle, sle, the, wre*; XIII. gerundial infinitives,—*to seyne, to sene, to done* (with the other infinitive forms of these three verbs).

I. -en before consonants (of all kinds, except *h*):

seken bote, 763 (sychen C, seche D).

suffren loues, 971 (soueren B, soffere (†) C, suffre D).

helpen sely, 1768 (-e C, -[e] D).

wexen dymme, 1993 (-e dunne CD).

gladen lo, 2064 (-yn D; C †).

lyuen for, 2212 (leuyn C, lyvyn D).

helen the, 2400 (-e CD).

auaylen now, 2515 (-e C; D †).

dishesen for, 2735 (-esen D, -esin C, -sese D).

axen red, 2783 (-in D).

wrathen yow, 3016 (-e C † †, -yn D, wreth[e] B).

cursen slouthe, 3738 (-yn CD, corsen B).

maken chere (clere † A), 4506 (-e C, -yn D).

Cf. also 139, 252, 380, 435, 838, 1529, 1598, 2480, 2640, 4248, 4539, 4622, 5288, 5607, 5694, 6445, 6870, 7161, 7916, etc., etc.

Note.—The spelling *-yn* is rare in A: see *she may ledyn Paris*, 2534 (-en B, -e C).¹

II. -en in rhyme:

tellen, 1 (: fellen *pret. ind.* 3 *pl.*).

wayten, 190 (-e D): beyten *inf.*, 192 (-yn C, -e D, baten B).

descenden, 216 (-yn CD) (: wenden *pret. ind.* 3 *pl.*).

quyken, 295 (queken C, qwykyn D): stiken *inf.*, 297 (-yn D, quekyn C); quyken, 5293 (-yn CD): pryken *inf.*, 5295 (-yn C).

dyen, 306 (deyen BC) (: dryen *patiuntur*: eyen *n. pl.*); dyen, 1412 (-ey- BC): lye *inf.*, 1409 (lyen CD) (: eyen); deyten, 1621 (dyen BD): bywryen *inf.*, 1622 ([be]- B) (: eyen); dyen, 3027 (deyzen C) (: eyen). (See *eyen*, *n. pl.*, § 4, p. 8.)

maken, 562 (-e CD): awaken *inf.*, 564 (-yn C, wake D) (: spaken *ind.* 3 *pl.*, -yn C, -e D); maken, 3734 (-yn CD) (: shaken *p.p.*, -e C, -yn D).

weylen, † 1369 (weyuen B, weyue CD): receyuen *inf.*, 1367 (-e CD) (: deseyuen *ind.* 3 *pl.*, -e C; D †).

¹ In D supply [For].

- lyuen, 1663 f (-yn D, leuyn C) (: dreuen, -yn C, dryuen B, -yn D : schryuen, -yn D, screuyn B, schreuynd C, *both p.p.*); lyuen, 2066 (-in D, leuyn C) (: (y)dreuen *p.p.*, dryuen B, dreuyn C, -in D).
 cryen, 1731 : asprien *inf.*, 1734 (-yem BCD) (: eyen *n. pl.*). Cf. 3977, etc., below.
 dryen *pati*, 1951 (: eyen *n. pl.* : crien 3 *pl.*).
 wàryen, 2704 (-ye C, -ien D) : vàryen *inf.*, 2706 (-ie C, tarien † D) : tàryen *inf.*, 2707 (-ien D, *l. om.* C).
 comen, 3097 (-yn CD) (: becomen *p.p.*, -yn CD).
 exeusen, 3867 (-yn C, -e D) (: vsen *ind.* 3 *pl.*, -yn CD).
 espyen, 3977 (asprien BD) (: eyen *n. pl.*, izem D); espyen, 7177 (asspyen C) (: syen *viderunt*, seyen C : eyen *n. pl.*, yen BD). Cf. 1731, above, 4296, below.
 escapen, 4084 (as- D, eschape C) (: shapen *p.p.*, -e C).
 honouren, 4104 (-yn C, *to* honouryn D) : socouren *inf.*, 4106 (-on B, -yn CD) (: labouren *ind.* 3 *pl.*, -on B, -yn CD^e).
 spyen, 4296 (tò † espÿen C, tò † asprien D) (: ywryen *p.p.* : eyen *n. pl.*, eyzyn C, yen D). Cf. 3977, above.
 flowen, 4600 (-yn CE, flewen B) (: growen *ind.* 3 *pl.*, -yn C, grevyn † D).
 byholden, 5023 (-yn D) : colde *inf.*, 5024 (-en B, -yn CD) (: folden *p.p.*, -yn CD).
 comforten, 5384 (-yn C, -e D) : disporten *inf.*, 5386 (-yn C, -e D).
 wryten, 8128 f (-e BD) : endite *inf.*, 8130.

Note.—The commoner infinitive ending in rhyme is *-e* (see VII., below). The ending *-en* is often used to give variety to stanzas which also contain the infinitive in *-e* at the end of one or more verses. Thus the rhymes in 5293 ff. are,—*quyken inf.*, *assente 1 sg.*, *pryken inf.*, *tormente inf.*, *entente*, *sholde*, *wolde* (cf. also 1 ff., 190 ff., 295 ff., 561 ff., 1408 ff., 1730 ff., 3095 ff., 4082 ff., 4600 ff., 5293 ff.).

III. -en before vowels :

- drawen, 1347 (-ë? C, [-ë] D).
 lyuen, 1635 (-ë D, leuin C).
 taryen (*dissyl.*), 2104 (-ye C).
 quenchen, 3900 (-in C, -yn D †).
 fynden, 5053 (-yn C, -ë D).
 asken, 5334 (axen BC, askë † hem D).
 distorben, 5765 (-in C, -yn D).
 bryngen, 5937 (-yn C, [-ë] † D).
 causen, 5971 (-yn C, -ë D).
 congeÿen, 6842 (cùngë † vs C, cunueien † D).

bifallen, 7325 (-ë D, -yn that C).

Cf. also 194, 620, 836, 1029, 1595, 2242, 2476, 2724, 5191, 5768, 7444, etc., etc.

Note.—The ending *-yn* is rare in A : see *werkyn in*, 4899 (-en B, wirkë D).

IV. -en before h :

fynden here (*hic*), 399 (-ë BC, -yn D)

byholden here (*eam*), 1350 (-yn D, -heldyn C).

dissimulen he, 3276 (-yn CD).

esen hem, 4632 (-yn D).

distorben hym, 6065 (-ë CD).

beren hym, 6066 (-yn C, [-ë] D).

rennen hom, 6848 (-ë CD).

Cf. also 370, 388, 1238, 2377, 2926, 4609, 5100, 6052, 6551, 7677, 8069, etc.

V. Syncope, — -en.

Note.—In most of the cases cited under A, and in some of those under B and C, the caesura falls immediately after the infinitive.

A. Before vowels :

speken, 387 (-e BD, spek C).

seruēn, 817 (-e BD, -yn C †) cf. 2986.

herēn, 1013 (-e BD, -yn C).

castēn, 1744 (-e B, -yn C, cast D).

louēn, 1843 (-yn C, -e BD).¹

axēn, 1981 (-e? D, -ith C, -en fendes B).

tellēn, 2578 (-e BC, tel D).

rysēn, 3598 (-e B, -yn † C, arise? D).

lokēn, 3822 (-e CD, -e vp[on] B).

to amendēn, 6501 (-e D, tamende B, to amendyn C).

syngēn, 7000 (-e BC, syng D).²

stelēn, 7115 (-e B, -ē D ; C †).³

laughēn, 7144 (-e B, laugh D, lauzhē ne? C).

holdēn, 7554 (-e BD, -ë al C).

trowēn, 7626 (-e BC, truste † D).

B. Before h :

plesēn hym, 1562 (-e CD).

helēn hym, 4794 (-e BC, help † D) ; cf. 7412.

clawēn hym, 5390 (-e CD, clowēn B).

preyēn here (*eam*), 6678 (prey CD).⁴

¹ Supply [i] in D.

³ C reads *ostel* for *ost stelc*.

² Dele (*to*) in A. In C read *gan* for *may*.

⁴ Dele (*to*) in A.

To rauysshēn herē syn thow hast not ben there, 5305 (-asche C, -issh D); cf. the same phrase in 5299, and see 7258 BC.

lyuēn hauē (1 *sg.*), 7305 (lyue BD; C †).

Note.—In many cases in which the proper reading is no doubt elided *-e* (preserved, for the most part, in A) one or more of the other MSS. show the syncopated ending *-en* or *-yn*. Examples are: I. Before vowels, 189 C, 192 C, 370 C, 714 C, 922 C, 966 B, 1742 C, 1744 C, 1797 C, 1828 C, 1871 C, 1979 C, 2002 CD, 2041 C, 2538 C, 2679 C, 2720 C, 2721 C, 2732 C, 2779 C, 2794 C, 2918 C, 2933 C, 3008 C, 3176 C, 3206 C, 3607 C, 3615 C, 3636 C, 3700 BC, 3910 C, 4258 C, 4506 D, 4785 C, 5065 B, 5100 B, 5142 C, 5380 B, 5925 C, 5938 C, 6017 C, 6055 C, 6118 C, 6125 C, 6227 C, 6501 C, 6588 C, 6720 C, 6972 C, 7258 B (?), 7348 C, 7468 C, 7493 C, 7516 C, 7658 C, 7664 C, 7829 C, 8028 C, 8044 D. II. Before *h* (in *his*, *hym*, *hem*, *häre* (poss. *sg.*, *acc.*), *here* (*hic*), 1515 C, 2121 C, 2379 C, 2743 C, 3328 C, 3386 C, 3476 C; see also 1460 C, 4494 C, 4551 C, 4613 C, 5261 BC, 5880 C, 6653 C, 7047 C, 7412 B; *comyn hasteliche*, 5980 C.

C. Before consonants:

hopēn the, 865 AB (-ē D, -ë ratherē C).

louēn sholde, 3639 (-ēn || oon † B, -yn || on C, shold love || on D).

trowēn that, 7661 A (B †, -ë sche C, -ē that D).

Cf. also 1453 AC, 1563 C, 2606 C, 2950 C, 3817 D, 5520 C, 6174 B, 6858 B, 7700 C.

VI. -ë before consonants (of all kinds except *h*):

mùteplliē that, 486.

hide fro, 587 (-en B, -yn C).

loke wyde, 629 (-en B).

seme lesse, 703.

loue such, 798.

fare wel, 1177 (-en B).

synge clere, 1910 (-en B, -in C, -yn D).

thanke but, 1933 (-en B, [-e] D).

slepe neuēre, 2183.¹

iape faste, 2249 (C ?).

desire fresshly, 2985 (-en B, -yn CD).²

make resistance, 3832 (-en B, -in C).

deye mot, 4083 (-en B, dien D).

fele noon, 5128.

handle for, 5434 (-dle(e) B, -dēlyn C, -diH D).

come by, 5628 (-en BD).

fynde bote, 5921.

oblige me, 6076.

stele pryuely, 6263 (-yn C).

cleyme kyngdom, 7850 (-en B, -yn C).

¹ Supply [not] in D.

² Dele (to) in C.

Cf. also 734, 747, 1339, 1773, 2204, 3356, 4337, 4378, 5574, 6369, 8131, etc., etc.

VII. -e in rhyme:

endite, 6 (: write *ind.* 1 *sg.*).

pleyne, 11 (: peyne *n.* : to seyne).

sterue, 17 (: serue *ind.* 1 *sg.*).

auayle, 20 (: trauayle *n.*).

falle, 290 (: with-alle).

wyte (= blame), 825 (: lyte) ; cf. 1470 f, 7698 f.

neuene, 876 (nemene C) (: yn heuene).

keuere, 910 (: feuere).

comaunde, 1050 (: recomaunde *subj.* 2 *sg.*).

wade, 1235 (: wordes glade).

saluwe, 2101 (salue BC, -ewe D) (: eschuwe *inv. sg.*, -ue B, -ewe CD).

here, 2199 (: yfere *adv.*).

vnfette, 2301 (onfeterer C) (: lettre : bettere *adv.*).

bygynne, 2459 (be- CD) (: wynne *inf.* : with-inne).

denye, 2574 (-y CD) (: curtasye : companye).

declare, 2765 (: Pandare).

forbede, 3309 (: hede *heed n.* : nede *n.*).

pace, 3312 (pase C, passe D) (: grace).

wende, 3458 (wynde C) (: ende *n.*).

delyuere, 3854 (-er D, del[y]uere B) (: wyuere *n.* : slyuere *n.*).

adawe, 3962 ([a]- B, to dawe C) (: drawe *inf.*).

fonde, 3997 (: on honde).

fysshe, 4004 (: rysche *n.*).

syke, 4014 (sike C, sijke D) (: syke *adj. pl.*).

houe, 4269 (: Ioue).

melte, 4287 (mette † B) (: felte *ind.* 3 *sg.*).

selle, 4303 (: helle : dwelle *inf.*).

rewe, 4612 (: trewe *adj. pl.*).

trete, 4720 (: grete *adj. pl.* : strete).

werne, 4773 (: yerne *adv.*).

lythe, 5416 (: swythe *adv.* : a thousand sithe).

to abregge, 5587 (tabrigge B) (: egge *n.*) ; cf. 3137 f.

leue (*credere*), 5629 (: preue *ind.* 3 *pl.*).

sorwe, 5971 (: morwe).

glose, 6072 (: suppose *ind.* 1 *sg.*).

fere, 6145 (: there).

gnawe, 6399 (: sawe *n.*).

glaze, 6832 (-se CD) (: maze *n.*).
 borwe, 7089 (: sorwe *n.* : morwe).
 wreke, 7323 (: speke *ind. pres.* 2 *pl.*).
 loue, 7365 (: aboue).
 seche, 7495 (: byseche *ind.* 1 *sg.* : speche *n.*).
 honge, 7562 (: stronge *adj. pl.* : longe *adv.*).
 vnbòdye, 7913 (on- C, vnbodie D) (: paròdye *n.*).
 ryue, 7923 (: of lyue).
 restore, 8036 (: more).
 laste, 8187 (: faste *adv.* : caste *inf.*). Etc., etc., etc.

Note.—For forms without *-e* in rhyme, see below, X., note 2.

VIII. *-e* (elided) before vowels (variants not registered).

Cf. 49 (lyue), 123 (enquere), 194 (smyle), 224 (endure), 347 (deme),
 392 (loue), 616 (sterue), 699 (walwe and wepe), 806 (wepe and crie),
 1203 (bydde and rede), 1204 (daunce), 1256 (mene), 1456 (deme),
 1868 (wepe and sitte), 2256 (dyne), 2284 (humme), 2406 (glade),
 2840 (dye), 4091 (stroke), 4541 (dispise), 4956 (suffre), 4962 (ende),
 5426 (lyue), 5844 (dresse), 7154 (wowe), 7577 (crepe), 7820 (smyle),
 etc., etc.

Note.—The elided *-e* of the infinitive is sometimes omitted in writing.
 Thus, in A see 204 (cast), 560 (bryng), 818 (thenk), 1493 (brest), 1857 (put),
 2215 (chaung), 2554 (bryng), 2734 (bryng), 4899 (brest), 6588 (com), 6794
 (pley), 6818 (glad), 6948 (mak). See also 33 B, 192 BC, 275 D, 370 D,
 387 C, 460 B, 476 D, 522 B, 714 D, 833 D, 1040 BD, 1057 D, 1079 D,
 1184 B, 1203 D, 1347 D, 1427 B, 1540 B, 1732 D, 1744 D, 1772 D, 1797
 BD, 1812 B, 1817 B, 1979 D, 2040 D, 2156 D, 2289 BD, etc., etc.

IX. *-e* (elided) before *h* :

bygonne he, 6610 (by-gynne B, be-gynne C, begynnē † for D); mete
 he, 6612 (dreme D; mette he *pret. ind.* † C).
 lete his, 192 (let C); kepe his, 627; loue his, 817 (C †); saue his,
 1660. Cf. 1468 (stynte), 2121 (here), 2167 (telle), 3328 (ese), 3957
 (wete), 5726 (cause), 6624 (here), 7047 (make).
 dresse hym, 1156 (-yn D); make h., 1407 (mak B; *inv.* ? D); lyke
 h., 1760; graunte h., 1789 (-t B); drawe h., 2271 (-w D); bidde
 h., 3309 (bid BCD); telle h., 4488, 7221. Cf. 1460 (gouërne),
 2379 (loue), 2380 (guèrdone), 3428 (auyse), 3743 (feffe), 3759
 (fecche), 3913 (streyne), 4396 (make), 6065 (plukke), etc.
 reherce here (*gen. sg.*), 2741. Cf. 289 (lyke), 1150 (make), 2743 (take).
 loue here (*acc. sg.*), 4494 (-yn C). Cf. 2300 (auyse), 7460 (excuse),
 7462 (excuse), 7489 (make), 8096 (hate).
 lese here (*gen. pl.*), 6744; vp frete here, 7833. Cf. 151 (honoùre), 907
 (mucche).

come here (*adv.*), 1462, 5582 (com BD, -yn C); dwelle here, 3476 (-yn C, dweH D).

lyue haue (1 *sg.*), 7305 BD (lyuēn A). But,—comē hath, 6717 (-en B, -ē? C, -e ayen † D).

constreue how, 2875 A (-strue BD); caste how, 6752 (-t BC, [us] caste D); trowe how, 7265 (-w B). But,—rehercé how, 4239 (-en B, -yn C, -on E).

take hede, 7120 (tak B). But,—takē hede, 8069 D (-en AB).

com hom, 4871 (-e in C). But,—bryngē hom, 4800 B (-[ē] hem A, -yn hem C, -[ē] home D).

come hastely, 5980 (-[ē] B, -yn C).

Note.—For hiatus before *h*, see XI., below.

X. Apocope of -e (before consonants).

There are several genuine instances of apocope. Old-style figures indicate that a cæsura follows the infinitive ending, so that the -e may be pronounced if one cares to admit the "extra syllable before a pause." louē for, 16 (*prob. noun*); l. be, 46 (*prob. noun*) (D is different); l. swych, 369; l. yow, 537 (D †); l. til, 686; l. the, 2043. But,—louē, 798, 2854.

hopē the, 865 D (hopēn AB, hopē ratherē C).¹

lat Criseyde, 5119 (letē C, let D).

telle yow, 2198 AB (tellē CD).²

spekē for, 2511 ABG (of this CD). (No note in Mr. Austin's collation.) berē the, 2583.

comē soupen, 3402 (cum C)³; -ē but, 5661; c. therefore, 5662; c. sholde, 5726; c. for, 6023 (com C); c. that, 7021; c. ye, 7791; com speke, 5316 (-ē CD). Cf. 5717 (?).

makē desseueraunce, 4266 (C †); makē the, 7515 CD (-ēn peple ABG) (no note in Mr. Austin's collation).

lyuē to, 4759; l. til, 6279 (leuē to C; D †).

puttē that, 6174 (-ēn B, put D).

wenē that, 5730, 6775 AB (seyn C, sey D).

holdē forth, 6858 A (-ēn B, -e ourē CD).⁴

¹ No note in Mr. Austin's collation. G reads: Thanne wolde I hopen rather for to spede.

² For which (whiche G) I am come (I come BGCp., come I C, come y D) to (*om. B Cp.*) telle yow newe (new B, *om. CDG*) tidynges. No variants are noted for John's MS.

³ In C it is possible to read *cum[e] suppe*; in D, *comē soupe*; but the line would then be intolerably harsh.

⁴ CD and John's give a 9-syl. line: Lat vs holde ourē purpos fermely (frendely † C). AB read *forth* after *holdē*. Cp. also has *forth*, but reads *holdēn*. G has: Lette vs holde forthe purpos fermely.

trowę that, 7661 D (-ęn A, -ë sche C; B †).

preyę for, 48 (pray D); prey yow, 2521 (-ę ? B, -e C, pray as D, prey as G).¹

seyę, see XII., below.

Note 1.—For *wetę*, *dorre*, see § 123; for *hauę*, see § 124.

In many cases the apocope disappears on comparison of MSS. Thus,—

worschepę preyly, 380 C (l. werken).	wend to, 3060 D (?).
tellę the, 580 A (l. telle it).	kepę wele, 3136 D.
tellę 3ow, 7134 C, 7308 C (cf. 7309 C).	yevę no, 3607 D.
bring me, 623 D.	makę chere, 4396 D.
cogh bygan, 1339 C.	tornę to, 4781 B (?) (turnę tyl C ?).
dyę there, 1418 C.	helpę to, 5190 C (?).
lovę no, 1563 D.	mervailę wheder, 5309 D.
plinę no, 1581 C.	failę certeyne, 5607 D.
bynd with, 1813 D.	teĥ you, 5925 D.
bathę begyn, 1934 C.	schortę myn, 6459 C (shortę your † D).
endurę to, 1949 D.	writę 3it, 6635 C°.
trust to; 2041 D.	wrytę to, 7754 C.
spekę sumwhat, 2106 D.	stelę by, 7115 D.
spekę therof, 2688 C.	letę no, 7273 C.
drechę to, 2349 C.	cloth shal, 7781 D.
tellę 3ow, 2626 D.	shewę me, 8057 D.

Note 2.—In 3817 the readings of ABCEGCp. John's are: Now doth (do G) hym sitte (syttyn D, sitten John's) now (*om.* BCCp. John's) gode (good BD) nece dere. The weight of MS. authority seems to be in favour of omitting the second *now* and reading *sittę*.—In 1226 B, we may perhaps read *wondren more* for *wonder more* (wonderyn C, wondryn D, iapę † A); cf. 1453 D, 5309 C (wondere; wondren AB, mervailę D).—In 6118 the question is really between *at-renne* but not *at-rede* and *at-renne* and not *at-rede*; cf. C. T. 2451 T.

Note 3.—Occasionally -e in the infinitive is not written at the end of the line, but the rhyme always² indicates that it should be restored. Instances are rare in A and B, but in C and D they abound. For A, see 462 (rew), 4260 (throw), 4975 (lyght); for B, see 313 (hold), 392 (repent), 1338 (cast), 2956 (rew), 4017 (trespäs), 4402 (wak), 6994 (shew), 8021 (bihold); for C, see 73, 193, 389, 492, 750, 908, 1420, 1441, 1524, 1775, 1958, 1986, 2078, 2252, 2529, 2556, 2558, 2574, 2624, 2639, 2715, 2757-8, 2795, 2841-2, 2919, 2997, 3100, 3200, 3384, 3500, 3681, 3758, 3924, 4069, 4339, 4418, 4447, 4500, 4530, 4919, 5029, 5154, 5459-60, 5519, 5543-4, 5769, 5833, 5850, 5858-9, 5952, 6043, 6076, 6188, 6243, 6274, 6280, 6446-7, 6720, 6752-3, 6822, 6867, 6878, 6914, 6932, 6934, 6997, 7029, 7349, 7574, 7590, 7593, 7595, 7667, 7771, 7839, 7931, 7983. In 4973 f, C needs correction. For D, see 256, 665, 2599, 2639, 3043, 3699, 4276, 4536, 5272, 8133, and *passim*.

¹ No note in Mr. Austin's collation.

² *I. e.* when not another inf.

XI. Hiatus :

deyë in, 674 (dyen B, deyen CD).

demë other, 799 (-en B, -yn CD).¹

folwë if, 1134 (-en B, -yn C).

stoppë euery, 1889 (-en B).

fyndë in, 4140 (-en B); fyndë at, 6866 (-en B); fynd[ë]|| out, 7453 (-en B, -ë CD).

endurë al, 4333 (-en B, -yn C).²

bryngë vs, 5354 (-yn C); bryngë it, 7657 (-en B, -yn C).

compleynë in, 7086 (B †).

writë yf, 8140 (-ë yif D).

Cf. also 360, 979, 1184, 1350, 2120, 2793, 2898, 2923, 3079, 3154, 3304, 3742, 3946, 4166, 4238, 4504, 5314, 5420, 6047, 7049, 7122,³ 7178⁴, 7503, 7629.

Note.—In all the cases cited above A has -ë (with hiatus), but in all of them the hiatus may be removed by reading -en, except in 360, 1184, 5314, 5420; in these four lines a word has dropped out of A, the restoration of which reduces the -ë to -e (elided).⁵ None of the four MSS. is free from hiatus in the infinitive form, but it is rarest in B.⁶ Other examples (not in A) may be seen in the variants under III. (above); cf. also 796 D, 1843 D, 2886 D, 3317 D, 3822 B, 4524 D, 4835 C, 6233 D, 7538 CD, 7554 C, etc.

hidë his, 381 (-en B, -yn C, -e his? D).⁷

endurë he, 2730 (-en BC, -e he D).

suffrë hym, 2996 B (-en A, sufferyn C, suffryn D).⁸likë here (*dat.*), 3455 (-en B, -yn C; D †).dwellë here (*hic*), 3483 (-yn D); cf. dwellen here, 3489 (-yn D, -ë C).

bryng[ë] hem, 4800 (-yn C, -ë hom B, -[ë] home D).

Cf. also 292 C, 481 C, 504 C, 542 D, 1885 C, 4038 D, 5149 D, 5334 D, 6052 D, 6065 C, 6136 D, 6534 D, 6987 C, 7121 C, 7201 D, 7480 D, 7816 D.

tellë how, 2091 (-en B, -e her D); cf. 7869 D.

rehercë how, 4239 (-en B, -yn C, -on E). But,—constreue how, 2875 A (-strue BD); caste how, 6752 (-t BC, [us] caste D); trowe how, 7265 (-w B).

comë hath, 6717 (-en B, -e? C, -e ayen † D).

takë hede, 8069 D (-en AB). But,—take hede, 7120 (tak B).

tellë half, 3186 (-en B, -yn C, -e? D).

¹ In C read *other* for *ouzt*.² Dele (*the*) in D.³ Supply [*Ne*] in A (?).⁴ Furnivall prints *speke[n]* in A.⁵ In 5420, it is possible to explain the hiatus in A on the ground of the cæsura (*lyuë||yf*), but BCDECp. John's have *if* (*3if, yif*) *that*, which makes the verse regular.⁶ In the majority of the lines just cited Cp. has the form in -en.⁷ 9-syl., except in D.⁸ Dele (*to*) before *scrue* in C.

bryngë hom, 4800 B (-[ë] hem A, -yn hem C, -[ë] home D); com hom, 4871 (-e in C).

XII. *Fle, sle, the, wre* :

fle, (i.) 747 f (flee B, sle † D) (: secre : be *sit*), 1795 f (flee B) (: he), 3386 f (: be *inf.* : tre), 3670 f (: he : be *inf.*), 4105 (flen C, fle *monosyl.* D), 5422 † D (sleen A, slen B, sle C). (ii.) 4648 (*before caesura*).—flen, 1279 f (fleen B, flen(e) D) (: ben *p. p.* : ben *subst. pl.*). sle, (i.) 747 † f D (fle AC, flee B), 4143 (sla B), 7834 (slee D), 8049 (slee D). (ii.) 6108 (sla B, sle 3if C, sle yif D), 7635 † C.—slen, sleen, (i.) 1750 (slan(e) B, sle CD), 5422 (slen B, sle C, fle † D), 5929 (sle D), 6409 (sle CD). (ii.) 2443 (sle D), 3850 (sle D); slen hym, 815 (sleen B, sle D), 823 (sle D)¹; slen how, 5848 (slan(e) B, sle D).

the, 341 f (: be *sit* : ye), 1755 f (ythe B) (: be *inf.* : parde), 5101 f (ithe B, be † C, thee D) (: to be : me), 7523 f (: me : se *inf.*).

wre; Hymself to wre at hem he(r) gan to smyle, 329 (*wrie monosyl.* B, wrythe † C, were † D); byhoueth . . . vnwre his wounde, 858 (*onwrye monosyl.* C, vnwry D).

XIII. *Seyn, to seyne; sen, to sene; don, to done.*

The Anglo-Saxon Gerundial (or Dative) Infinitive is preserved in the *Troilus* in *to seyne, to sene, and to done*. The only sure case of final *-e* pronounced in the interior of the verse is in 7487 (*to done*, see below).

to seyne, 12 f, 591 f,² 712 f,³ 1605 f, 1706 f, 2071 f, 2211 f, 2441 f, 2644 f, 3272 f, 3390 f, 3835 f, 3959 f, 3998 f, 4372 f (seine D), 5165 f (seyn C), 7398 f (seyn C), 7712 f. All these are cases of *soth for to seyne* and similar phrases. In 7531 f, *soth to seyne* (: I durste leyne = wager) is the reading of C, *soth(e) to seyne* (: durste I leyne) that of D; G has *soth(e) to saye* (: durste I lay); AB read *dar I seye* (: dorste I leye, laye); Mr. Austin's collation has no note on these two lines. In 3845 f, *what al this is to seyn* (seyne BC), *to seyne* is the correct reading, as is shown by the rhymes, *compleyne* (ind. 1 sg.) and *peyne* (noun).

Rhyme words.—peyne *n.* (12, 591, 712, 1605, 2071, 2211, 2441, 3835, 3959, 4372, 5165, 7398), cheyne *n.* (1706), Eleyne (2644), tweyne (1706, 3390, 3959, 7712), pleyne *inf.* (12, 1605, 2441), 1 *pl. ind.* (712), feyne *inf.* (2644, 3998), restreyne *inf.* (3272), reyne *inf.* (3390), destreyne *inf.* (4372), compleyne *inf.* (7712).

But *seyn, seye, seye,* and *sey,* are found in the gerundial construction with *to*, as well as *seyne*.

¹ In C read *hym[sel]*.

² Supply [*soth*] in D.

³ Old-style figures indicate that D has *seyn*.

seyn,¹ (i.) soth to seyn, 1769 (say C, sey[ē] D †); platly for to seyn, 3628 f (seyne C) (: reyn *n.* : certeyn *adv.*); vsen . . . to seyn, 3866²; that (this) is to seyn, 4020 (say C, seiē D), 6037 (seyne C), 7261 (seyne C); now is this abusion to seyn, 5722 f (seyne B) (: certeyn *adv.*); the sothe for to seyn, 7375 f (seyne BD) (: ayen AD, aȝein B, aȝen C : fayn *pred. adj. sg.* AC, fayne BD); what al this is to seyn, 3845 f (seyne BC), *should be seyne, as the rhymes (compleyne pres. I sg., peyne n.) show.* (ii.) this is to seyn, 3280; soth to seyn he, 4635.

seye, (i.) ther is no more to seye, 574 f²; soth (for) to seye, 2601 f, 3197 f; sothly for to seye, 5459 f (sey C, certainly to sey D); shortly al the sothe for to seye, 5615 f (seyne † B); shortly for to seye, 7372 f (seyne † B, seyn C); what is this to seye, 2916 f (saye C); shame it is to seye, 3091 f; I it forbar to seye, 3207 f; were impossible . . . to seye, 4153 f (say E); which chargeth nought to seye, 4418 f (sey C, seiē D); no litel thyng of for to seye, 4530 f (sey C); he nyst[e] what to seye, 5018 f; seyd(e) that was to seye, 5833 f (sey C); haue I for to seye, 7771 f (sey C); I began yow for to seye, 8163 f.

Rhyme words.—in the weye (3091), aweye (5018), dreye *adj. pl.* (3197), dreye *adj. pl.* (hardly *adv.*) (5833), tweye (2916, 4153), deye *inf.* (574, 5459, 5615, 7771, 8163), pleye *inf.* (2601, 3091, 3197, 4153), leye *inf.* (2916), *inv. sg.* (2601), bywreye *inf.* (3207), obeye *inf.* (4530), preye *inf.* (5833, 7372).

seye, that is to seye || for, 3095 (seyne C, sey D); that is to seye || that, 3126 (seyn B, seiē C, sey † D).

sey, to sey a soth, 2222 (seyne B, seyn C †).

seyn, seyn, seye, seye, sey, aȝe also used in infinitive constructions without *to*. Thus,—

seyn,³ (i.) 514,⁴ 1839 (sey C), 2539 (sey B),⁵ 2825 (seyne B), 3707 (sey † D), 3809, 4464 (seyne B, seiē D), 4829 (seyde † B), 5520 (seyne B, sendyn † C)⁶, 5699 (seyne B), 5862, 5982 f (seyne BD) (: ayen AD, aȝein B, ageyn C : we ben so fayn AC, feyne BD), 6050 (C †), 6141, 6775 C, 6850 f (: ayen AD, aȝein B, aȝen C : fayn *adj. sg.* AC, feyn B, fayne D), 7239 (sen C), 7642, 7659 f (seyn C) (: ayen, aȝein, aȝen, ageyn). (ii.) 396 (sayn A, say C), 398 (sayn C), 512, 804 (say C), 1011, 2532 (seyne D), 5515 (seyne B),

¹ In 1769, 3280, 4020, 4635, 6037, 7261, *seyn* comes before the cæsura.

² Old-style figures indicate that D has *sey* or *say*.

³ In all cases cited except 512, 1839(?), 2539, 4829(?), 5520, 6626(?) *seyn* comes before the cæsura (when not in rhyme).

⁴ Old-style figures indicate that D has *sey* or *say*.

⁵ Dele (*That he*) in B.

⁶ Supply [*herte*] in A.

6071 (C †), 6414 (say C), 7428¹, 8095; seyn he, 3923 (seie D), 7157.

seyën sholde, 6989 A (seynë B, sey[ë]n C, om. † D).

seye, (i.) 492 f (sey C), 672 f, 924 f, 1044 f, 1258 f, 1396 f, 1406 f, 1546 f, 2078 f (say C, y sey dico † D), 2219 f, 2291 f, 2741 f, 2842 f (say C), 2922 f, 2953 f, 2963 f (seye pres. subj. 1 sg. BC, sey pres. subj. 1 sg. D), 3398 f, 3503 f, 3666 f (seyen B)², 3892 f (seyne B), 4033 f (seie D), 4450 f (saye B, say C, seye D), 4501 f (say C), 4818 f, 4911 f, 5033 f (seye D), 5187 f, 5431 f, 5543 f (sey C), 5769 f (say C), 5872 f (sey C), 5952 f (say C), 6043 f (say C), 6164 f, 6446 f (sey C), 6458 f, 6934 f (say C), 7349 f (say C), 7531 f (to seyne CD),³ 7669 f (sey C), 8092 f, 8106 f, 8208 f. (ii.) seye,⁴ 2084 (seyne B, seyn C),⁵ 6233 (seyn C). [In all these instances D has *sey*, unless the contrary is noted.]

Rhyme words.—weye *n.* (492, 4818, 5952, 6458), aweye (6458), awey (aweye) (5543 : to dey C), tweye (492, 1258, 2741, 3666, 4033, 4818, 4911, 5033, 5769, 6043, 6164, 7669, 8092), pleye *inf.* (672, 1546, 3398, 6934, 7349), *subj.* 2 *sg.* (3666), deye *inf.* (924, 1258, 1406, 2291, 2963, 3892, 4911, 5431, 5872, 6446), *subj.* 1 *sg.* (2953, 4550), *subj.* 3 *sg.* (5187), leye *ind.* 1 *sg.* (1044), *inv. sg.* (2078), *inf.* (3503, 4450, 4501, 7531, 7669, 8208), preye *ind.* 1 *sg.* (1396, 2219, 2291, 5952, 6164, 6934, 8106), *inf.* (2741, 2842, 2922, 2963), *pres. ind.* 3 *pl.* (6043), beye *inf.* (8208).

seye,⁶ 451 (sey C), 1337 (say B, seyn C), 3120 (seyn BC), 4108 (seyn BC, seię D), 4139 (seyn CE), 4777 (seyn C), 5493 (sey † D). [D has *sey*, unless the contrary is noted].

sey, (i.) sey yis (*l.* this with C †), 4222 (seyn BC)⁷; sey yow, 7740. (ii.) 1316 (seye B, seyn C); sey hym, 195 (seye B, seyde † C).

seyne in the form *seine* occurs in 6626 without *to*,—sholde . . . seine it was folye (sey CD),— cf. also variants under some of the forms above registered,— but it will be observed that the full gerundial form is found only in rhyme.

to sene,—fairest (-er) was to sene, 454 f (: Polixene); fairest was to sene, 5817 f (: grene *adj. pl.*); it ioye was to sene, 4070 f (to seene B) (: tene *n.*).

But *to sen* and *to se* also occur : *to se*, indeed, is by far the commonest form.

to sen, to seen, (i.) so lyk a man of armes . . . He was to sen, 1717

¹ Delete (*me*) in D.

² In B, rhymes with *pleye* and *tweyen*.

³ In CD the rhyme is *leyne inf.* (= wager); in AB the rhyme is *leye (laye)*, which is clearly right.

⁴ In 2084, 6233, *seye* may be read (with hiatus) if one admits the “extra syllable before the cæsura.”

⁵ In B supply [I].

⁶ In 3120(?), 4139, 4777, it is possible to read *seye* if one admits the “extra syllable before the cæsura.”

⁷ Supply [*that*] in BD.

(senę || D); first to sen (*purpose*), 3384 (se CD); it thoughte hym no strokes To here or sen Criseyde . . . wepe, 3910 (se his D); youre desport Was al to seen Criseydes eyen, 4972 (sen BC, se D); it hardere is To sen that sorwe, 5568 (to sen him C, to se the sorwe D); It was his sorwe vpon hem for to sen, 6821 f (sene D) (: ben *sunt* bene D). (ii.) she was right swych to sen, 5524 (seen B, se CD); to seen here (*gen. sg.*), *purpose*, 446 (sene B, sen C, se D); to sen here (*acc.*), *purpose*, 7941 (see D); cf. 5568 C.

to se, (i.) hath gided the to se my, 569 (sen B); ye ben faire to se, 1669 f; It was an heuene vpon hym for to se, 1722 f; he hath to se me swych delit, 1794; it ioeye was to se, 1902 f; sobrelly and frendly for to se, 3201 f; This was no litel sorwe for to se, 3935 f; ycomen hym to se, 5028 f (see D); it a deth was for to se, 5518 f (see D); Which that I drede neuere mo to se, 5521 f (see D); I nolde leuen for to se, 5997 f (see D); coueyteth . . . to se me, 6001; the pure spirit wepeth To se yow wepen, 6283 (see D); comen Troilus to se, 6645 f (see BD); to longen here to se, 6960 f (see B); thei stoden for to se, 7477 f; ther com this bor to se, 7835 f (see D). (ii.) to se † his, 3910 D.

sen, seen, *inf.*, without *to*, (i.) 293 (seth † D), 1386 (se CD), 6886 (senę B, see D)¹; cf. 5599, 6133, 6147, 6258, 6299, 7112, 7238, 7446, 7573. (ii.) 2242 (seyne B, se CD), 4961 (D †), 7264 (syn B, se D); cf. 6512, 6691, 6972, 7371, 7476; sen here (*acc.*), 6391 (se BD), 7144 (sene D, se lauȝhe ? C); seen here (*gen. sg.*), 6888 (sen C, se D); sen how, 5599 BC.

se, see, *inf.*, without *to*, (i.) 1659 BD (sen C, do A), 1673 (sen C; B †), 1700 (sen C, senę D), 4124 (sen BC), 8074 (sen B, see D); cf. 245 f, 1365 f, 1530 f, 1879 f, 2067 f, 2177 f, 2398 f, 2416 f, 2515 f, 2972 f, 3442 f, 4056 f, 4187 f, 4321 f, 4446 f, 4853 f, 5350 f, 5947 f, 6700 f, 7030 f, 7522 f, 7662 f, 7751 f, 8003 f, 8139 f. (ii.) 644 (sen C; D †), se here (*acc.*), 6979 (seen B, sen C).

y-se, *inf.*, without *to*, (i.) alle y-se, 1439 f (allē se C; D †); tyme y-se, 2806 (is[e] D, tymē se BC); wrecche y-se, 5500 f (wrechē se C, wrecchē see D); wel y-se, 5710 f, 7110 f ([y]se C, [y]see D). [Var. B y-see; D i-see.]

to done,—that thow hast to done, 1019 f; I hauę to done, 1298 f; hadde nought to done, 3517 f; his erand was to done, 1157 f; were it nought to done, 1788 f; theron was to heuen and to done, 2374 f; what was best to done, 2570 f; now is there (but) litel more for to

¹ Supply [*As*] in C.

done, 3389 f; how yow was best to done, 4746 f; what thenkestow to done, 5750 f (doon B); it was ek to done, 6433 f; as the semeth best is for to done, 6664 f; it is nought to done, 6741 f; the beste is thus to done, 6755 f (doon B); it is for to done, 7266 f; yet was there more to done, 7455 f; there is no more to done, 7672 f (doon B); as he was woned to done, 4378 f (doon B) (*similarly* 4553 f (don D), 4729 f, 5788 f (doon B)); it wonted is to done, 6640 f; as was his woned to done, 7010 f. [Var. BD doone.] feyned hym with Calkas han to doon[e], 7209 f (done CD) (: soone *adv.*). She hath ynow (-e G) to donē hardyly, 7487 ACG (to don[ē] B, to do[nē] D).¹ to bidde hym ought to done, 3309 (don BC, do ne D); to haue ynowh to done, 6407. (don C, doone D); what to done he nyste, 356 (don B, do D).

to done, — what to done || best were, 1781 (to do D, what to donē best † and C); what to done || for ioye vnnethe he wyste, 4095 (don B, do D).

Rhyme words.—mone, moone, *n.* (1019, 1157, 3389, 6640, 6741), bone *n.* (1019), sone, soone *adv.* (1157, 1298, 2374, 3517, 4378, 4553, 4729, 5788, 6433, 6640, 6755, 7010, 7209, 7266, 7455, 7672), persone (1788, 2570, 4746), trone *n.* (5750), thow dispone *inv.-subj.* (6664).

to don, — (i.) a thyng to don yow pleye, 1206 (do D); a body and a myght To don that thyng, 1719 (do D); is he . . . aboute me to drecche And don me wrong, 2557 (do D); I may ben he . . . to don yow my seruyse, 2975 (do D); prey [I] yow To don myn herte . . . an ese, 3475 (do D); bad a boone . . . to don that reuerence, 4731 B (do D, to don hym † that reuerence A); the enspire This womman thus to shilde and don vs lese Daun Antenor, 4850 (doun C, done D); be suffred me to erre . . . ne don so gret vnright, 5212 (do (me) D); what frendes ich haue . . . to don the wrathe pace Of Priamus and don hym stonde in grace, 6054-5 (doo . . . make D); make hym . . . to conuerte And don my red, 6074-5 (doo D). (ii.) what for to doon, 887 (don BC, done D); what to don is, 2737 (doon B, done CD); comytted to don execucion, 6367 (done D); comaundeth me . . . To don al, 6496 (doo D); she wolde fayn(e) to don his herte an ese (*syntax ambiguous*), 2310 (do D; C †); hasteth yow to don hym ioye haue, 2329 (do D); gon to don his sacrifice, 3381 (done D); al prest to don hire byde, 4824 (do D); to don his sorwe to falle He rought[e] not what vnthryf[t] [that] he seyde, 5092 (to make his CD); glad to don hym that seruice, 5471 (doo D); to the . . . goddes . . . He preyde . . .

¹ No note in the Cp. collation.

To don hym, 5613 (doon B, doone D); That he nolde don his peyne and al his myght To don it for to don here herte an ese, 6478-9 (done . . . to done it for to doo D).

to do,—what is me best to do, 828 f (: wo : so); a kynges sone yn armes wel to do, 1250 f (: two : therto); for to do wel is his wone, 1403 (don BC, [for] to do D); youre beste is to do so, 1467 (don C); to wys is he to do so gret a nyse, 1810 (don BC); vouche saf for to do so, 2776 (don C, [for] to do D); ryse To knele and do yow honour, 2912 (don C); to wys to do so gret folye, 3709 (don BC); grace for to do so, 3770 (hadde to don so C †); what thenkestow to do, 5511 f (doo BD) (: for-do *inf.*, -doo D, 5513 : to *prep.*).

don, *inf.* without *to*, (i.) 19 (done B, do D), 852 (do D), 1496 f (done D) (: anoon : agon *p. p.*); do yow don by force, 6137 (don . . . don C, doo . . . doone D); cf. 120, 600, 1197, 1400, 1553, 1560, 1842, 2330, 2951, 4320, 4973, 5957, 6327, 6413, 6762, 7200, 7203, 7631, etc. (ii.) 2591 (do CD); cf. 1474, 3725 (done D), 4952, 4957, 5245, 5456, 5602, 5604, 6150, 6295, 6475, 6604, 8071, 8097, etc.; doon, 824 (don C, done D); for forms before *he*, *his*, *hym*, *here*, *hem*, *how* (*don* is usual in ABC; D has *doon*, *doone*, *done*, *do*, *doo*), cf. 563, 2066, 2459, 3008, 3400, 4550, 5365, 6478, 7284, 7503, 7828; don hardnesse, 2330 (but it is perhaps better to take *don* as *p. p.*, as the reading of B, *ydon*, indicates). In 2734 AB, *don harm* should be *don him harm*, as in C (do hym harme D). In 7349 A, *done* should be *don* (don B, don can C, doo can D).

do, *inf.*, without *to*, (i.) 795 (don BC), 1848 (don C), 6345 f (: for-do *inf.*, -doo D, 6343 f); cf. 692, 1232, 1659, 2042, 2373, 2699, 3022, 3690, 3708, 3769, 3969, 4320, 4912, 5121, 5439, 6588, etc.; for-do, 238 (-don B, vndo D), 5513 f (-doo D) (: to do : to *prep.*). (ii.) 2503 (don BC, done D), 2557 (don B), 3892 (don BC, done D), 5419 (doon B, doo D, don † what C); vndo, 3583 (vndon B, ondo C, vndo † the D).

§ 120. The Present Participle ends in the *Troilus* in *-ynge*, *-yng*. (Cf. Child, § 64; ten Brink, § 191.)

The form *-ynge* is regular in rhyme (see, however, II., last example), but the *-e* is never sounded in the interior of the verse (except for syntactic reasons, see II., note 2). D almost always has *-yng*, both in and out of rhyme, but I have not taken the superfluous trouble to register this lack of *-e* in that MS. Minute variations in spelling are also sometimes disregarded in the following lists.

The participle in *-ende* occurs only twice,—*ryndende*, 2334 C (corrupt), 2338 f C^o (where it spoils the rhyme).

Note.—I have registered “gerunds” with nouns in *-ynge* (§ 10) in preference to confusing them with participles.

I. The following list includes such present participles as rhyme with an infinitive in the *Troilus*. All the rhyme-words are recorded in each case.

lyuyng, 1320 f (leuenge C) (: ryng *inf.* : wytyng *n.*).

vnsittyng, 1392 f (: bryng).

steryng, 4078 f (: syng : ryng).

duryng, 4596 f (-g C (?), doynng † D) (: concordynge *ptc.*, -yng CD : bryng).

makyng, 5517 f (: bryng).

portrayng, 7079 f (-treynge B, portering † D) (: recordynge *ptc.*, accordynng † D : spryng).

arguyng, 7135 f (: taryng *n.* : bryng).

II. Here follow all other cases of the present participle (or participial adjective) in rhyme. An asterisk indicates that the rhyme-word is a noun (or “gerund”) in *-ynge* (see § 10).

wepynge, 111 f (: excusynge *ptc.*).

pleynge, 267 f (pleynge BC, pleyng D) (: lokynge *ptc.*).

answeryng,* 282 f.

konnyng,* 302 f (kun- C, cunnyng D).

comynge,* 378 f, * 1644 f, * 5649 f (D †), * 5676 f.

sittyng, 2099 f (: lokynge *ptc.*).

ymagynynge, 6817 f (-g C, -genyng D) (: festenyng *n.*, thing † D).

excusynge,* 7937 f.

But,—comynge, 5737 f (-yng D) : thing *n.* : byfallyng *n.*

III. Present participles before consonants. (D has almost always -yng.)

toùchyng, 265 (-e BC) ; toùchyng, 2108 (-e BC ; D †), 3274 (-e BC).

plèynge, 280 (pley(n)- C).

lykÿng, 309 (lokyng † C).

ymàgynÿng, 372 (-ing (?) D, -enyng (?) C).

bewallyng, 547 † D.

kèruyng, 632 (-e B).¹

rÿdyng, 2334 (-e B †, ryndende † C).

fallyng,—the happy fallyng strok, 2467 (-e BC ; D †).

hèlpyng, 2635 (-e BC).

¹ Supply [*yet*] in D.

långwysshÿng, 3083 (-syngē B, -syng C).

herÿngē, 3188.¹

thònkÿngē 4394 (D †).

wèpyngē, 5237 (-ing *subst.* † D).

dispùtyngē, 5746.

schaùnyngē †, 6918 C (changed *p. p.* ABD).

Note 1.—In 309 the accent is perhaps on the first syllable ; in 2108, perhaps on the second.

Note 2.—In *this fòrknowyng[ē] wyse*, 79 A (-e BC), the sounding of -e is due to the definite construction (see § 59). This is the only case in the *Troilus* in which -e is sounded in the present participle in the interior of the verse (cf. 7804 † C, 7951 † A, 8098 (read *hawynge [vn]to* ; G, Cp., and Harl. 2392 have *vnto*). Cf. IV, V, notes, below.

V. Before vowels.

For -ÿngē, cf. 1705,² 4691, 4747, 4755, 5404, 5502, 5951, 7075, 7804, 7975.

For -ÿng, cf. 65, 908,³ 1055, 4542, 4750, 5099, 5116.

For -ÿngē, with the accent on the preceding syllable (as, flètyngē), cf. 1138, 1640, 2789, 3534, 3982, 4210, 4624, 4967, 5491, 5913, 6387, 6430,⁴ 6758, 7188,⁴ 7502, 7571, 7697, 8033, 8135, 8173, 8175 (hèrkēnyngē).

For -ÿng, with the accent on the preceding syllable (as, byhòldyng), cf. 9, 101, 186, 547, 631, 2024, 3348, 4395, 4693, 7386, 7604, 7719, 8020.

Note.—In 7333, *and* (after *konnyng*) restores the metre : ACDG omit *and*, BCp John's have it. 7804 C is to be corrected by the insertion of *ay*.

V. Before h (in *his*, *hym*, *here* (acc., poss. sg., poss. pl.), *how*, *hound*).

For -ÿngē, cf. 2900,⁵ 4381, 5819, 6066, 6836, 7048.

For -ÿng, cf. 3359, 4789, 4905, 5025, 5764.

For -ÿngē, with the accent on preceding syllable, cf. 318, 1157, 1738, 2893, 5374 C, 5377, 8123.

For -ÿng, with the accent on preceding syllable, cf. 384, 3004, 3606.

Note.—In 5951 C, *makyngē here* (hic) should be corrected.

§ 121. The Perfect Participle of Weak Verbs ends in the *Troilus* in -ed, -ēd, -d, -t. (Cf. Child, § 62 ; ten Brink, §§ 163, 166-9, 176, 180-3.)

Instead of -ed, C and D often have -id or -yd, and so occasionally B, For -id, -yd in A, see, for example, 182, 308, 1004, 6894. B has

¹ In A read *theffect for the feyth*.

² Old-style figures indicate that the accent may stand on the preceding syllable.

³ In A, supply [make] before *hem*.

⁴ 9-syl. verse.

⁵ Old-style figures indicate that the accent may stand on the preceding syllable.

woundud in 1618 f. C sometimes shows *-it* : as, *gydit*, 569 (cf. 558, 987, 1438, 1707, 2705, 4075, 6707 f, 6709 f, 7548); cf. *woundet*, 1618 f C. For *-ede*, *-de*, *-te*, see notes 1, 2, below.

Perfect participles rhyme usually with each other or with words that have no *-e*. Very rarely a perfect participle is found rhyming with the preterite of a verb : the only examples in the *Troilus* are,—

excused *p. p.*, 2164 f, *rh.* acused *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*

vntormentid, 1004 f, *rh.* assentyd *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (or possibly *p. p.* †).

y-shette *p. p.*, 3075 f, *rh.* lette *n.*, *rh.* sette *ind.* 3 *sg.*

bente *p. p.*, 4702 f, *rh.* mente 3 *pl.*, *rh.* wente 3 *pl.*

spradde *p. p.*, 6084 f, *rh.* he hadde.

whette *p. p.*, 8123 f, *rh.* mette 3 *pl.*

In the last four cases the participles are in the plural (see §§ 67. e, 68).

In 1123 B, 2175 C, 7561 A, the reading should be corrected (see notes 1, 2 below).

Note 1.—C, which is especially fond of the ending *-ede* in the preterite, not infrequently extends this termination erroneously to the participle : cf., for examples,—*ed(e)* in C 1509, 1907, 2119, 3467, 3931, 4111, 5407, 5878, 5900, 5945, 6528, 8062; *-id(e)*, 4237 C; *-ed(e)*, C 299, 1907, 6894; *-ed(e)*, C 648 f, 3285 f; *-id(e)*, 316 f C. Cf. also *rowed(e)*, 962 f B; *diseded(e)*, 3285 f B. Even A is not free from this spurious *-e* : thus,—*pronounced(e)*, 4875 A; *formed(e)*, 7180 A; *falsed(e)*, 7419 A; cf. 1906 A, 7458 A. In all cases this *-e* is of course purely a scribe's caprice and never pronounced. Similarly *-de* is occasionally written for *-ed* (as, *arayde*, 1285 B, l. *arayed*; cf. 646 B, 3383 B, 4062 B, 4289 D, 7612 f B), or for *-d* (as, *adradde*, 1200 f, l. *adrad*; *ferde*, 1209 B, l. *ferd*, etc.). In a few cases, however, the plural of a monosyllabic participle in *-d* ends in *-ddē* (see §§ 67, e, 68). *Fledde*, 7561 f A (: *bledde ind.* 3 *sg.*) should be preterite indicative.

Note 2.—The ending *-te* instead of *t* is found again and again in one MS. or another, as a comparison of MSS. in the places cited below (I.-VIII.) will show (see, e. g., 1237, 1670, 6051, 6909). Even A is not free from this spurious *-e* : thus,—*hath sent(e) after*, 6643 AB (-t CD). In all cases, however, the *-e* is clearly a scribe's fashion or whim, except in a few instances where it is used to denote the plural of a monosyllabic participle (see the cases under §§ 67. e, 68, above). Bad readings are,—*shente p. p.* (: *wente pret.* 3 *sg.*), 1123 B (should be *shent* : *went pres.* 3 *sg.*), and *schette p. p.* (: *sette pret.* 3 *sg.* : *lette pret.* 3 *sg.*), 2175 C (should be *pret.* 3 *sg.*).

Examples.

In the following lists (I.-X.) variants are seldom registered; and, except in a few instances, no record is made of the initial letter of the word that follows the participle.

I. Anglo-Saxon verbs of the First Conjugation (cf. § 99).

afered, 967 f, 3324 f (aferd D); [-e]d, 1691 ([-e]d(e) B, -ed? C, aferd D); afèrjd, 1209 † C (ferd A, ferd(e) B; D †).

agast, 715, 1396, 3579 (agarst A), 3938, 6306, 7256. (Inf. agaste, 1986 f.)

agilt, 4299 f, 4923 f; agylt, 8047.

beleued.—cf. mysbeleued, *adj.*, 3680 AB.

bente, *pl.*, 4702 f AB (-t D) (: mente 3 *pl.* : wente 3 *pl.*).

blent, 2828.

bought, 4953 f, 7328 (bout(e) D); ybought, 810 f, 4161 f (bought D).

brought, 424, 915, 1303, 3088, 3149, 3611, 3980 f, 4465, 4954 f, 7924; brough[t], 7279 (-t BCD); ybrough[t], 6466 f (-t B, brought D; C †); ybrought, 4441, 6374.

yburyed (*trissyl.*), 2396.

dight, 4615 f.

dreynt, 7866.

dwelt, 7074 (dwellyd C, duellid † *ind.* D).

eched, 4171.

felt, 25, 27, 2851, 2884, 4125; feled, 5646 AB (-id D).

ferd (*faréd*), 5756, 7721.

ferd, see *afèred*, *forfered*.

for-fèrèd. This may be the right reading in 6073 (*so* Cp.; for ferèd A, for ferdè || out B, for fer C †, for dredè || out D). [§ 135, III. 1, n 1.]

fulfild, 1717; fulfilled, 5853 (-filld B, -fyld C).

heled, 1082, 4054, 5098.

hent, 509.

herd, 197, 750, 754, 969, 1002, 1186, 2051, 2537, 2632, 2953, 3340, 3395, 5007 (hard(e) B), 5329, 6113, 6809, 6931, 6992, 7086, 7343, 7974.

hèrièd,¹ 4098; heryed (*dissyl.*), 4599 (y-herid(e) D), 4655; yhered, 2058 (yheried BD, i-heried C); iheried, 2849; yheryed, 4646.

hid, 618, 5158, 5972 (hidd(e) B, hed C, hiddè † in D).

yknet, 4576 f.

kyst,—vnkyst, 809.

lad, 872, 6757; led, 1638.

laft, 4180 f (left(e) E, last † C), 4943 f (left C, laffte D), 6123 f (left C, laft(e) D); ylaft, 4889 f (ileffte D, ilaste † C).

lered, 3248 f (lernyd † C); ylered, 969 f.

let, 1179 f, 3559, 7665 (lettid C).

leyd, 2048, 2630, 3529 f, 5845 (berid † D).

met, 1237, 4523 f; imet, 1671 f.

myssed, 3379.

plyght, 3624 f, 6272; plight, 5107 † f D.

queynt, 4975, 6092, 6906.

¹ *Heryed* is dissyllabic in all the examples except the first.

red, 8160; yred, 5461.

yrent, 8017.

reyned,—byreyned, 5834 f (be-reigned D).

sent, 105, 2399, 2783, 3329 f, 6051, 7785; ysent, 6834.

set, 643, 1670 f, 2878, 3182, 3328, 4213, 4330 (i-set B, schet C), 4788, 4986, 5837, 6040, 6103; yset, 4573 f, 4846, 5336. beset, 521, 879, 1919 f (y-sette D); byset, 4255; biset, 898. But,—sette, *pl.*, 1166 A (sete B, sate *pret.* 3 *pl.* D).

shent, 1123 f (y- D), 4301 A, 4741 † D.

shet, 2000 † D (hust ABC), 6897 (shitt D); schett(e), 2175 f C; schitt, 3936 D (hust ABC); byshet, 3444 (beshit D). But,—yshette, *pred. pl.*, 3075 f (y-chette B, schette C, y-shet D) (: lette *n.* : sette *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*).

ysought, 4159 f (isout C). vnsought, 809 f.

sped[de], *pl.*, 2039 (spedde BC; D?).

spilt, 4925 f.

spradde, *pl.*, 6084 f (: he hadde).

stynt, 3948.

tariet (*dissyl.*), 2824, 7499, 7712.

thought, 5204, 5216. bithought, 1310.

told, 197 † A, 1381, 1760, 1780 f, 2370, 3350, 3638, 3846, 4039, 4592, 6159, 6687, 7806; told(e), 913 f AB (-d CD), 1220 A (-d BCD), cf. 7463. ytold, 4803.

tyd, 900, 1309, 1549.

wend, 5046 (went C), 8045.

went, 1681 † f D, 5597 f, 6909, 7100 A, 8171 f A (-e B); ywent, 6807 f (wente B, went CD); myswent, 633 f.

whette, *pl.*, 8123 f AB (whett D) (: mette 3 *pl.*).

wrought, 578 f (y-wrogth B), 1662 f, 1757 f, 4132, 4345 f, 5758, 7530 f.

II. Old Norse verbs of the First Declension (cf. § 100).

brent, 7873 (brend C); ybrend, 4739 (brent D †, brent(e) B), 6672 (brent CD).

fletted, 7907 f (kyttid † C¹, flitted D).

hit, 867 (hurt † C).

reysed, 7834 f.

hright, 6683 (schriht C).

trusted, 1499 (tristed B, trustid C, trustyd D); mystrusted, cf. 1516.

¹ *fittid* in the next line in C.

III. Anglo-Saxon and Old Norse verbs of the Second Conjugation
(cf. § 101).

answered, 4807 (-swerd(e) B, -swerid C, -swerd D);¹ answerēd, 3383
(-id CD, -swerde † B).

ybathed, 5477.

ybedded, 6709 f.

blyssyd, 308 (blissed B, blessed C, blessid D).

vnbrydled, 3271 (-deled B, -deleid CD).

called, 394, 548, 874, 1093, 2502, 3775, 7814.

cast, 2474 f, 2938, 8059; outcast, 6978; forn-cast, 3363.

cleped, 66, 5424; -id, 548 † D; ycleped, 5166.

clothed, 156.

cursed, 4996; acursed, 4913, 4294.

fetered, 4768 AB (fetrid D).

fysshed, 1413 (fichid C).

gladed, 987.

hameled, 2049 (-id C, lessid † D).

[h]alwed, 3110 (halowed B, halwid C, halowid D).

hanged, 1438; an-honged, 2705.

lernyd †, 3248 f C (*l. leryd*).

loked, 4002.

lost, see V., below.

loued, 500, 1501; iloued, 594 (-id D, loued † C); beloued, 131 (-id C,
-yd D).

ilyssed, 1082.

maked, (i.) 1193 (-yd C, made D). (ii.) ymaked †, 4576 (ymasked
BCp., -id CD); in 2567, And shortly *mude* eche of hem his fo
(makes B, mad C), we should clearly read *maked* (with Cp. and
John's).

mad, maad, (i.) 251, 553, 904, 3100, 3681, 7926; mad(e), 3145 (mad
C), 3377 (mad his C †, mad(e) his D). mad, (ii.) 2956 (maad B),
5139, 5540 (mad the C); mad(e), 7900 (y-mad(e) BD, mad C);²
mad(e) haluendel, 6698. In most of the cases cited B and D read
mad(e).

opned, 3311 (openyd CD).

played, 2325 (pleyed C, pleyd D).

put, 1698, 1851, 2191, 3363.

raft, 7621 (reft(e) D); reft, 7623 (raft C, raft(e) D). byraft, 4182 f

¹ In D, read *ben* for *hem*.

² In B *ymalē leche* = *ymad a leche*.

- (-reft(e) D), 4887 f, 4890, 4945 f (bereft C, berafft(e) D), 6122 f (beraft(e) D).
 shadwed, 1906 (-wed(e) [wel] A).
 shamed, 8090; ashamed, 2132.
 shewed, 4690, 7810; -eð, 7812 (-ið D, -ið C); yshewed, 7614.
 sorwed, 5545.
 spared, 6567.
 sperid, 6894 (-ed BD, -ed(e) C).
 thonked, 1935, 4451; -eð, 517 (-ëd B, -yð C, -ið D); ythonked, 4664.
 trowed, 5045, 8041.
 twyght, 5234 f.
 warned, 4511.
 wedded, 6707 f, 7338.
 wondred, 1277 (-id D, -derd C).
 wont, woned, wonted. (a) wont, (i.) 183, 2605 (C(?)), 4975 (*om.* † B; C(?)), 5443 (woned C), 5788, 6909, 7023, 7025; men was wont, 5528 (were wonę C). (ii.) 510 (-yð C), 6982, 8073; wont here (*poss. sg.*), 5416 (-yt † was C).—(b) woned, (i.) 901 (wone (?) C), 1485, 4378, 4553, 4697, 4729. (ii.) 3397 (-t BCD).—(c) as it wonted is to done, 6640 (wonte ? B, wone ? C, wonte ? D). For *woned* = *dwelt*, see 276 f (-yð CD) (: *astoned p.p.*).—In most of the cases above cited (a—b) C has *wone* (monosyllabic), B *wont(e)*, and D *wont(e)* or *wont*.
 wounded, 1618 f, 1711.

IV. Anglo-Saxon verbs of the Third Conjugation (cf. § 102).

- had, 1503, 1504, 2943, 5057 f, 5153, 6493, 7119, 7691.
 lyued, 5755; ilyued, 7296.
 seyð, 611, 740, 905, 935, 969, 1129, 1131, 1467, 1475, 1509, 1687, 1955, 2768, 3173, 3531 f, 3778, 3788, 4054, 4459, 4656, 5573, 6078, 7102, 7639, 8132; seyð(e), 5833.

V. Verbs originally strong (cf. § 103).

- adrad, 1200 f (adradde C) (: be ye mad); ydrad, 4617.
 fled, 87, 3933, 5530; yfled, 5323. In 463 *fled[de]*, pl., rhymes with *bredde*, pret.; *fledde*, 7561 A, should be preterite.
 hight, 1577, 5107 f (be- C, plight D), 6289 f; yhlight, 6904 f; byhlight, -hyght, 6717 f (hight D), 7467 f.
 lost (cf. A.S. *gelosod*), (i.) 462 (D †),¹ 809, 3140 (C †), 3937, 4108 (lorę C), 4268, 4606, 4949, 5068 (-t(e) D), 5230 (-t(e) D), 6129 (-t(e) D), 6783, 8008 (-t(e) D); ylost, 5945 (-t(e) BD); förlost,

¹ Supply [wot] in C.

5418 (soore † lorn(e) D). (ii.) lost, 2824, 5040 (-t(e) B),¹ 6244, 7069; forlòst, 3122 (-t(e) B, fardon(e) † D)²; lost haue, 7001 (-t(e) D), 7766 (-t(e) D); lost held, 4635 (lorn hade C, lorn had D).

lorn, (i.) 373 f (-n(e) B, borne † D); cf. 3918 f, 3943 f, 4065 f, 4483 f, 6141 f, 7808 f; ylorn, 5912 f (ilorne D, bore † D). (ii.) 5621 (-n(e) B), cf. 6275; lorn hade, 4635 C (lorn had D, lost held AB). He wend it *lost* he thoughte he nas but *lorn*, 3918 (lost . . . lorn(e) BD, lost . . . forlorn(e) C). He seyde (seid D) he nas but lor[e]n (lorne G) waylawey, 5619 ABD Cp. (not in C; He seide I am but lorn so weylaway John's).

lore, 4108 C (lost ABD); forlore, 6386 f (fore † B).

Rhyme words.—born *p.p.* (373, 3918, 3943, 4065, 5912), sworn *p.p.* (6141), torn *p.p.* (6141), byforn (373, 3918, 4065, 5912, 7808), toforn (4483), thorn (3943), more *n.* *A.S. more,-u* (6386), byfore (6386).

rewed, 5803.

rowed, 962 f.

siked, 7101.

VI. Verbs of Germanic origin not found in Anglo-Saxon.

awhaped, 316 f.

bystowed, 960 f.

bywarded, 636 f.

gert, 7408 C (hurt A, hirt(e) B, hurt(e) D); thourgh girt, 5289 (thurgh gird(e) D).

grounded, 6334.

hust, 2000 (shet D), 3936 (schitt D).

smytted, 7908 f.

stokked, 3222.

twynned, 5138, 5450, 7042.

vntÿd, 1837 (-teyd B, onteyed C).

VII. Romance and Latin verbs with participle in -t (cf. § 104).

abayst, 2936 (abassèd C, abasshìd D), 3964 (baist(e) B, abaschìd D).

Cf. abaysshed, 4075 (abaysed B, abasschit C; D †).

caught, 214 (caut C), 557, 2027, 2267, 2357, 7066; kaught, 4049, 4768; ycaught, 1668 (caght D, lauht C),³ cf. 534.

hurt, 1080, 7408 (gert C).

quyt, 334, 529, 1327 f, 3861, 4068.

combèst, 3559 (-bust B, cumbrid † CD).

enhàbyt, 5105 (-it B, enabit(id) C, an habit(e) D).⁴

¹ Supply [how] in D.

² Supply [y-] in CD.

³ Read [y]wonne in A.

⁴ Read her[te] in A.

èxecùt, 3464.

vncircumscrip̄t, 8228 (-t(e) D).

VIII. Romance and Latin verbs with participle in -ed (cf. § 105).
 recouèred, 37 ; couèred, 2873 A delibèred, 4873 B (-uèryd C,
 (-id D, couerd B). -uèrid D ; A †).
 apeyred, 38 f. medèlid, 5001 C (medled B,
 plesed, 247 f. medlid D ; A †) ; cf. ymedled,
 by-iaped, 531 ; cf. 318 f. 3657.
 astonyed (*trisył.*), astoned, 1512, suffred, 5211 (-fèrid C).
 1688, 3931, 8091. eschewed, 5740.
 disposed, 1767. assembled, 5920 (-bèlyd C).
 considered, 2375, 3765, 3827, ypreysed, 7836 f.
 5933 (-sidred D), 7711. depeynted, 7962 f.
 delyuèred, 3065.

Cf. also 85 f, 87 f, 249, 274 f, 1274, 1447, 1690, 1710, 1765 f, 1872, 1924 f, 1925 f, 2164 f, 2166 f, 2262, 2272, 2467, 2477, 2588, 2811, 3170 f, 3171 f, 3247 f, 3263 f, 3265 f, 3287 f, 3288 f, 3366, 3622, 3875, 4026 f, 4028 f, 4376, 4653, 4700, 4730, 4892, 4929, 4937, 4955 f, 4956 f, 5215, 5221 f, 5222 f, 5301 f, 5303 f, 5304 f, 5455, 5470, 5487, 5637, 5670, 5715, 5766, 5832 f, 5924, 5959, 6186, 6310, 6514, 6540, 7076, 7123, 7191, 7270, 7347, 7482, 7610 f, 7612 f, 7698, 7702, 7741, 7877, 7905 f, 7960 f, 8046, 8073, 8084 f, 8085 f, 8143, 8179, etc., etc.

Note.—*Passen*, pret. *paste*, *passed* (§ 102), has p.p. *passed*, *ypassed* ; see 24, 2180, 4241, 4249, 4470, 6838, 7044, 7109.

IX. Roman participles in -ed (syncopated).

turnèd, 4242 C (tornèd B, tournèd AE).

crièd, 5249 (cryèd B, cryèd C).

purueyèd, 5668 (-uyèd D) ; pùrueyèd (*or* purueyèd ?), cf. 5717.

But,—puruey[ë]d, 5718 (-ed B) ; purueyèd, 5670, 5714 (-[e]d D).
 enlùmynèd, 6911 (-yd C, -èd BD).

Cf. also 992 C, 997 C, 2082 C, 2634 C, 6952 D, 7673 C, etc.

X. Adjectives in -ed.

Of adjectives formed from nouns by means of the participial termination -ed, the following will serve as examples :—

feythed, 1000 (fichid † C).	benched, 1907.
sucred, 1469.	sonded, 1907.
helmed, 1678.	fethèred, 2011.
rayled, 1905.	Cf. also §§ 57. b, 71.

Note 1.—It is of course impossible to draw a hard and fast line between such adjectives and genuine participles : *ytressed*, 7173 ; *ypleynted*, 7960 f.

Note 2.—The prefix *y-*, *i-* (A.S. *ge-*) is common in the perfect participles of both native and borrowed verbs: see the lists above (I.—X.) and cf. *ȳclosed*, 2053; *ȳplesed*, 3288; *ȳdarted*, 4902; *ȳformed*, 4977; *ȳpleyned*, 6350; *ȳserued*, *ȳserued*, 6800, 8084 f; etc., etc. In cases like *wyse ȳlered*, 969 f (*wyse lered* B Cp., old[e] *lerid* D; C †), where the word preceding the participle ends in *-e*, it is not always easy to determine whether the scribe has carried over the *-e* to the participle, or whether the *y-* is Chaucer's own (cf. 1260, 5945, 6637 (adj. *sene*), 7109, etc.).

§ 122. The Perfect Participle of Strong Verbs ends in the *Troilus* in *-en*, *-en*, *-n*, *-e*, *-e* (cf. Child, § 61; ten Brink, § 196).

Instead of *-en* C usually has *-yn*: so often D, and occasionally B. *-in* is also now and then found. Variants of this kind are commonly disregarded in lists I.—IV., below. Examples are,—*ȳbetyn*, 741 f D; *holdyn*, 1326 D, 4516 CD, 8043 C; *brostyn*, 2061 CD; *comyn*, 2528 CD, 2904 D, 3599 CD, 4397 BC; *foldyn*, 5021 f CD; *brokyn*, 5809 BCD, 7567 C; cf. 86 f CD, 205 f CD, 1151 D, 1661 f D, 1680 CD, 2020 f CD, 2068 f C, 2177 CD, 2938 CD, 3095 f CD, 3292 CD, 3298 C, 3533 CD, 3576 CD, 3732 f D, 4060 C, 4739 D, 4777 D, 5375 C, 5606 C, 5918 C, 6032 C, 6077 CD, 7234 C, etc. For *-in*, see *dryvin*, 2068 D; *holpin*, 2404 C, 2526 C, 4112 C. *Writon* occurs once, 7666 B.

Note.—Instead of *-n*, *-n(e)* occurs now and then (see especially V., below), but this is very rarely the case in A.

The examples are arranged as follows,—I. *-en* before consonants; II. *-en* in rhyme; III. *-en* before vowels; IV. *-en* before *h*; V. syncope, *-en* or *-n*; VI. *-e* before consonants; VII. *-e* in rhyme; VIII. *-e* (elided) before vowels; IX. *-e* (elided) before *h*; X. apocope of *-e*; XI. hiatus; XII. the perfect participles of *sleen*; XIII. the perfect participles of *seen* (including the adjectives *sene*, *ȳsene*).

I. *-en* before consonants:

holden trewely, 1326 (*holde* C)¹; h. was, 4516; h. me, 8043.

foryeuen be, 1680 (*-3ouyn* C)².

brosten ben, 2061³.

holpen what, 2526 (*-[e]* D)⁴; h. there, 4112 (*-en † hem* D); h. for, 5918 (*helpyn* C, *helped* D).

comen was, 2528⁵, 4397; c. to, 2904 (*-e* C); c. benedicite, 3599; c.

Troilus, 6645 (*-e* CD); icomen was, 4510 (*comyn* D †).

yolden chere, 2938 (*i-3olden* B).

boden go, 3533 (*bedyn* C).

¹ In B supply [no].

² In D supply [am].

³ In AB read *wel* for *wole* (*wol*) I.

⁴ D is 9-syl.

⁵ In C read *which* for *with*.

shapen was, 3576 ; forshapen was, 1151.
 founden by, 4777 (-e B, -e C) ; f. salue, 5606 ; f. were, 7965 (-e D, fonde C).¹
 fallen was, 5375 D (-yn C) (stanza not in AB).
 broken (*adj.*) voys, 5809 ; b. that, 7567.
 wreten wel, 6077 (writen B, writyn C) ; ywriten nor, 7422 (wretyn † C, ywretyn D).
 faren syn, 6829 (-e C, farne l. -en B).
 woxen lesse, 6981 (waxen B, waxe CD)² ; w. was, 7190 (waxen C, waxe D) ; w. wellys, 7737 (waxen C, wexen D) ; ywoxen was, 6638 (ywaxen D, wexen † *inf.* C), 7071 (iwaxen C, waxen D).
 wopen for, 7087 (wepid C, wepte † D) ; bywopen thus, 5578 (-wepen B, -wepyn CD).³
 knowne were, 7944 (-e C).
 ytaken for, 8128 (taken B, had[de] taken D).

II. -en in rhyme :

spoken, 86 f (C †), 205 f.
 wroken, 88 f, 207 f (ywrokyn D).
 broken, 89 f (-e C), 208 f (ybrokyn D).
 ybeten, 741 f (beten A, ibete C).
 dreuen, 1661 f (dryuen B, dryvyn D) ; dryuen, 2068 f B (dreuyn C, dryvin D, (y)dreuen A).
 schryuen, 1664 f (screuyn B).
 ryden, 2018 f (redyn C).
 abyden, 2020 f.
 becomen, 3095 f.
 shaken, 3732 f (-e C).
 shapen, 4082 f (y- BD, [i]schape C).
 ywryen, 4293 f.
 folden, 5021 f.
 yeomen, 6875 f (come C).
 nomen, 6877 f (-e C).

Rhyme words.—Other participles in *-en*, and I. Infinitives : lyuen (1661, 1664, 2068), comen (3095), maken (3732), escapen (4082), byholden (5021), colde[n] (5021), spyen (4293) ; II. *treten ind. 3 pl.* (741), *yeden ind. 3 pl.* (2018, 2020) ; III. *eyen n. pl.* (4293). Observe the rhyme *yeden : ryden : abyden*.

III. -ën before vowels :

clomben, 215 (clumbyn D).

¹ Supply [*that*] in AC, [*why*] in D ; otherwise the line is a disagreeable 9-syl. verse.

² In BCD perhaps infinitive.

³ In D read *ne* for *you*.

thurgh shoten, 325.¹

yolden, 801 (zuldyn C);² cf. 5455 † C.

founden, 1325 (-ë C, -[ën] D), 1374 (-[ë] C, -[ën] D), 2596 (fonden C, found[e] † me † D), 4060 (fonden B), 6032.

shapen, 2177, 4272.

comen, cf. 2255, 7286.

holpen, 2404 (-[en] D).

wreten, 3292 (writen C, writyn D)³; cf. 4198.

spoken, 3298 (-ë D).

taken, 4712 (D †), 7234.

Cf. also 3683, 3853 (copen), 4734, 5074, 5280, 5616, 6431, 7268, 7377, etc.

IV. -ën before *h* :

taken hede, 501.⁴

dronken hadde, 4232 (drenken A).

holden haue, 4762 (-d † my D).

yeomen hym, 5028 (comyn C, icommyn D).

yeuen here (l. *hire* A.S. *hýr*, with B), 5168 (yoven D).

yknowen here (*acc.*), 5381 (knowyn C, knowen D).

vnbroyden hangen, 5479.⁵

a swollen herte, 6564 (sorweful † C).

comen heder, 6847 (C †).

songen hadde, 7008 (sungen had[de] D, songë † also C).

wonnen han, 7353 (-en † the D).

wreten here (*dat.*), 7666 (-on B, -e to C, -yn † to D).

woxen helle, 7739 (waxen C, waxë D).

shapen hadde, 7914 (-ë C, -en † D).

V. Syncope :

shorn, 222 f (-ne B, yshorn D) (: corn *n.* : byform).

born, (i.) 375 f (*in* vp born) (-ne BD), 897 f (-ne B), 1228 f (bor D), 1653 f (-ne BC); cf. 2354 f, 3146 f, 3915 f, 3945 f, 4064 f, 4438, 4994, 4996, 5913 f, 7053, 7063 (-yn C), 8062; born(e), 6518 f ABD (born C). (ii.) cf. 4265, 4960, 5407, 7074 (-yn C), 7320; born haue, 7639 (-n(e) D).—yborn, 1383 f (-ne B, ibore C); yborn al, 382 (-n(e) B, iborn C, [y]born D).

Rhyme words.—lorn, ylorn *p.p.* (375, 3915, 3945, 4064, 5913), sworn, isworn, sworn(e) *p.p.* (897, 1383, 1653), byform (375, 1228, 2354, 3146, 3915, 4064, 5913, 6518), toform (1383), thorn *n.* (2354, 3945).

sworn, (i.) 899 f (-ne B), 3154, 6143 f (-ne B, isworn C, isworne D);

¹ In D supply [thurgh].

² In C read *that* for *for* for *therefore*.

³ In B read *while* for *whiche*.

⁴ In D supply [neuer].

⁵ In D supply [al].

sworn(e), 1384 f AB (swore C, sworn D); swo[rn], 5638 f (sworne B, sworn D); isworn, 1655 f (sworne B, isworne C, sworn D), 6646 f (sworne BD, sworȳn C).

Rhyme words.—born, yborn *p.p.* (899, 1384, 1655), lorn *p.p.* (6143), torn *p.p.* (6143), by-, toforȳn (1384, 5638, 6646).
torn, 6144 f (-ne D) (: lorn *p.p.* : sworn *p.p.*); to-torn, 5020 f (-ne CD) (: byforȳn).

fallen yn, 555 (falle BC).

growȳn vnder, 1488 (grow B, wox † D).

foundȳn àlwey, 3837 (found D).

yoldȳn ywys, 4053 (3olde BC, 3oldȳn D).

yeuȳn vs, 5633 (yeue D).

spokȳn as, 5895 (i- B, speke C).

comȳn and, 6867 (-yn C); cf. 6560 C (?).

vnknowȳn of, 7942 (-knowe C); cf. 6910 † D.

Note 1.—C is fond of -yn when ABC have -e (elided) : see VIII., below.

Note 2.—For *lorn*, *ylorn*, see § 121, V.; for *slayn*, see XII., below; for *seyn*, see XIII., below.

VI. -e before consonants (not *h*):

come was, 155 (-en B, -yn CD).

to-hewe was, 1723 (-en B, -yn CD).

knowe be, 1877 A (yknowen B).

smet[e] be, 2230 (-e C, smyten B, smytyn D).¹

holde fully, 2383 (-en B, -[e] D).

vnbore dar, 3111 A (-e BD).

ywrete ben, 4535 (wryten B, wretyn C, writyn D).

bete doun, 4739 (betten B, drawyn † D).

vnderstonde god, 8161 (-e B, -en D †).

VII. -e in rhyme :

ybete, 2025 f ([i]bette B, i-betyn C), 2314 f (-tte B), 4011 f (-bette B, bete C).

blowe, 4829 f (i- BC, yblow D); yblowe, 384 f (-w D).

bonde, 255 f (-d D), 2308 f; bounde, 859 f (-d D); vp bounde, 3359 f (-d D).

bore, 2497 f. (Cf. also VI., above).

i-, ycome, 3446 f (come BCD), 6434 f; ouercome, 243 f (ouȳr- C), 5731 f (-com D, ouȳrecome B). For *welcome*, see § 2.

idrawe, 3695 f (ydrowe B); out drawe, 5888 f (drawe † CD); with-drawe, 5548 f (-drare † C).

¹ A has *be smet* for *smet[e] be*.

dreue, 6752 f (dryue B, dryf *inf.* † D).

bygete, 970 f (be- C).

be-, bygonne, 1133 f, 1864 f, 2045 f, 2319 f, 2669 f, 3577 f; bygon[n]e, 3121 f (-nne B). [Var. CD -gunne; C -gune; D -gun.]

falle, 3701 f (yfaH D), 4933 f (-H D), 6615 f, 6912 f (-H D).

yfare, 3419 f, 5831 f (fare C).

folde, 5909 f (-yn CD), 6351 f, 7603 f.

founde, 3360 f (-d D), 5290 f, 6327 f, 7197 f (y- B); y-founde, 5256 f (stound † n. D).

graue, 2945 f, 4341 f.

ygrounde, 4705 f (-d D).

holde, 4101 f (y- D †), 5079 f (-en B; C †), 6937 f, 7329 f (D †); byholde, 7615 f (be- CD).

knowe, 638 f (-w D), 5145 f (y- B, i- CD); vnknowe, 4830 f (-w D).

nome, 3448 f, 6553 f (y- B, i- D); ynome, 242 f (nome C).

ronge, 7425 f (runge D); runge(n), 1890 f (ronge B, (i)runge C, yrung D).

roune, 2549 f; yronne, 1992 f, 2926 f ([y]- C^e, yrun D).

ishape, 3253 f (schape C).

yshore, 5658 f (yshoor D).

shoue, 3868 f (sowe † D).

songe, 8160 f (sunge D); y-, isonge, 5461 f, 7422 f (ysong B).

sowe, 385 f (-w D, sawe B).

ystonde, 7975 f (istounde C); withstonde, 253 f (-d D), 5960 f (-stande D); vnderstonde, 5958 f (-stande *inf.* † D), 6067 f, 7977 f.

itake, 4040 f.

ythrowe, 4668 f (-w D), 5144 f; ouerthrowe, 5047 f (-w B), 7823 f.

wonne, 777 f (won D), 2047 f, 2583 f, 2828 f (won D); ywonne, 2321 f, 3122 f ([y]- A, ywunne D), 5977 f (Antenorë wonne = Antenor i-wonne C).

wrie, 3462 f (i- C, ywrye D); ywrye, 6316 f (-wrey D).

y-yeue, 4453 f (iȝeue BC, [i]ȝeue D).

Rhyme words.—Other perfect participles in *-en*, and the following.—I. *nouns*: to the grounde, to grounde (859, 4705), wounde (859, 5256, 5290), hete (970, 2025), sonne (1864, 1992, 2319, 2321, 2669), tunge(n), touge (1890, 5461, 7422, 7425, 8160), in, on honde (2308, 6067, 7975, 7977), strete (2314), iape (3253), frape (3253), hawe (3695), loue (3868), halle (3701), mowe (4668), throwe (5047, 7823), sto[u]nde (5290), eye (6316), cf. welcome (6434, 6553); II. *adjectives*: bare *indef. sg.* (5831), secounde *indef. sg.* (7197), the grete (2314), the olde (5079), donne *pl.* (1992), hye *pl.* (3462), colde *pl.* (4101, 6351), some *pl.* (242, 243, 3446, 3448, 5731), alle *pl.* (3701, 4933, 6615, 6912); III. *adverbs*: fawe (5548), to-fore, to-forn (2497), byfore (5658), wherfore (2497), therfore (5658), aboue (3868); IV. *infinitives*: 970, 2308, 2926, 3419, 3462, 4011, 4040, 4933, 5079,

5731, 5909, 6067, 6327, 6351, 6752, 6937, 7603, 7823; V. *other verb-forms*: *pres. ind.* 1 *sg.*,—trowe (638), haue (2945), leue *vivo* (4453); 1 *pl.* konne (1864); 2 *pl.* konne (777), swete (2025); 3 *pl.* konne (2669); *pres. subj.* 1 *sg.* konne (1133), dye (6316); 2 *sg.* konne (2549, 2583), foryeue (6752); 3 *sg.* saue (2945, 4341); 2 *pl.* yf ye konne (2828, 5977); *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* tolde (7615); 2 *pl.* tolde (7329), sponne (3577).

VIII. -e (elided) before vowels (variants not registered).

Cf. 474 (founde), 530 (iblowe), 616 (vnknowe), 809 (vuknowe), 1163 (come), 1260 (yknowe), 1367 (shape), 2917 (come), 3092 (bigonne; -ę A), 3111 BD (vnbore), 3630 (come), 3634 (come), 3844 (founde), 3948 (foryeue), 4293 (stole), 4642 (come), 4719 (yeue), 5207 (yeue), 6321 (founde), 6373 (molte), 6952 (ywroke), 7254 (take)¹, 7394 (come).

Note.—In some of these cases syncopated forms occur in B, C, or D: as,—*zeuen*, 5207 B; *forzeuen*, 3948 B; *comen*, 2917 B (-yn C); *comyn*, 3630 C, 3634 C; *founden*, 6321 D; *molten*, 6373 D; etc. Sometimes, too, the ending is omitted altogether: thus,—*com*, 1163 B, 3630 B, 7394 B; *found*, 3844 D; *vnknow*, 616 BD, 809 BD; etc. (cf. *grow*, 1488 B; *wox*, 1488 D). Even A occasionally omits the ending before a vowel: thus,—*wrong*, 5833 ACD (-e B); *hold*, 7066 AB (-e C, -ęn D).²

IX. -e (elided) before *h*:

wonne hym, 28 (D †).

founde his, 3378 (-d D, fonde B, fond C).

come he, 3396.

take here (*dat.*), 3986.

y-yeue hym, 4218 (i-zeue BC, yeue D †).

X. Apocope of -e (before consonants):

Genuine cases are rare. Such are perhaps,—

fond no, 2263 (-ę B).

come this, 6560 (-yn C, -ęn D).

Apparent cases occur now and then, but usually disappear on comparison of MSS. Examples are,—

come to, 2198 A.

hold my, 4762 D.

spokę with, 2565 D.

wretę to, 7666 C.

bygonne to, 3092 A.

ybore was, 8013 A.

vnderstonde god, 8161 B.

XI. Hiatus.

Hiatus very rarely occurs, and is of course always easily corrected by adding -n. Examples are,—

boundę in, 663 A (-en B, -yn CD).³

spokę in, 3298 D (-en AB, -yn C).

iboundę in, 4891 A (-yn CD, ybounden B).

brokę alday, 5280 C (-en ABD).

¹ In A read *hen[ne]s*.

² In A supply [I].

³ Supply [*hym*] in C.

songé also, 7008 C (-en hadde AB, sungen had[de] D).

XII. Perfect-participle of *sleen*.

The perfect participle of *sleen* has various forms. The usual form before vowels and consonants is *slayn* (var. D *sleyn*, *slayn(e)*; BD *slayn(e)*; B *sleyn(e)*; C *slain*): cf. 608, 1420, 4301 BCD, 4940, 5860, 6144, 6417, 7299, 7864, 7867 C, 7868, 8170, 8183. For *slay* (p. p.) *yourę self*, 5896 A, read *slayn* (so BC, *slayn(e)* anon D). In rhyme we find,—*slayn*, 5855 f (*slayne* D) (: *desdayn n.*), and *sleyn*, 6590 f (-ne B, *slayn* CD) (: *ayen* AD, *aȝein* B, *aȝen* C); but also *slawe*, 3563 f (-w D) (: *shawe n.*), 5546 f (: *withdrawe p.p.*), 5890 f (: *drawe p.p.*). In 5903 either *slay[e]n* (cf. ten Brink, § 196 : “wohl niemals *slayen*”) or *slawe* must be read in the interior of the verse, —My (Myn C) *selue* (*self* B, *seluyn* C, *silf* D, *selfe* G) I *wolde* (*wolde* I C) *haue* (*han* B, a C) *slayn* (*slawe* C, *slayne* DG) *quod she tho* (too D). Mr. Austin's collation of Cp. and the John's MS. has no note on this line.

XIII. Perfect-participle of *seen*.

seyn, (i.) 174 (*seyen* C)¹, 3063 f (: *ayen* : *fayn*), 7962 (*sen* C, *seyn* [with] B). (ii.) 3902 (*sen* C)², 5624³.—*yseyn* with, 6811 (*sen* C, *seņe* D); *beseyn* that, 2347 (*by-* BD).

seyghen byfore, 5639 A (*seyn* BD); *seyghen* byfore, 5660 A (*seyn(e)* B, *seyn* D).

yseye, 1253 (*yseyn* B, *seyn* CD).

sen at, 6804 C (*wyst* A, *wist(e)* BD).

sene, 3713 f (*seene* B) (: I *wene ind.*), 6637 f (-ee- B, *ysen* D) (: *shene adj. postpos.*), 7259 f (-ee- B) (: *queene*), 8078 f (-ee- B) (: *tene n.*); *sene his*, 8117 (*seen* B, *sen* D †); *seņe*, 3731 (ee- B, *seyn* D), 6394 (*sen* D).

ysene, 700 f ([y]*sene* C, *ysene* D) (: *queene*); *isene*, 6269 f (i-*scene* B, [i]*sene* D) (: *tene n.* : *shene adj. def.*).

Note.—The forms in *-ne* represent the A.S. adjectives *gesene* (*gesyne*): cf. ten Brink, § 148.

§ 123. Præterito-present verbs.

(i.) *wot*, *not*, *oughte*; (ii.) *kan*, *dar*, *thar*; (iii.) *shal*; (iv.) *may*; (v.) *mot*.

I. *wot*.

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. *wot*, *woot*, (i.) 670 (-e) BD⁴, 2087 (-e) BD⁵, 2109 (-e) D †; C †), etc.; (ii.) 1829 (-e) BD), 2525 (-e) D⁶,

¹ In B read *ȝit* for *ȝat*.

² In A supply [a].

³ In D dele (*for*).

⁴ Supply [*for*] in D. ⁵ Supply [*wel*] in A. Cf. 1621.

⁶ Supply [*wel*] in D

2785 (not(e) D, wot [I] C; B †), 5044 (what D, wote *pl.* C), etc.; wot(e), 1960 ABD (wot C)¹.

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. wost, (i.) (ii.) 633 (wyst C)², 717 (-e) B, 721 f (-e B, wyst C), 882 (wyst C), 2451 f (-e B)³, 2493 f (wist C), 2514 (wolt † C; D (?)), 2908 f, 3088 f, 3098, 3141 f, 3181, 4930 (wotist D), 5262 f (-e D, wooste B), 5742 (-e) D, 6281 f (wooste B, wist C, woste D), 6705 (-e) D, wist C), etc. [Var. BD woost; B (633) whost.]—wostow, 588, 775, 781, 851 (wastow B, wyst thou C, wost thow D), 901, 3091. [Var. CD wost thou; D wost thow.]

Rhyme words.—most *adv.* (721, 2451, 2493, 5262, 6281), almost (2908, 3141), best *n.* (3088, 3141), ost *n.* (5262, 6281).

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. wot, woot, (i.) (ii.) 1975 f (wote C) (: hoot *pred. adj. sg.*); cf. 826 (A †), 2080, 2711, etc. B shows less liking for wot(e) and more for woot than in the 1 pers.; C has wot(e) in 807.—for-wòt, 5733 A (fòr-woot B, fòr-witt D).

Pres. Ind. 1 Pl. we wote alle, 5044 C † (*should be singular*).

Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. wetë wel, 1323 AC (-en B, wite D); witë † what, 2737 D.—wotë ye, 3686 (-oo- B, wot C †); wot ye, 3501 (-oo- B, what C, wyte D), 3739 (-e D, whoot B), 5916 (-oo- B, wotë CD); wot your, 3621 (-e D, wetë C); wot that, 1665 (-oo- B, wetyn C, wyte D), 5974⁴; wot the, 2731 (-e D, wetë C), 5576 (wootë B); wot, 2281 f (woote B, he wrote † D) (: not *nescio*), 5923 f (woote B, wote D) (: hot *pred. adj. sg.*).

Pres. Ind. 3 Pl. weten folk, 4860 (witen B, wetyn C, know[e] D); wotyn † that, 7179 C (writen ABD); wot no, 1978 (-e B; D †).

Pret. Ind. 1 Sing. wyste, 3682 f (wist CD) (: vntriste)⁵; wyst I, 1644 (-e B, wiste C, wist D)⁶, 2968 (wiste B, woste C), 3210 (wiste B, wost C, wist D).⁷

Pret. Ind. 2 Sing. wistist thou, 4486 C (but see under *subj.* 2 *sg.*).

Pret. Ind. 3 Sing. wiste, wyste, 811 f (-t D; C †), 3112 (-[e] † D)⁸, 4071 f (-t C), 4095 f, 8028 f (wistt D); -[e] what, 7231 (-e B, *om.* † C); -[e] wel, 8087 (-e D); -e, 565 (-t he D, woste he C)⁹, 4634 (-t D); -t he, 76 (west B, woste C), 301 (-e B, wostë he C)¹⁰, 3367

¹ BD regularly add -e, which is never sounded, however, though false readings sometimes force one either to pronounce it or to emend the verse by a comparison of MSS. (thus, 670 D).

² *Wyst* might be called *pret. subj.* in this line.

³ Protasis.

⁴ Supply [*that*] in C; [*a*] in D.

⁵ “Whi hastow mad Troylus to me vntriste That neuere yet agylte hym that I wyste.”

⁶ Supply [*as*] in D.

⁷ Read *telle* [*me*] in D.

⁸ Supply [*that*] in A.

⁹ Supply [*as*] in D.

¹⁰ But supply [*how*] in C, and read *woste he*.

(-e B, -t D);¹ -e he, 3321 † C; wostë † alle, 3538 C (wist[e] † that D); wist † non, 2646 D.

Rhyme words.—kyste *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (811, 4095), tryste, triste *inf.* (4071, 8028), twyste *n.* (4071).

Pret. Ind. 2 *Pl.* wysten of, 1586 (westen B, wistyn C, wist[en] D) (*indirect question*).

Pret. Ind. 3 *Pl.* wyste, 5824 f (wiste BCD) (: kyste *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*); wist[e] neuere, 6383 (wiste B); wist what, 2646 (wistë B, wostë al C, wist † non *sg.* D).

Pret. Subj. 1 *Sing.* wiste, wyste, 678 f (wist D), 4119 f (wostë C), 4350 (-[e] D, wostë C); -[e], 765 (-e BC), 6285 (-e BD, nyste C); -ë how, 3944 (-[ë] D); wist I, 8104 (-e B, wist † hou D); wist[ë] outrely, 4328 (-ë B, wostë C, wist D).

Rhyme words.—liste *pres. subj.* 3 *sg.* (678), kyste *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.* (4119).

Pret. Subj. 2 *Sing.* Sith I so loth was that thi selfe it wyste, 3211 f (wiste B, wost C †, wist D) (: triste *pres. ind.* 1 *sg.* : lyste *pres. subj.* 3 *sg.*).

Note.—In 4486 C *wistist thou* is used in a subjunctive construction (= if thou didst know). Cp. and John's have *wystistow*; *wistow* ABG, *wist thou* D, which make a disagreeable 9-syl. line and are not grammatical, should be emended (see § 107).

Pret. Subj. 3 *Sing.* wiste, wyste, 3307 (-[e] D, wostë[e] B, wostë C), 4610 f (-t C)² (: liste *pret. subj.* 3 *sg.* : twyste *same*³), 7269 (wostë C); -e, 6005 (-t D); wist he, 5580 (-e BCD); wistë of, 1830 (wostë C, wist D).⁴

Pret. Subj. 2 *Pl.* wyste, 2267 f (wiste BC, wist D) (: lyste *pres. subj.* 3 *sg.*); -e, 1224 (wiste C, wist BD); wiste how, 6280 (wist D).

Inf. wyte, wite, 1397 (wetyñ C, wytyn † D), 3991 (wete C); wete, 6468 (wit as B, wete as D).

Perf. Part. wist, wist, (i.) 513 (-e B), 615 (-e B), 3116 (wost C), 3246 f (-e B) (: lyst *pres. ind.* 3 *sg.* : tryst *n.*), etc., etc. For *wnwist*, *wnwist*, (i.) (ii.) cf. 2594, 3445, 3612, etc.

II. not.

Pres. Ind. 1 *Sing.* not, (i.) (ii.) 410 (wot(e) † D), 1626, 2282 f (note D) (: wot *pres. ind.* 2 *pl.*), 3851, 4320, 5463 (nott D), 6500 (knowe † D), 7530 (knowe † D); cf. 426, 1120, 2291, 2451, 2551, 2963, 4495, 4698, 4842, 6589. [Var. B noot; D not(e).]

¹ Supply [wot] in D.

² 3 *pl.* in E †.

³ *it wyste* † A.

⁴ Al (As D) wolde (wold CD) I that noon (so ABG, no man CD) wyste (wostë C, wist DG) of this thought (-e B). No note in Mr. Austin's collation.

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. nost, (i.) 5304 (wost C, knowest D)¹, 5763 (wost C †², knowest D).

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. not, 800 (noot B, not(e) D).³

Pret. Ind. 3 Sing. nyste, 356 f (-t CD), 4193 f (-t C), 5011, 5341,⁴ 5794 f ((I) nyste D); nyst[e], 6381 (-e B), 7566 (-e B, nist † what D; C †); nyste how, 7145 (-t B †).⁵

Rhyme words.—lyste *pret. subj.* 3 *sg.* (356), kyste *ind.* 3 *sg.* (4193), *ind.* 3 *pl.* (5794), twyste *inf.* (5794).

Pret. Subj. 1 Sing. nyste, 6285 C (wist[e] A, wiste BD).

Pret. Subj. 3 Sing. nyst[e], 7791 (-e † C, nist[e] D); nyste, 494 (*om.* † D).⁶

Note.—The forms *nyst thou* in 4269 C and *nyst(e) thou* in 4965 D are blunders for *nylt thou*.

III. oughte.

Pret. Ind. 1 Sing. ought[e] konne, 647 (ouzte C, me oghte to? D)⁷; ought[e] be, 7710 (auzte C); I ne ought[e] not⁸, 1805 (ne aught[e] B, ne auzte C, I oght[e] not D); oughte I, 7002 (auzte C, ought D); ought half, 5927 (auzte C).⁹

Pret. Ind. 2 Sing. oughtest, 8069; oughtestow, 6908 (auztist thow C, oughtest thou D); oghtist, 649 D. (But see § 107.)

Pret. Ind. 3 Sing. oughte, 649 (*om.* † C, oghtist D), 3106 f (-t D; 3e ouzt *pl.* C),¹⁰ 3325 (-[e] B, auzte † to C, oght † be D), 3423 f (-t D), 3522 f (-t CD), 5805 (-[e] D, hem owen † to B, auzte † to C), 7357 f (-t D, nouzt *adv.* † C), 7919 (-[e] B, auzte C †, aught[e] D), 8006 (-[e] D, auzte † to C)¹¹; cf. 5971. [Var. B aughte; C ouzte, ouzt; D oght.]—ought[e], 710 (auzte † C, oght[e] D), 744 (oughtte B, auzte † C, oght † to D); aught[e], 423 (auzght[e] B, auzte C, oght † euer D).—oughte, 2683 (thouzte † C, oght † thei D), 3832 (-t BD), 5058 (-t BD), 5233 (-t D; aught 3 *pl.* B).¹² [Var. B aughte, aught; C auzte, ouzte; D oght.]—oughte he, 2322 (-t B, auzte C, oght † 3e 2 *pl.* D).—ought (*bef. vowel*), 1691 (aught B, auzte C, oght D).¹³—oughte, 3871 † A (-[e] B, auzte † C, oght[e] D); ought † the, 5971 (aught[e] lasse B, auzte lasse C, ought † the D).—out,¹⁴ 7459 (ought BD, auzte C).

¹ Dele the second (*nat*) in D.

² 9-syl. in C.

³ "If thow thus *deye* and she *not* whi it is." The distinction in sense between the subjunctive *deye* and the indicative *not* in this verse is marked.

⁴ Supply [*So*] in A.

⁵ Supply [*for*] in C. B needs [*hertē*] for the metre.

⁶ Read [*s*]he in C.

⁷ Read *conne* for *come* in C.

⁸ So, rather than *I nē ought nōt*.

⁹ Supply [*to*] in D.

¹⁰ Supply [*do*] in D.

¹¹ Impersonal. Supply [*that*] in D.

¹² In C dele (*Hadde*).

¹³ C is too long.

¹⁴ "It out i-now suffice."

Note.—In 1691, 2683, 5805, 8006, *oughte* is past in sense; in the rest of the cases above cited it is present in sense. In 649, 2683, 3106, 3423, 3522, 5805, 8006, the construction is impersonal with the dative (*the, hym, here, hem oughte*); cf. 647 D (*me ought to?*).

Rhyme words.—wroughte *ind.* 1 *sg.* (3106, 7357), me thoughte *ind.* (3106), bisoughte *ind.* 3 *sg.* (3423), broughte *ind.* 3 *sg.* (3522).

Pret. Ind. 2 pl. oght † 3e, 2322 D; 3e † ouȝt, 3106 f C. (See under *pret. ind.* 3 *sg.*). (In sense of present tense.)

Pret. Ind. 3 Pl. oughte, 1997 f A (aughte B) (: broughte *ind.* 3 *pl.* : thoughte *ind.* 3 *sg.*), 4275 (aughten B, auȝten C, ouȝten D)¹; oughte, 4637 (-t B, ouȝt C, oght D); aught of, 5233 B †; oght † thei, 2683 D.

Note.—In 1997 and 2683 *oughte* is past in sense; in the rest of the cases above cited it is present in sense.

Pret. Subj. 3 Sing. oughte, 7708 (auȝte C, ought D).

IV. *kan*.

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. kan, (i.) (ii.) 11, 459, 492, 718, 1044, 2243, 2530, 2590, 7731; cf. 1635 f, 7304 f, 8132 f. [Var. CD can; B kann(e); D cann(e).]

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. kanst, (i.) (ii.) 511 (can C), 2607,² 2697, 3141, 5154 (ka[n]st B), 7644; cf. 1045 D, 5759 C. [Var. CD canst; D canst(e).]—canstow, 757 (kanstow B, c. thou CD)³; kanstow, 5122 (canstu C, canst(e) thou D).—thow kan wel endite, 7655 (kanst B, canst C, canst(e) D).⁴

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. kan, can, (i.) (ii.) 147, 203, 234 f, 259 (may † D), 3002 (gan † B, 3e can C), 5774, 6120, 6134, 7136 f, 7573; cf. 1291 f, 1459 f, 6357 f. [Var. D cann(e).]—kan(e), 4666 A (kan B, can D).

Pres. Ind. 1 Pl. konne, 1867 f (cunne C, kun D †) (: bygonne *p.p.* : sonne); kon haue, 6481 (kan B, can CD).

Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. konne, 776 f (cunne C, conne D) (: wonne *p.p.*), 2551 f (cunne C, conne D)⁵ (: ronne *p.p.*), 2827 f (kanne B, cunne C, kun D) (: wonne *p.p.*); konne, 985 (kun D, cunne † conseyl C), 1374⁶ (kanne B, cunne C, kun D); can † now, 3002 C; can † don, 5856 C; kan ye, 4405 (can C, kunne † D); kan recorde, 6180 (can C †, canne D).

Pres. Ind. 3 Pl. konne, 1260 f (cunne C) (: sonne), 1971 (donnen † B, cunne C, kun[ne] D), 1974 (kunne C, kun[ne] D), 2672 f (cunne C, kun D) (: bygonne *p.p.* : sonne); konne, 838 (cunne C, kun D),

¹ Supply [*pleyne*] in B, [*the*] in C.

² Supply [*non*] in D.

³ Indirect question.

⁴ Supply [*wel*] in C.

⁵ Supply [*this*] in C.

⁶ Conditional; perhaps subjunctive.

1001 (kun D, cunnyn an C); cunne how, 1921 C (*pret. subj.*? ABD); konne telle, 1980 (kan B, can CD); kan leye, 559 (cunne C, can D); kan not, 1357 (can CD), 2875 (may † D); kan sen, 7476 (can D, c. ouzt *sg.* C)¹; kan a, 6712 (can CD).

Pret. Ind. 1, 3 Sing. koude, kowde, coude, 629 (-[e] D), 798 BC (-[e] D, wolde A), 2163 f (-d D) (: loude *adv.*), 2263 (-[e] D), 2758 (couthe D, koude she B Cp.), 3276 f (: cloude), 3454 (couthe D), 3521 f (-d D) (: loude *adv.*), 3800 (B † D †), 3802 (couthe D), 4110 (couthe C), 4564 (myght[e] D), 5237 (C † (f)), 6452 (couthe B), 6651, 7139; koude, kowde, 193 (couthe C, couth D), 367 (kouth B, coude C, couth wel D),² 660 (coude B, curere † C^c, couth D), 3054 (coude C, couthe D), 3480 (*om.* † B; coude CD),³ 3536 (coude C, coud † wel D), 7110 (coude CD),⁴ 7991 (couthē † wel C; D †); koude he, 1144 (coud D; A †),⁵ 3317 (coude C, couthe D), 4638 (coude C, couthe D), 8092 (coude D, koude † not B); koude his, 665 B (coude C^c, coud D, koude (al) his A); koude here (*gen. sg.*), 5337 (myghte B, myzte C, myght D); koudē he, 4207 (coudē he C, coudē he D; B †).

Pret. Ind. 2 Sing. koudest neuere, 622 (coudest B, coudyst C, coudist D).

Pret. Ind. 2, 3 Pl. koude, 7480 (coude CD); -ē ye, 4200 (coude C; coudē? D); kowde how, 1921 (koude B, couthe D, cunne C) (*subj.* f).

Pres. Subj. 1 Sing. if I konne, 1134 f (kun D) (: begonne *p.p.*).

Pres. Subj. 2 Sing. if that thow konne, 2582 f (cunne C, kunne D) (: wonne *p.p.*).

Pres. Subj. 2 Pl. I not whether ye . . . konne, 2551 f (cunne C, conne D) (: ronne *p.p.*); yf ye konne, 5978 f (cunne C) (: ywonne *p.p.*).⁶

Pres. Subj. 3 Pl. if they kan sen, 7476 (can D, can † ouzt *sg.* C).⁶

Pret. Subj. 1 Sing. koude, kowde, 3342 (couthe D, thow I coude † C), 4344 (coude C †, couthe D); koude, kowde, 1206 (coude C, coud? D), 2667 (cow(e)de A, coude C, coud [I] D), 3138 (coude C, couthe D).

Pret. Subj. 3 Sing. who koude telle, 6630 (coude D, wil C †).

Pret. Subj. 2 Pl. koude, 7335 (couthe C, coude D); koude han, 8046 (coude haue D, wolde † a C).

¹ Perhaps subjunctive. Supply [of] in A.

² Read *wel couth* in D.

³ Read *nich[e]* in D.

⁴ Read *ys[e]* in CD.

⁵ In this line *koude he* is concessive (= *though he could*).

⁶ Perhaps indicative. In 7476 A supply [of].

Pret. Subj. 3 Pl. koude, 7700 (couthe † pleyne C, coude † p. D);
kowde how, 1921 (koude B, couthe D, cunne *ind.* † C) (*ind.* ?).

Note.—Of the above cited subjunctives, the following are in apodosis, and therefore perhaps doubtful: 1206, 1921, 2667, 3138, 3342, 4344, 6630, 7335, 8046. The rest are in protasis, except as indicated in the citation.

Inf. konne, 2925 f (cunne C, kun D) (: y-ronne *p.p.*), 3219 f (cunne C, kun D) (: sonne), 7767 (cunne C, kanne D); konne, 647 (come † C; know[ë] † D (?)).

Perf. Part. kouth in, 4723 A (B † D †); vnkouth, (i.) 1236 (-e) AD), 4639 (-e) BD, vnkow A).

V. *dar*

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. dar, (i.) (ii.) 396, 451, 1258, 1622,¹ 2834, 2946, 3180 (dare † CD),² 3503, 4108, 5272, 5434, 7659, 7990 (D †), etc. [Var. CD dar(e).]

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. darst not, 768 (C †); dar not, 6776 (darst BC, darst(e) D)³; dastow, 7642 (darstow B, durst†st † thow C, darst(e) thou D).

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. dar, 5863 (-e) CD,⁴ 6130 (-e) CD,⁵ 6566 (durst(e) D).

Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. dar ye, 2832 (-e) C, dore † D (?).

Pret. Ind. 1 Sing. dorste, 1859 (durste C, durst D).

Pret. Ind. 2 Sing. dorstestow, 767 (durstyst thou C, trist † thow D).⁶ (Perhaps subjunctive, see § 106.)

Pret. Ind. 3 Sing. dorste, 1287 (durste C, durst[e] D), 7273 (-[e] B, durstë † 3ow C, durste D); dorst[e] yow, 27 (-e B, durst[e] D);⁷ dorste, 3294 (-t B, durste C, durst D) (cf. 5334, 7073); dorste hire (*acc.*), 7091 (-t B, durste C, durst † compleine D)⁸; dorst he, 503 (durste C, durst D); dorst hir (*acc.*), 98 B (durste C, durstë mone D, dorst (make) hire A).

Pret. Ind. 3 Pl. So as they *dorste* (dorsten G, dorst B, durste C, durst D) how (hough G, so as C, how ferre D) they wolden (wolde C Cp., wold D) procede, 3297.

Pret. Subj. 1 Sing. dorste, 7667 (-[e] B); dorste, 3219 (-t BD), 7532 (-e leyne † C)⁹; dorst I, 924 (-[e] seye BD, -e seye C), 3212 (-e C), 6720 (-e CD), 6915 (-e CD); dorst haue, 899 (durst a C †); dorstë,

¹ Supply [be-] in B.

² CD should be emended by means of AB.

³ Read (a)rise in D.

⁴ Supply [fere] in B.

⁵ C is defective.

⁶ Supply [hire] in B. 9-syl. line in D.

⁷ Possibly subjunctive.

⁸ Read pleyne for compleyne in C.

⁹ Supply [that] in D.

2521 (-t B, -e C, -[e] D)¹. [CD have -u- in all these cases, AB -o-.]
 Pret. Subj. 2 Sing. See Pret. Ind. 2 Sing.

Pret. Subj. 3 Sing. desiryng . . . to haue here herte dere In swych
 a plyt she *dorst*[e] make hym chere, 4396 (durste C, that sche
 durst † him make D).

Note.—Of these instances of the subjunctive preterite (1, 3. person), the following, being in protasis, may be regarded as certain : 2521, 3219, 6915, 7708. The following are in apodosis (as, *I dorste leye* i. e. wager) : 899, 924, 6720, 7532, 7667 ; cf. *how dorst I*, 3212.

Pret. Subj. 2 Pl. And yf so be that pes her-after take . . . Why
 lord the sorwe and wo ye wolden make That ye ne *dorste* come ayen
 for shame, 6227 (*dorst*[e] B, *durstyn* C, *durste* D) (=because you
 would not, or did not, dare).

Inf. to dorre don, 7203 (*durre* (to) do B, to dore den C^c †, to doo
 † D).

VI. *thar*.

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. he *thar* nought, 2746 (hym *thar* BCp. John's,
 him *thar* G, him *dar* C, hym oght[e] D).

Pret. Subj. 3 Sing. *thorste*, 3414, in which the correct reading seems
 to be : *Yow thorste* neuere han the more fere. The variants are curious :
Yow dorste (so A, *Thow thruste* B, *He thourrste* C, *Yow durst* D,
3ou thurst G, *3ow thruste* Cp., *Ye thorste* John's, *Yow thurste* Harl.
 2392) haue neuere (so AD John's, neuere han BCG Cp.).

VII. *shal*.

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. *shal*, (i.) 398 (*sal* B), 922 f (*shalle* B)², 1047 f,
 1912 f, 2094 CD (*wil* A, *wol* B), 3633 (*ow †* D)³, 4168 f, 4806 f,
 7210, 7680 f, etc. [Var. C *schal* ; D *shaH*.]

Rhyme words.—general (922, 4806), special (1047), *fynal* (4806), *al* (922,
 1047, 1912, 4168, 7680).

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. *shalt*, (i.) (ii.) 349 (*schal* *thow* B, *that †* C), 808,
 2041 (*shal* *trow*[e] B, *schal* *trostyn* C), 2598 (*schat* C)⁴, 3546 (*xat*
 C)⁵, 5206 (*schat* C)⁶, 5266 (*schat* C, *shalt*(e) D), 5315 (*shaH* this
 D), 6767 (*shalt*(e) D), 7657 (*schat* C, *shalt*(e) D), 7662 (*shal* B,
schat C, *shalt*(e) D)⁷, 7671 (*shal* B, *schat* C), 7825 (-e) D), etc.
 [Var. C *schalt*.]—*shaltow*, 803 (*schuldyst †* *thou* C, *thou shalt †*
have D), 5271 (*shaltow*(e) B ; *pret.* C † ; D †), 6391 (*shaH* *thou* D).

¹ Scansion doubtful.

² "Now may I iape of the if that I shal."

³ "And by that feith I shal (=owe) Pryam of Troye."

⁴ 9-syl. in D.

⁵ Supply [*for*] in A, [*in*] in D.

⁶ Supply [*this*] in A.

⁷ Read *soof[nē]* in D.

- Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. shal, (i.) 236, 651, 1131 f (schalle B †) (: al : wal), 2358, 3640 (shalt † A, wol D), 5255, etc. [Var. BC schal; D shall, shaH, shaT.]
- Pres. Ind. 1 Pl. shal, shul, (i.) 2106, 3502 (shullen not B)¹, 5068, 5452, 5983 (schal † 3e C), 6178, 6761 (cf. 804 † D, 5456 D, 6185 † C); (ii.) shul here (*adv.*), 6841². —shulle, 3794 (shul BD, schuln C), 5984 (shal B, shaH D, schal † eueremore C); we schul[le]n twynne, 5932 C (*pret.* ABD). [Var. C schal, schul; D shaH, shaT.]
- Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. shal, shul, (i.) 1177, 6151, 7217, etc., etc.; (ii.) shal ek, 6133; shul ek, 6147; shul han, 122. [Var. BC schal; C schul; D shaH.]—shullen dar, 3503 (schul[le]n C, sholdyn neither D).—Ye shul (schal C, shal GCp. John's) nomore haue (han BC Cp. John's) soueraynte (-eynte BDG, -eignete Cp. John's, -anitee E, seurete of me C), 3013.
- Pres. Ind. 3 Pl. shal, shul, (i.) 5449, 7256, 7257, etc. etc. (ii.) shal it, 1365; shal han, 122. [Var. BC schal; C schul; D shaH.]
- Pret.³ 1 Sing. sholde, 923 (-[e] D)⁴, 1025 f (D †) (: nolde 1 *sg.*), 1257 (-[e] D), 1438 (-[e] BD), 3219 (-[e] D), 3239 (-[e] BD), 3335 f (-d D) (: wolde 3 *sg.*), 5118, 5298 f (-d B) (: wolde 3 *sg.*), 6241 (-[e] B); shold[e] don, 1474 (-e C; A †). [Var. B scholde; C schulde; D shulde.]—sholde to, 2291 (-d B, -[ë] hym D, schulde him C); cf. 5271 D †, 6850 † C.—sholde, 17 (-e sterve † D), 1410, 2349, 3435, 6023, etc., etc. [Var. B shold, schold; C schulde; D shold, should, shulde.]—shuld I, 8095 (shold B, shulde D).—sholde han, 5213 (shulde haue D, schulde also C); sholdë haue, 5228 (-[ë] B, schulde C, shuldë D).
- Pret. 2 Sing. sholdest, 774 (schuldyst C, sholdist D); sholdestow, 6714 (schuldist thow C, shuldest thou D); shuldestow, 7651 (sholdestow B, schuldist thow C, shuldest thou D). Cf. 803 † C, 3124 † D, 5271 † C.
- Note.—Of these 774, 6714, 7651, may perhaps be regarded as subjunctives see § 107).
- Pret. 3 Sing. sholde, shulde, 76 f (-d D), 521 f, 728, 2120 (B †), 3374 f (-d D), 3603, 4511 f, 4878 f, 5852 f, 6185 (we † schul[le] C),⁵ 6474 f, 6610 (-e † D), 6621 (-e † C), 6825 (solde B), 7269 f, 7364 (D †), 8127 f, etc., etc. [Var. BD shold[e]; C scholde, schulde.]—sholde,

¹ In C read *ly[gge]n*. ² "Intendestow that we shul here bleue" (var. be-leue).

³ In the case of *sholde*, *-en*, *wolde*, *-en*, and *nolde*, *-en* no attempt is made to distinguish between the indicative and the subjunctive.

⁴ In C supply [*that*].

⁵ "Vs sholde neyther lakke gold(e) ne gere" (*impersonal*).

shold, 1498, 3826 (D ?), 7913. [Var. C schulde; D shulde.] Before *he, his, hym, here* (acc.), *han* (inf.), *haue* (inf.),—sholde, shulde, shold, shuld, 228, 813, (-[ē] † he D), 1638, 2841, 3399, 3856, 3924, 6417, 7636 ABD. [Var. B schold, scholde; CD schulde.]—sholdē holde, 4726 (-[ē] BD).—sholdē destroyed, 68 (shulde † be D); sholdē cause, 5726 (shulde D); cf. sholdē, shold, schulde, shulde, 306 † A, 2381 CD, 7427 CD, 7767 † C.

Rhyme words.—Only *wolde* and *molde*.

Pret. 1 Pl. sholden, (i.) 5932 (schul[le]n C, shulde D); shuld[en] al, 8188 A (sholden B); schulde, 5288 † C.

Pret. 2 Pl. I. sholden, (i.) 4737 (-[e] B, -yn D)¹, 6027 (-e CD), 6219 (-e BD, -yn C); sholdyn, 3503 † D. II. sholde, 2993 (-en B, -[e] D), 3626 f (-d D) (: *molde pl.*), 6171 (-on B, -en D, -yn C †), 7243 (-en B)².—schulde, 6488 (shold B, schulde C, shulden D).—scholde, 3719 † C; shulde † ye, 4973 C^c.—louen sholde on, 3639 (sholden louen on B, schulde louyn on C, shold love on D). [Var. to I., C schulde, schuldyn; D shulde. Var. to II., C scholde; D schulde, shulden.]

Pret. 3 Pl. sholden, (i.) 73 (-e C, -[e] D), 3386 (-[e] B, xulde C, shold † fle D),³ 3799 (-e B, -d anon *sg.* † D; *line om.* † C), 4798 (-e C, -[e] D); cf. schuldyn, 6171 C †. [Var. C schulde.]—sholde, 2923 (-[e] B, -en D, schulden C), 6989 f (schold B, schulde C, shulde D †) (: *wolde ind.* 3 *sg.*); schulde, 1496 (schulde C, sholden B, shold[e] D); shulde, 4681 (sholde B, shold † cause D); sholde han (*inf.*), 872 (schulde C, shold D),⁴ 3273 (shold D, schulde a C); sholde his, 4815 (-d D, schulde C)—sholdē hire (*gen. pl.*), 4848 (-en B, -yn D, schuldē C).

Pres. Subj. 1 Pl. shulle, 5288 (shul B, shaŋ D, schulde † C).⁵

Pres. Subj. 2 Pl. shul putte, 3719 (scholde † C, shal † he *ind.* D).

Note.—5288 is after *though* (hypothetical future case); 3719 is in protasis.

VIII. *may*.

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. may, (i.) (ii.) 922⁶, 1008 (mowē B, mow D), 1563 f (3 *sg.* CD), 2183⁷, 7435 f, 7772 f, 7984 f, 8059 f.

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. (i.) (ii.) In A,—mayst, 600, 806, 1045, 2070, 2450, etc., etc.; maist, 5699. In B,—mayst, 600, 806, 1045, 5244; maist, 2070, 2450, and usually. In C,—mayst, 2450, 3027,

¹ Supply [*that*] in D.

² 9-syl.

³ Dele (*the*) in C.

⁴ Insert [*led*] in C; [*in*¹] in D.

⁵ 9-syl. in C; but supply [*a*].

⁶ Supply [*I*] in B.

⁷ Supply [*not*] in D.

etc.; mayȝt, 619, 806, 2070, etc.; mayȝ thyn, 6633; mayt, 600, 7795. In D,—mayst, 619, 806, 1045¹, etc., etc.; maist, 5208, 5244, etc.; maist(e), 5295; may, 600.

maystow, 623 (mayst thou CD),² 673 (mayt thou C, mayst thow D), 2101 (mayst thou CD), 3738 (mayst thou C, may thow D), 4927 (mayst thou C, maist thou D), 7522 (mayst thu C, maist(e) thou D), 8074 (maist(e) thou D); cf. 5208 B, 7493 B. [Var. B maistow.]

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. may, (i) 147,³ 253, 3831 f, 3901 f, 4428 f, 5826 f, 6512 f, 7354 f, etc.

Pres. Ind. 1 Pl. may, (i.) 987, 1663, 6176, 6179 † C, 6191, 6752 C,⁴ 6753,⁴ 6792 (That we may). (ii.) 2416, 6179 ABC; may haue, 6887 (D †).—mowe, 6168 (mow B, now † C, may D (†)).

Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. may (i.) 54 (shall D), 1490⁵, 3688⁶, 4124 † D, 4843 † D, 4956, 5519, 5555 (C † D †)⁷, 5856 (can C), 5990 (D †)⁸, 6013, 6299⁹, 6320, 7360, 7698, 7744. (ii.) 30, 4843 ABC, 7987; may his, 3752; may here (*acc.*), 3528 (C †); may here (*gen. sg.*), 8139 (B †); may here (*inf.*), 5747 BC (A † D †), 7000 (A †), 7315 (mow B, schul C), 7679 (schul C), 7952.—mowen ellys, 5992 (-ë B, moun *dissyl.* C, mow[ë] D).

Pres. Ind. 3 Pl. may, (i.) 120, 644¹⁰, 756 (moun *monosyl.* C), 2242 (may it? C)¹¹, 2732, 4124 (may † ȝe 2 *pl.* D), 4307 (C †, mowen D †), 4853, 4932,¹² 5710¹³, 6118, 6706, 7495 (mough D). (ii.) 839 (C †), 4056, 8116 (*om.* B † (†)), 8213.—moweȝ not, 5740 ABD (*the passage is not in C*). [In several of the instances cited the subject is *men.*]

Pres. Subj. 1 Sing. may, (i.) 863, 1530, 2486 f, 3561,¹⁴ 6324, 6785 f, 6979, 7551 f, 8080 f.¹⁵

Pres. Subj. 3 Sing. may, (i.) 1017 BCD (wolę A),¹⁶ 1616, 1949, 2875, 5941 (schal C), 6262 f, 7159 f. (ii.) 3819 (may † the C).¹⁷—moweȝ neuere, 959 A (may BCD).

Pret. Ind. and Subj. 1 Sing. myghte, 4120 (-[e] B, myȝte C, miȝte D); mygh[te], 1797 (myght[e] BD, myȝte C); myghte, 3230 (myȝte C, might D); myght¹⁸ (*bef. vowels*), 19 † D, 1651, 3473, 3892, 7460; myght hym, 3744 (myȝte C); -e hereȝ (*acc.*), 6972 (-t B,

¹ Supply [*But*] in D.

² Read *de[ue]*l in C.

³ 9-syl. in CD.

⁴ Indirect question.

⁵ 9-syl. Perhaps subjunctive.

⁶ Supply [*that*] in D.

⁷ Dele (*as*) in A.

⁸ 9-syl. ⁹ Subjunctive? Supply [*ye*] in A.

¹⁰ Supply [*and*] in D.

¹¹ Purpose-clause. ¹² C reads: what may me now the calle. Supply [*now*] in D.

¹³ 9-syl. But read *mowen* or *which[e]*? D has *whiche*. ¹⁴ Read (*retur*ne in D.

¹⁵ Several of these are hardly to be distinguished from indicatives.

¹⁶ Supply [*that*] in D.

¹⁷ Some of these are hardly to be distinguished from indicatives.

¹⁸ Var. C *myȝte* (in all), D *might*.

myzt C, might D).¹—myght best, 2515 (myzte † 3 sg. C, might[e] (?) † D).—myght[ē] || I, 5121 (-ē B, myzte C, myght D); -[ē] I, 7652 (myztē C, myzt[ē] D, myght[ē] I) B).²

Pret. 2 Sing. myghtest, 7890 (myztist C, mightest D †); myghtestow, 4924 AB.

Note.—7890 is perhaps subjunctive (see § 107).—In 619, readings vary: Paraunter thow myght (so ABG, mayzt C, mayst D) after swych on longe. (No note in Mr. Austin's collation.)

Pret. Ind. and Subj. 3 Sing. myghte, 373 (myzt[e] B), 1075 AB, 2204 f, 2379 f (-t C), 2655³, 2838 (-t † the D), 3186, 3925 f (-t B, myzt C, mizt D),⁴ 4697 f (-t B), 4822 (-[e] B),⁵ 4823 (-[e] B), 5647 (-[e] B), 5849 f (myzt C), 5880 f (myzt C), 6551 f (myzt C), 6874 f, 6995 f (myzt C), 7155 (-[e] B), 7157 (-[e] B), 7192 f (-t B, myzt C), 7382 f, 7998 f. [Var. D *might[e]* or *myght[e]* in most of the verses above-cited; C *myzte*.]—myght[e], 1029 (-e C), 1536 (-e C), 2064 (-e BC)⁶, 2499 (-e C, mygth[e] B), 2525 (-e C)⁷, 3282, 3734 (myhte ? A)⁸, 4351 (-e BC, mizt † not D), 4445 (-e CD), 5792 (-e C, -ē † other B), 6535 (-e C), 7171 (-e C), 7566 f (-e B), 7583 B (mizt[e] D, see below), 8100; cf. 1656, 4564 D. [Var. BD *might[e]*; C *myzte*, *myzt[e]*; D *mizte*.]—myghte, 2660 (mygth B; D(?)), 2941, 3362,⁹ 5485, 6923 (myzt C); cf. 1539, 5033. [Var. B *myght* (*in all except 2660*); C *myzte*; D *myght*, *might* (*in all*).]—*myght* (*bef. vowels*), 638 (-e C), 2135 (myztē † no C, might † no D), 3442, 4002 (-e C), 7788 (-e C); cf. 2922, 4033. [Var. C *myzte*, *myzt*; D *mizt*.]—myghte his, 2411 (-t BD); myghte him, 562 (-t BD); myght he, 370 (-e C), 3923 (-e C); -t haue (*inf.*), 1277 (-e han B, miztē † han C, might[ē] haue D), 1796 (-t han C), 7102 (-t han B, -e a C); might he, 1519 (myght B, mizt C); cf. 823, 2956, 3728, 3955, 4911, 6645, 7583. [Var. BC *myzt*; C *myzte*; D *might*, *mizt*.]—myght holden, 5260 (may C); myght neuere, 5644 AB (might D; *not in C*); myght to, 8151 AB (mizt D); myzt non, 7317 C (might D, may A, may it B); cf. 1539 † D, 2135 † D, 3264 † D, 4351 † D, 5033 † D; myzte, 1739 † C, 5370 † C (myght D?).—myghtē here (*inf.*), 3586 (-[ē] BD, myztē C); myghtē † other, 5792 B; myghtē † here (*acc.*), 1056 A (myzte B, might D).

¹ Supply [to] in A.

² How myght (myzte C, myzt D) I (*om.* B) than (thanne C) do (don BC Cp. John's, doo D) quod Troylus.

³ Supply [we] in D.

⁴ Supply [that] in C

⁵ CD are too short, even if -ē be read.

⁶ Supply [me] in C.

⁷ Supply [we] in D.

⁸ For *myghte a dedē man* in A, read *myhtē dedē men*.

⁹ Read *here[to]* in A.

Rhyme words.—with sighte (2379), from sighte (6995), in highte (7192), bryghte *adj. pl. or adv.* (7382), plighte *pret. ind. 3 sg.* (2204), sighte, syghte, *pret. ind. 3 sg.* (3925, 5880, 7998), twyghte *pret. ind. 3 sg.* (5849), alighte *pret. ind. 3 sg.* (6551, 7382), highte *pret. ind. 3 sg.* (7998), byhygt[e] *pret. ind. 3 sg.* (byhighte B, behyzt[e] C, behight[e] D) (7566), byhight[e] *pret. subj. 3 sg.* (bihighte B, behyzt C, behight[e] D) (6874), lyghte *inf.* (3925, 6995), fighte *inf.* (4697), dyghte *inf.* (5849).

Pret. 1 Pl. myghte, 1596 (-en B, -yn D, myztyn C †); myghten, (i.) 6850 (-e B, myztyn C, might[e] D).

Pret. 2 Pl. myghte, 6172 (-en B, myztyn C, myght[e] D).

Pret. 3 Pl. myghten, (i.) 1815 (myzte C, myght[e] D), 2524 (-[e] B, myztyn in C, might[en] in D), 2709 f (myztin C, mightyn D).—myghte, 614 (-[e] BD, myztyn C), 1726 (-[e] BD), 1751 (-[e] D)¹, 2031 f (myzt C, myght D), 2734 (-en B, -[e] D, myzȝe † C)², 3609 (myztyn C, myght † this D),³ 6612 (-[e] B).⁴ [Var. C myzte; D mighte, -[e].]—myght[e], 3351 (-e B, myzte C †; D †), 3605 (-e B, myzte C, might[e] D).—myghte, 1439 (*om.* † B, -t D †), 2702 (-t D),⁵ 7324 (-t BD). [Var. C myzte; D miȝt, might.]—myght (*bef. vowels*), 286 (myztyn in C)⁶, 3264 (-e B, might † not D), 3318 (-e C), 6948 (-e C; D †). [Var. C myzt, -e; D miȝt.]—myghte hym, 279 (-t BD); -e hire (*poss. sg.*), 5337 (-t D, koude A); myght hym,⁷ 3415 (-e C). [Var. C myzȝe.]

Note.—Of these examples of the *pret. 3 pl.*, *men* is the subject in 279, 286, 1439, 1726, 1815, 2702, 3415, 3609, 6948; *al the world* is the subject in 3264, 3318, 5337.

Rhyme words.—hyghten *pret. ind. 3 pl.* (2709), dyghte *pret. ind. 3 sg.* (2031).

Infinitive. mowen.—To mowen (*so* ABG Cp. John's, moun C, wyn D) swych a knyght don (*so* BC Cp., *om.* A, doon G, to D John's) lyue (leuyn C) or dye (deiȝe C), 2679.—to mowe † dwelle, 7213 C (maken AB, make D).

IX. *mot.*

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. (i.) (ii.) mot, moot, 224 (-[e] BD, is † ffor C^e), 573 (-[e] BCD), 1621 (-[e] B, must D, me muste C), 4037 f (-[e] BCD) (: in his fote; foot B, foote D : set *subst.* (= soot), soot B, sote CD), 4129 (-[e] BD), 5408, 6284 (-[e] C); cf. 2889, 3429 C, 4676, 6681, 6784, 7692.

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. most, (i.) (ii.) 520 (must(e) C, must D), 5129

¹ Or singular: Now myghte som enuyous iangle thus.

² Supply [*hym*] in AB. ACD may be singular.

³ Supply [*for*] in B.

⁴ Delete (*as*) in A. C is out of order.

⁵ "So heynous that men myghte on it spete" (*heȝynous* or *myghte on*).

⁶ "Shewed wel that men myght yn here gesse" (9-syl., but D supplies *She* †).

⁷ A has *hem* †.

(moost B, must(e) C, muste D †), 5310 (mayst † C, must(e) D), 7822 (must D, *om.* † C).

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. mot, (i.) 2456 (moot B, mot(e) D); cf. 1524, 1701, 3406, 3636, etc., etc.—mot(ē), 6247 A (moot B, mot(ē) (i) C; D †). (Cf. *pret.* 3 *sg.*)

Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. mote, 2754 C (moste A, most B, must D).

Pres. Ind. 3 Pl. moten ouer, 846 (-yn CD)¹; mote hire (*poss. sg.*), 847 (-yn C); motē spenden, 6038 (moot B, mot C †, must D).²

Pres. Subj. 1 Sing. mote I, 1220, 7270 (mot B); mot I, 341 (-e BD)³, 1210 (-e BCD), 2230 (-e BCD)⁴, 4048 (-e C), 7347 (-e CD), 7523 (moot B, mote C; D †). (All these in wishes: as, *so mote I gon, as mot I the.*) I bidde god I neuere mot haue ioye, 3717 A (-e BG, I preye to god neuere more haue I ioye C, I pray to god y neuer more haue ioy D; no note in Mr. Austin's collation).

Pres. Subj. 3 Sing. to good[e]⁵ mot it turne, 1175 (-e BCD); so mot he neuere the, 1755 (-e BC); sory mot he ben, 2141 (-e BCD); longe mot yourē lyf in ioye endure, 4988 (-ē BD, motē † 3e 2 *pl.* C).

Pres. Subj. 2 Pl. mot ye lyue, 1487 (-ē BCD); motē † 3e, 4988 C (3 *sg.* ABD).

Pret. Ind. 1 Sing. most (*bef. vowels*), 3429 (mot C, must D), 4676 B (must D, mot A)⁶; moste here (*poss. sg.*), 5232 (-t B, must D; C †); y must † nedis, 1621 D; I must[e] nedis, 6681 D † (mot AB, mot C †). (In all these cases with the force of the present tense and with the meaning of modern *must.*)

Pret. Ind. 3 Sing. moste, 74 (-[e] BD), 3401 (-[e] BD), 3465 (-[e] B; D †)⁷, 4000 (-[e] BD), 4878 (-[e] BD), 5373 C (-[e] D), 8025 (-[e] B). [Var. C muste; D must[e], muste.]⁸—most[e], 4551 B (muste C, must[e] D).⁹—moste, 2385 (-t BD), 3999 (-t B), 4004 (-t BD, mot † C), 6368 (-t B), 6433 (-t D).¹⁰ [Var. C muste; D must, -e].—most at, 3382 (-e B, muste C, moost D).—moste his, 6441 (-t BD); -e hem, 4551. [Var. C muste; D must.]

Note 1.—In all these cases of the *pret. ind. 3 sg.* the verb has its proper preterite function. The modern sense (in which *must* is equivalent to a present tense) is seen in *moste*, 216 A (schall B, mot B, must D). C shows four instances of this latter use: *mustē † ben*, 6261 C (mustē D, mot AB); *muste † for*, 6422 C (mot AB, mot(e) D); *me † mustē nedis*, 1621 C, 7715 C. D several times substitutes *must* (in a present sense) for *mot* (etc.) of

¹ Read *ioye[s]* in C.

² Supply [*that*] in C.

³ Supply [*I*] in B.

⁴ In A read to *deth[e]* and *smet[e]*.

⁵ In 6038 the subject is *men*.

⁶ In A read to *deth[e]* and *smet[e]*.

⁷ Dele (*At*) in AB (†). In D read *must[e]* *b(y)leue*.

⁸ In 4000 D has *most[e]*; the usual vowel in this word, however, is *u* for CD, *o* for AB.

⁹ In D supply [*day*].

¹⁰ Read (*re*)*torne* *he* in D.

the other MSS., cf. 1701, 2586, 3406, 3670 : in these four cases a consonant follows, but in none of them (except perhaps in 2586, which is otherwise unsatisfactory) are we to read *must[ē]*. Cf. also 4266 ‡ E.

Note 2.—*Must* is used impersonally in *me muste nedis deyeñ* (pres. sense), 1621 C (I mot A, I moot(e) B, y must D)¹; *hym most obeye* (pret. sense), 3999 B (he moste A, he muste CD); *muste ‡ hem bleue*, 7543 C (they moste b[l]euen A, they most[e] bleuen B, thei muste b(e)leue D), which is probably subjunctive. In none of these lines is the impersonal construction apparently the genuine reading. (See Child, § 67, and cf. *Englische Studien*, XIV, 391.)

Pret. Ind. 2 Pl. *moste*, 2754 (-t B, mot(e) C, must D), 3758 (-t B, muste C, must D). (Both in present sense.)²

Pret. Ind. 3 Pl. men *moste*, 4056 (-[e] B, mustyn C, must[e] D); men *mostē axe*, 1979 (miste † C, must[e] D)³; men *mose*, 6016 (most B, *moste nedis* C †, *musten † entercomen* D); men . . . *must spenden*, 6038 D (motē A, moot B, mot C). (All in present sense.)

Pret. Subj. 1 Sing. . *most* I, 1884 (I *muste be* C, y *must[e] be †* D); I *moste come*, 6023 (-[e] B, muste C, must[e] D). (In both cases = *I should have to*.)⁴

Pret. Subj. 3 Sing. *moste*, 74 (-[e] BD), 3401 (-[e] BD). [Var. C *muste*; D *must[e]*.]—*most[e]*, 5226 (moost[e] B, mot † C, must[e] D).—*moste*, 3758 (-t B, muste C, must D); *-e he*, 2160 (moost B, muste C, must D); *-e han*, 3733 (-t B, muste C, must D). (In all these cases = *would have to*.) Cf. *mustē ‡ hem*, impersonal, 7543 C.

Pret. Subj. 3 Pl. *mosten folk*, 2592 (mustyn CD); they *most[e] b[l]euen*, 7543 (muste b(e)leue D, *mustē ‡ hem impers. sg.* C). (In these = *would have to*.)

§ 124. Other irregular verbs.

This list includes *be*, *wol*, *nyl*, *do*, *go*, and *haue*.

I. *to be*.

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. *am*, (i.) (ii.) 10, 223, 6160 (nam BD, may † C), 6782 (nam B), 7069 (nam BD).—*nam*, 7609 (am C, nam(e) D).

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. *art*, (i.) (ii.) 277, 555 (ert(e) D), 648, 1045 (D † ?), 5163 (-(e) D), etc. [Var. B *ert (usually)*.]—*artow*, 509 (art thou C, art(e) thou D), 731 (art thou C, art(e) thow D); *art thow*, 507 (artow B, art thou C, art(e) thou D), 3579 (art tow B; C (?)).

¹ Supply [*that*] in B.

² 3758 may be construed as subjunctive.

³ If *moste* be read, the verse becomes 9-syl.

⁴ But in 1884 perhaps rather in a present (future) sense "How bysy if I loue ek most I be."

Note.—In “Al wrong by god what seystow man wher arte,” 7524 f (arte ABCG, arte D; no note in Mr. Austin’s collation) (: carte *n.*), *arte* is plainly a colloquial form of *artow*: perhaps it represents the ordinary pronunciation of that contraction. Cf. *fro ye* (: Troye), 5, in which *ye* may be regarded as a similarly weakened form of *yow*.

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. is, 3622 f (: this), and passim; helle ys, 7739 f (is C) (: wellys *pl.* : ellys); his, 1943 C, 7150 B; ysse, 1013 f A (is BCD) (: thisse : iwysse).¹—nys, 203 AC (is B)², 574 C (is ABD), 684 (*ne* is C, *nis* D), 697 (*nis* B, is D),³ 2824 f (is CD) (: is), 4570 (*ne* is C, *ther* is † (=ther’s) D), 7085, etc.; nyis *monosyl.*, 7451 C (is ABD).

Pres. Ind. 1 Pl. (i.) be, 3937 (ben C, beeth D), 7346 (ben B, ben(e) D; C †); be we, 5920, 6847 (C †), 7042 (cf. 5138); ben now, 5986 (ben(e) B, be D); been so, 6511 (ben BC, be D); ben † we, 4049 C. (ii.) beñ, 5930 (be D)⁴; be, 5921 (ben BC).

Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. (i.) be, 1320 (ben BC), 3881, 3980 (ben BCD), 7721 (ben CD)⁵; be ye, 202 ABC, 2191, 2552⁶, 3599, 4049 (ben C); ben, 1201 (be D), 1669 (be D), 3709 (ben(e) D), 4407, etc.; beth bothe, 984 (ben BC, be D). (ii.) ben, 1433 (be BD), 2825 (ben(e) D), etc.; be ywonne, 2321 (ben BC, be 3e D)⁷; ben he, 1332 (be D); ben his, 3718 (D †)⁸; ben here (*adv.*), 2836 (ben(e) D).

Pres. Ind. 3 Pl. (i.) Before consonants *ben* and *be* are both found in A, but *ben* (the regular form in BC) is the commoner. D usually has *be* or *ben(e)*, but *ben* occurs in D (*e.g.*, 3134). Cf. 1137, 3134, 3696, 4887, etc. Cf. *been*, 4205 E; *byn*, 4595 E. In rhyme,—*be*, 48 f, 2039 f, 2858 f, 2879 f, 5709 f, 5718 f 7033 f (*bee* B), 8143 f; *ben*, 6819 f (*bene* D) (: to sen). Other forms are,—*they beth* with, 6020 C †, and *arn (are)* : *arn thei*, 999 A (*are* BC, *they are* the D); *arn clerkes*, 5634 A (*ern* B, *werę* D)⁹; *arn woxen*, 7737 A (*aryn* C, *are* D)¹⁰; *arn*, 996 C (*are* D), *is an error for erren* ABG; no note in Mr. Austin’s collation. (ii.) Before vowels *ben* is the usual form, except in D, which commonly (though not always) has *ben(e)*: thus,—1000 (*be* D), 1973 (*ben(e)* D), 4180 (*been* E), etc. Before *h*,—*ben his*, 2560 (*ben(e)* D); *ben here (gen. sg.)*, 6582 (D †); *ben here (adv.)*, 2815 (*be* D)¹¹; *ben hertes*, 2959 (*ben(e)* D).

¹ This monstrous form serves at least to emphasize the fact that the *s* is unvoiced.

² Dele (*that*) in C.

³ Dele (*yn*) in A.

⁴ Supply [*that*] in D.

⁵ Dele or slur (*that*) in D.

⁶ Supply [*ye*] in AB.

⁷ Read [*y*]wonne in D.

⁸ Supply [*that*] in B.

⁹ Not in C.

¹⁰ Leaf cut out of B.

¹¹ Read *her[with]yn* in D.

Rhyme words.—charite (48), aduersite (2858), benignite (2879), necessite (5718), subtilitee (8143), me (2039, 5709, 8143), the (2039, 2879), ye (2858), fre (7033), se, y-se *inf.* (5709, 7033).—to sen (sene D) (6819).

Pres. Subj. 1 Sing. be, (i.) (ii.) 832, 859, 2945, 3240 f, 4128 f, 6213 f, etc.

Pres. Subj. 2 Sing. be, (i.) (ii.) 3663, 4473, etc.

Pres. Subj. 3 Sing. be, (i.) 23 f, 308, 349, 1036, 2418 f, 5994 f, etc.

Pres. Subj. 1 Pl. (i.) be, 5450 (ben *ind.* C †)¹, 6144. (ii.) ben, 6276.

Pres. Subj. 2 Pl. (i.) be, 1365 (ben C; B †), 1385 (ben C), 1422 f (: se *ind.* 2 *pl.*), 1426 (ben C), 1935 (*sg.* CD)², 2491 f (: me), 5597 (ben CD); And be ye wys as ye ben faire, 1669 (be . . . be D); ye heryed ben for, 4655 AB (be D). (ii.) be, 3012 (ben C), 6102 (ben C, be *sit* † D); whanne ye ben his, 1672 (be D).

Pres. Subj. 3 Pl. (i.) ben, 1488 (be BD, hem † C); be, 2243 (ben C), 3158³, 4769 f † B (*sg.* A; D (?)). (ii.) be his, 4599 (*sg.* B †).

Pret. Ind. 1 Sing. was, (i.) 2497⁴, 4733 f (y-wis † D) (: Calkas); cf. 4733 f, 4756 f, 7338 f.—nas, (i.) 2498 BCD (na[s] A).⁵

Pret. Ind. 2 Sing. were, 4160 f (you were E) (: there : fere *timor*); were, 510 (wer † wont D), 3559⁶, 5424 ABD; werę wonęd, 901 (were B, were wonę C (?))⁷.—was thow, 4996 (art(e) † thou D).

Pret. Ind. 3 Sing. was, (i.) 2, 64 f (: Calkas), 4397 f, 5895 f, etc. In 4438, D has the ridiculous form *wesse* (: *blesse inf.*).—nas, (i.) 101 (was BCD), 208 (was D), 1281 (was B), 1769⁸; cf. 281, 6477, 6809, 6831, 6985, 7142, 7177, 8006, 8029. (ii.) nas heure, 6826 (nas oure C, *om.* † D).

Pret. Ind. 1, 2, 3 Pl. were. See § 109.

Pret. Subj. Sing. were. See § 113.

Pret. Subj. Pl. were. See § 114.

Imv. 2 Sing. be, 950, 951 (fe † C), 4472, etc. Once in rhyme,—thow ne be, 6962 f.

Imv. 2 Pl. beth, 431, 1679⁹, 2755 (both B, be C), 3010, 3019 betht B), 4355, 6508¹⁰, 6522, 7977 (be C), 8148 (be B), etc.; both, 3938 (beth B, be C, beeth D), 5589 (beth BD, be C)¹¹. [Cf. 6249.]

Infinitive. A shows: *ben*, before vowels, 2642, 3323, 3794, and usually; *ben*, before *h*, 1823, 2973, and usually; *ben*, before consonants, 1921, 5446, etc.; *be*, before vowels, 938, 981, 1536, 4322,

¹ Dele (*with*) in D.

² "thonked be ye."

³ In C read *be nouzt* for *ben ouzt*; in D read *be [n]oght*.

⁴ In C read for *sith* for *forsothe*.

⁵ Supply [*more*] in D.

⁶ Protasis. Read *were [in]* in A.

⁷ But supply [*whi*] in B, and read *were*.

⁸ Supply [*al*] in D.

⁹ Old-style figures indicate that D has *be* (pl.).

¹⁰ Supply [*as*] in D.

¹¹ Supply [*cause*] in A; [*of*] in C.

5197; *be*, before *h*, 468, 1438, 2383, 2526, 7023; *be*, before consonants, 255, 760, etc., etc.

B shows: *ben*, before vowels, 938, 981, and usually; *ben*, before *h*, 1438, and usually; *ben*, before consonants, 758, 1921, 4739, etc.; *be*, before vowels, 350, 609, 1536, 5759; *be*, before *h*, 7023, 7066; *be*, before consonants, 4414, 6178, etc., etc.

C shows: *ben*, before vowels, 938, 2642, and usually; *ben*, before *h*, 468, and usually; *ben*, before consonants, 373, 7491, etc.; *be*, before vowels, 1536, 5461, etc.; *be*, before *h*, 7023, 7066; *be*, before consonants, 74, 7644, etc.

D shows: *ben*, before vowels, 649, 5740, etc. (*ben*, before *h*, seems not to occur); *ben*, before consonants, 3507, 5621, etc.; *ben(e)*, before vowels, 2986, 3142, 3794, etc.; *be*, before vowels, 938, and very commonly; *be*, before *h*, 1438, and always; *be*, before consonants, 255, 1921, and commonly.

At the end of the verse all four MSS. have regularly *be* (see 37 f, 849 f, 1482 f, etc., etc.); *ben*, inf., does not occur in rhyme in the *Troilus*.

Perfect Part. A shows: *ben*, before vowels, 585, 2488, etc., etc.; *ben*, before *h*, 125, 2356, 7680; *ben*, before consonants, 247, 249, 1609, 2081, etc.; *be*, before vowels, 4469, 6505; *be*, before consonants, 242, 638, 1878, 5900, 6590.

B shows: *ben*, before vowels, 585, etc., etc.; *ben*, before *h*, 125, 2356, 7680; *ben*, before consonants, 242, 247, etc.

C shows: *ben*, before vowels, 585, etc., etc.; *ben*, before *h*, 2356; *ben*, before consonants, 247, 249, etc., etc.; *be*, before *h*, 125; *be*, before consonants, 638, 1878.

D shows: *ben*, before vowels, 2488, 7296, 7680, 8008; *ben*, before consonants, 5305, 5756; *ben(e)*, before vowels, 585, 6913; *ben(e)*, before *h*, 2356; *ben(e)*, before consonants, 249; *be*, before vowels, 4469, and usually; *bee*, before vowel, 6129; *be*, before *h*, 125; *be*, before consonants, 247, 638, etc., etc.

At the end of the verse: *ben*, 1276 f (*bene* D) (: *ben bees* : *flen ind.* 3 *pl.*); *be*, 1877 f (*se inf.* CD) (: *se inf.*), 5352 f (*bee* D) (: *se inf.* : *she*), 5899 f (: *she* : *me*); *y-be*, 5770 f (*i-be* BD, *be* C †) (: *she* : *preuete*).

Note.—Infinitive and perfect participle coalesce in: I haue and shal *Ben* humble (*be* D), 1913; cf. 7680.

II. *Will*.¹

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. A has usually *wol* or *wole* (*wole*). Thus,—*wol*, (i.) 990, 1294, 1560, 1955, 2512, 3001, 6255, 6846; (ii.) 53, 1330, 1358, 1400, 1564.—*wole*, 981, 1033, 2077, 2665, 2719, 2770, 2851, 2933, 3226; *wole*, 427, 599, 1222, 1363, 2247, 2894.—*wol han* (*inf.*), 3581; *wole haue* (*inf.*), 2733.—A also has *wil*: thus,—(i.) 266, 2094, 5121; (ii.) 2144.

B almost always has *wol*. Thus,—(i.) 266, 981, 990, 1033, 1294, 1531, 1955, etc., etc.; (ii.) 53, 427, 1330, 2247, 2894, etc.; before *h*, 2733, 3581. Other forms in B are: *wole*, 1053; *wil*, (i.) 589², 3226; *wil*, (ii.) 1222, 2144; *will*, (ii.) 599; *wel*, (i.) 1560.

C has usually *welē* (*wele*). Thus,—*welē*, 758, 981, 990, 1033, 1531, etc.; *wele*, 549, 1222, 1330, 1363, etc.; *wele han*, 3581. But *wil* also occurs: thus,—(i.) 2719, 2933, 3001; (ii.) 1400, 1564; *wil han*, 2733.

D has: *wole*, 1231, 1560, 2077, 2512, etc.; *wole*, 1222 (i)³; 1363, 2144; *wol*, (i.) 1955⁴, 2665, 3001 (i); *wol*, (ii.) 1400, 1564, 2247; *wol haue*, 3581; *wul*, (ii.) 2894; *wil*, (i.) 266, 990, 1033, 1409, etc.; *wil*, (ii.) 427, 1358; *wyl*, (i.) 1294; *wilH*, (i.) 7445 †; *wilH*, (ii.) 1330.—In 2733 D, *wolē haue* (*inf.*) should be *wole haue* (supply [*ye*]). In 3137 D, *wolē abregge* should be *wilne as now tabregge*.

Note.—589 appears to be a 9-syl. verse: "I *wole* (*wil* BD, *welē* C) parten with the al thyn pyne." Mr. Austin makes no note. G agrees with A.

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. *wilt*, *wylt*, (i.) (ii.) 3254,⁵ 3551 (*wolt* B), 4301 f (*whi* † B) (: *agilt p.p.*), 4926 f (-e) D) (: *agilt p.p.* : *spilt p.p.*); cf. 719 † C, 2109 † D, 2148 † C, 3045 † C, 4944 † C.—*wolt*, (i.) (ii.) 2040 (*wilt(e)* B)⁶, 2514 † C, 3178, 7669 (*woldest* ? D), 7881. [Var. CD *wilt*, *wylt*.]—*wyltow*, *wiltow*, 1011 (*woltow* B, *wilt thow* CD), 4931 (*wilt thou* C; D †); *woltow*, 2446 (*wiltow* B, *wilt thou* (thow) CD), 7520 (*wilt thow* C, *wilH thou* D);⁷ *wolt thow*, 2532 (*wiltow* B, *wilt thou* C).

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. Not different from 1 *Sing.* (cf. 1456, 1481, 2042,

¹ For scribe's confusion between *willan* and *wilnian*, see 2963 A, 3137 D, 5277 C.

² 9-syl. verse.

³ Line too long.

⁴ Supply [*seyd*].

⁵ AB are short by two syllables; CD are 9-syl.: Tel (Telle G) (CD insert *me*) which (-e G) *thow wylt* (*wilt* BCDG) of euerychone. No note in Mr. Austin's collation.

⁶ Supply [*And*] in A.

⁷ Supply [*now*] in CD.

6290, etc., etc.). The following forms may be noted,—wyl be, 1545 A; wyl no, 1015 C; wyll how, 4133 † E; wyllę, 537 C; welë † nedis, 5277 C¹; wolë † ben, 6265 A; welë † wondere, 6857 C (l. wolde); welë † away, 6290 C.

Pres. Ind. 1 Pl. wolę go, 2256 (wol BD, welę C); wol the, 4305 (nilę D, welë † no C); wole hym, 2541 (wol B, welyn C); wil haue, 2717 † C; welë † no, 4305 C (wol the AB, nilę the D).

Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. A has usually *wol* or *wolę* (*wole*). Thus—wol, (i.) 1297, 3774, 3816, 3969, 4010, 4654, 5865; (ii.) 1578; wol han (*inf.*), 5579.—wolę, 2686, 2825, 2866, 3708, 3725, 4133, 7274, 7345; wole, 6034, 6188 (*subj.* †).—*Wille* occurs once (2963).² In 1473, *wole* should be *wolde*, and in 2713 *wole* should be *wolę* (supply [me]). In 3946, read *pulle*[n] and *wolę*.

B has usually *wol*: thus,—(i.) 1297, 2825, 2866, etc.; (ii.) 1578, 6034; wol haue (*inf.*), 2831 (*subj.* †), 5579.—But,—wolę, 2713; welę, 3725; wel, (i.) 3774; wil, (i.) 1396 (*subj.* †), 4010.—In 3946, read *pulle*[n] and *wille* ye.

C has *wil* or *welę* (*wele*). Thus,—wil (i.), 2686, 3708, 3816, 3946, 4010, 4133, 5865; welę, 1297, 2713, 2825, 3774, 7274, 7345; wele, 1578³, 6034; cf. 6188 (*subj.* †); wele haue (*inf.*), 5579.

D has: wil, (i.) 1297, 2686, 2825, 2866, 3725, 5865; wol, (i.) 2713, 3774, 3816, 4654; wol, (ii.) 1578; wolę, 4010, 4760 † (*subj.* †); wiH, (i.) 7242, 7345; wiH, (ii.) 6034 (cf. 2715 †) (*subj.* †), 6188 † (ye wiH = ye'll); wiH have (*inf.*), 5579.—wolyn † dweH, 3493; wolë ze, 3946.⁴

Pres. Ind. 3 Pl. wolę, 3033, 4222 (wyl E)⁵, 4785. [Var. BD wol; C welę.]—wol, (i.) 3776 AB, 5249 AB (wul D), 7423 (C †), 7428. [Var. C welę; D wil, wiH.]—wol hem, 7256 (wil C, wiH D)⁶; wol hate, 7426 (wele C, wiH D).—wolę til, 3610 (wollen B, welyn C, wilyn D).—wolë mucche, 907 A (*but read wolde with* CG Cp.; wold[e] BD).

Pres. Subj.⁷ 1 Sing. lest I wol † of, 716 B (wold A, wolde C, wold † the D).

Pres. Subj. 3 Sing. wolę (*in protasis*), 715 (wil BC; D †); wol haue (*in protasis*), 5968 (wele C, wiH D); wol don (*with if*⁸ = *whether*),

¹ The correct reading is *wilneth fro*.

² The correct reading is *wilnë that*.

³ Dele (d).

⁴ But read *pulle*[n] and *wolę*.

⁵ Supply [*that*] in E.

⁶ Subjunctive (?).

⁷ Subjunctive constructions cannot always be distinguished with certainty from indicative.

⁸ A has *of* for *if*.

852 (wele C, wil D); lest that the cherl wolę falle, 1017 A (may BCD).¹ Cf. *welē † nedis*, 5277 C. *Er I wol farther go*, 3123 B (wele C, wolę D, *om. † A*) is perhaps indicative.

Pres. Subj. 2 Pl. *wolę (ind. quest.)*, 1396 (wil BC, wol D); *-ę (with but yf)*, 4760 † D; *wole (with but = unless)*, 462 (wol B; *om. C † D †*); *-e (with if that in ind. quest.)*, 6034 (wol B, wele C, wiH D); *-e (in protasis)*, 6188 (wol B, wele C, wiH D †); *wol, (i.) 1659 (wele D) (in protasis with but)*, 7704 (wele C, wiH D) (with *that*, objective clause of purpose); *wille (ind. quest.)*, 2963 (wilne B, wiln C †, wolde D †); *wol † have (with though)*, 2831 (*pret. BCD*).

Pret. 1 Sing. *wolde*, 2919, 3490 (*wold † go D*), 3854, etc. [Var. BD *wold[e]*.]—*wolde*, 865, 3769², 7462 (*wilde † C, wolde † D*). [Var. BD *wold.*]—*wold I*, 2232 (*-e C, walde B*), 3342 (*-e B, -ë † not C*).—*wolde here (dat.)*, 2091 (*[-e] telle D*); *-e hym*, 2966 (D †), 3715 (*-d B; D †*); *-e haue (inf.)*, 5168 (*-e a CD*), 8041 (*-d B, -e a C*); *wold han (inf.)*, 1499 (*-e a C, -d have D*).—*wolde*, 2512 † C, 2770 † C, 8140 † D (‡).

Note.—In 5903 the correct reading is perhaps *wolde han slawe* (see § 122, XII.); Mr. Austin's collation has no note; ABCDG read,—My (Myn C) selue (self B, seluyn C, silf D, selfe G) I wolde (wolde I C) haue (han B, a C) slayn (slawe C, slayne DG) quod she tho (too D).—In 3864 A *woldē on* should be *wolde vpon* (so BC, *wold vpon D*).

Pret. 2 Sing. *woldest*, 4487 (*-ist C, -ist † thou D*), 5103 (*-yst C*).³

Note.—In 4944 we should perhaps read: Nought roughte I whider that thou woldest me stere. Mr. Austin's collation has no note; ABCDG have: Nought (Nouȝte G) rought (rouȝte CG) I wheder (*-yr C, whider B, whedirwardes D, whider G*) thow (that thou C) woldest (*-ist C, wilt D*) me (*om. D*) stere. *Woldest* may be regarded as a subjunctive (see § 106).

Pret. 3 Sing. *wolde*, 77 (*[-e] BD*), 2957 f (*-d BD*), 3064 (*[-e] D*)⁴, 3333 f (*-d pl. D*), 3458 (*[-e] D, wald[e] B*), 4509 f, 4828 (*[-e] D*), 4833, 4885, 6475 f, 6653 (*[-e] B*), 6874 (*[-e] B*), 6987 f, 7267 f, 7595 (*-ë † he D*), 8126 f (*-d B*), etc.; *wold[e]*, 7578 (*-e C; D †*); *wolde*, 1776 (*-d BD*), 3287 (*-d D, wald B*)⁵, 3301 (*-d BD*), 3344 (*-d D, walde B*), 4276, 7241 (*-ę D, woolde B*); *wolde he*, 6901; *-e hem*, 3303 (*-d BD*); *wold of*, 716 (*-e C, wol † B, wold † the D*); *wold he*, 4621 B (*-e C, -e † ryde A; -d he D (‡)*); *wold hire (acc.)*, 1355 (*-e BC*), 2678 (*nulde C, nold D*) (for other cases of *wolde* or *wold* before *h* in *hym, haue, han*, cf. 501, 2164, 3497, 5045, 7999, etc.).—*wolde come*, 7949 ACD (*wol B*); *wold † do*, 6550 A (*wol B, wiH D, line om. † C*); cf. 527 † C, 1294 † C, 2459 † C, 2745 †

¹ Supply [that] in D.

² Supply [And] in D.

³ Supply [thus] in C.

⁴ Dele (*deiphebus*) in B.

⁵ In C read *mys(c)sid*.

C, 5890 † C, 7241 † D, 7789 † D.—woldë † on, 3539 A (-e vpon BC, -d vpon D); -ë I (?), 1830 A (-d BD, -de C); -ë † he, 6839 C¹; -ë † holde, 7999 C.

Rhyme words.—byholde *inf.* (2957), sholde, shulde *sing.* (3333, 4509, 6475, 7267, 8126), sholde *pl.* (6987).

Note 1.—In 6510 we may read *wrathë* and *wolde* or *woldë* and *wrathe*: That half (-e D) so loth (-e G, soth C) yowre (zoure BC, your DG) wrath-the (wreth BD, wrethe C, wreith G) wolde (-d B) deserue. Mr. Austin's collation has no note.—In 3830 *wolde* (-d BD) *the excellence* admits either *woldë* or -e.

Note 2.—The following cases, in which *wolde* appears in wishes (as *wolde god*, and the like), may be put together as indubitably subjunctive,—*wolde*, 459 (-[e] D), 519 f (: sholde 3 *sg.*) 936 (-[e] D), 4119, 4229, 4607 (B †), 4997, 6487², 6590, 6971 (B has *wold[e]* in all but 519); -e, 526 (-d B).

Pret. 1 Pl. *wolde*, 3373 f (-d D) (: sholde 3 *sg.*); *wold[e]*, 6854 (-e b(e)leue CD).³

Pret. 2 Pl. *wolden*, (i.) 6226 (-e C, -e † D), 7754 (-e C); (ii.) 343 (-ë C, -[ë] D); *wolden han* (*inf.*), 2831 (-yn C, wol B, wold D), 5896 (*wold* B, -e a CD); *woldyn † assent*, 2715 C; *woldyn † in*, 7713 C (*nolde* AD).—*wolde*, 2328 (-[e] D, walde B), 2972 (-yn C, -[e] D), 6281, 6536 (-[e] B); -e, 2715 (-yn C, wiß D)⁴, 6497 (-yn me C, -ë † as D), 8046 † C; -e *han* (*inf.*), 4348 (-d B, -ë † han C, -e † me D); *wolde † be*, 3888 C.

Pret. 3 Pl. *wolden*, (i.) 919 (-e C, -[e] D), 1453? (-[e] B, -[e] D?)⁵, 2503 (-[e] D), 3297? (-e C, -d D)⁶, 6233 (-en it? D); (ii.) 2517. [Var. C -in, -yn; D -yn.] *wolden han* (*inf.*), 915 (-e B, -e a C, *om.* † D)⁷; *wooldyn † ouzt*, 1997 C.—*wolde*, 150 (-[e] B, *nolde* C, *nold † they* D), 3119 (-e on C, *would* vpon D), 4819 (-[e] D), 4832 (-[e] D, -e [that] B), 4837 (-[e] BD)⁸, 4879 f (: sholde 3 *sg.*)⁹, 7700 (-en BD, -yn C), 7828 † C; *wold[e]*, 907 BD (C †); *wolde*, 2520 (-d B, -yn D, -d *sg.* C), 3867 (-d BD, -yn C †); -e *hym*, 2630 (-d D); -e *han* (*inf.*), 4839 (-d D); -e *here* (*gen. pl.*), 7323; *wold afferme*, 2673 BD (-yn C, -e *sg.* A).¹⁰—*wold † deme*, 1546 A (-e BC, -d of D); *wold[e]*, 3333 f D (*wolde sg.* ABC).

¹ But read *then[ne]*s and *wolde he*.

² Supply [*if*] in AC.

³ Supply [*that*] in CD.

⁴ If we read *it werë good*.

⁵ Men *wolden* (-yn C, -e Cp., *wold* BD, *wole* G) *wondren* (*wonderyn* C, *wondur* D) to (*om.* B Cp. John's, that G) *se* (*sen* BC Cp., *seen* G) *hym come* (-yn CG) or (and CD) *gon* (*gone* D, *goon* G).

⁶ So as they *dorste* (-en G, *dorst* B, *durste* C, *durst* D) *how* (*hough* G, so as C, *how ferre* D) they *wolden* (*wolde* CCp., *wold* D) *procede*.

⁷ Supply [*they*] in C.

⁸ The subject is *al the world*.

⁹ The subject is *substaunce* (i.e. majority) of the *parlement*.

¹⁰ In C read *of* for *oftin*.

III. *nyl*.

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. *nyl*, (i.) 758 (*welę* C)¹, 1231 (*wolę* D), 1562, 2246 (*wolę* A), 3009 (*wolę* D), 6846 BC (*wol* A, *wil* D). [Var. C nil; D *nel*.] *nyl*, (ii.) 2897 (*wole* D), 3284 (*nel* D), 6406, etc.—*nel* not, 1409 (*nyl* B, nil C, *wil* D); *nel* haue, 1100 (*nyl* B, *nel* † neither D).

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. *nylt*, (i.) (ii.) 2085 (*nelt* D), 2109 (C †; *wilt* † D), 2140 (*nelt* D)², 5190 (*nyl* thy B, *nelt* D †).—*nyltow*, 792 (*nylt* thou C, *nelt* thow D), 4912 (*nyl*-tow B, *nylt* thou C, *nylt*(e) thou D), 8071 (*nyl* to B, nil thou C); cf. 4269, 4965, 5151; *neltow*, 5150 (*nyltow* B, *nylt* thou C, *nylt*(e) thou D.)

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. *nyl*, nil, (i.) 2474 (*welę* C, *nel* D), 6538 (*niH* D), 6719 (*sche* ne *wil* C, *niH* D); cf. 777, 1015, 5275, 6478 † C; (ii.) *nyl* he, 6704 (*nyH* D).³—*nel* † be, 1545 D.

Pres. Ind. 1 Pl. *we* *nię* thee, 4305 (*wol* AB, *we* *welę* † no C).

Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. *nyl* me, 6594 AB (*niH* D); *nyl* not, 7265 (nil D).

Pres. Ind. 3 Pl. *nyl*, (i.) 37 (*perh. sg.*) (*nyH* D); nil it, 3776 C (*wol* not AB, *nel* hit D).

Pret. 1 Sing. *nołde*, 1023 f (I ne *wolde* C^c, *nold* D) (: *sholde* 1 *sg.*), 5997⁴; *nold*[e], 5248 (*nyłde* C, *nolde* † D); *nołde*, 5899 (-d B, I ne *wolde* C); *nold* I, 1118 (-e † nat B), 1393 (-d BD, *wolde* C), 1566 (-e C)⁵; I *nold* † not (‡), 3742 (*nold*[e] *setten* B, -e *settę* C, -[e] *set* D).

Note.—In 2558 the correct reading seems to be *ne wolde I* (so B Cp.): A has *nold I*, which is unmetrical; D has *wold y*, but improperly omits *ne*; C reads *wolde I*, but has *ȝit* for *ne*.

Pret. 2 Sing. *nołdestow*, 4106 (*nołdestow* B, *noldist* thou CD). (For subjunctive, see § 106.)

Pret. 3 Sing. *nołde*, 77 f (-d D) (: *sholde* 3 *sg.*), 2134 (-e B, -d hit D), 2308 (-[e] D, *wolde* A), 3409 (*wolde* C, *wold*[e] D †), 4787 (-[e] B, *nulde* C; D †), 5299 f (: *sholde* 1 *sg.*), 7314 (-[e] B); *nulde*, 2574 C (*nold*[e] D, *wolde* A, *wold*[e] B), cf. 1777 D; as *nold*[e] *god*, 5228 (-e CD); *nolde* *han*, 5803 (*nulde* an C), 7087 (*nold* B, *wolde* † a C; D †); -e here⁶ (*gen. sg.*), 7572 (-d B); -e *his*, 7593 (-d B); *nulde* *hire* (*acc.*), 2678 C (*nold* D, *ne* *wold* AB).—*nolde* *don*, 6478 (*nyl* C, *wil* † D); *nold*, (i.) 2643 A (-e BC, *wold* D).⁷

Pret. 2 Pl. *nołde*, 3625 f (-d D) (: *sholde* 2 *pl.*); *nolde*, 7713

¹ Supply [*not*] in D.

² Supply [*that*] in D.

³ Supply [*thus*] in D; dele the first (*thus*) in B.

⁴ Supply [*Whom*] in C; [*for*] in D.

⁵ Supply [*han*] in B. Read *sey*[e] in C.

⁶ A has *he* †.

⁷ Supply [*to*] in D.

(woldyn C)¹, 8042 (-d B, nolden ? D); -e han, 8043 (-d B); nold han, 1503 (nylde an C).

Pret. 3 Pl. nolde, 150 C (wolde A, wold[e] B, nold † they D), 5851 f (: sholde 3 *sg.*)², 7828 (-[e] B, -en D, wolde C).

IV. *do.*

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. do, 719 (C †).

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. dost, (i.) (ii.) 2595, 3238 (-(e) B, doost D), 3244, 4278 (D ?), 6960 (doost B, dedyst C, hast D); dostow, 7097 B (dost thou C, dost(e) thou D, dost[ow] A).

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. doth, (i.) (ii.) 626, 671, 1270 f (-e D; B †), 2369 f (-e D), etc. B and D sometimes add an irrational *é*, which of course is never pronounced (see 1031, 3876, 5542); so also in 7757 A.

Pres. Ind. Pl. (1) Before consonants,—don, 1237 (doon B, *om.* † D), 2471 (do D), 3647 (don(e) D); cf. 2669, 3724, 6707, 7978; doon, 705 (don C, done D †); do, 426 (don C †), 3143 † D, 3967 (B †), 5575 (doo D), 8063 (doth(e) B, don C, don(e) D); doth, 2391 A (dos(e) B, don C, don(e) D), 2469 (don BC^c, don(e) D).³ (2) In rhyme,—do, 1111 f (: tho : so). (3) Before vowels,—don, 134 (-(e) D); cf. 345, 1526, 5086, 7217, 8085. (4) Before *he, hem, here* (adv.),—don, 1124 (doon B, do D), 5845 (-(e) D, don folk C), 7935; do, 2868.

Pret. Ind. 1, 3 Sing. dide, 3653 (dede C, did ? D †); dude † dye, 7845 C; did[e] † byseche(?), 3424 D; didē || for, 4233 (dedē C) (cf. 699 † D, 1064 † D, 7292 † C); dide, dede, 2316 (did C, dyd D), 2430, 2788 (ded D), 3766 (did D) (cf. 3121⁴, 4497, 8099, 8100); Than he *dede* erst thurgh hope and *dide* his myght, 2425 (dide . . . *om.* † B, dede . . . dede C, *om.* † . . . dede D †). For elision before *his, hym, hem*, cf. 2014, 2654, 3354, 3813.

Pret. Ind. 2 Sing. dedest, 3205 (-ist CD, didest B); dedyst, 6960 † C.

Pret. Ind. Pl. deden, (i.) 82 (-yn C, dede him D †); diden, 471 f (deden C, dedyn D) (: riden *incl. pret.* 3 *pl.* : abyden *p.p.*); deden hardely, 3055 (-yn D †, diden B, dudyn C); dedē al, 4247 (diden BE, dedyn C); ded[e] † flene, 1279 D.

Pres. Subj. 1 Sing. do, (i.) (ii.) 590, 4142, 5103 (werche D), 5224. [Var. D doo.]

¹ In A read *dayes ten* for *ten dayes*.

² Double subject.

³ In 7321 *al that doth it care* appears to be singular in A (alle that doth B, alle that don C, all that doth D, alle that doth(e) G). (No note in Mr. Austin's collation.)

⁴ Perhaps subjunctive.

- Pres. Subj. 2 Sing. do, (i.) 636, 2401 (9-syl. in CD), 5131, 5276.
 [Var. D doo.]
- Pres. Subj. 3 Sing. do, (i.) (ii.) 980, 2903, 6201 (put † D), 6305.
- Pres. Subj. Pl. do we, 2030; do no, 4022 (don C); do me, 7773;
 doon vs, 1412 (don BC, do D); don amys, 3015 (do D).
- Pret. Subj. Sing. dede his, 369 (dydde B); dide hym, 3764 (dede
 C, did † D).
- Imv. 2 Sing. do, (i.) 833, 1022, 2886, 5176 (doo D), etc.; ne do
 thou, 586.—do on, 2039 C (don AB; D †), 3580 (don B, do this C).¹
- Imv.² 2 Pl. doth, (i.) 1407 (do CD), 1663 (doth(e) D), etc.; doth
 hym, 2294; doth herof, 3781 (C †).—do, (i.) 2268 (doth D), 3430
 (y † do *ind.* D), 3891, 4018 (doth D, seith † C); do ye, 2915.
- Inf. do, don, to done, etc. See § 119, XIII.
- Perf. Part. (1) Before consonants,—don, 63 A (doun B), 2366 (do D),
 3044, 3228 (ido B, ydo D), 5148 A (doon B, doon(e) D), 6419
 (don(e) B, do C, doon(e) D); cf. 2544, 2577, 3256, 3917, 4460,
 4552, 4923, 4939, 6470, 7429, 7721; harm idon is don who-so, etc.,
 1874 (ydon . . . don D); do, 3086 (D(?) ; don † euer C; B †),
 4024 (don BC, don(e) D), 4402 (don C)³. (2) In rhyme,—do,
 1095 f (: Cleo *n. pr.*), 1389 f (: wherto), 1878 f (done D) (: go *p.p.* :
 so); fordo, 74 f (: Appollo : to go). (3) Before vowels,—don, 1129
 (-e) BD), 1446 (do D), 3703; cf. 1010, 2083, 2530, 3340, 3997,
 7102, 8047, 8090; fordon, 525 (-loon B, don(e) D †), 8050 (-e)
 D); vndon, 4577 (-e) D, ondon C).

V. *go*.

- Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. go, (i.) 5502 (goo D), 5869 f (goo D) (: wo *n.*),
 5938 f (goo D) (: two : so).⁴
- Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. goth, gooth, (i.) (ii.) 514, 1084, 1418, 3242, 5355,
 etc.; 3950 f (: wroth *pred. adj. sg.* : oth). B and D sometimes have
 an irrational -e, which is of course never pronounced.—forgoth here
 (*gen. sg.*), 6426 (-e) B).
- Pres. Ind. 2, 3 Plur. gon, (i.) 5761 (-e) D, goth *sg.* C), 6740 C (goth
sg. ABD); (ii.) 6159 (-e) D).⁴ go, (i.) 7494 (gon C, -n(e) D).
- Pres. Subj. 1, 2, 3 Sing. go, (i.) (ii.) 1363 f (: so : no), 2774 f (: so :
 two), 3123 † A, 3125, 3155, 5777, 6407 f (: also : two), 7490.
 [Var. D goo.]—for-go, (i.) 4953.
- Pres. Subj. 1, 2. Pl. go, 1570 f (: two : foo), 3771 f (: wo : so), cf.

¹ In D slur *do on* and read [*ep*]on. ² All the cases cited refer to a single person.³ Supply [*me*] in B, [*so*] in D.⁴ Perhaps subjunctive.

1299 f, 4358 f; go we, 1700 (gow we B), 2199, 2248, 2690, 2809, 3514, 6187 (goo D), 6765 (goo D), 6886 (goo D); gon, (i.) 7361 (goon D).

Pret. Ind. 1, 3 Sing. wente, (see § 99).—yede, 3 *sg.*, 7206 f (3ode B, 3ede C) (: Diomedé); 3ede, 3 *sg.*, 3548 † C; foryede he, 3 *sg.*, 2415 (-3ede BC).

Pret. Ind. Pl. wenten, wente, yeden. See § 109.

Pret. Subj. 1, 3 Sing. wente. See § 113.

Imv. 2 Sing. go, (i.) 574, 1481, 2609 (so † C), 5285 (goo D), 8149 (go . . . goo D); go hens, 572.

Imv. 2 Pl. goth, (ii.) 3513 † D; go, (i.) 5601 (goth(e) D).¹

Inf. gon, (1) Before consonants,—gon, forgon, 53 (-e) B, go D), 357² (C?; go D), 1996 (go BD), 4623 (go CD), 5141 (-goo D), 5624; cf. 1204, 4857, 5417, 5946, 6284, 6432, 6649.—go, forgo, 2256, 3533 (gon C, gon(e) D), 4226 (-gon B, -goo E), 5246 (gon C, goo D), 7116 (gon BC, goo D); cf. 1458, 2029, 3582, 5136, 5261, 5989, 7895. (2) In rhyme,—gon, 117 f (gone BD), 1453 f (goon B, gone D), 1627 f (-e BD), 2094 f (-e BCD), 2137 f (-e CD), 2258 f, 2311 f (-e B; D †); cf. 2769 f, 2796 f, 3036 f, 3404 f, 3518 f, 3543 f, 4048 f, 5017 f, 5255 f (goone D), 6023 f, 7270 f; goon, 133 f (gone BD, gon C), 2014 f (gon BC, gone D); gone, 846 f (gon C) (: euerychone), 2686 f (gon C) (: euerychon : anoon).

Rhyme-words.—bon *os* (2014), ston *n.* (2311, 5017), oon, on *num. adj.* (2258, 2769, 3036, 3404, 5255, 7270), noon, non *num. adj.* (133, 1453, 2137, 4048, 6023), anoon, anon *adv.* (117, 1453, 1627, 2014, 2094, 2137, 2258, 2686, 2769, 2796, 3036, 3404, 3518, 3543, 4048, 5017, 5255, 7270), euerychon (2686), euerychone (846), begon *p.p.* (117), ron *pret.* 3 *sg.* *rained* (3518).

Note.—The rhymes show that in *gone* the -e is merely parasitic. The only ambiguous rhyme is *euerychon*, -e.

go, 75 f² (: Appollo : fordo *p.p.*), 628 f (: so : therfro); cf. 838 f, 1033 f, 2650 f, 3291 f, 3421 f, 3490 f, 4267 f, 4316 f, 4422 f, 4519 f, 4604 f, 4798 f, 4825 f (gon † A), 4884 f, 4966 f, 5086 f (D †), 5119 f, 5150 f, 5786 f, 5905 f, 6087 f, 6171 f, 6217 f, 6589 f, 6890 f, 7025 f, 7347 f, 7501 f, 7624 f.—(3) Before vowels,—gon, goon, 517, 863, 3425, 3486, 5408, 6017, 7058; cf. 2598, 6850, 7151, 7173. [Var. BD gon(e); D goo, go.] (4) go henne, 1294 (gon BC), 3472 (gon C, gette B).

Note.—In 4181 A has the reading *go-ne* (printed with hyphen) : So loth to hem a sondry (asonder B, a sundir C, a sonder E) go-ne (gon it BCCp., gone it E); leaf wanting in D; stanza wanting in G. Of course gon it is right.

¹ Addressed to a single person (perhaps singular).

² Old-style figures indicate that *to* precedes the infinitive.

Perf. Part. (1) Before consonants,—gon, goon, agon, forgon, 718 (gone † D (?)), 2107 (go D), 3381 (gon(e) D), 4284, 4527 (ago B, gon(e) D), 4547 (go D), 6598 (gon(e) D †); wo bygon, 2959 (bi-B, be- C); go, 1592 (gon BC, gon(e) D). (2) In rhyme,—gon, 2243 f (-e BD), 3736 f (-e D), 4336 f (-e D), 5309 f (goone D); agon, 1495 f (-e BD), 1807 f (-e D), 4244 f (ygonne † E), 5442 f (gon (?) B, igone C, gone (?) D), 5842 f (-e BD, igon C), 5979 f (-e D), 7688 f (-e D); bigon, bygon, begon,—with *wo, wel, wers, sorrowfully*,—114 f (-e BD), 1379 f (-e BD), 1682 f (-e D), 5126 f (-goon D), 5484 f (-e D), 6310 f (-goon D), 7691 f (-goon BD); ago, 5752 f (agoo D, *line om.* † C), 6680 f (ago(n) C, agoo D), 7417 f (agoo D); [a]go (?), 1880 f (ago B, go C, gone D); go, cf. 4358 f C. (3) Before vowels,—gon, 8008 (ben BCD); wo-by-gon, 4372 (-gan B, woo-be-gon C, woo-bigon(e) D) (cf. 6397).—For *went*, see § 121. I.

Rhyme words.—ston *n.* (3736, 5126), won *n.* (5842), oon *num. adj.* (4244), noon, non *num. adj.* (1379, 1807, 3736, 5126, 5842, 6310, 7688, 7691), eueyehon(e) (5442), anoon (114, 1495, 4244, 4336, 5309, 5484, 5979, cf. 2243), gon *inf.* (114), don *inf.* (1495);—do *pp.* (1880), so (1880, 5752), fo (5752), two (6680), Escaphilo *nom. pr.* (6680), wo (7417), mo (7417).

VI. *haue*.

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. *haue* is the regular form before consonants: cf. 611, 628, 670, 988, 1133, 1298, 1327, 1467, 1760, 1780, 1955, 2370, 2565, 3173, 3251, 3340, 3350, 3531, 3902 BCD, 4024, 4039, 4349, 4460, 4592, 4691, 4953, 5770, 6032, 6159, 6183, 6272, 6327, 6687, 6783, 7234, 7343, 7419, 7463, 7752, 8197.—*haue*, 2060 f (: *yaue pret. subj.* 3 *sg.* : *saue pres. subj.* 3 *sg.*), 2942 f (: *saue pres. subj.* 3 *sg.* : *graue p.p.*), 4319 f (: *saue inf.*).—*haue* herd, 2537; *haue* hight, 6289,—and so of course before a vowel or weak *h*.—For *haue* before consonants, (not *h*) see 197 † C, 1179 † A, 1381 † D, 2596 † D, 3902 † A, 7752 † C. Cf. also,—*haue* † honour, 5232 C; *haue* † in, 6042 D, 6946 † A (B †).

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. *hast*, (i.) (ii.) 557, 696, 845, etc.—*hastow*, 276 (*hast* thou CD), 4297 (*hast* thou CD), etc.; *ne hastow*, 5512 (*ne hast* thou ? C, *ne have* ye ? D).

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. *hath*, (i.) (ii.) 1255, 1952 (*hauyth* C), 3457 (*has* B), etc., etc.—*nath*, (i.) 1862 AB (*ne hath* C), 7562 (*ne hath* C, *ne* † *hath* D).

Pres. Ind. 1 Pl. *han*, (i.) 4853 (*haue* D), 5545 (*haue* D), 5654 (*hañ* D), 5904 (*haue* CD), 6757 (*haue* D), 7519 (*haue* CD);¹ (ii.) 3779

¹ Supply [*for*] in AD (or, in D, read *haue*).

(have D, 3e † han B); han herd, 1186 (have D).—haue, 5642 (han D).¹—hauë † nat, 7519 D.

Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. (1) Before consonants *han* is the regular form in ABC, *have* in D²: cf. 25, 27, 28, 1446, 1668, 2209, 2325, 2878, 3395, 4102, 4154, 4401, 4954, 5860, 6505, 7353, 7712, 7721, 8059. But *haue* is found in all four MSS.: thus,—3735 AB, 4768 AB, 5860 B, 7353 C; and when *ye* follows (*haue ye*) *haue* is the regular form in all four: cf. 1373, 1413, 3042, 5855 (han 3e C),³ 5977, 6829, 7619, 8040.⁴ (2) Before vowels,—han, 2964 (have D, han † routhe C^o), 3779 † C, 4742 (haue D). (3) Before *h*, han herd, 2051 (have D), 2632, 2953 (have D), 5469 (have D, 3e han † B), 5538 (C (?); haue D); han hight, 1577 (have D); haue herd, 6992 (han B; C †).

Pres. Ind. 3 Pl. (1) Before consonants *han* is the regular form in ABC, *have* in D: cf. 241, 247, 553, 706, 802, 913, 999, 2478, 3034, 4293, 4299, 4547, 5249, 6877, 7119, 7123 A. But *haue* occurs in 6877 C, *han* in D 241, 247, 2669; and *hath* is found in 242 † BC, 2467 (?) † D, 4299 † B, 4547 † D. Cf. also,—hauë † suffred, 6778 D (*read haue [y]suffred*). (2) Before vowels,—han, 199 (have D), 1129 (have D), 1973 (have D), 3135, 3194 (han(e) D), 6143 (hauyn C, haue D), 6632 (haue D), 7614 (haue D), 7975 (haue D); cf. 6778. (3) han here (gen. pl.), 5658 ABD.

Pret. Ind. 1, 3 Sing. hadde. See § 102.

Pret. Ind. 2 Sing. haddest. See § 106.

Pret. Ind. Pl. hadden, hadde. See § 109.

Pres. Subj. 1 Sing. haue, 33 AB, 1095, 1740, 3717 † D; haue, cf. 1225, 1609 (*or indic.*), 3632, 3717 † C, 4752; hauë myght(e), 8067 † BD (*read trew[ë]ly and haue*).

Pres. Subj. 3 Sing. haue, 955, 1834, 2723, 2771, 7750 † C (hath AD), 7994; hauë † spase, 7305 C; haue, cf. 220, 6465; haue he, 21,⁵ 1932 (-ë † he A)⁶; haue his, 805; hauë † in, 6465 D; hauë † hym, 5292 C.

Pres. Subj. 2 Pl. haue ye, 1667, 2772.⁷

Pret. Subj. 1, 3 Sing. hadde. See § 113.

Pret. Subj. 2 Sing. See § 106.

Pret. Subj. Pl. hadde. See § 114.

¹ Supply [as] in D.

² D has *han* in 4653.

³ *haue* [ye] A.

⁴ *haue* [3e] BC.

⁵ Supply [my] in D, or read *hauë † he*.

⁶ Supply [so] and read *haue he* in A.

⁷ Transpose *elyne* and *the queene* in C.

Imv. Sing. Hauę now good nyght, 3183, 3262; haue here my trouthe, 3953.

Imv. Pl. Ne wondreth not ne hauęth of it no fere, 3595 (haue BD, hauyth C); haue, 2218 (-yth C), 3908, 4015; haue here (*adv.*), 1409, 3727 (haviþth D), 6028.

Inf. (1) Before consonants both *han* and *haue* are common in A, B, and C; but *have* is the regular form in D. For *han*, see 467 AB, 638 B, 769 ABC, 872 AB, 900 BC, 915 AB, etc., etc.; for *haue*, see 467 C, 501 AB, 638 A, 899 AB, etc., etc. Cf. 1100, 1277, 1354, 1499, 1566, 1580, 1638, 1796, 2522, 2523, 2717, 2733, 2956, 3255, 3273, 3287, 3581, 4002, 4057, 4683, 4764, 4770, 4774, 4839, 5045, 5046, 5106, 5168, 5232, 5522, 5582, 5653, 5803, 5890, 5896, 5899, 5900, 5968, 6019, 6138, 6247, 6383, 6417, 6431, 6481, 6645, 6887, 7102, 7209, 7268, 7344, 8041, 8046. For *an* = *han*, see 5803 C. In—To (*om.* C) slepe and after tales *haue* (*han* BG Cp., *hauyn* C, *have* D, *han* a E) reste, 3066, *han* is unmetrical; cf. Ye shul (*schal* C, *shal* GCp. John's) nomore *haue* (*han* BC Cp. John's) soueraynte (-*eynte* BDG, -*aignete* Cp. John's, -*anitee* E, *seurete* of me C), 3013; cf. also 2717 † D, 3414 † D, 3799 † D, 5968 † C, 6138 † C. (2) In rhyme,—*haue*, 120 f, 1821 f, 2329 f, 2541 f, 4221 f, 5228 f, 6036 f, 7779 f; *hauen*, 4305 f (*haue* BCD) (: *grauen ind.* 3 *pl.*, -e BCD).

Rhyme words.—*sauę inf.* (120, 2329, 5228, 6036, 7779), *subj.* 3 *sg.* (1821, 4221), *grauę inf.* (2329, 6036), *erauę inf.* (2541), *grauę n.* (7779).

(3) Before vowels *han* is the commonest form in ABC, *have* in D: cf. 13, 122, 349, 803, 1574, 2224, 2460, 2587, 2831, 2840, 3733, 4348, 5047, 5213, 5967, 7443, 7636. But *haue* is found in all four MSS.: thus,—50 AB, 122 C, 349 B, 709 AB, 2454 AB, 2562 A, 2831 B, 3485 AB, 3786 ABC, 5047 B, 5271 AB, 6407 ABC, 7443 C, 7636 B. In 2224 D *haviþn of* is found (*han* ABC). (4) Before *h* (*hym*, *his*, *here* (*hire*), *had*), both *han* and *haue* are found in A, B, C, and D: cf. 1503, 2164, 2504, 3352, 3856, 4395, 5579, 7747; for cases before other *h*'s, cf. 857, 3497, 6104, 8043. C has *an* for *han* in two instances: *an had*, 1503 C; *an hyzed*, 3947 C.

Note.—The clipped form *α* for the infinitive occurs several times in C (rarely in A and D). Thus,—in C 501, 638, 899, 915, 1499, 1638, 2956, 3273, 4002, 5045, 5046, 5168, 5890, 5896, 5899, 5900, 5903, 6417, 6645, 7087, 7102, 8041, 8046; in A 900; in D 5168, 5896. The form *ha* is rare,—see 5106 C, 5900 D, 6417 D. In all the citations in this note a consonant follows the infinitive.

METRICAL CHAPTER.

§ 125. Weak *-e* is elided before a vowel and often before *h* (see Child, §§ 74—76; ten Brink, § 269); but final *-e* in the definite article may be preserved (see § 128).¹

Elision of weak *-e* takes place before *he, his, him, hire* (gen. dat. acc. sg., gen. pl.), *hem*; before *haue* (pres. ind. or subj., inf.), *hast, hath, han* (ind. pl., inf.), *hadde*; before *how* and *here* (adv.); before French “*h* mute” in *honour, horrible*; before irrational *h* in *Horuste*.

Examples of elision before *h* in pronouns are unnecessary (for possible exceptions to the rule, see § 126). Examples before *h* in the other words mentioned follow: variants are for the most part left unregistered; the occurrence of a cæsura after the elided *-e* is indicated.

dere (adv.) *haue* (ind. 1 sg.), 4953; *blame haue* (ind. or subj. 1 sg.), 1295; *Diomede* || *haue* (ind. 2 pl.), 8040.

wratthe || *hast*, 933; *cause hast*, 6913; *ioye hastow*, 6951.

mone hath, 4598; *herte hath*, 6501; *loue hath*, 879 AB; *loue* || *hath*, 960; *nece* (|| ?) *hath*, 8090; *pùrueyaunce* (|| ?) *hath*, 5639; *sore hath*, 1618; *Troye hath*, 6220; *Criseyde* || *hath*, 7610.

a lawe (|| ?) *han* (2 pl.), 2878.

loue hadde (3 sg.), 304, 663; *ioye* || *hadde*, 3311; *cause* || *hadde*, 4069; *Criseyde* || *hadde*, 5487; *longe* || *hadde*, 5832.

on *lyue han be*, 5899; *ye koude han*, 8046; *moste* (sg.) *han*, 3733; *men sholde* (|| ?) *han*, 872; *sholde* (3 pl.) *han*, 3273; *I wold han*, 1499; *she wold* (|| ?) *han*, 2164; *he wolde han*, 3497; *ye me wolde han*, 4348; *they wolde han* 4839; *molde* (sg.) *han*, 5803, 7087; *ye nolde han*, 1503; *ye nolde* (|| ?) *han*, 8043; *sòm tyne* (|| ?) *han*, 5967 (see note 2, below); cf. also, *wolden* (2 pl.) *han*, 2831.

I dorst haue, 899; *he myght haue*, 1277; *who myght haue*, 7102; *I wolde haue*, 5168, cf. 8041; *she wolde haue*, 501; *who wolde haue*, 5045.

In all the following cases of elision before *how*, except 6005, 7145, *how* is preceded by the cæsura: *loue*, 1752; *nece*, 4405; *Troy*, 6005; *swete*, 4120; at the *leste*, 4678; *thoughte* (ind. 3 sg.),

¹ With reference to the treatment of the final vowel in elision, the following readings are not without interest, though some of them can hardly be called evidence: *tellit* (= telle it), 580 C; *myghty* (= myghte I), 7444 A (myzty C); *drië* (= drie I *patior*), 6659 C; *posë* (= pose a), 3152 B; *excuser* (= excuse her inf.), 7462 D, see 7460 D (cf. *dethes*=deth his, 469 C); *leuë* = leef he, 6247 C.

3282; cast (*pret. inl.* 3 *sg.*), 4823; kowde (3 *sg.*), 1921; he nyste (*inl.*), 7145; if ye wiste (*subj.*), 6280; happe how happe may, 7159.

allone here (*hic*), 806; hadde here-vpon, 3377.

Ne shal I neuere haue *hele* || *honour* ne ioye, 6104 (neuere haue || honour C, Shal I neuer hauē hele h. ne ioye D). Cf. And that ye d[e]igne me so *muche honour* (*inf.*), 2981 (muchel B, mechil C, And yow deigne me so honoure D †).

In *place horrible* makyngē ay his moone, 6613.

How that ye louen sholde (sholden louen B Cp., schulde louyn C, shold love D, schulde louen G, shulden loue John's) on that *hatte Horaste* (horast G, on hat h. D, oon atte h. E), 3639. That *Horaste* = *Orestes* (cf. § 139) is evident from Gower's *Confessio Amantis*, bk. iii. (I, 352), where the forms *Horestes* and *Horest* (elided) occur: Chaucer merely uses the name without intending an allusion to the classical *Orestes*.

Note 1.—In some of the examples just given, the word affected by elision is one that loses its -e rather readily before a consonant: so especially of the "auxiliary verbs," and of the nouns *loue*, *necc.*—It should be observed that in phrases in which an auxiliary verb precedes the infinitives *han* or *haue*, we have often what is to all intents and purposes a single verb-form of which the infinitive *han* (or *haue*) is the unaccented part (or scarcely more than a suffix). In such cases the infinitive had of course no full pronunciation, and in some instances we actually find it written *an* or *a* (§ 124, VI., note at end). Elision before such a form as this has really little in common with elision before a fully sounded *h*, of whatever origin.

Note 2.—Proparoxytone words ending in -e apocopate -e before consonants (ten Brink, § 257): *swētnesse haue* (638), *Pandare* || *here* (*adv.*) (868), *Pandare herde* (876), and the like, have therefore no significance as examples of elision (cf. also *sōm tyme han*, 5967, where *som-tyme* is practically a compound, and see § 2, p. 3).

Note 3.—For the treatment of words like *chaumbre*, *lettre*, *temple*, *vncle*, before *h*, see § 136, *f. g.* Cf. *hevene* (*dissyl.*) *hye* 4587 (§ 14). For *euere*, *neuere* before *h*, see the details in § 90.

§ 126. Hiatus, whether before a vowel or before *h* in the words mentioned in § 125, is very rare.

In a few instances, the evidence for hiatus is either conclusive or, at any rate, considerable. Thus,—

Al this *Pandurē* || *yn* his herte thoughte, 1063 (C cut out). *Pandare* is the reading of ABDEGCp. John's Phillipps; Durham has *Pandar*; HL 2392 has *Al this tho Pandarē in herte thoht*. Shall we read *Pandrus* (see § 139)?

Now *good[ē]* *em* for goddes loue I prey, 1394 (goode BG, Now my good eem D John's HL 2392, Now myn em C, And good[ū] em

Cp.). C has but nine syllables, and, unless *goodë* be read (cf. p. 128), the same is true of ABCp.

Al *wolde I* (wold I B, wold y D) that noon (no man CD) *wyste* (woste C, wist DG) of this thought, 1830. (No note in Mr. Austin's collation.) Read either *woldë I* or *wystë of*.

But hasteth yow to don hym *ioyë haue*, 2329 (ioy[ë] D; no note in Austin, except *doon* Cp.).

Iwys so wolde I (wold I B) and I *wistë how*, 3944 (wist[ë] D; no note in Austin). Rather *wistë how* than *woldë I*.

Were it so that I *wist[ë] outrelly*, 4328 (wistë B, 3[i]t were it so that I woste outerly C, 3it were it so that I wist vtirly D, Were it so that I wiste entirely G; no note in Austin).

As nold[e] god but yf I *sholdë haue*, 5228 (nold[e] . . . shold[ë] B, nolde . . . schulde C, nolde . . . shulde D, nolde . . . schuldë G; no note in Austin.)

And stod forth mewet (meuyth † D) *myldë* (-[ë] D) *and* mansuete, 6557 (*line om.* C, And stode forthe full mylde and manswete G; no note in Mr. Austin's collation).

Trewë as stel in ech condicion, 7194 (Trew B; no note in Mr. Austin's collation). Either hiatus or 9-syl.

I *fyndë ek* (eke G) in storyes (stories DG, storyes C, the stories B) ellys (eH C) where, 7407. The reading of B avoids hiatus; no note in Mr. Austin's collation.

The same hele I shal noon *helë haue*, 7779 (no note in Austin).

Of the examples just given the surest are the three before *haue* (inf.) (2329, 5228, 7779), that before *how* (3944), and that before *and* (6557). Reasonably sure is 4328 (before *outrelly*), and so, perhaps, is 1830 (before *I*). 1394 may be a verse of nine syllables, but hiatus makes a much smoother line; 7194, however, will run very well as a nine-syllable verse.—Here perhaps should be considered *haddë had* in 227, though *had* (p.p.) is a part of the verb *have* not mentioned in § 125 :

And wende no thing *haddë had* swych myght, 227 (no thing(e) had had swiche myzt B, hadde had swych amyzt C, he (no and) wend no thing had had such myght D; Cp. agrees with A except that it has *swiche*; And wend no thyng hade had sueche myght G; no note as to John's). Possibly *swiche* in B Cp. is for *swich* a¹: Cp. is a good MS. is all respects, but B is not to be trusted as

¹ Cf. 4581 B.

to its -e's. However, *hàddē hād* is surely more euphonious than *hād hād* (' ×).

The following two lines may perhaps be more safely regarded as nine-syllable verses than as verses with hiatus, for *loue* almost always loses its -e in the *Troilus*, whether a vowel or a consonant follows (§ 8, p. 14). In both verses the reading is quite secure (no note in Austin).

Loue ayens the (om. C) which who-so defendeth, 603.

Loue hym made al prest to don hire byde, 4824.

In 421, it is perhaps safer to read *louē thus* than to allow the hiatus *seydē he* (but cf. ten Brink, § 270. 2) :

And to the god of loue || thus *seyde he*, 421 (seyd he D).

In the following two lines the reading *comyngē* must be looked at with suspicion (see § 10). In the first it may be avoided by hiatus (*causē of*); in the second, it causes hiatus, which, however, may be avoided by inserting *ek* (with CD). - Apart from these two lines, there are no instances of *-yngē* in the *Troilus*, whether before a vowel or a consonant, except *this forknowyng[ē] wyse* (§ 59, b).

The cause of his comynge (-yng D) || thus answered, 2187.

Of here comynge || and of his also, 4517 AB (comynge and ek C, comyng and eke D; no note in Austin).

Other lines in which hiatus, though possible, is on the whole unlikely, are :

Quod Pandarus now is *tyme I* wende, 1305 (so ABG, now is it tyme C, Now quod Pandarus is it tyme y wende D; no var. in Cp. noted).

I am on(e) (oon B Cp., on G, on of C) the *fairest* (fayreste BC) || out of drede (withoutyn drede D), 1831 (no note in Mr. Austin's collation except on *oon*). The choice lies between *the fairest[ē]* || out and a 9-syl. verse.

Hym to reuoken she *dide* (did B, dede C) al hire (hir D) peyne, 3960. Mr. Austin's collation shows no variants. *Reuoke* and *dilē* al certainly give a more agreeable line than *reuoken* and *dide* al; but it is unsafe to assume hiatus. *Hirē* is improbable. G has *Hym to reuoke she dide her bysy peyne*, the last word in a later hand.

Nought (Nouzte G) *rougt* (rouzte CG) I wheder (whidere B, whider G, whedyr that C, whedirwardes D) thow woldest (wilt D) me (om. D) stere, 4944 (no note in Mr. Austin's collation).

The choice lies between *rougtē I* and *woldest* (cf. § 136, b).

She *toll ek* (tolle ek CD) how Tydeus (Cithideus † C) er she

stente, 7848 (no note in Austin). The choice lies between *toldē ek* and *Tydēus* : cf. Tydeus sonē that doun descended is, 7877, and see § 141.

In a considerable number of verses the reading of one or another MS., necessitating hiatus, is easily corrected by comparison of MSS., so that the hiatus disappears. Examples are :

Now *Pandare* (so ABDCp., Pandar G, Pandarus E John's) || *I kan* (kanne B) no more (mor G) seye, 1044 (cut out of C). Here *Pàndarè*, with its impossible accentuation, should without doubt be rejected in favour of *Pandarus* (§ 139). Cf. *Pàndarè* || and, 5747 (Pandarus C, *Pàndare* || in BCp. John's).

And how he *myght[ē]* here (acc.) beseche of grace, 1056 (BCp. John's have *best* after *he*).

I loue (leue C) *oon* (om. G) which (which that BE Cp., wiche that C, wheche that G) is most (moost is B Cp., most is G) ententyf, 1923. Read *which that*.

But *Troilus thoughte his herte bledde*, 2035 (thought[e] his B, Troylis that thouzte his h. b. C, Troylus that thought that his herht bled D, But Troylus thought his herte bledde G ; no note in Mr. Austin's collation). Clearly we should read *But Troilus that thoughte his herte bledde*. That is almost necessary for the construction.

And gan to smyle and seyde (seyde hym BDG) || Em I preye, 2244 (no note in Mr. Austin's collation).

Ye shul (schal G, shal Cp. John's) *nomore* (namore Cp., no moore John's) || *haue* (han BCp. John's) souereynte, 3013, (souereignete Cp. John's, seurete of me C). Read *han* (or *haue*) *souereyneté* (cf. § 137).

And what *myschaunce* || *in* this world yet is, 3132 (myschauns[ē] C, meschaunce in this world zet ther is B, what mischef yet in this world ther is D ; Cp. John's insert *ther* before *is*).

If that ich *grace had* (so BG, ich a grace hadde Cp., I hadde grace A, y had grace D, I hadde C *omitting* grace) for (om. CD) to do so, 3770. The choice lies between *gracē haddē* and *haddē grace*.

Of swiche (swhich B, whiche C, wych D) sikes *koude he* (om. B) nought blynne (bilynne B), 4207. (No note in Mr. Austin's collation.) Cf. § 138, 1.

That pride *enyē ire* and auaryce, 4647 ACDE Phill. 8252 Harl. 2392 (That pride and ire enuye and auaryce BCp.; That pride enuye and ire and auarice G John's Selden B 24; That ire enuy

and auerice Durham II 13). Hiatus is doubly suspicious on account of the unusual treatment of *-ye* (as *-jē*) in the interior of the verse (see p. 84).

And though I *myght*[ē] || I wol not do so, 5121 (myghtē B, myȝte || I nuldē not C, myght || I woldē nat D, myȝte || I woldē not G). (No note in Austin's collation.)

A (And D) dieu (dey D) the deuēl *spede* (haue C) *hym* that (that it BD, at hit G) *recche*, 5292. The insertion of *it* restores the verse. (No note in Austin.)

Whanne I (*om.* B) the (thyn C) processe (prōces C, procēs D) *haue in memorie*, 6946 (haue in myn C, I haue in my D; no note as to Cp. John's; whan wil ye this processe haue in memory Hl. 2392; When I the processe haue in memorie G).

The[r] (Ther BD, There CG, Wher John's) she (he † G) was born (borne BDG, boryn C) and (and there C, and ther D John's) she dwelt (dwellid CG, duellid D) *hadde* (had BG, *om.* D) *ay*, 7074.

And that to *late is* now me to rewe, 7433 (to late is now for me to rewe B, to late it is now for to rewe C, And to late it is now for to rewe D). (No note in Mr. Austin's collation.)

And graunte it that ye *soone* || *on* me rewe, 7727 (sone vpon CDG; Cp. John's also have *vpon*).

Other examples¹ are : (a) before vowels,—1099 D, 1277 C, 1305 AB, 1405 C, 1608 A, 1956 B, 1957 A, 2287 A (*hondē* acc., see § 13), 2386 D, 2744 C, 2807 A, 3495 C, 3611 D, 4970 C, 5070 A, 5258 C, 5401 C, 5436 C, 5885 C, 6073 D, 7110 CD, 7917 D; (b) before *h*,—*herdē* (pret. sg.) *hym* (549 D), *tymē* || *hath* (1877 A), *speddē* (pret. pl.) *hem* (2032 AB), *hestē hath* (4587 A), *demaundē he* (7222 D), *seydē* (pret. sg.) *he* (7548 C), *willē hath* (7905 C).—In 6605 A, for *tendressē how* (with impossible accentuation) read *tendernessē how*. In 5747 A, for *Com Pāndarē* || *and* (with impossible accentuation) read *Com Pāndare in* || *and*, with BCp. (Com(e) Pandare in and John's, Com pandarus and C, Com(e) Pāndarē and D). In 7652, read *than[nē]* *don* rather than *myght[ē]* I : C has the *-e s* right.

Instances of consonant + *-re*, *le* not slurred before a vowel are perhaps not strictly cases of hiatus, for it is by no means certain that Chaucer's ordinary pronunciation was *lettre*, *temple* rather than *letter*, *tempel*, or *lettr*, *templ*.

But wel ye wot the *chaumbre* (-er B, -ir C) *is* but lite, 2731.

And of myn *ordre* (ordere C) *ay* (*om.* C) til (til that C) deth (they C) me mete, 5444.

I think (thynke C) ek how he *able is* (abele he is C, able he is D) to (for to BCCp.) haue, 1821. Read, however, with BCp.

Humble (-bele C, -blely † D) *in* (his D, in his BCEcp.) *speche* and

¹ Cf. also note 3 at the end of § 92, V.

yn his lokynge (tellynge C) eke, 4790. Read, however, with B etc., *humble in his*.

A considerable number of instances of apparent hiatus are due to the reading *-e* instead of *-en* in forms in which both endings are known to Chaucer's language. Thus rather often in the infinitive (§ 119, XI.) and in strong perfect participles (§ 122, XI.), and occasionally in other verb-forms, as *dedē* (pret. pl.) *al*, 4247 (read *diden* with BE Cp.; *dedyn* C) and *they sholdē hire* (gen. sg.), 4848 (read *sholden* with BCp. John's; *-yn* D): cf. the variants in § 96, III. (pres. ind. pl.), § 109, IX., note (pret. ind. pl.). Similarly, for *here* *seluē excusynge*, 112, read *here seluen* (*hire seluen* B, *hyre seluē* C, herself[ē] D); for *aboutē euery*, 6517 (§ 88), read *abouen* with B (*-yn* C, *-e*? D †); for *oftē hastow*, 904, read *often* with B (*oftē* C, *oft[ē]*D).

Note 1.—No doubt unelided *-ē* before a vowel is to be changed to *-en* whenever such a change is possible, even if the cæsura might protect hiatus. Thus,—*But if thou late* (3e lat B, 3e late CG, 3e lete D) *hym deyē* (dy[ē] D, deyen G; no note in Austin) || *I wole sterue*, 1408; *God leue hym werke* (*-en* BCp. John's, *-yn* G, *werk[ē]* D) as *he can deuise*, 2898.—With regard to erroneously substituting *-ē* for *-en* and thereby necessitating hiatus, B is the least culpable of the four MSS. and Cp. appears to be almost exemplary (cf. § 119, XI., note).

§ 127. Before *h* in words other than those mentioned in § 125, there seems to be no special inclination to elide *-e*: the *-e* is sometimes preserved (see list I.) and sometimes lost (see list II.).

In the examples that follow (lists I. and II.) variants are for the most part left unmarked; the occurrence of a cæsura after the elided or unelided *-e* is indicated.

I. *-ē* retained :

leuē (<i>subst.</i>) hom(e), 126 A (read <i>leue</i> and <i>hom</i>).	so god me sendē hele, 3163.
Pandārē herkeṅe, 658 (Pandāris C).	thilkē harm, 3560.
nomorē hardē grace, 713.	myghtē (3 <i>sg.</i>) here (<i>inf.</i>), 3586.
haddē horn, 1727 (or,—haddē horn).	worsē hap (<i>subst.</i>), 4088; hertē
hereṅ seuenēthē hows, 1766 (or,—hereṅ seuenēthe hows).	happē (<i>subj.</i> 3 <i>sg.</i>), 7159.
the best[ē] harpour, 2115.	sholdē (3 <i>sg.</i>) holde, 4726.
that ye thonkē (<i>subj.</i>) humbely, 2804.	thi self[ē] helpen, 5190 (read <i>seluen</i> with B).
	termē holde, 7572.
	fatē helpeth, 7915 A (read <i>fate</i> <i>hym helpeth</i> with AD; C †).

Note.—No importance attaches to *vnclē* (dissyl.) *herde*, 2185.

II. -e lost :

had, hadde (<i>ind.</i> 3 <i>sg.</i> , see § 102)	soone hope (<i>ind.</i> 1 <i>sg.</i>), 3794
herd, 750, 5007, 5329; ¹ had	(§ 88).
(<i>subj.</i> 3 <i>sg.</i> , see § 113) herd,	ioye halt, 4478 (§ 21); loue
7086.	halt, 4606 (§ 8); myght (3 <i>sg.</i>)
abedde half, 1152 (§ 14); ought	(?) holden, 5260 (§ 123,
(<i>sg.</i>) half, 5927 (§ 123, III).	VIII); hope halt, 6711 (§ 2).
were hanged, 1438.	bothe hëronèr, 5075 (§ 88).
faste homward, 2388.	the more harm is, 7299; cf. 1523
no fors hardyly, 2802 (§ 21).	(?).

Note.—Some of the examples in list II. have no significance, since the word affected is one that loses its -e freely even before a consonant : so especially of the “auxiliary verbs” (including *were*), of the noun *loue*, of *more*, and of the phrase *no fors* (which, besides, is, in the instance in question, accented on the *no*).

§ 128. Elision of weak -e in monosyllables.

The cases that come under consideration are *the* (definite article) and *ně* (simple negative, ‘non’). *The* before a vowel or weak *h* may suffer elision or preserve its -e at the will of the poet. *Ně* is regularly elided.² Whether elision in these cases amounts to full ecthlipsis may be doubted. Ten Brink decides for ecthlipsis (§ 269), but the metre is quite as well satisfied by reducing the -e to a consonant *i* (*y*). The spelling *nyis* for *nīs* (*ne is*) in 7451 C seems to be significant in this regard. On the other side we have the evidence of *toon* and *tother*, and the testimony of Hart (1569) : see Jespersen, *Studier over engelske Kasus*, Første Række, Copenh., 1891, p. 154.

I. Elision of *the*.

the aduersite, 25 (D *om.* the).

theeffect, 212 (the effecte B; D ?); the effect, 2651 (theeffect B);
cf. 2305, 3188, 4422, 4519, 4657, 4806, 6740.

the assege, 464 (thassege B, the sege D); thassege, 4724 (thessage
B, the sege D (?)); cf. 1192, 1208, 6142, 7220.

at the ende, 1876 (at ende BD, an ende C); cf. thende, 1345 B.

the aleyes, 1905 (thaleyes B, thē a. D).³

the alderfirst[e], 2939 (the aldir ferste C; D † *om.* the); cf. 4439.

the experience, 4125; cf. 3830.

the affeccoun, 4432 (thaffeccion B; C † *om.* the).

¹ Supply [which] in A.

² See exception at end of IV., below.

³ Supply [was] in C.

the ambassiatours, 4802 (thembassadours B, theem-bassatourys C);¹
 thembassadours, 4807 (the embassadourys C, thambassiatours D).
 theschaunge, 4808 (the chaunge CD); cf. 4820, 4822, 5540 C.

at the other, 5096 (attother B, at other D).

the ymage, 5526 (C †); cf. 1458.

the ordre of causes, 5679.

thaqueyntaunce, 6485 (the acqueyntau[n]se C, the acqueintauns ? D).²
 thenchèsou, 6995 (then(e)cheson B, the encheson C, the entencioun †
 D); cf. 681 † B.

the est seè, 7472 (thè † C, thè est see D).

thauentaylle, 7921 (thauantaile B, the auentayle CD).

thentent, 7993 (the ent. BD, the † centence ? C).³

th erratyk, 8175 A (the erratyk B).

Compare also 1696 C, 2361 D, 2663 D, 3378 CD, 4827 D(?),
 7829 C, and the variants under *thilke* (p. 160).

Similarly before *h* :

thonouèr, 120 (the honour BCD).

Note 1.—For *it shal of*, 5768 C has *the héd shal of*, clearly the “correction”
 of a scribe.

Note 2.—Before *h* in the following words *the* of course suffers no elision :
 harpe, 731; harm, 839, 1539, 3167; haste, 2031; hil[lé], 943; hardest,
 1814; heuènes, 1989; hood, 2266; happy, 2467; hond, 2689; holy,
 3384; herte, 3913, 5808; halle, halles, 5394, 7093; hous, 5485; hote,
 490. So also *the* (A.S. þý) in *the hottere*, cf. 1623.

Note 3.—Sometimes one or another MS. has a reading which seems to
 require or suggest *the* (definite article) before a consonant (not *h*) : thus,—
 200 C, 2052 A (?), 2341 A (?), 3191 D (?), 3345 D, 3386 C, 3567 B, 3597
 C, 4333 D, 4845 D, 6926 BD, 7392 B, 7993 C, 8232 D. The cases cited
 may all be corrected by comparison of MSS. But in 4906, ABCD agree
 in reading : *His hed* to the wal *his body* to the grounde (no note in Austin).

II. But *e* in *the* may remain unelided. Thus,—

By alle (al B, aH D) *the* (tho Cp.) *othës* that I hauē to (*om.* BCD)
 yow sworn(e), 1384. Probably we should read : By alle the othes
 that I hauē yow sworn. *Allè the othës* or *allè the othës* is hardly
 to be thought of.

The olde (The old D, Wolde † for þolde C) daunce and euery poynt
 therinne, 3537.

The cause ytold (tolde John's) of here comynge (-yng D) *the* (*om.* C)
olde (old D, *om.* B), 4803. *Comyngè the olde* is unlikely.

The newe (new BD) loue out (-e BD) cacheth (chaceth B, schakyth
 C, chasithe D) ofte (oft B) *the olde*, 5077 (no note in Austin).

¹ Supply [*the*] in B.

² Thaqueyntaunce (The aqeyntau[n]se C, The acqueintauns D, The acqueyntaunce
 G) of these (this BC, thes D) Troians (Troyans B, Troylus C, Troiaunes D) to (for to
 C) chaunge. (No note in Mr. Austin's collation.)

³ Supply [*the*] in B.

Here *oft the olde* is perhaps preferable to *oftē the olde*.

The obseruaunce (-ns D) euere yn youre absence, 5445 (C inserts I before in).

And whiten gan *the* (eche † C) *orizonte* (orisoune B, ory3onte C, orisent D) shene, 6639.

III. Some lines may be read in two ways, one of which preserves the *-e* in *the*, the other of which elides it.

And sith (sithen B, sythe C, seth D, sithe Cp.) *the ende* (thende B Cp. John's) is of (*om.* BCDCp. John's) euery tales strengthe, 1345.

Lo herte (hert D) myn as wolde (wold BD) *the excellence*, 3830 (no note in Austin).

Bygan (Bygunne C, Began D) for ioye *the amoureuse* (thamarouse B, the amerous CD, thamarouse Cp. John's) daunce (dauns D), 6093.

IV. In *nē* the *Troilus* regularly elides *-e* before a vowel. There is but one exception : 649 (see end of list).

ne acheueth, 1893 (nacheueth B; CD *om.* ne; eschewith † D).

ne enforce I, 5678 (nen-force B).

naxe in guerdon, 6957 (*ne axe* CD).

For he that nough[t] *nassayeth* nought *nacheueth*, 7147 (nou3t asayeth nou3t *ne cheuyth* C, nou3t assaieth nou3t *acheueth* D).

He *ne* eet *ne* dronk for his malencolye, 7579 (*ne et(e)* BD, he nother † et C).

He *ne* eet *ne* dronk *ne* slep *ne* word [ne] seyde, 7803 (*ne* word(e) seyde BD, He net *ne* drank *ne* no word he *ne* seyde C).

But litel bok no *makyng* thow *nenuye*, 8152 (D *om.* *ne*).

So *nam, nys* (§ 124). Particularly interesting is *nyis* for *nīs* (7541 C). For *nere, noot, niste, nyl, nyll, nolde, noldest*, see §§ 124, 125.

A single exception is :

Ek the *ne oughte* (aught B) not ben yuel apayed, 649 (And ek thou not to ben euele payede C, And eke thow oghtist not ben evil apayed D; no variants in Austin, except *nat* Cp. for *not*). The reading seems to be well established. In : I *ne* (*om.* D) *ought* (aught B, au3te C, oght D) not for that thyng hym despise, 1805, read *ne ought[ē]* not.

§ 129. Elision of close *-e*.

I. Of the elision of (close) *-e* in *me, we, he, she, ne* (neque), there are several examples. Ten Brink (§ 269) is inclined to regard such instances as full elision (*ecthlipsis*), but this seems doubtful, except perhaps when the vowel which follows is itself an *e*.

And yet me of-thynketh that this auaunt me asterte, 1043 A (mathynketh . . . may † sterte B, me athinkith . . . me stert D †).

me offendeth, 605 (me off. C †; D †).

me assayleth, 607 (massaileth D †; me ass. C †).

me allone, 1021 (malon B, me a. D †); so 2486.

mauyse, 1361 B (me auysę C, me a. D †; A †).

me enspire, 3554 AB (me enspire D, nyzt ens. C).

me anon, 5172 BCD (A †).

me assayle, 6257 (messaile B, me a. C †; D †).

And go we anoon for as yn myn entente, 6187 (C †).

In to the gardeyn go we and ye shal here, 2199.

he answerēd, 5097 (B *om.* he; he answerde C, he answerd D).

she abod, 127 (D *om.* she; sche bod C); cf. 2736 † C.

she abreyde, 5874 (she brayde B, sche brayd C).¹

she alighte, 6552 (shalighte B, she light D; C †).

Ne yn hym desir doon (*l.* noon)² otherę fownes bredde, 465 (Nyn hym C).

Ne auaunter certeyn seyth men is he non, 1809 (Navauntour B; D †).

Nen-tendement considere ne tonge telle, 6358 (Ne † mendement B).

Ne of ladyes ek so fayr a companye, 6810 (Nof B).

Ne encens vp on here auter sette a fyre, 7829 (Nencens B, The ensens † C, Ne encense D).

Ne (Ny B, Ne y D) neuere (G *inserts* man) saw (saugh BCp., ne say C) a more bounteous

Of here estat (-e B, astate D) ne (non C) a (*om.* BCDG John's; nagladder Cp.) gladder (-ere John's) ne (*om.* D, nor B) of speche A frendliour (frendelyere C) na (ne a DE, ne non C, ne G) more gracious, 883-5.

Examples of hiatus are :

Whi hastow (D *inserts* thus) mad (-e B) Troylus (Tr. made Cp., tr. mad C, tr. me made D) to (*om.* D) me (*om.* D) vntriste (-truste B, -trust CD), 3681 (no var. noted for Jn's.). But the reading in Cp. is perhaps to be preferred.

As for a frend ye may in me assure, 7987.

And after this (*om.* C) with sikynghe he abreyde (vpbrayd D), 724.

¹ In D read *of swogh* for *A swogh*.

² none B, non CD. For *desir* C has *desyred* †; for *hym* BD John's have *his*; for *fownes* D has *fantasye*. Cp. reads: Nyn him desire noon other fewnes bredde.

I think ek how *he able* is (abele he is C, able he is D) to (for to BC) haue, 1821.

That sorwest thus and *he answered* (answerede C, answerde hym B, answerd him D) nay, 5302.

That yf that *he encrease* myghte or eche, 6473 (C † D †).

In furye as doth *he* (the D) *Ixion* in helle, 6575 (In furie as 'thow he leye in helle^c C^c).

To which (-e D) no word (-e B) for sorwe (sorw B) (for sorwe no word D) she answerede (-swerde BC, -swerd D), 4369; cf. 5897.

Cf. also : mè alsò, 5978; gò we vñcle, 2809; hè || allàs, 3919; he into, 3939 BC (he hym into A; D †); hè iwÿs, 4023 f; hè || abouhte, 4904; he ðfte, 6980 f; he ðuys, 7402; shè || allàs, 3945; shè alsò, 4419; that shè vntrewe bè, 7660 f.

In 1097 : For-whi to euery louere (louer BDGJn's.) I *me excuse* ABDG Cp. Jn's. (C cut out), *e* in *me* may or may not be elided.

Note 1.—There are no instances of elided *the* (pron. 2 pers.) or *ye* (pron. 2 pers.). For instances of hiatus with these words, see, for *the*, 3139 (*the alëgge*), 4100 A (*the Imenëus*), 4299 (*thè agilt*), 4454 (*thè || obliged*); for *ye*, 682 (*ye endüre*), 6598 (*ye audiënce*). Cf. also *the oughte*, 3106 f; *the ðftē*, 3127, and see note 2, below.

Note 2.—When the word that follows is a monosyllable, elision of *me* (etc.) is not to be expected, whichever of the two words has the ictus. See 528 (*mè || it*), 1011 (*mè || and*), 1102 (*mè || yf*), 3768 (*mè is*), 4265 (*mè is*), 5176 (*mè al*), 5411 (*mè || and*), 5671 (*mè in*), 6278 (*mè || and*), 6607 (*mè || o*); 2017 (*wè oure*), 2030 (*ðd we às*); 90 (*hè || and*), 226 (*hè a*), 299 (*he èrst*), 326 (*hè || yn*); cf. 358, 377, 543, 720 † A), 1165 (*hè yn*), 1210 (*hè || as*), 1363 (*hè || and*), 1663 (*hè and I*); cf. 5545 f), 1743 (*hè and*), 2158 (*hè of*), 2166 (*he aÿ*), 2281 (*hè I*), 3855 (*hè al hood*), 5185 (*he || al*), 4633 (*hè || yf*); cf. 1441), 4634 (*hè it*); cf. 2636), 6448 (*he al*), 6646 (*he ðn*), 6999 (*he ðf*), 7103 f (*he is*), 7802 (*he yn*), 8198 (*hè or shè*); 467 (*shè on*), 660 (*shè || and*); cf. 2274, 2341, 5879, 6552), 937 (*shè || of*); cf. 1028, 1268), 1691 (*she ought*), 1808 (*she is*), 3829 (*she || ðf*), 5072 (*shè is*), 5573 (*she ðn*); 1811 (*ne às*), 5926 AD (*ye ne I*); for *the* (2 pers.) see 585, 648, 766, 922, 2485, 2619, 5149, 7667; for *ye* see 1314, 2885, 3042, 4215, 4331, 4359, 7237, 7352, 7436.

Note 3.—In 98 A : Of ony frend to whom *shë dorst* make hire mone, we should omit *make* (with BCDEGCp.).

II. *Ne I* is several times reduced to a single syllable (sometimes written *Ny*). Thus,—

Ne I nyl forbere yf that ye don amys, 3015 (*Ny nyl* B Cp. John's, *Ne y wil* D †).

Ne I welë not serteyn breke 3oure defence, 4141 CE (*Ne I wolë* certeyn A, *Ny wol* certein B).¹ Cp. reads *Ny*, but otherwise appears to agree with A.

¹ B is unmetrical : supply [not].

Ne I nyl not rakle as for to greuen here, 4484 (Ne I wil C, Ny nyl BCp., Ne rakyl nel y be for to grevyn here D).

Ny say not nay but in conclusioun, 7366 B (Ne I sey C, Ne sey AD). (No note in Mr. Austin's collation.)

Ne I sey not this al only for these men, 8142 (Ny sey B Cp. John's). See also 883, just quoted.

III. Ten Brink (§ 269) remarks that the elision of close *e* occurs "nur vor vocalischem Anlaut, nicht vor *h*;" but there seems to be no good reason why weak *h* should have interfered with the operation of this elision, and in one verse of the *Troilus* one is tempted to follow B in reading *maddë* for *me hadde*: Allas I *maddë* ytrowed on 3oure lore, 7099 B. The other MSS., however, except D, read differently: I *ne haddë* trowed AG; that I *ne haddë* trowid C; *me haddë* trowed D; no note in Mr. Austin's collation. Both *me hadde* and *ne hadde* make sense. If the former reading be adopted, the line means, "Would I that I had trusted myself to your counsel!" If the latter, "Alas! to think that I should not have trusted your counsel!" But *ne hadde* is ambiguous: it could mean, "Would that I had not trusted!" which is contrary to the obvious purport of the passage. Perhaps this explains the reading *me hadde* as a scribe's purblind attempt to correct what he did not understand.—In 2017, D has: Now letë *we her* slepe and forth our talis hold, but ABCG omit *we* (no note in Mr. Austin's collation) before *her* and insert it before *oure*, having no *forth*.—Similarly in 3939 A reads: For this or that *he hym* into beddë caste, where the correct reading is undoubtedly *he into bed hym caste* (so BCp.; *he into bedde him cast* C; For this or for that *he into the bedde him cast* D); and in 2413 D reads Thus to the more worthi part(e) *he hym held*, where ABC have no *hym*.

Note 1.—For hiatus before *h* see, e. g., 4135 (*mè* || *how*), 5207 (*mè* || *hast*), 5222 (*mè* || *his*), 5563 (*mè* || *hath*), 6947 (*me hâst*), 7328 (*mè* *hath*); 3779 (*we hân*), 6757 (*wè han*); 83 (*hè hath*; cf. 3667, 3917, 4402, 7464), 301 (*he how*), 318 (*hè hadde*; cf. 750, 6986), 491 (*he haddë*; cf. 1718, 2435 f, 6086 f, 7808), 695 (*he hâth*; cf. 1794, 2870), 2051 (*hè hym*; cf. 3542), 3907 (*hè here* poss. sg.), 4029 (*he hère* acc.), 4459 (*he hÿm*), 7455 (*hè here* acc.; cf. 2157, 7143); 124 (*shè hym*), 1823 (*shè here* poss. sg.), 3424 (*shè hÿm*; cf. 7567), 4835 (*shè* || *hadde*), 7467 (*shè hadde*); 3851 (*ne how*). Cf. also *the haddë* (4998), *yè han* (25, 28, 1446, 1577, etc.), *yè his* (5590), etc. Elision is of course out of the question in such cases as *me hâtë* (1798), *me hêlpeth* (4688), *me holly* (5106), *he hêld* (1288), *he hërde* (2036), *he hênte* (2863 f), *he hêng* (3921), *the hÿrye* (3793 f), *the hârme* (4473), *ye hêlpe* (1405), *ye hère* inf. (3774 f, 7217 f), *ye hâte* (6508).

Note 2.—In 7910, the reading of C: *ffrom day to day til they be in were of ioye*, makes sense, but is certainly to be rejected in favour of *ben bare of ABD*.—In 1972 read *ye wys* A instead of *3e i wis* CD (B has *3e yis*). In 4979 C *ye ilkë* is to be corrected.

IV. A remarkable case of the elision of close *-e*, and one which seems to indicate that the phenomenon in question is not full ecclipsis, is 2199 :

Into the gardyn go we || and ye shal here. So ABCDG ; no note as to Cp. John's.

V. Instances of the elision (*synclisis*) of close *-e* in other words than the monosyllables just discussed are very rare (cf. § 33).

As he that feltē *pyte* on euery syde, 5486 (pitie Cp., pitē hadde B, pitē felte D). Here the cæsura comes after *pyte*. Perhaps we should scan *felte pytē*, but that seems not so likely. C lacks the stanza. Cf. also 2662 † C, 7462 † D.

On euery nymphe and *dēite infernūl*, 6205 (deyte BD, deth † C). Possibly *deitē*, with synæresis.

Note.—The *-e* in *Dane* (= *Daphne*) seems to have been weak (cf. the rhyme *Diane : Dane*, K.T. 1205-6) : hence we have ordinary elision in *O Phebus thenk whan Dane here seluwn shette*, 3568 (*diano her self shet D*).¹ No doubt the *-e* in *Tarbe* is of the same kind : *Flexippe she Tharbe and Antigone*, 1901 (*flexippe & Schetarbe & Antigone C, Flexipe & she tarke and Antaigne D*) ; *Antigone hire sister Tarbe* also, 2648 (*Tharbe B, Tarb C, Marbe D*). So *Alète* (= *Allecto*) in *Megera Alète and ek Thesyphon*, 4686 (*Megera aliete thow thesiphone D*). On the other hand, we have final close *-e* slurred in *Flexipe* in the (doubtless erroneous) reading of D in 1901 (just quoted). As to these *-e*'s cf. ten Brink, § 94.

§ 130. Elision (or slurring) of final *o* and final *a*.

I. Final *o* in the preposition *to* is treated like final *-e* in the definite article. It is safer to regard the elision in this case, too, as not complete ecclipsis. The elision is commonest with the infinitive.

to auance, 518 (tauance B, to a. D).

tassayen, 921 B (to assay[e]n A, to asayen C, for cesyng † D) ;

tassaye, 7146 (tasaie B, to asaye C †, to assaie D).

to arede, 1217 (thede † B ; C † D †).

to endite, 1342 (to en. CD), 1785 (tendite B ; C † D †).

to entende, 1938 (tentende B ; D †).

to appere, 1994 (tapere B, to apere CD).

to auyse, 2300 (tauyse B, to † vyse D).

tonfolde, 2787 B (to vnfolde AD, to onfolde C).

to abrygge, 3104 (tabregge B, to abregge CD) ; tabregge, 3137 f (to a. C, abregge D †) ; cf. also 5088, 5587.

to encrese, 4177 (tencrese BC, ten(en)crece E) ; cf. 5588 C.

to aprouche, 4538 (taprouche B, ta-proche C).

¹ The reading of D shows that Chaucer's caution in distinguishing *Diana* and *Daphne* in the passage cited from *The Knight's Tale* is evidence that he "knew his public."

to abyde, 4652 (tabide B, to † abyde D); tabyde, 6396 (to a. † D);
cf. also 6716, 6859 C (?), 7133, 7518, 7546.

to acheue, 4741 (tacheue B, shal † cheue D).¹

to enqueren, 5672; cf. 4526 C.

to arede, 6232 (tarede B, torede C).

to amenden, 6501 (tamende B, to amendyn C, to amende D).

tenbrace, 6587 (to embrase C, to embrace D). (9-syl. verse.)

tabreyde, 6883 (to a. CD, to breyde B).²

tacoye, 7145 (ta-coye C, to accoy D).³

to vnlouen, 8061 (to vnloue CD).

Cf. also 1781 D (teschewe), 1986 (?) B, 2682 C, 6796 B, 7816 C.

But instances of this slur also occur when the word that follows *to* is not an infinitive :

Vn to ony louere and his cause auayle, 20 (D †).

For to euery wight som goodly auenture, 1366 (to eueryche C, for euery D); And his comyng vnwyst is to euery wyght, 3754 (teuery B, vnwist to euery C).

And into a closet for to auyse here bettre, 2300 (tauyse B, in a closet for to vyse D †).

Out wente anon to Elyne and Deiphebus, 2726.

That passed was and thus he drof to an ende, 6838 (tanende B).

Examples of hiatus with *to* are :

to arten hire, 388 (for to artyn C; B †).⁴

tò entreparten wò, 592 (intyrpartyn C).

to èche, 887 f.

to v̄se, 1096 f.

to èuery l̄ouere, 1097; to èuery wight, 1273.

tò arḡue, 1779 f (BCD *om.* to).

tò aḡaste, 1986 f, is doubtful.

to v̄sen, 2123 (to v̄se D).

to èrre, 5211 f.

Note 1.—For examples with monosyllables, see 14 (*tò a*), 1057 (*thèr to || and*), 2529 (*to àl (alle BC) honoūr*), 3328 (*to èse inf.*), 3360 (*tò it*), 3462 (*tò vs*), 4814 (*tò it*), 4818 (*vntò it*; cf. 5187), 5779 (*vntò vs*).

In a few instances *to* suffers elision before *h* :

As for *to honoūre hire* goddes ful deuoute, 151 AB (CD *seem wrong*).

To honoūren hem that hadde worthynesse, 4631.

¹ Read [*to*] *shende* in B.

³ Supply [*herte*] in B, [*for*] in C.

² Read (*bc*) *gan* in D.

⁴ Dele one (*hire*) in A.

To honouren yow as wel as folk of Troye, 6482 (*To honourē* CD).¹
Cf. also 4104 D.

I think ek how he ablē is for *to haue*, 1821 B Cp. (I thynke ek how abele he is for *to haue* C, I think ek how he able is to haue A, I think eke how able he is to have D, I thyng eke howe able he is to haue G, Ek wot I wel he worthy is to haue John's, Yit wot I weel he worthi is to haue Harl. 2392). Perhaps *able is*.

Cf. also,—to his (?), 2546 C; to hir, 7666 CD;² to hire, 7671 C; vnto her, 3762 D; into harm, 7739 C.

But *to* is the usual form before *h*. Thus,—to han, cf. 13, 769, 2224, etc.; to haue, cf. 50, 709, etc.; to here (*dat.*), cf. 443, 2094, etc.; to here (*poss. sg.*), cf. 5226, etc.; to hym, cf. 858, 998, etc.; to his, cf. 2179, 2219; vnto his, cf. 2627; etc. For cases before strong *h*, cf. *e. g.*, to holde (128 f, 161 f, etc.), to herkenen (164), to helpen (836), into helle (872 f), into halle (2255 f), to hyde, (6393 f), to haten (7442), etc.

Note.—Sometimes a similar slur seems to take place in *to*, *into*, *vnto*, before a consonant; but most of the cases noticed are aberrations of the scribe, easily cured by a comparison of MSS. Thus,—*to seche*, 704 A; *to lede*, 6379 A; cf. also 1318 C, 1327 C, 2196 D, 2519 D, 2956 A, 3699 D, 3939 D, 4356 D, 6178 D, 6355 B, 6678 A, 7000 A, 7218 B, 7350 A, 7406 C, 7518 A, 7740 C, 8158 B.

Men wolden (wold BD) wondren (-deryn C, wondur D) *to se* (B Cp. John's *om.* to; to sen C; to se D) hym come or gon, 1453.

To late here go thus *vnto the* Grekes ost, 5261 AB (into C; C *om.* thus; thus to D). No note in Austin.

II. Elision of final *-o* is rare except in *to* :

He cursed Ioue *Appollo* and ek Cupide, 6570 (C *om.* ek).

Of Ioue *appollo* of mars of swych rascaylle, 8216.

Note.—The following cases disappear on comparison of MSS. : *go away*, 574 C (go wey AB, go hens D); *do away*, 1195 C (do wey ABD), cf. 1196 C; *do on*, 2039 C (don ABD), 3580 A (don B); *tho and*, 834 C (ABD *om.* and). In 1559, AD have *No wys*, but we may read *No wys* (with B³ C Cp. John's).⁴ In 3027, C reads : *O immortal god quod he that mayst not deȝzen*; ABD have no *O*; cf. 7424 D, where for *O yrolled* we should read *O rolled*.

III. The *Troilus* affords one good instance of elision (slurring) of final *-a* :

Megera. Alete. and ek Thesyphone, 4686 (*Megera aliete* thow thesyphone D).

¹ In B supply the second [as].

² In C, however, perhaps *wrote* (p.p.) to hire.

³ In B supply [he].

⁴ Cf. 2196, where A has *now ycome*, but *now come* (BC) is the correct reading. Cf. also 7070 D.

§ 131. Slurring of final *y*.

Final *-y* is sometimes united with the initial vowel of the following word (*synclisis*).

Obviously, in the case of adjectives accented on the penult, this slur can take place only when the word that follows either has no ictus or is accented on the second syllable. Thus we have: "How *bÿsy* ÿf I loue ek most I be," 1884; and so in the case of most adjectives in *-y* there is no slur before an initial vowel: as,—*gredy*, 4600; *hasty*, 6229 (*hastif* B, *hastyth* † C); *redy*, 3372, 7327, 7733; *sondry*, 1112; *sory*, 2436, 8089; *sturdy*, 2465; *wery*, 5369, 6636 (*slur* in D); *vnwery*, 1924; *worthi*, 1243, 1424. See also *lady* (§ 5), *ruby* (p. 94), *euery* (§ 79), *ony* (§ 79), adjectives in *-ly* (§ 72), adverbs in *-ly* (§ 84).

The commonest instance of the slur is in the phrase *many a*, *many an*: as,—This knoweth *many a* wys and *worthi* wyght, 1265 (*meny a* D). So also 163, 165, 166, 540, 810, 934, 1148, 1236, 1726, 1900, 3145, 3147, 3657, 3953, 3989, 4072, 4301, 4555, 4701, 5289, 5755, 6147, 6505, 6527, 6585, 6696, 6968, 7301, 7409, 7424, 7557, 7640, 7945, 8124. Variants have not been registered, for in none of the cases cited is there any doubt as to the true reading, so far as this phrase is concerned. The *Troilus* knows only the slurred *many a*; no unslurred example occurs which a comparison of MSS. does not correct (thus, *e. g.*, 4695).

Other instances are :

And I with *body and soule synke* in (into CD) *helle*, 6216.

Charitable estatlyche *lusty and fre*, 7186 (D Cp. John's *om.* and; Scharite abele statlyche *lyzt lusti & fre* C; G agrees with A, except for the spelling *estateliche*).

I shal therof as *fully excuse* me, 3652 (ful BC; but Cp. John's *seem to have fully*).

Note 1.—Here and there one or another MS. has a slurred *-y*, which comparison of MSS. causes to disappear. Thus,—*lady vnto*, 1164 A (§ 5); *hardy(e) as*, 7193 D; *sauery and*, 942 C; *worthy and*, 2163 C (cf. 1951 C, 4382 CD, 5160 B); *wery on*, 6636 D; *certainly I*, 1531 A (cf. 3938 C); *gladly as*, 592 D; *hardily and* (?), 2097 C; *neadfully as*, 5668 D; *wisely as*, 7728 C. In 5427 A: *How sholde I a fyssh withoute water dure*, omit *I*.

Note 2.—In 4873 C: *ffor wich delyueryd* (*l. delibered*) *was by a parlement*, omit *a* (with ABD Cp. John's).

A similar slur of final *-ey* is found in 3287 A: *But yn srych cas men is nought* alwey *ypled*; but the correct reading is *alwey plesed* (so BCp.; alwey *plesid* D; man is not † *wel plesed* C). In 2986, however, the preponderance of MS. authority is in favour of *ay i-lyke* :

To seruen (-yn CG, serve D) and ben (bene D) *ay* (so ABG; *om.* DE; C has *ay* ben for ben *ay*) *I-lyke* (ylike B, I-lik C, y-lyke D, I-lyke G) diligent (Cp. John's appear to agree with A).

An effect precisely similar to the slur of final *-y* takes place when a word in *-ye* (unaccented) suffers elision before a word the first syllable of which has no ictus. The instances of this phenomenon are in the *Troilus* confined to words in *-rye* like *contràrye*,¹ and to the word *remedye* (the forms of which may be seen in full at p. 86, cf. ten Brink, § 87, Anm.).

By sort and by *augùrye ek* trewely, 4778 (trew[e]ly B, By sort and augury eke truly D).

In *consistòrie among* the Grekes soonc, 4727.

By eche (*l.* his) *contràrie is* euery thing declared, 637 (*-rye is* BC).

Retorneth in his part *contràrie agayn*, 5665 (*-rye agayn* B). But the form *contràire* also occurs: see § 51, p. 120.

Be *necessarie al* seme it not therby, 5682 (*necessarye al(le)* D).

But *necessaire* occurs: see § 51, p. 120.

And som(e) so ful of *furye is* and despit, 3879 (*furie is* BCD).

Anoy smert (-e D) drede (dred[e] C) *furye and* ek (ekç D) siknesse (seknesse C), 5507 (*furye and* BD, *furie and* C).

For which the grete (gret[e] D) *furye of* his penaunce, 6091 (*furie of* C).

In *furye as* doth he Ixion in helle, 6575 (*-rie as* B, *-ry as* D; In *furie as* thow he leye in helle C).

And God *Mercùrye of* me now woful wreche, 6684 (*-rie of* B, *-rye on* C; D *om.* now).

Into *mysèrie yn* which I wol bywayle, 4934 (Into myn deth † C).

And certainly in *story it* is yfounde, 7197 B (*stori as* it is founde C, *story as* it is founde D, *storye it* is yfounde Cp., *storye it* is founde A).

Though that I *tarye a* yer som tyme I mot, 4037 (*tarie a* BCD).

For that I *tarye is* al for wykked speche, 7973 (*tarie is* CD).

When the word that follows has the ictus, there is of course no synclisis. See examples in § 30 under *còpye*, *fòlye*, *pàrtie*, and in § 31 under *augùrye*, *fùrye*. In 4915 *furye and*, BC have the slur, but AD have none. Of *merye*, *mery* (§ 46, p. 113) the *Troilus* affords no example before a vowel.

¹ In 6240 C, read *filthe it* for *folye it*.

§ 132. Weak *e* in two successive syllables (*syncope* or *apocope*).

Ten Brink's rule: "Enthalten zwei aufeinander folgende Silben je ein schwaches *e*, so verliert eines von diesen nothwendig seinen Silbenwerth, sei es durch Syncope oder Apocope durchaus, sei es annähernd, jedoch für das Bedürfniss der Betonung und des Verses vollkommen ausreichend durch Verschleifung" (§ 256), has been abundantly illustrated in the preceding chapter.

In the case of *-ede* in the preterite singular (§§ 99-105) the *Troilus* shows not a single exception to the rule, except perhaps in 7089: Here (Hir BC, Hir DG) *nèdèdè* (neded BDG, nedit C) no (non B John's, none CG Cp.) teris for to borwe (see 146, I, *b*). In 129 A, *dwèlled[è] yn* should be *wàs dwèlljng yn*. In the case of *-eden* in the preterite plural (§ 109), there are several exceptions (cf. ten Brink, §§ 194, 256), *màkkedèn* (apparently the correct reading in 4783, see § 109, I.), *strèmedèn* (§ 109, III.), *iwynedèn* (§ 109, III.), *assègedèn*, *bysègedèn* (§ 109, I.), *comèndedèn*, *comèuedèn* (§ 109, III.), *èntrechàngedèn* (§ 109, IV.).

For the application of this rule in the inflection of nouns see the genitives *fadères*, *fadres* (§ 36), *heuènes* (§ 36, n. 1), *somères*, *widewes*, *wydwes* (§ 35, I.), the plurals *arwes* (§ 38, IV.), *candèles*, *heuènes* (§ 38, V.), and *maydens* (§ 39, III.); and the numerals *seuène* (§ 67, *d*);¹ cf. *owène* (§ 53, V.), plural *othère*², *othères* gen. sg. pl. (§ 79).

So in verb forms: as,—*flekèred* (A.S. flicerian) *pret. sg.* (§ 101),—*fetered* (A.S. ge-feterian) *p.p.* (§ 121, III.), *hamèled* (A.S. hamelian) *p.p.* (§ 121, III.), *opned* (A.S. openian) *p.p.* (§ 121, III.), cf. the adjective *fethered* (§ 121, X.).

The weak *-e* (either not found or usually syncopated in A.S.) which, according to ten Brink (§ 61, III.), is inserted "zwischen *v* und Dauerlaut," and sometimes after *th*, is, of course, syncopated or slurred like the *e*'s just discussed: *sweuènes* pl. (§§ 38, V., 44), *euère*, *neuère* (§ 90), *brotheres* gen. (§ 36), *bretheren* (§ 41), and *fetheres* pl. (§ 38, V.). The morphological value of this *-e*, however, is rendered dubious by the occurrence of such spellings as *fynçeres* pl. (§ 38, V.: *fynçres* A), *monèthes* (as well as *monthes*: § 38, I.) pl., taken in connection with the tendency of some Middle English scribes to use *ene* (*ele*, *ere*) indiscriminately for *ne* and *en* (or *η* ?), etc.: see *heuene*, with variants, § 14, p. 42, cf. p. 38, and the C spellings *chaumbere*, *lettère*, *letteris*,

¹ Cf. the ordinal *seuènèthe*, *seuènthe* (§ 53, I.).

² Cf. ten Brink, § 272.

coupelys, etc., (§§ 29, 38, V.), *-ble* for *-le* in Romance adjectives (§ 51, II.), *susterin*, *schilderyn* (§ 41), *angery* for *angry* (562), *sunlery* for *sundry* (440, 742, 957, 5174). Cf. also the next paragraph.

In native verb-forms, too, an *-e-* is sometimes written where it has no etymological status: as,—*herkenen* inf. (164, cf. 1180), *fortheren* inf. (8070, *ferthren* B), *herkened* pret. sg. (§ 101), *herkeneth* 3 sg. (1116), *herkeneth* inv. pl. (§ 118, I.); but cf. *wondren* (A.S. *wundrian*) inf. (1453, 5309, 6857), *handle* (A.S. *handlian*) inf. (5434), *wondred* p.p. (§ 121, III.), *vnbrydled* (A.S. *brídlían*) p.p. (3271, *vnbridēled* B), *bytokneth* 3 sg. (7876), *wondreth* inv. pl. (6525).¹ A similarly intrusive *-e-* shows itself in some Romance and Latin verbs: as,—the infinitives *coueren* (2597), *discoueren* (675), *recoueren* (4248), *delyueren* (3958), and *deliberen* (4831), *couered* pret. (§ 105), the participles *considered*, *couered*, *recovered*, *delibered*, *delyuered*, (§ 121, VIII.); but cf. the infinitives *remembren* (4470) and *suffren* (971, 2996, 5865), the inv. pl. *suffreth* (5866), the pret. *remembred* (§ 105), the participles *assembled*, *medled* (§ 121, VIII.), and the adj. *suced* (§ 121, X.), though in these instances, too, C usually interpolates the irrational *-e-*.

§ 133. Apocope or syncope of weak *e* after an unaccented syllable which is capable of bearing an accent.

The metrical fact conveniently expressed by ten Brink (§ 257) in the rule: "Nach unbetonter, jedoch tonfähiger Silbe muss ein schwaches *e* verstummen," has been abundantly illustrated in the grammatical chapter.

For apocope see *houȝbonde*, *sòm tyme*, *ðft tyme*, *welcòmē* (or *welcòmē*?) (§ 2), *loure*, *lyere*, *mākere*, *mōrter*, *rēdere* (§ 7), *frendship*, *lordship* (§ 7), *answere* (§ 8), *sylknesse* (§ 9), *fēlawe*, *wynlowe* (§ 15), *fortune*, *pursuyte* (§ 21), *sēruise* (§ 26), *mānere*, *māner*, *prejere* (§ 28), *gōter* (§ 28, note at end) *Éleyne* (2532), *Pāndare* (§ 139); cf. also *angwoyssh*, *aūngel*,² *cōncord*, *cūrtyn*, *rāket*, *rēlyk*, *skārmyssh*, *trāuers*, *yssue* (§ 22).³ This principle may, of course, also prevent the addition of an inorganic *-e*: see *-ynge*, *-yng* in substantives (§ 10, III.) and participles (§ 120, III.), and cf. *fōward* (A.S. *foreweard*, § 11), and the spelling *excesse* (§ 32).

For syncope see the plurals *sēruauntz* (§ 39, I.), *rēsonas*, *Troians* (§ 39, III.), *loure*, *māneres*, *pōrterys*, *prejers* (§ 39, IV.), the subjunctive

¹ C, however, shows *wonderyn*, *wondere*, *ombrydelid*, *handelyn*, *btokēnyth*, *wonderith*.

² Cf. ten Brink, § 221.

³ *Rēfuyt* (§ 22) can appeal to O. Fr. *refuit*.

labboured (§ 113), and the participles *answered* (§ 121, III.), *enlūmyned*, *pūruēyed* (?) (§ 121, IX.).

Doubtful lines¹ are the following :

Ymagynynge that *trauaylle* nor game, 372 ABG (-ing . . .
travaiH & game † D, neyther trauayle nor † gaine C).

Ne remuable (renuable B, resonable D, remeveable G) *fortune*
deface (to deface D), 6344 (*cut out* C).

Than wold (-e D) I of hise (his BD) *battaylles* endite, 8130 (*leaf*
cut out C).

§ 134. Apocope of weak -e after a syllable having a secondary accent (ten Brink, § 258).

Apocope of weak -e after a syllable which has a secondary accent is on the whole not common. Examples are : *haselwode* || *there*, 7537 (but, *haselwodē* || *thoughte*, 6868, see § 6), *prescience*, 5683 (§ 24). For preservation of the -e, see *secrenesse*, *selynesse*, *worthynesse* (§ 9), *sauegard*[e] (§ 21), *chàritable*, *còuenàble*, *dìscordàble*, *èxcusàble*, *hònour-àble*, *rèmuàble*, *rèsonàble* (§ 51, II.) Cf. also, in the "definite" inflection, *wòmmanlÿche*, *fòrknowÿnge*, *àmorouse*, *dìspitouse* (§ 59, b), and superlatives like *goddlyeste* (§ 59, a),—but, of course, *the tèmpestous matèrè*, *his èxcellent prowesse* (§ 60).

In several Romance words in which the -e is not apocopated in the interior of the verse it makes little difference whether the syllable that precedes is regarded as bearing the main or the secondary accent : *infortune*, *òrisònte* (§ 21), *gèntilèsse* (§ 25), *còueytise* (§ 26), *crèature* (§ 27), *impossible* (§§ 21, 51, II.), *inuisible* (§ 51, II.). For the treatment of final -es after the secondarily accented syllable, see §§ 37—39.

Note.—Ten Brink's remark that weak -e "in Wortauslaut" "nach neben-toniger Silbe" "zählt im Vers wohl in der Mehrzahl der Fälle nicht als Silbe mit ; wie es scheint sogar nach Muta cum Liquida, wo Verschleifung eintreten kann" (§ 258), does not hold true of the *Troilus* unless elided -e be included in the reckoning.

§ 135. Apocope of weak -e immediately after the syllable bearing the main accent.

I. Ten Brink (§ 260) holds that -e never counts as a syllable (except in rhyme) in certain words and forms which he enumerates (§ 260, (a—η). His list, however, requires modification.

(a) The accusative *herè* must be read as a dissyllable in 7948 :
Biseching herè (hirè B) syn that he was true, That she woldè come, etc.,

¹ Cp. John's throw no light on the scansion. In 372 Cp. has *grace* † ; in 6344 Cp. John's agree with A letter for letter ; in 8130 Mr. Austin notes no variation from A.

unless we accept *hire that C* (hir that D); the repetition of *that* is ungrammatical, however, and there seems to be no good reason for rejecting the reading of the best MSS. (Mr. Austin's collation makes no note.) In 973, Forthi some grace I hope yn *herē fynde* (hyrē C, hirē Cp., in her y D, in hyrē to B, in hir to G), the dissyllabic form has pretty good MS. authority; besides, the word is emphatic in sense besides having an ictus.—The singular possessive *hire, here*, is probably never dissyllabic in the *Troilus*, though one or two lines are doubtful (see § 74). The plural possessive, however, seems to be fairly entitled to two syllables in: Of *here teris* and the *herte vnswelle*, 5808 (hirē B, om. † D; no note in Austin; G, which is beneath contempt in this stanza, reads: Of hir teres and the herte gan vnswelle). As a verse of nine syllables the line would certainly be no credit to its author (cf. § 146).—In 423: Mi spirit which that aught[e] *yourē* be (3ourē C, 3oures G Cp., youres John's Hl. 2392, 3our[e]s B), *yourēs* is doubtless right.—In 4173: For *myne* wordes here and euey part (*so* ABC, my E; no note in Austin), we have our choice between *myne* and an unpleasant nine-syllable verse. *Allē* before *myne* would be an easy insertion.

(β) *Somē* (pl.) is found once, if And *somē* wolde muche herē mete alone, is, as it seems to be, the correct reading of 907 (see the variants, § 78).—The *Troilus* gives no support to the hypothesis of a "dative *eeche*" (see § 78).

(ε) Final *-e* never counts as a syllable, according to ten Brink, "in den Formen *were* und *made* nicht nur im Sg., sondern auch im Pl. bei apocopirtem *-n*." But the *Troilus* affords several examples of *werē* in the subjunctive singular (see 1027, 2715, 3379, 3416, 4359: § 113), and several of *werē* in the indicative and subjunctive plural (see 140, 1671, 1997, 3075, 5894, 6637, 8123: §§ 109, VII., 114). For dissyllabic *made* ten Brink would substitute always *made* in the singular, *maden* in the plural. The substitution of *maden* for *made* depends upon the general principle that in the plural *-en* rather than *-e* shall stand before consonants,—a principle which, however probable, can hardly be regarded as well established; the substitution of *made* for dissyllabic *made* in the *Troilus* would necessitate considerable tampering with good MSS. (see § 101).

(ζ) That *some* may retain its *-e* as a syllable is certain (§ 6, p. 10); for *wone*, however, see § 2. The *Troilus* affords no certain example of *-e* pronounced in Romance words in *-ie* in the interior of the verse (§§ 30, 126).

(4) In 5681 *beforë* or *beforen* seems necessary : Of thinges wüst (wiste BG Cp. Durh.) *byfor* (*bifor* B, *before* DG, *byfor* Cp., *biforn* John's, om. Durh.) certeynly (fuß certainlye Durh.).¹ *Therë* appears to be necessary in : And *ther* (*there* CG) lat (lete D, lett G) vs spoken (-e D) of oure wo, 5906 (no note in Austin). In 3915, however,—That he cam *there* (*ther* BG) and (or CD) that (that that Cp.) he was born,—the reading of Cp. *that that* is clearly right. In 6841 we should doubtless read *herë beleue* rather than *herë bleue* (see p. 204).

II. Other special instances of apocope deserve notice.

(1) The form *loue*, whatever its construction, shows a marked tendency to apocopate *-e*. Thus,—the noun (§ 8), the pres. ind. 1 sg. (§ 92, V.), the imv. sg. (§ 115, III.), the inf. (§ 119, X.).

(2) Ten Brink's remark (§ 261) that *-e* is "stets silbenbildend im Plural des attributiven Adjectivs, wenn dieses vor seinem Substantiv steht" (cf. his § 236) is contradicted by one line in the *Troilus* (1251, § 69). In this passage *good condicòns* occurs (notice the accent, and see § 54). Cf. also, *wyşę men* 3166 (*man* CD), which perhaps may be regarded as a sort of compound (the singular is written *wysman* in 5749 AC, *wys man* in C, *wise man* in D). *Lordes oldę* occurs in 7824. Cf. also 4, below.

(3) When a monosyllabic adjective in the definite construction immediately precedes a substantive accented on the second syllable, the inflectional *-e* of the adjective is necessarily lost (see § 54). Thus,—*this heigh matère* (3358), *youre heyghe seruyçe* (4130), *here heyghe complejnte* (5467), *thy' wrong conceyte* (692), *my lowę confessioun* (1613), *the pleyn felicitè* (8181). A plural *-e* must also disappear under similar circumstances : *of good condicòns*, 1251 (§ 69).

(4) In a very few phrases the constant association of an adjective with a noun seems to have resulted in the formation of a sort of compound, freed from the necessity of the "definite" inflection of the first part (see § 54). Such are *good wil* (his good wil, 2294), *good wòrd* in the sense of *commendation* (my, yourę good word, 7444, 7985). Less certainly of this sort is *this good plit*, 3981. *Meanwhile* might be thought to belong here, but *this mènë while* occurs (2892) as well as *in this menę while* (see § 52). Cf. also 2, above.

(5) Monosyllabic adjectives standing in the predicate do not always take *-e* in the plural (§ 69). Monosyllabic participles standing in the predicate seldom take *-e* in the plural (§ 68).

(6) For the use of *allë*, *alle* as the plural of *al*, see § 80.

¹ The passage is not in CE.

(7) The comparative *more*, adj. (§ 64), subst. (§ 64), or adv. (§ 86), often loses *-e*.

(8) In the case of certain adverbs in *-e*, the possibility of a confusion with some adjectival construction makes suspicious what might otherwise be regarded as good examples of apocope; see *longe*, *low*, and cf. the Romance words *cler*, *pleyn* (§ 82).

Note.—*Lyk* (cf. A.S. *gelíce*) may be due to adjective influence (§ 83): *ilyke* also occurs (§ 82). For *ryght*, see § 83; for *lest*, see § 83, n. 2; for *down*, *adown*, see § 88, n. 1; for *gruf*, see § 88, n. 2: all these words have lost their *-e* for good and all.

(9) Verb forms in *-eye* lose *-e* more or less freely. Thus,—inf. *seye* (§ 119, XIII.), *preye* (§ 119, X.); pres. ind. 1 sg., *deye*, *seye*, *preye* (§ 92, V.); pres. ind. pl. *sey* (§ 96, X.); subj. pl. *sey* (§ 112, V.); pret. ind. pl. *say the*, 656, *sey ye*, 1362 (§ 109, X.). Note also that in the inv. sg. of A.S. *licgan* (A.S. *lige*) we have *ly* and *lye* (§ 115, V.), and in the inv. sg. of the Romance verb *preyen*, *prey* (§ 116, IV.).

(10) In *as helpe me Gôd* and other idiomatic invocatory or optative phrases containing a subjunctive, the arrangement of the accents, fixed by sense and usage, brings together the subjunctive *-e* and another unstressed syllable after the accented root-syllable of the verb. Since the accentuation of phrases of this kind cannot be interfered with, the *-e* of the subjunctive disappears in Chaucer's verse. Thus,—*help me God*, *as help (helpe) me God (Iuno, Pállas, hère Pallàs)*, *as wysly helpe me God*, *God help (helpe) me so*, *helpe me so the mone*, *And helpe me god so at my most[e] nede*, *God yeue your herte care*, *Ioues yeue the (me) sorwe*, *I bidde god so yeue yow bothe sorwe*, *Yet preye I God so yeue yow right good day*. So *wo worth that day*, etc. The aggregate of instances of apocope that come under this head is not far from thirty (see § 111, III.).

(11) In a considerable number of instances the curtailed form of the Imperative Plural loses its *-e* entirely (§ 118, IV.). Some of the cases may be due to an extension of the singular form to the plural or to the petrification of the singular in an idiomatic use (cf. especially *lat* in the periphrasis *lat us* with the infinitive).

(12) The form *haue* (§ 124, VI.) has always apocope before a consonant. Thus,—pres. ind. 1 sg., pres. ind. pl. (also *han*), pres. subj. sg., pres. subj. pl., inv. sg. and pl., inf. (*hauen* occurs once in rhyme, 4305, *rh. grauen* ind. 3 pl.). In the pret. ind. and subj. sg., both *hadde* and *haddē* occur (§§ 102, 113).

(13) In the imperative singular of *tellen*, *telle* or *tel* is the usual form (see many examples in § 115, I.): there is no certain instance of *tellē*.

(14) The praeterito-praesentia and the verb *wil* show considerable confusion, the singular form having sometimes intruded into the plural or even ousted the historically correct form. In the preterite, however, the *Troilus* shows no very striking proportion of forms with apocope of *-e*. See the paradigms, §§ 123, 124.

III. When the special cases discussed in I. and II. are provided for, a considerable number of examples of apocope are left. For obvious reasons the following words are not here considered: the nouns *wille*, *wil* (§ 2), *sight*, *sighte* (§ 9), *flyght*, *flyghte* (§ 14), *wey*, *weye* (§ 14), *tryst*, *tryste*, *trust* (§ 15); the nouns already treated in §§ 7, 11, 22; nouns in *-ynge*, *-yng* (§ 10); the adjectives already treated in § 49; *cler*, *clere* (§ 52); the adverbs *oute*, *out*, *sith*, *thanne*, *than*, *whanne*, *whan* (§ 88), *aweye*, *away* (§ 89), and adjectives and adverbs in *-lich*, *-liche*, *-liche*, *-ly* (§§ 72, 84); participles in *ynge*, *-yng* (§ 120). There remain the following instances: ¹

(1) In nouns: ² (a) Germanic,—*hope* † (§ 2), *wel-come* * (§ 2), *wone* * (§ 2), *erthe* † (§ 3; cf. *erthēles*, § 49, n. 5), *hegge* † (§ 6, only case of the word in the poem), *dore* † (§ 8), *kynde* (§ 9), *nede* (§ 9), *strete* * (§ 9), *trouthe* (§ 9), *tid* * (§ 9), *while* (§ 9), *hewe* (§ 14), *teer* * (§ 14), *yate* (§ 14), *bole* † (§ 15), *hede* (heed) (§ 15); (b) Romance,—*grace* (?) (§ 21), *nece* (§ 21; no case in rhyme), *fayre* * (§ 21), *sciēnce* * (§ 24), cf. *prēsciēnce* * (§ 24). (c) Proper names,—*Criseyde* (1774, 4969), *Diomède* * (6455), *Eleyne* (2788), *Pandare* (§ 139) *Pōliphète* * (2704).

Note 1.—In several of the nouns just cited the disappearance of *-e* may be regarded as merely a return to a form etymologically more correct. For *col*, *losse*, etc., see § 18 and cf. p. 38, note 1. The form and etymology of *ferde* (?) are too uncertain to rely on *ferd* as a genuine case of apocope (see § 15, § 121, p. 305).

Note 2.—There is no instance of the apocope in *tyme* except in the phrases *sōmtyme* and *ōfte tyme*, which, as compounds, come under the head of § 133. There is no certain instance of *herte* (§ 3); the two lines 889 and 4529 admit of a satisfactory scansion with *hertē* (see p. 6). In one verse, 3197, *wyse* (§ 3) is required if the reading of AB be followed; CD have *-ē*; there is no note in Mr. Austin's collation.

Note 3.—The case of the noun *helpe* is curious. This word occurs several times in the *Troilus*, but never in rhyme and never with *-ē* in the interior of the verse (it is always *helpe*, *help*, or *helpe*, § 9). In the *Canterbury*

¹ For instances of apocope that depend on false readings easily corrected by a comparison of MSS., see, for example, *herte*, *lyne*, *myte*, *sonne*, *tonge* (§ 3), *eye* (§ 4), *sperre* (§ 6), *hete* (§ 8), *leue*, *-nesse*, *reste*, *rote*, *sorwe*, *soule*, *trouthe*, *tyde* (§ 9), *game* (§ 12), *ferre* (§ 14), *hede* (§ 15), *ioye*, (§ 21), *gyse* (§ 26), *cure* (§ 27), *stille* (§ 46), *lasse* (p. 136), *tweye* (p. 143), *sone*, *stille*, *vnnethe* (§ 82), *raughte*, *besoughte*, *tolde* (§ 99), *praide* (§ 104).

² An asterisk indicates that the word in question is found in the *Troilus* in rhyme with some word in *-e*, but that it is not found with *-ē* in the interior of the verse; a double-dagger indicates that the word occurs neither in rhyme nor with *-ē* in the interior of the verse; a word left unmarked is found both in rhyme with a word in *-e*, and with *-ē* in the interior of the verse.

Tales (see Child, § 16) it occurs but once in rhyme (260), and in that case its rhyme-word *whelpe* (A. S. *hwiclp*, m.) has no right to final *-e*; in the interior of the verse *helpē* is never found (in 9202 T. read *helpe vnto*). So far as the forms of the rest of Chaucer's poetry have been recorded, the word occurs nowhere in rhyme and only once with *-ē* in the interior of the verse. This highly exceptional instance is *Leg. G. W.*, 1616: *With-outen deeth but I his helpē be*, where one is tempted to think of *helpe*; weak substantive, formed on the analogy of *hunte* (A. S. *hunta*).

(2) In adjectives a few examples of apocope besides those already discussed occur in the endings of adjectives. *At the lastē* || *the*, 2009; *at the lastē* || *this*, 5034; *the firstē* || *that*, 7430; *louē the wers* || *though*, 1950; *hym is wors* || *that*, 5144; *now is wors* || *than*, 7056; *good goodly*, voc., 458 (p. 128); *swych thornes*, 2359; *swych festes*, 7792.

Note.—In 5144, 7056, cited above, *wors* may be regarded as adverbial in construction.

(3) In adverbs and prepositions (§§ 88-89): *aboutē*, *aboutē*, *bothe*, *therym*, *withinne*, *withoute*, *ofte* (in *ofte-tyme*), *saue*.

(4) In verbs.—Besides the cases already mentioned, apocope of *-e* occasionally takes place in the inflection of verbs. See pres. ind. sg. (§ 92), pres. subj. sg. (§ 110), pret. ind. sg. (see § 99, under *broughte*, *felte*, *leste*, *lyste*, *mette*, *thoughte*, *tolde*; § 102 under *seyde*, cf. subj. pl. *seyde*, § 113; § 103, under *highte*), imv. sg. (see *make*, § 115, III.; *byd*, *set*, § 115, V.), inf. (§ 119, X., a considerable number of examples; see especially *come*, which is fond of *-e*; *wete*, *dorre*, § 123), p.p. (§ 122, X., rare).

Note 1.—Ten Brink's remark (§ 261) that the *-e* is silent rather less often in the present subjunctive than in the present indicative does not hold good of the *Troilus*. In the ind. pret. sg. *thoughte* and *seyde* seem to show a tendency to apocope, but there are not instances enough to generalize from, even if any principle other than the abrasion of frequent use suggested itself.

Note 2.—*Gan* (3957) and *quod* (4856) are merely examples of the singular form used in the plural (see § 109, X.).

Note 3.—In the case of *wepte*, *wepte*, pret. sg. (§ 103), one cannot be certain that *wepte* is not an error for the strong form *wep*, which also occurs.

IV. Apocope of *-e* is apparently not influenced by the quality of the consonant that begins the following word, for there is hardly a consonant before which *-e* is not sometimes apocopated. There are perhaps more examples before *th* than before any other letter, but this may doubtless be explained by the fact that a number of monosyllables, either ill adapted in general to bear an ictus or apt to lose their stress altogether when not actually emphatic, begin with *th*. Such are,—the definite article *the*; the pronouns *thow*, *the*, *thin*, *this*, *that*, *tho*; the particles *that*, *there* (relative), *than*, *though*, *thurgh*: see, e. g.,¹ 267,

¹ Several of these places are cited merely for comparison: viz.,—376 (*than* perhaps has an ictus), 3162 (*than* has an ictus); 1950, 5144, 7056, in which the word in *th*, coming immediately after the cæsura, may have an ictus (cf. also III., 2, above).

305, 376, 413, 495, 532, 863, 1048, 1425, 1452, 1799, 1950, 2009, 2788, 3162, 3310, 4133, 4592, 4904, 4930, 5034, 5144, 5758, 6395, 6455, 6803, 7019, 7056, 7096, 7537, 7541, 7544, 7662, 7824, 8178. Apocope before *who*, *which*, *where*, *whan* (see, e. g.,¹ 1656, 1736, 2272, 3418, 4243, 4521) can hardly be ascribed to any other cause (though *who* is sometimes spelled *ho*, § 77). So always perhaps in cases like *trouē ye* (6231), *yeuē ye* (6598), *sendē yow* (1489), for apocope before *y* is not common enough to allow us to ascribe it to the "semi-vocalic" character of that sound.

Since a good many cases of apocope fall before the cæsura, the recognition of the doctrine of the "extra syllable" in that situation may reduce materially the number of silent -e's in the *Troilus* (see § 144 for the evidence). But it is important to remember that, even if it can be established that Chaucer occasionally allowed the extra syllable before the cæsura, we are not therefore justified in assuming that we have an instance of this license when its sole utility would be the preservation of a final -e. There are too many examples of undoubted apocope *elsewhere in the verse* to make such an inference anything but a begging of the question.

The upshot of all this appears to be that apocope, except in the case of a few words like *louē*, etc., must be regarded as a license for the nonce and cannot be brought under any rules but those of metrical exigency (see Child, § 92).

§ 136. Syncope or slurring of -e in final syllables when the noun accent falls on the syllable immediately preceding (cf. ten Brink, § 259).

Undoubted instances of full syncope are perhaps rare, but, since it is seldom possible to distinguish between full syncope and slurring (ten Brink's "Verschleifung") with certainty, it seems best to discuss the phenomena under a single head. The sign of syncopation (-e-) has been used for convenience, but without any intention of implying full syncope in all cases.

(a) -es: in the plural, *louèrēs* (§ 39, IV.); in the possessive pronoun *herēs* (but also *herēs*, *yourēs*, § 74). For -es, -s, in adverbs, see § 91.

(b) -est in pres. ind. 2 sg.: *lyst* (jaces), *seist*, *seyst*, *spekest*, and

¹In 2272, 3418, 4243, 4521, however, the word in *wh*, coming immediately after the cæsura, may have an ictus.

probably *rennest*,¹ are genuine (§ 93, II.); *flest* and *sleest* are not to the point; in 8154 the question is between *steppes* and *seest* or *steppēs* and *sēest* (§ 93, II., note), but the former gives much the smoother verse.—*-est* in pret. 2 sg. is almost always fully sounded: in 4944 perhaps *woldest* is to be read (see the variants, § 124, II., note); in *louedest*, 3562 (-ist CD, § 106), read *louēdest* (rather “verschleifung” than full syncope).

Note.—Possible cases of syncope in the superlative ending *-est* are: *myn alderleuest lord*, 3081 (-e C), and *myn alderleuest lady* ([myn] aldyr louēlyest † C), 6939: in both of which either *leuest* or *leuestē* satisfies the metre. Compare the extraordinarily common syncope in this ending in the Elizabethan dramatists.

- (c) *-eth*: for syncope in the ind. 3 sg., see § 94, II. (forms like *abit*, *halt*, *lyst*, in § 95); for syncope in the ind. 3 pl. in *-eth*, see § 97; for syncope in the imv. pl., see § 118, II. (cf., however, the curtailed imv. pl. in *-e*, *-ē*, § 118, III., IV.).
- (d) For syncopated weak preterites in *-de*, *-te*, and unsyncopated weak preterites in *-ede*, *-ed*, see §§ 99—105. Pairs are *dwelte* (§ 114), and *dwelled* (§ 99), *kyste* and *cussed* (§ 99), *made* and *maked* (§ 101), *sighte* and *siked* (*sighed*) (§ 105). A. S. *andswarode* appears before consonants as *answērede*, *answērde*, *answērēd*, before vowels and *h* as *answērede*, *answērde*, *answērēd*, *answērēd* (§ 101), the last form before a syllable that has the ictus. In Romance verbs *aspyde* and *cride* (§ 104) are assured by rhyme; *cride*, *criēd* occur before vowels, and *cryede* is found in the plural (see §§ 109, VIII., IX., 114); *paste* (§ 104) is assured by rhyme and *passed* by the subj. sing. *passed* before a vowel (§ 113); *preyde* is assured by rhyme, but we have *preyēde hem*, and this suggests the correction of *praydē here* (see § 104).—In verbs that make their preterite in *-ed* (*-ede*) exclusively, syncope (or slur) of this ending is rare: *louēde* || *that* occurs, however, in 1071 (§ 101), but *louēde*, *louēd* is the usual form; cf. also *louēde ek* (4991), *louēde hym* (2928), *lokēd into* (2312; but *lokēd he*, 2833), *leuēde* || *yn* (5155, if the verse is 9-syl.), *lyuēde* || *vnto* (subj., 6242); *likēd wel* (2129) is perhaps not quite secure (§ 101).—For weak perfect participles, see in general, § 121. Worth notice are *afered* and *ferd* (§ 121, I.), *maked*, *maad* and *mad* (§ 121, III.); *abaysshed* (4075), *abayst* || *and* (2936) (§ 121, VII.); *puruejēd alle* (5670), *puruejēd* || *certainly* (5714), *puruejēd* || *but* (5668) (cf. § 121 IX.); *criēd* || *than* (5249). *I-louēd the* (594) occurs, and, before vowels or *h*

¹ In 6211, where John's reads *Troye ay rennest* (smoother, perhaps, but lacking in authority).

are found—*beloued* || (131), *mysbeleued* (3680), *shewed* (7812). In 6947 *werreȳed* || *on* is doubtless the correct reading (see under Synizesis). Note *pleyëd tyraunt* (2325); *vntȳd in* (§ 121, IV.). For *wont*, *wonëd* ‘accustomed’; *wonëd* ‘dwelt,’ see § 121, III.

Note.—In the preterites *flekered*, *opened*, etc. (§ 101), we should read rather *-ered*, *-ened* than *-erëd*, *-enëd* (§ 132), and so in *couered*, etc.

- (e) *-en*. Syncope is regular in the participles *born*, *shorn*, *sworn*, *torn* (§ 122, V.), *lorn* (§ 121, IV.), *slayn* (§ 122, XII.), *seyn* ‘seen’ (§ 122, XIII.); instances of *-en* before vowels, as *fallen*, *growen*, are of course suspicious, and may almost always be reduced to the elided form (*falle*, etc.) by comparison of MSS. (§ 122, V.). In the infinitive *seyn* (cf. the gerund *to seyne*) syncope is regular, but *seyen* also occurs (§ 119, XIII.); as to *hauen*, *han*, *haue*, *haue*, see § 124, VI.; for infinitives in *-en* before consonants (no sure instance) and before vowels or *h*, see § 119, V. In the pres. pl. of *seyn*, *seyn* is common (§ 96, V.), but *seggen* also occurs (§ 96, I.), cf. *liggen* (§ 96, I., III.); for *han*, see § 124, VI.; for *arn*, see § 124, I.; for the plurals of *shal* and *wil*, see §§ 123, VII., 124, II.; for plurals in *-en* before vowels, see §§ 96, V., 109, V. For the treatment of adverbs in *-en*, see §§ 88, 89.

These final *-en*'s are all inflectional, but other final *-en*'s may suffer syncope (or be slurred) under similar conditions, *i. e.* when they are immediately preceded by the accented syllable, and when the following word begins with a vowel (or weak *h*). Final *-ene*, under the same conditions, loses *-e* by elision and, thus becoming indistinguishable from final *-en* in sound, is treated like *-en* with regard to slurring. It is accordingly difficult to ascertain what the full forms of the Modern English *heaven*, *welkin*, *own* (proprius), etc., were in Chaucer's language, — whether *-ën*, *-në*, *-n*, or even *-ënë* (see pp. 38, 42, 126). A similar uncertainty prevails with respect to *-er*, *-re*, *-el*, *-le*, *-em*, *-me* (see below).

The question between full syncope and slurring in the case of *-en* is often very nice. When *-n* is written (as in *born*, *sworn*), there is of course no doubt; but when *-en* (*-ene*) is written, no certain conclusion can be arrived at. Of the different ways in which it is phonetically and metrically possible to read *-en* before a vowel (or weak *h*), that seems preferable which, allowing the *-e* to disappear, makes the *-n* vocalic and retains it at the end of its word as a very light “extra syllable.” This method seems almost certain for lines in which the cæsura falls directly after the *-en*, particularly if the cæsura coincides

with an insistent pause in the sense. Ten Brink (§ 272) takes the ground that *-en* should be emended to elided *-e* when the latter is possible: "Ueberall da, wo tonlöses *n* apocopirt werden kann, wird man besser solche Apocope and in Verbindung damit Elision als Verschleifung annehmen, so beim Part. Perf. Pass. mancher Verba, und durchweg beim Inf. und dem Plur. Präs. oder Prät. des verbi finiti." This seems too sweeping. There is nothing against the *-en* slur *a priori*, and Chaucer certainly had no objection to it, for, if our texts be manipulated throughout in accordance with the rule suggested by ten Brink, there will still remain cases enough in which the *-en* slur, or something precisely the same in its effect on the ear, must be left undisturbed (see *heuene*, *heuēn*, or *heune*, § 14), to say nothing of kindred phenomena with regard to *el*, *-le*, *-er*, *-re*, *-me*, *-em* (below). There seems to be no good reason, then, why Chaucer should always have preferred elided *-e* to slurred *-en* in forms in which, as in most infinitives, for example, a choice was open to him. True, the evidence of the best MSS. is that he *usually* preferred the elided *-e*; but there is no antecedent probability of a rigid rule; indeed, it does not seem unlikely that now and then his ear may have been better satisfied by the fuller form, especially, one might conjecture, before the *cæsura*. Nothing short of an autograph MS., however, can ever settle such questions as this.

(f) *-er*.—Final *-er* may be slurred when the following word begins with a vowel (or weak *h*). Whether this slur amounts to full syncope of *-e* must be left undecided. For convenience, the mark of syncope (*-e-*) has been used, but with no intention of necessarily implying anything more than ten Brink's "Verschleifung" (§ 272). Examples of both slurred and unslurred *-er* have been given in the Grammatical Chapter: see *feue_r* (p. 55), *brothe_r* (p. 62), *tende_r* (p. 121), *othe_r* (§ 79), *tymber*, *wonder* (§ 18, p. 61), *fader*, *moder*, *suster*, *doughter* (§ 18, pp. 62, 63), *coler*, *corner*, *daunger*, *dyner*, *leyser*, *quarter*, *soper*, *squyer* (§ 34, L, p. 90), *othe_r*, *eythe_r*, *neythe_r* (§ 79), *ferthe_r* (§ 86). Here belong the comparative adjectives *leuere* (§ 64, p. 135), *hardere*, *hotter*, *leuere*, *wysere*, *lengere* (*ibid.*), and the comparative adverbs *leuere*, *rathere*, *ferther*, *lengere*, *rathere* (§ 86); for the proper ending of these words in Chaucer is *-er* not *-ere*. As to the comparative adjective and adverb *bettle* (*better*), one may hesitate whether to put it here or in the next paragraph, but the classification is of no consequence for our present purpose (for forms and slurs, see §§ 64, 86, observing

the variants under *bet*, pp. 135, 136). Cf. also the variants under *màner*, the reduced form of *manère* (§ 28, p. 82). *Euere* and *neuere* may be placed here or in the next paragraph: for a full discussion of their behaviour before vowels and consonants, see § 90. *Angre* perhaps belongs here (§ 19: read *anger* ?): it is not slurred in the *Troilus*. For *after*, *whider*, *yonder*, *other* or, *neither*, *whether*, see note at end of § 86. *Ouer* before consonants (except *h*) regularly counts as two syllables (cf. 2598, 2634, 7508; *ouer-thwart*, 3527); but before a vowel or *hys*, *hym*, a slur is common, as: *ouer vs*, 4269; *ouer his*, 2756 (on † D); cf. 386, 3970, 4638, 5062, 5734; see also 2170, where cæsura intervenes: And radde it *ouer* || and gan the lettre folde AB. But we have also *ouër al* (=überall), 921 f (*ouer alle B*, *oueral C*; D †) (: in general: I shal) (cf. 5689 † B), and, on the other hand: There is in loue som cloud is *ouer that* sonne, 1866 (*ouere B*, -er † the C, some cloudis in † that sunne D), and And that the mone hath lordship *ouer the* nyghtes, 4598 (-ere B; D †) (cf. 243 † f C). In 1259, 1488, we are hardly to read *vnder* before consonant: instead, we may read *lyue* for *lyueth* in 1209 and *growe* for *growen* in 1488.

Note.—An interesting line is: *For al so syker as thou lyst here by me* (sekyr C), 2076. Here it would be impossible to tell whether one should read *sykër às* or *sykër as*, if it were not for the rhymes *tyme* and *prync*.

Under the circumstances defined at the beginning of the last paragraph, *-re*, *-ere*, are reduced to *-re* (by elision), *-ere* (by elision and syncope), and are thus slurred with the following word, producing the same effect as the slurring of *-er* (last paragraph). As before, the precise nature of the slur (or syncope) cannot be determined. The uncertainty in scribes' spelling between *-re* and *-er* (*-ere*) renders impossible a rigid distinction between the words that belong here and those that belong in the preceding paragraph. Examples both of slurred and unslurred *-re* and *-ere* have been given in the Grammatical Chapter: see *answere* (§ 8); *chaumbre*, -er, *iaspre*, *lettre*, *ordre*, *poudre* (§ 29); *louere* (§ 7, p. 11); and, for unslurred forms before vowels, *chaumbre*, *ordre* (§ 29), *endere*, *fyndere*, [*harpour*,] *holdere*, *louere*, *lyere*, *makere* (§ 7). Compare the proper name *Cassandre* (=Cassandra): *Cassandre Eleyne or ony of the frape*, 3252 (Cassaundir C); *Cassandre hym gan right thus hys drem expounde*, 7819 (Cassandre bygan B, Cassaundere hym gan ryzt thus expounde C)¹; *That called was cassandre ek* (om. BC) *al aboute*, 7814 (cassaundere C.)² Of slurred

¹ A is no doubt right. No note in Mr. Austin's collation.

² No note in Mr. Austin's collation.

verb forms the following will serve as instances; *why suffre ich it*, 6403 (suffere C); *if that ye suffre hym*, 3705 (3if [that] 3e suffere hym C); *and ye suffre hym*, 3723 (suffere C); *How may ye suffre allas it be repeled* (repeles † A), 4956 (sufferyn that it be C); *I shal wel suffre vnto the tenthe day*, 6260 (suffere C); *suffure vs*, 5865 B; *And if that yow remembre I am Calkas*, 4735; *deliuere it* subj. 3 sg., 7321; *ne iompre ek* imv. sg., 2122 (iumpere C); *perseuere yn* imv. sg., 951; *delyuere here* (eam) imv. sg. or inf., 8106 (deliuer hire B); *And gan to motre I not what treuely*, 1626 (motere C); *recouere a blysse* inf., 3023; *recouere another* inf., 5068 (rekeuere a nother C); *mokre and* inf., 4217 (mokere C, moke A).

(g) Final *-el*, *-le* are treated in the same way as final *-er*, *-re* (see *f*, above). Thus,—*yuēl apayed*, 649 AB (C †); *yuēle* (adv.) *as*, 6601 A (*-el* B); cf. *yuēl* sbst. (§ 18, p. 62), where the cases of slurs before consonants are, as indicated, easily corrected by comparison of MSS. For *lytel*, *muchel*, see § 48. For words in *-le*, see *netle* (§ 3) *temple* (§ 14), *ensample*, *moeble peple*, *title*, *vnclē* (§ 21), *eagle*, *table* (§ 21). Romance adjectives in *-le* (§ 51, n. 1, p. 121); *bridle* (imv. sg.) *alwey*, 4477 (*-dele* C, *-del* D); *iangle* (incl. 3 pl.) *of*, 1885 (*-ele* C, *ianglyn* of D); *rakle* (inf.) *as*, 4484 (*-ele* C; D †). Cf. *deuēl haue* (p. 54), *epistol hem* (p. 55).

Note.—Apparent cases of slur or apocope like *-er*, *-re*, *-ere*, before consonants (not *h*) are almost always easily corrected by comparison of MSS. For examples, see the variants under *lettre* (§ 29), *bet* (§ 64, cf. 481 D), *yonder* (§ 86, note at end). Cf. And I ther (*om.* C) *after gan rome* (roman B) to and fro, 1601; *Nentendement considre ne tonge telle*, 6358 (see readings of ten MSS. in § 144). In the latter case, at least, we must allow the "syllable before the cæsura." For apparent slurs of *-el* before consonants, to be corrected by comparison of MSS., see variants under *yuēl* (§ 18).

(h) *-em* (or *-me*). See *botme it*, § 14, p. 39.

§ 137. The treatment of interior weak *-e-* ("schwaches e zwischen dem Hauptton und dem Nebenton," ten Brink, § 262) varies, sometimes in the same word. Thus,—

(a) In compounds, whether Germanic or Romance: *lodēsterre* (§ 2), *wodēbynde* (§ 3), *feldēfare* (§ 5), *lechēcraft* (§ 6), *stoundēmele* (§ 9), *mylnēstones* (§ 12), *lettēgame* (§ 15), *sauēgarde* (§ 21), but *forward* (§ 11), *stedefast* (§ 49, n. 3); (b) in nouns in *-esse* (§ 9): *kyulēnesse*, *rulēnesse*, but *fiēblēnesse* (read *feblesse*, see § 25, I.); (c) in adjectives and adverbs in *-les* (§§ 49, n. 5, 85): *botēles*, *dredēles*, *drynhēles*, *endēles*,

helèles, hertèles, knottèles, makèles, nedèles, restèles, rotèles, routhèles, spechèles, sterèles, causèles, doutèles, gracèles, gùtèles and *gùtles* (cf. *lyghèles, vertules*); (*d*) in adjectives and adverbs in *-ly, -lich, -liche* (§§ 72, 84): *byhouèly, hastèly, hertèly* and *hertèly, mekèly, namèly, softèly* and *softly, sternèlyche, trewèly* and *trewèly* (*trewly*), *vankyndèly, dignèliche, fermèly, formèly, largèly, nicèly, richèly, secundèlich, straungèly*, but *erthèly, nedèly, nedly* (cf. *helply, lowèly, lowly, febèly*)¹; (*e*) adjectives in *-ful*: *blysfyl* (p. 147), *dredful* (pp. 119, 130),² *ferfulleste* (p. 132), *sorweful, sorwful* (pp. 119, 130, 147), but once, perhaps, *sorwèful* (5393); (*f*) nouns and "gerunds" in *-ynge, -yng* (§ 10): *festenyng, rekenyng, cheteryng, slomeryng, tityryng, wonderyng*, but *tokenyng, whyspryng* (p. 31); (*g*) Romance nouns in *-ment* (§ 34): *accusèment, auisèment, elèment* (cf. the plural, p. 104), *entendèment, iuggèment, parlèment, sentèment*; (*h*) Romance nouns in *-aunce* (§ 23), *-aunt* (§ 34, IV.), *-ence* (§ 24): *delyueraunce, desseueraunce, disaunaunce, ordenaunce, perseueraunce, sustenaunce, difference, reuerence*, but *remenaunt* (cf. *remembraunce*) (cf. *mountenau[n]s*, 2792 C †; *rememb[e]raunce*, 7807 † C); (*i*) Romance nouns in *-ie* (§ 30): *baudery[e], frenèsye, poèsye, pöetrie, prophesie* (cf. the plural, p. 103), *remèdye* and *remedye, trecherye*, but *nouellèrye*; (*k*) miscellaneous English words: *euèrich, euèry(?)*, *euèry, euèrychon* (§ 79), *heuenyssh* (§ 49, n. 3), cf. *scryuemyssh* (§ 84, n. at end), *nàthèlès* (§ 86), *fèlawshyp* (§ 7); (*l*) miscellaneous Romance and Latin words: *collateral* (p. 149), *funeral, general* (p. 122) but *generally* (§ 84, II.), *cheual[e]rous* (p. 122), *frenètyk* (p. 148), *appetit* (§ 34, VII.), *conquerour* (§ 34, II.), *sorceresse* (§ 25, II.; cf. *deuyneresse*), *dùètè, nicètè*, but *surète, seurte* (§ 33), *souereyne* (p. 122) and *souereyn* (pp. 131, 134) (cf. *souèreynètè*, § 126). On the forms *April, Aperil, Aprille*, see § 32, n. 3, p. 88.

Note 1.—Interior *-e-* has given place to *-in-* in *nyghtyngale* (§ 3), A.S. *nihtegale*.

Note 2.—*Lovely, sunnelich, heuenliche* (§ 72) are false readings.

Note.—Of interior *e*'s due merely to the scribe (and of course not pronounced) many may be found among the variants registered in the Grammatical Chapter. Such are *frendeschipe* (§ 7), *gladdensse, goodensse, sikensse, wittensse* (§9).

§ 138. Syncope of other vowels than *-e-* and of consonants is rare (cf. ten Brink, § 263).

(1) The nicety of the question between *bileue* and *bleue* 'manère' may be seen in the following lines. In all of them *bleue* may be read without doing violence to the measure, but in 6019 alone is *bleue*

¹ *Hardèly* is for *hardily*.

² Cf. *dredfully, nedfully* (§ 84).

compulsory, in 6841 *here bileue* is certainly more probable than *herë bleue* (see p. 204), and in 1820 *nomore . . . bileue* is at least quite as satisfactory as *namorë . . . bleue*.

And whanne (when B) hem leste nomore || lat hem *byleue*, 1820 A (bileue B; CD have an entirely different line; Austin notes *leue* from E, but registers no variants from Cp. John's).

And euery wight han (haue CD) liberte (liberteis C) to *bleue*, 6019 (beleue CD; no note in Austin).

Intendestow that we shul here (her D) *bleue*, 6841 (beleue CD Harl. 2392; no note as to Cp. John's).

Syn (sythe D) that (*om.* D) we (3e C) seyden (-e CD) that (*om.* C) we wold (wolde CD John's) *bleue*, 6854 (beleue CD Harl. 2392).

Or al the nyght they most (moste Cp., mosten John's, muste D, muste hem *for* they most C) *b[l]euen* there, 7543 (bleuen B, bleue C, beleue D Harl. 2392).

Another doubtful case is 4207, in which we must choose between *bilynne* (A.S. blinnan) and hiatus :

Of swiche (swhich B, whiche C, wych D) sikes koude he (*om.* B) nought *blynne* (*so* ACD, bilynne B; no note in Austin).

(2) Of the A.S. *bi life* the usual form in the *Troilus* is *blyue*, which occurs frequently (§ 88); but in

Thow shalt gon ouer (to) nyght and that *blyue*, 2598 (belyue C, bylyve E, as blyue D HL. 2392; Cp. John's appear to agree with A),

belyue (*bylyue*) is doubtless correct.

(3) The noun *errand* (A.S. *érende*) occurs but once in the *Troilus*, in v. 1157, where the MSS. vary as to its form : *erand* was A, *herand* B, *ernde* D (Cp. John's appear to agree with A; the leaf is cut out of C); cf. § 7.

(4) The treatment of *rauysshen* by the *Troilus* MSS. is interesting. In 5299, 5305, 7258, we have our choice between *rauysshen* (with syncope or slur) and *rauysshē* (with elision).

To (Go BC) *rauysshē* (rauyshe B, rauysch C, rauisshe D) here ne (*om.* C) kanstow (canst thou CD) not for shame, 5192 (stanza *om.* in Cp.; no variation noted from John's).

To *rauysshen* (rauasche C, rauissh D, rauysshē John's) hire but yf hereself it (*om.* C) wolde, 5299.

To *rauysshen* (rauasche C, rauissh D) here syn (sithe that D) thow hast not ben there, 5305 (no note in Austin).

That *rauysshen* (rauisshē D, he rauassch shal C) he shal yow with his speche, 6136 (no note in Austin).

From hen[ne]s (hennes B, henys C) forth the *rauesshyng* of a (to rauysshen any B Cp. John's, to rauych ony C, to rauissch any D) queene, 7258.

Cf. the verbal noun *rauëshyng* (p. 29), *rauysshyng* (p. 30).

(5) Other more or less certain instances of syncope (or slur) of vowels are seen in :

And *finally* (fynali B, finially C, fynally G, final D) cause of wo that ye (the C, thow D) endure, 682 (no note in Austin).

Ne scryuenyssh (stryuenyssh B, coryously C, scryvenlich D, skryuenyscher G) or (ne C) *craftily* (craftyliche C, craftly D Cp., craftili G) thow it (*om.* CE) wryte, 2111.

Vp to (Vnto G) the (*om.* B) *holwghnesse* (holughnesse B, halownesse G) of the seuenthe (seueneth G) spere, 8172 (cut out of C; stanza not in D; no note in Austin).

Lord trowe (trow B) ye a *coueytous* (covetours D) or (*om.* CD) a (*om.* D) wrecche, 4215 (stanza not in G; no note in Austin).

Ye bothe for the *seson* || and for the feste, 168 (BC *om.* the second for; D reads and eke for; no note in Austin). (Cf. 7275 C).

And yn here *bosom* || the lettre down he thraste, 2240 (And in her bosom down the lettre cast D; no note in Austin).

O olde *vnholksom* || and mysbyleued (myslyued B, mysbeleuyd C, mysleuyd D) man, 4992 (no note in Austin).

Note.—In *Maugre Polydamas or Monesteo*, 4713, we should doubtless read *Monesteo* (trisyllable) rather than *Polydamas*: the movement of 4715, which rhymes with 4713, seems to be conclusive: *Polyte or eke the Troian daun Rupheo* (cf. also 4716). For *Pandarus*, *Pandarus*, when those forms occur, we should doubtless read *Pandare*, *Pandare*, with elision or apocope of *-e* (see § 139).

(6) Syncope *th* of *is* certain in *wher* = *whether*: *wher*, 2348 (whe[r] A, wher(e) C), 2736 (wher(e) C), 2908 (wher(e) C), 3888 (wher(e) B, whether † C, wher D †), 5493 A (ther † B, wheider D †; stanza not in C), 5824 (whether (?) C †, wheither? D †), 6356 (wher(e) B); *wher(e)*, 270 (C †, whethir † D);¹ *whether* (monosyl.), 2551 B (wher C, whether? AD); cf. 7663 † D. In 7098 A *wher* should be *whether* (emended by Furnivall). In 2348, 2736, 5824, 6356, a vowel or weak *h* (*he*, *hym*) follows, so that *whether* would be possible (§ 136, *f*), but 270, 2908, 3888, 5493, in all which consonants follow, are decisive. So far as the *Troilus* is concerned, the syncopeated form

¹ The scribe of C mistook *where* for the adverb of place.

wher seems to be confined to the unstressed part of the foot, but one cannot be certain of this, since it usually begins the verse (270, 2736, 2908, 3888, 5493, 5824, 6356).—For *other*, *or*, see note at the end of § 86.—Other words in *-ther* occasionally syncopate or slur *-e* when the following word begins with a vowel or weak *h*, but there is no evidence that they lose *th*: see § 136, *f*. In 5309 C read *whedyr thou art gon* for *whedyr thou art thus gon*; in 372, the reading of C, *neyther*, which, if correct might suggest syncope of *th*, is pretty certain to be wrong.

(7) For the few instances in which *eure* or *neuere* before a consonant (not *h*) counts for but a single syllable, see § 90. We have no certain means of knowing whether there was syncope of *-v-* in these cases; if so, we should expect to find readings like *ere*, *nere* or *er*, *ner* (cf. *where*, *wher*, for clipped *whether*). A trisyllabic foot, however, seems more likely than ten Brink's *eur*, *neur*, in spite of *paraunter* for *parauntere* and *mysaunter* for *mysauntere* (see § 27).

(8) The exclamatory *benedicite* occurs three times in the *Troilus*, each time as a trisyllable: 780 f (: be *inf.*), 3599 f (: he), 3702. In 780 the spelling is *bèndistèè* in B, *bèndistè* in Cp. John's, *benedicite* in C. This seems to settle the pronunciation of the trisyllabic clipped form as *bèndistèè* rather than *bencite* (Child, § 96; Skeat, *Prioresses Tale*, etc., p. 141; ten Brink, § 263) or *bendcite* (ten Brink, *ibid.*). The dissyllabic *benste* (*Towneley Myst.*, pp. 85, 99, quoted by Mätzner, *Poesie*, p. 109) might come through *bendistee* as well as through *bencite*. (Cf. also Kölbing on *Ipomadon A* 4480 (p. 421), A. Kaufmann, *Trentalle Sancti Gregorii*, p. 55, *Erlanger Beitr.*, No. 3).

(9) In one instance, *comprehende*, *inf.*, is perhaps shortened to *comprende*: As *muche ioye* (*ioy D*) as *herte* (*hert D*) may (*myght D*) *complende*, 4529 (*comprehende BCG*, *comprehend D*, *comprende Cp. John's*).

(10) *Dèsespeir*, *despeyr* (§ 34, VII.), *desèsperaunce* (1615 f), *despeyred* p.p. (36 f, 42, 779), occur in the *Troilus*. There is naturally some confusion in spelling: thus A reads *desespeyred* in 36, 42, and *desespered* in 779, though the metre shows that the shorter forms are right; and C reads *desèperaunce* in 1615, where the metre requires *desesperaunce*, A *desper* in 1091, where the metre requires *desespeir*.

§ 139. Apocope of consonants (cf. ten Brink, § 264).

I. Apocope of *-n* in verb-forms has already been referred to in § 133, *e*. See the material in the Grammatical Chapter under Present

Indicative Plural (§ 96), Present Subjunctive Plural (§ 112), Preterite Indicative Plural (§ 109), Preterite Subjunctive Plural (§ 114), Infinitive (§ 119), Perfect Participle (§ 122).

II. On the so-called apocope of *-eth* in the Imperative Plural, see § 118.

III. Many proper names have lost a final *-s*, sometimes with further change of form (cf. ten Brink, § 264). The following list is thrown together for convenience, with no attempt at classification.¹

Achille, 8169 f (-H D) (: wille *n.*); Achille thorough, 7922 (-es BCD).

But,—Achilles, 3216; Àchillès, 1501 f (: douteles).

Adoòn, 3563 (Adon BCD). [Adonis.]

Amète, 664 f (: bete *inf.* A.S. bétan).

Arge, 7168 f (: large); Arge, 7297. [Argos.] But,—Argus [the guardian of Io], as *Argus eyed*, 6121.

Dēiphèbe, 8015, 8017 (Deyphèbe C). But,—Dēīphèbus (before vowels, *h*, and consonants), 2487, 2493, 2507, 2510, 2528, 2571, 2581 (Deīphèbùs † D), 2634, 2686, 2778, 2787, 3068; Dēīphèbùs, Deyphèbùs (before vowels, *h*, and consonants, and in rhyme) 2483, 2565 f, 2627, 2643, 2654, 2696 f, 2726 f, 2760, 3046 f (D ?), 3063.

Diomède, Dỳomède, 6378 f (: blede *inf.*), cf. 6546 f, 7387 f, 7404 f, etc.; *-e*, 6409, 6469, etc.; *-e* he, 8120; *-e* here (*gen. sg.*), 7880; *-e* haue (*ind. 2 pl.*), 8040 (Diamede C); Diomède † that, 6455 (Dy- B).

Dite, 146 f (Dyte CD) (: write *pres. ind. 3 pl.*). [Dictys.]

Horàste, 3639 f (: his laste); *-e*, 3648 (-ast D, -este C). [Orestes, cf. § 125.]

Iùenàl, 4859 (-H D).

Lukàn and, 8155 (-can BD).

Mercùrye (*trissyllable*), 3571 (Mercure B, -ie C, -y D), 8190 A (-ie B); Mercùrye † of, 6684 (-ie B, Mercùrye † *trissyl.* D).

Mỳda, 4231. [Midas.]

Omèr †, 8155; Òmer or ², 146 (Omere C, Homere D).

Ouỳde, 8155 (Ouide D).

Pandàre, 610 f (: care *n.*), 3445 t, 3947 f, etc.; Pandàrè (before consonants), 2292 (-dàris C), 2360 (-dàrus C), 2500 (-dàrus C; D †), etc.; Pandàrè (before vowels), 1063; Pandàrè † herkène,

¹ A consonant (not *h*) follows unless the contrary is noted. The list gives the forms of ABCD.

² A of †.

658 (-dàris C); Pandàre, 4397 (-dàrus C, -d[à]re D), 5244 (-dàr
 answard[e] D), cf. 829, 1002, 1152, 2136, etc., etc.; Pandàre,
 3471 (-dàrus C, -dàrè D), 5468 (-dàrè BD); Pàndare, 736 (-dàrys
 C †), 1038, cf. 1030, 2577, 2761, etc.; Pàndare || here (*adv.*),
 868 (-dàrys C); Pàndare || herde, 876 (-dàrys C); Pàndare, 582,
 (Pàndarè † D; C †), 2646 (-dàrus C), 2957 (-dàrus C), cf. 5015,
 5303, 6644; Pàndarè || I, 1044; Pàndarè || and, 5747 (Pàndarùs
 C, Pàndare in || BCP. John's). But,—Pàndarùs, 618 f (-is C),
 1178 f, 1205 f, 1514 f (-is C), etc.; Pàndarùs (before consonants),
 1142 (-darè D), 1170 (-dàris C, -dàrè D), cf. 761, 2024, 2227,
 2311, etc.; Pàndarùs (before vowels), 1191 (-è C), 2022 (-è D),
 etc.; Pàndarùs (before *h*), cf. 6917, 6920, etc.; Pàndarùs (beforo
 consonants), 1575 (-dàris C, -dare D), cf. 2178, 8072; Pàndarùs
 hym, 2337 (-dare D), cf. 2059 (*he*), 3050 (*it*)¹; Pàndarùs ||
 alwey, 2437 (-dàre B, -dàrùs || was C, -dàre || was D); Pàndarùs ||
 and, 932 (-dàrys C, -dare D); Pàndarùs || that, 3604 (Pàndarùs
 BC, Pàndarè D).

Pòlyphète, Pòliphète, 2552 f (Polyfete D) (: swete 1 *sg.* : plete *inf.*),
 2701 f (: spete *inf.*); Pòliphète || they, 2704 (-phètè || gun[ne]
 they † D).

Pòlymyte, 7301 (-myzt C, Polymites D).² But,—Polymytès, 7851 f
 (Poli- B, Polymites C, Polemites D) (: Thebès : Ethyoclès).

Polÿte, 4715 (Pollite B, Pòlyte D).

Prÿam may, 5583 (Prìam BC; D †); Pryàm (before consonants),
 4804 (Priàm B, Priàm(us) D; C †)³; Pryàm (before vowels),
 3633 (Priàm B, Priàmè C), cf. 5868, 6647, 7589;³ Pryàm his,
 4801 (Priàm BC, Priàm(us) † here (*gen. pl.*) D).⁴ But,—Prÿamùs
 was, 4719 (Prìamùs BD); Prìamùs || and, 6055.

Quyryne, 4687 f (Qwyrine D) (: pyne *n.* : fyne *inf.*).

Santÿppe, 4714 (Sartipe † D). [Xanthippus.]

Saturne, 3558 f (: disturne *inf.* : turne *inf.*); -e, 3467 (D †) (first
 word in verse).

Stace, 8155 f (: pace *inf.* A, space BD).

Virgile, 8155 (first word in verse).

A remarkable line is :

Virgile Ouyde (Ouide D) Omer Lukan (-can BD) and (or D) Stace,
 8155 (cut out of C; no note in Austin).

¹ Or, *Pàndarùs it is*.

² Polymyte (Polymyzt B, Polymites D) and many a (*om.* C) man to (al to C)
 skathe (no note in Austin).

³ First word in the verse.

⁴ Read *saue-gard[e]* in A.

Note.—Besides *Iuppiter* and *Ioue*, the form *Ioues* (nom., voc., acc.) occurs. *Iuppiter*, 1318 (Iupiter C, Iubiter D), 5331 (Iubiter CD), cf. 6345. *Ioue*, 4270 f (: *houe inf.*); *Iouë* (before consonants), 3564 CD, 3857 † A, 4997 (Iouo B), 5778 † CD, cf. 5306; *Ioue* (before a vowel or *h*), 3467 (Iovis D †), 3857 BCD, cf. 3564 AB, 5741, 5811, 5854, 6570. *Iouës* (before consonants), 2692 (-is CD), 2857 (-is D), 7320 (-e C; D †), 7888 (Iouus¹ C, Ioue D), cf. 7809; *Iouës hath*, 6365 (-ë D).

§ 140. Synæresis (cf. ten Brink, § 266).

In proper names : *Symôys* (6210), *Troÿlus*¹ (568, 596, 834, 871, 1768, 2027, 2751, 3330, 3681 (?), 6035, 7404, 7483; but *Tròylus* is the usual form). Besides *Criseÿdë* (passim), *Criseÿde* (1774, 4969), and *Criseÿdà* (169 f), there occur *Criseÿddà* (2509, 2729) and *Cryseÿddë* (1734). *Dei-* in *Deiphebus* (*Deiphebùs*, *Deiphèbus*, *Deiphèbe*) always makes one syllable in the *Troilus* (see references in § 139, s.v.). *Phèton*, 7027, was to be expected. There is no knowing how Chaucer pronounced the name of *Pyrous*, one of the sun's team : the word occurs in 4545 : That *Piros* (Pirors B, Pirus C †, Pirous D, Pyrous G; no note in Austin) and tho swyfte stedes thre.—*Obeÿssaunce* (with synæresis of -ey-) is given by ten Brink as the only form of this word in Chaucer; but *obèÿsaunce* occurs in 3320.—In *hèÿnoùs* (2702) there is no synæresis.

§ 141. Diæresis (cf. ten Brink, § 267).

In Greek proper names in -*eus* : *Tideus*, *Tydeus*, 6451, 7166 f (Thèdeous C), 7295 (Thèdeus C), 7843 f (thidiùs C), 7856 (thèdeus C), 7864, 8109 f; *Treux*, 1154 (Tryeux † B, Thèreus D); *Cuppàneùs* (7867) (Campàneùs D). *Oènonè*, 654 f (oonone B, senome † C^c, Tynome † D) is curious.

Note 1.—*She told ek how Tydeus* (Tideus BD, Cithideus † C) *er she stente*, 7848, and *Tydeus* (Tideus BD, Thedeus C) *sonè that down descended is*, 7877, suggest the pronunciation *Tideus*. The readings are not suspicious, and Mr. Austin's collation contains no note on either lipe.—In the *Hous of Fame*, *Orpheus* (1203) occurs, and in *B. Duch.* 569 *Orpheus* (dissyl.), but the *Troilus* has only the latter (5453).—*Imeneus* (4100) is for *Hymenæus*.

Note 2.—In 4036 A *soÿr* is an error : the correct reading is *sucre*.

§ 142. Synizesis (ten Brink, § 268).

The Romance dissyllabic vowel combinations -*ia-*, -*iau-*, -*ic-*, -*iou-*, -*uau-*, -*ue-*, -*uou-*, regularly retain their dissyllabic character in the *Troilus*. Thus, -*ia-* in *celestial* (972, 976 f, 6203 f); *special* (260 f, 894 f, 974 f, 1048 f); *marcial* (6331 f); -*iau-* in *alliaunce* (4588 f);

¹ MS. *iou* with sign of contraction (expand *ioues* or *iouis*?).

¹ Var. *Troÿlus*.

variaunce (5647 f, 7125 f, 8033 f); *-ie* in *awlience* (4732 f, 5207 f, 6598 f); *conscience* (554 f); *experience* (4125, 7620 f); *pacience* (7760); *prescience* (5649, 5660, 5683, 5726 f); *sapience* (515 f); *science* (67, 7618 f); *patient* (1083, 2984 f, 6249); *Arìete* (6254 f, 7553 f); *quìete*, *quìete* (p. 72); *-iou* in *abusion*¹ (5652 f, 5722); *affection*, *-ioun* (296 f, 4206, 4432 f, 4815); *attricioun* (557 f); *auysions* (6737 f (-iounys C)); *champioun* (2512); *compassioun* (50 f, 467 f, 3245); *complexions* (6732 f); *conclusion*, *-yon*, *-ioun* (466 f, 480 f, 1344 f, 2385 f, 4868 f C, 5114 f, 5946 f, 7128 f, 7366 f, 7673 f); *condicion*, *-ioun* (3659, 7194 f, 7330 f); *confessioun* (1613 f); *confusion*, *-ioun* (4785 f, 4848); *consolacioun* (708 f); *constellacioun* (5407 f); *correccioun* (4174 f); *curacioun* (791 f); *deliberacion* (3361 f); *destrucion* (141 f); *deuocioun* (187 f, 555 f); *diffusioun* (3138); *discrecioun*, *dyscreccion* (3736, 4176 f, 4868 f); *disgression* (143 f); *disposicion*, *-ioun* (1611 f, 6365 f, 7906 f); *dyminucioun* (4177 f); *entencion*, *-ioun*, *-ioun* (52 f, 211 f, 345 f, 683 f, 1343 f, 1380 f, 7130 f); *execucion* (3363 f, 6367 f); *illusioun* (3883 f); *illusions* (6731 f); *impressioun* (298 f); *impressions* (6735 f (expressiounys C)); *meucion* (7966); *mocion* (5953 f); *oppressioun* (2503 f); *opinion*, *-yon*, *-ioun*, *-youn* (347 f, 710 f, 790 f, 2382 f, 5115 f, 5650 f, 5657, 5687, 5692, 6157, 7221 f); *passion*, *-ioun* (3882 f, 5367); *permutacion* (7904 f); *possessioun* (2504 f); *presumpcion* (213 f); *proporcion* (7191 f); *protestacion*, *-ioun* (1569 f, 5951 f); *relempcion* (4770 f); *regioun* (5405 f); *reprehencion* (684 f); *repressioun* (3880 f); *reuelacions* (6729 f); *saluacioun*, *sauacion* (464 f, 1466 f, 1571 f, 1648 f, 6044 f (-cyone C)); *suspecion* (1646 f, 8010 f); *tribulacion* (7351 f); *delicious* (6806); *enuyous*, *enuyous* (1751, 1942, 4296, 4542); *gracious* (885 f); *melodious* (6940); *religious* (1844 f); *-uau* in *continuaunce* (2919); *-ue* in *casuel* (5081); *cruel*, *cruwel* (9, 1422, 1427, 1520, 3224, 4292, 4537, 4687, 4756, 4958, 5492, 5506, 5846, 5851, 5854, 6962, 7085, 7259, 7831, 7897, 8048, 8114, 8124); *cruelte*, *cruwelte* (586 f, 1076 f, 5434 f); *cruwellyche* (5966, cf. 8119); *mewet* (6557); *gruwel* (3553 (gruwel B, grewel D)); *-uou* in *vertuous* (254, 891 (-tyuous C)); *voluptuous* (6235 (-teuous C)).

But there are a few cases of synizesis. Thus,—*opynyon*, *-youn* (5635, 5700, 5702); *entencioun* (6995 f D; cf. 681 f C); *furiuous*² (1521 D; *read furies*); *voluptuous*² (6235 C); *signifiuance* (6725 f,

¹ The rhymes *adown*, *down*, *toun*, show that the proper spelling of these words is in *-ioun*. Other rhymes are *lyon*, *presoun*, *enchesoun*, *sermon*, *comparyson*, *Lameadoun*.

² Easily corrected by comparison of MSS. so that the synizesis disappears.

7810); *prescience* (5673, 5724); *perpetually* (4596); *preciously*¹ (5252 C). In 1090, D reads *tēmpestuòs* (for *-tuòus*?) but the true reading is *tēmpestòus*. In *còrageùs* (7163 f) and *vēngeaunce* (8071) the *e* after *g* is not pronounced.

Of classical proper names *Cynthia*, *-ea* (6270, 7381), *Lollius*, *Lollyus* (394 f, 8016 f), *Ìxiòn* (6575), *Palladion* (153 f; cf. *Palladìon[e]s feste*, 161) occur without, *Layùs* (1186), *Palladìon* (164) with synizesis; cf. *Mercùrye*, below. *Mōnesteò*, *Rupheò*, *Phèbused*, rhyme with each other (4713, 4715, 4716).

The superlatives of adjectives of *-y* show no synizesis: *frendlyeste*, *goodlyest[e]*, *thriftieste*, *worthiest*, *-e* (§§ 57, a, 59, a, 70, a). Synizesis occurs in the comparative adverb *gladlyer* (8140), but not in the comparative adjectives *frenlliour* (885), *worthier* (251).

In words in which the accented syllable is followed by *-ie*, *-ien*, *-ied*, *-iynge*, the *i* may become consonantal: in the case of *-ie* this synizesis is necessary in the interior of the verse. Thus *augùrye*, *contràrye* (noun) (cf. § 51), *consistòrie*, *fùrye*, *letuàrye*, *memòrie*, *Mercùrye*, *mysèrie*, *stòrie*, *victòrie*, *comèdye*, *paròdye*, *tregèdie* (§ 31); the plurals *aduersàries*, *contràries*, *fùryes*, *ladyes* (so the genitive, § 36), *stòryes*, *victòries* (p. 103); *mèrye* (p. 113); *contràrye* adj. (§ 51), *transitòrie* (3669 f). So also in the verb forms: pres. ind. 1 sg. *herye* (3793 f: *merye* pl.), *varye* (7741 f: *contrarye*); pres. ind. 3 pl. *carye* (7105 f: *letuàrye*); inf. *taryen* (2104, 2707 f), *varyen* (2706 f), *waryen* (2704 f), *vnbodye* (7913 f: *parodye*); perf. part. *yburyed* (2396), *heryed* (4599, 4655), *iheryed*, *yheryed* (2849, 4646),² *taried* (2824, 7499, 7712). *Astonyed* and *astoned* (p.p.) both occur² (see 1512, 1688, 3931, 8091). In one instance the p.p. *heried* has three syllables: *hèrièd* (4098). Forms in *-ynge* occur both with and without synizesis: *bùrynge* (i. e. *bùryñge*), *tàryñge*; *hèriynge*, *tàryynye* (see § 10). In 7225 we have *tàrièth*. In *How thow me hast waryed on euery side*, 6947 (*weryed* BC, *weryhed* D, *werreide* G; no note in Mr. Austin's collation),³ *werreyd* is no doubt the correct reading.⁴

Note 1.—In *ladyes* ten Brink (§ 257) prefers syncope *ladyes*: see the variants in § 38, VII., above. Cf. also *encmÿs* and *pròphesies* (?) (*ibid.*).

Note 2.—Ten Brink's remark (§ 268) that *seur* (O. Fr. *seür*) is always monosyllabic in Chaucer, seems to be true; but *asèuraince* occurs (7622 f).

¹ For *louelyest*, 6939 C, read *leuest*.

² Cf. *yhèrèd*, 2058 A (*yheryed* BD, *iheryed* C).

³ BG omit *on*, which should be supplied.

⁴ Compare the context, especially *victorie* and *spille*.

Note 3.—In *As thoughte hym tho for pitous distresse*, 4286 AC (pitouse D), we must read either *pitous* with B or *pietous* with Cp.

§ 143. Miscellaneous slurs and contractions.

This is is occasionally reduced to one syllable and written *this*. Thus,—1448 (this is D), 3778 (this seyde (is) D), 5552 (this is C, thus † D), 5855 (in A read *haue ye* for *haue*), 5936 (C †), 6514 (be † this C); this is, 419 † D, 5965 † C, 7357 † C. (Cf. Child, § 96; ten Brink, § 271; Skeat, *Minor Poems*, p. 304.)

For *nas*, *nere*, *nil*, *nolde*, see § 124; for *noot*, *nyste*, see § 123.

Is it and *it is* are both found in the *Troilus*: there seems to be one trustworthy example of each:

What wonder *is it* though he of me haue ioye, 1834. In this line ABD have *is it* (i. e. *is it*), C indicates the pronunciation by reading *ist*. (There is no note in Austin.) Cf. also *what wonder ist*, 6425 C, where ABD read *is*. In 6949, C has *ist* for *is it*, but the line is incorrect in this MS. Similarly *wast* for *was it* occurs in 3209 C, where, however, *was it* should be restored. These last two examples, though worthless as readings, have their value in determining the nature of the slur in 1834. Ek (Eke G) som tyme *it is* a craft to seme fle (flee G), 747 ABG (Ek it is a craft for summe sumtyme to fle C, Eke it is craft some tyme to seme sle D; no note in Austin).

Note 1.—In *What nede were it this preyere for to werne*, 4773 AB (cut out of C; D †; no note in Austin), we may choose between *nedē were it* and *nedē were it*.

Note 2.—A considerable number of slurred *it's* and *is's* disappear on a comparison of MSS. Thus,—*telle it the*, 599 C; *be it*, 2060 C (cf. 7293 C); *is it* (?), 1435 A; *as it was*, 3295 A; *do it redresse*, 6403 A; *may it not*, 7926 (cf. 2242 C †); *help it*, 1405 D; *no thing it turnith*, 1883 D; *I wil it sow* (?), 2289 C; *can it*, 5553 D; *3if it so be*, 7059 C; *whēn that it is ago*, 1880 B (or *that it is*); *seith it is* (or *it is*) *told*, 3638 C; *soth it is* (or *it is*) *seyd*, 4054 C (cf. 6117 D); *that it is* (or *it is*) *a folye*, 6688 D; *cērtis it is* (or *it is*) *non*, 6771 C; *it is of*, 7038 A; *now it is wors*, 7056 A; *that is*, 1431 D; *ther is*, 3707 D, 4570 D, cf. 3872 C; *now is*, 3389 A; *weye is*, 1702 A; *what is*, 681 C; *wo is*, 694 C; *lowe is*, 6307 D; *counseith is this*, 7655 D.

Thow art is slurred once:

Thow art (Thart B Cp. John's, Thu art C, Thou art D) wys (wys(e) B, wis(e) D) ynown forthi do nought amys, 4471. Here the reading *Thart* found in B Cp. John's is particularly noteworthy.

Not so certain is the slur of *at* in

The grete sweigh (swough B, swey C, sweyf D, swigh G) doth (makith C) it to (*om.* G, than D) come (falle C, fal D) *at* (*om.*

D) *at onys* (ones BDG), 2468 (no note in Austin). Here it is possible that either *to* (with G) or *al* (with D) should be omitted, in spite of the weight of MS. authority.

Of the running together of *I* (*he, she*) *ně* into *In'* (etc.), the *Troilus* affords no good example: see *y ne dar(e)*, 2946 D (I dar ABC); *I ne wolde*, 5899 C (nolde AD, nold B) (cf. 1023 f C^c); *he ne kyst*, 812 C (AB om. ne); *he ne may*, 2212 C (he may ABD); *sche ne wil*, 6719 C (nyl AB, niH D). See Child, § 96; ten Brink, § 272, and *Compl. to Pite*, n. to v. 105, p. 177.

For *at the* B occasionally writes *atte*. Thus,—*atte laste*, 1230 B, 5097 B; *att[e] laste*, 916 B; *atte leste*, 7313 B; *atte meeste*, 7310 B; *atte fulle*, 209 B; see § 53. Cf. *attother*, 5096 B (at the other AC, at other D †); *the tother side*, 7050 A (that other BCD). *Atton(e)*, 3407 f B (at oon A, at on C, at on(e) D), is different. In 7732 C, for *at the writyng* read *at writyng*. In the phrase *at erste* (§ 54, n. 2) the readings are interesting,—*at erst[e]* AC, *at erste* BCp., *att erst* D †, *atte erst[e]* G: the reading of G suggests the conjecture that in *firstē vertu* (§ 54, n. 2) the demonstrative *the* has been swallowed up by the preceding *that* (conjunction),—*that the, thattē, that*.

Note 3.—A considerable number of miscellaneous slurs disappear on comparison of MSS. Thus,—*I am*, 720 A, 967 C, 1516 C, 2198 A, 4490 D; *I haue*, 6460 B, cf. 1384 A, 7549 B; *thow hast* (?), 5153 D; *he hath*, 3917 C; *ye han*, 5958 A, cf. 5469 B, 5538 C; *ye wiht*, 6188 D; *prey him*, 2536 C; *therfore as a*, 680 A (cf. 1321 C, 2268 D, 2341 A, 5031 C (?), 5562 D); *lete vs goo*, 6888 D; *in his armes*, 4029 D (?), 5881 D;¹ *now in a*, 1550 B (cf. 363 D, 850 C, 1290 D (?), 1320 † D, 7658 D); *the in thyn*, 5306 C (D ?); *here an ensauple*, 4863 A; *down of here*, 6876 A (cf. 474 C, 1004 D, 1945 D, 2052 A, 3263 D, 3855 D, 5346 C, 6513 C, 6733 D, 6790 C, 7275 C, 7825 A); *and yf she*, 7665 A (cf. 7629 D); *plaunte or a*, 5429 D; *sorwe or in*, 641 C; *wel for I*, 613 C (cf. 1692 D, 3151 D, 3689 B, 5320 D, 6124 D, 7128 A);² *natt at a bene*, 6726 D; *and at after none*, 7493 D; *can not thanke*, 3840 C; *yow wiht*, 3474 D. So in apparent examples of slurred *that*;³ *whil that* (quasi *whil't*), 468 CD; *so that* (quasi *so't*), 2247 D; *think that al* (quasi *think't*) 2824 A; *wel that this* (quasi *wel't*), 2994 A; *er that he* (quasi *er't*), 4435 A; *whan that he* (quasi *whan't*), 7516 A; cf. 1437 B, 2805 C, 3073 C, 3208 A, 5138 D, 5279 C †, 5350 A, 5986 C, 6035 AB, 6170 † C, 6180 D, 6483 D, 7073 B, 7541 D, 7662 C, 8051 D. In 953 the right reading is doubtless *he that parted is* (John's; -yd CD) rather than *he that departed* (AB) with slur of *that*. So also in apparent examples of slurred *and*: *Al day for loue and in swiich a maner cas*, 1542 C; cf. 1239 C, 1941 C, 2184 D, 2604 C, 3651 D, 4212 C, 4232 C, 4586 D, 5770 C, 6615 D (?), 7151 D; see also the apparent slur of *than* in *leuer(e) than ben*, 7287 B. In 6139 C *I*

¹ In 1037 A, 4047 C, the slur on *his*, in *his* may be avoided, if *Troilus* be read as a dissyllable (§ 140); but in both lines *his* is an interpolated word.

² In 2532 no one will hesitate between *What wolt thow seyn yf I for Eleyne sente*, and *for Eleyne*.

³ In most cases the corruption consists in the insertion of a superfluous *that*.

schal ben has the time of two syllables (cf. Scotch *I've*), but the line is manufactured by the corrector of C.

Note 4.—It is just possible that in 4166, 4984, the scribe of B intended *thought* for a shortened *though that*.

Note 5.—*Through* (A.S. *þurh*) is variously spelled (*thurgh, thorough, thour, etc.*), but is always monosyllabic, except perhaps in 7846: *Thorough* (Thorwh B, Of C, Thurgh D) his (hire C, om. D) wol I yow (om. Cp.) telle. Now and then one or another MS. seems to make the word dissyllabic elsewhere, but comparison affords an easy correction (see the MSS. in 1444, 4130, 4738, 7132).

§ 144. The extra syllable before the cæsura.

In many verses of the *Troilus* the retention of an unaccented syllable (*-e, -eth, etc.*) before the cæsura would convert a masculine cæsura into a feminine, and produce the phenomenon known as the extra syllable before a cæsural pause (cf. Skeat, *Prioresses Tale*, pp. lxi ff.; ten Brink, § 307, 3). In these cases (with the rarest exception) it is possible to reduce the verse to the normal movement by apocopating *-e* or by synecopating the vowel of the syllable in question (*-eth, etc.*). In the Grammatical Chapter apocope has accordingly been assumed for such cases (in accordance with my own conviction); but, since the question cannot be regarded as settled, it is perhaps worth while to give a special section to the matter. In the following list the aim has been to enumerate all verses which the advocates of the extra syllable theory could reasonably adduce in support of their contention. Examples in which the verse may be made regular by eliding *-e* (*i. e.* in which the word after the cæsura begins with a vowel or weak *h*) have of course been left out of account.¹ The readings of D have been disregarded throughout the section, and the same is true of trivial variations, except when they concern the point under consideration.

I. CASES OF *-E*.

I. Weak nouns (§§ 2, 3):

This litel spot of *erthe* || that with the se, 8178 (erth B).

But now of *hope* || the kalendes bygynne, 1092.

For neuere sith the *tyme* || that she was born, 1228 (tyde C; B om. the).

Right in that selue *wyse* || soth for to seye, 3197 (C om. for).

So *bole* (§ 15, p. 47):

Right yn the white *bole* || so it bytydde, 1140 (bool B); similarly 4901.

¹ Such are 14, 44, 88, 107, 116, 118, 160, 176, 180, 189, 224, etc., etc.

Note 1.—In 889, read rather *hertē* || *semeth* than *herte* || *semeth*; in 6823, rather *hertē* || *bereth* than *herte* *bereth*.

Note 2.—For *wil* or *wille* (subst.) before a pause, see 228, 861, 1564, 3465, 4362, 8000 (cf. p. 4).—*The pleye* / occurs as the first foot of 5528, but see p. 9. Cf. also *Wel-come my knyght* / || *my pes* / *my suffisaunce*, 4151, where there is of course no cæsura after *wel-come*.

II. Masculine nouns having -e or -u in A.S. (§ 6) :

He loketh forth by *hegge* / || by tree / by greue, 7507 (*hegge* B, *hegis* † C, *hegges* D, *hege* G). Better,—*forth* || *by*. As to the form *hegge*, see p. 10.

From *haselwode* || there Ioly Robyn pleyde, 7537.

Tydeus *some* / || that doun descended is, 7877. See p. 10, where ten Brink's remark (§§ 260, 261) on *some* is corrected.

III. Feminines in A.S. -u (§ 8) :

And seyde || here in this closet *dore* || withoute, 3526.¹

Here at this secre trappe *dore* || quod he, 3601.

To scornen *loue* || which that so soone kan, 234.

Blyssyd be *loue* || than kan thus folk conuerte, 308. Other instances of *loue* || with the cæsura after the second foot may be seen in 16, 46, 436, 677, 744, 1129, 1759, 1789, 1823, 1866, 1912, 3014, 3359, 3622, 4103, 4158, 4433, 4830, 5084, 5243, 5761, 6296, 6314, 6844, 7443, 8039. So perhaps, 518 : Of hem that *loue* lyst febelly for to auaunce. Cf. also 3851 † A^c.

At which the god of *loue* || gan (to) loken rowe, 206 (BCCp. John's *om.* to).

Kan he wel speke of *loue* || quod she I preye, 1588 (of *louë* || I 3ow preie C †).

Ayens the god of *loue* / || but hym obeye, 6530. So perhaps, But al so cold yn *loue* || towardses the, 523 (or,—*cold* || *yn*); Thow koudest neuere yn *loue* || thyn seluen wysse, 622 (or,—*neuere* || *yn*); I that haue yn *loue* || so ofte assayed, 646; My name of trouthe yn *loue* || for euere mo, 7418 (ἄλλως C) (or,—*trouthe* || *yn*).

In *loue* || for which yn wo || to bedde he wente, 1147.

Of *loue* || that made hire herte fressh and gay, 2007 (Of *loue* wich that made his herte gay C).

For *loue* || that euery other day || I faste, 2251.

In *loue* || but as his suster hym to plesse, 2309 (second cæsura after *suster* ?).

To feffe with || youre newe *loue* || quod he, 8052.

Note.—In *For goddes loue what seith it telle it vs*, 1181, scan *it* || rather than *loue* ||. In *Refuseth not to loue for to be bonde*, 255, scan *not* ||. In *Aquyte*

¹ Cf. And they that layen at the dore withoute, 3587 (*lay* A, *leye* C).

hym wel for goddes loue quod he, 2285, and *Bysechyng hym for goddes loue that he*, 3004, the caesura is after the second foot, but there is also a pause after *loue*.—*Made loue withinne hire* (hir G) *for to myne*, 1762 ABCG, appears to be a 9-syl. verse; D reads *Made love within her hert for to myne* (there is no note in Mr. Austin's collation).—In 4586, 4587, *Loue that* (with a pause in the sense after *loue*) begins the verse.

IV. Monosyllabic feminine nouns with long stem-syllable (§§ 9, 11) :
On his *byhaluē* || which that vs alle sowle sende, 2819. But perhaps we should read (with GCp.) : On his half which that soule vs alle sende (see variants, p. 17, under *halue*).

But to thyn *help* || yet somwhat kan I seye, 672 (*helpē* || *sunwhat* C).
(Or,—*help yet* || ?)

Ne to thyn owen *help* || do bysynesse, 795 (*hele* C).

To fynde vnto oure *helpe* || the beste weye, 5954 (*help* B).

God for thi *might* || so leue it wel to fare, 7322. Cf. 8151.

Withouten *nede* || there I may stoude in grace, 1799.

And hast [the] lesse *nede* || to countrefete, 2617 (ABC *om.* the, but

GCp. John's *have it*; B *om.* to; C *inserts to before* countryfete).

For now is *nede* || sestow not my destresse, 2888.

I shal to morwe at *nyght* || by est or west, 7114. Cf. 7544.

But so nyl not an *ok* || whan it is cast, 2474. Cf. 2420.

In thus good *plit* / || lat now non heuy thought, 3981. Similarly 4396.

And of my *sped* || be thyn al that swetnesse, 1036 (*speede* / B).

Thow be my *sped* || fro this forth and my muse, 1094 (*spede* / B).

(Or,—*forth* ||.)

And men cryede in the *strete* || se Troylus, 1697.

Thenk (that) al swych taried *tid* || but lost it nys, 2824 (BC *om.* that; C *has on for* al).

And haue my *trowthe* || but thow it fynde so, 831 (*treuthē* || but thou fynde it so C).

And be my *trowthe* || the kyng hath sones tweye, 1255.

And al the *while* || which(e) that I yow deuyse, 3277 (C *om.* yow).

A woful *wight* || to han a drery feere, 13 (see p. 33).

That in this *world* || ther nys so hard an herte, 5802. Cf. 6308, 7085, 8060. So also :

And by my *thryft* || my wending out of Troye, 6292 (*thrift* B). Cf.

Now by my *thryft* (*thrift* B) quod he that shal be sene, 3713, where the caesura comes after *he*.

Note 1.—Several of the examples just cited have little or no significance : see § 11. The same may be said of lines in which a verbal noun in *-yng*, *-yng* (§ 10) is followed by the caesura or a strong pause : see 1089, 4803.

Note 2.—In 4061, *And now swetnesse* || *scmeth the more swet[c]*, the is

clearly to be omitted (with BCCp. John's) : otherwise, we should probably read *sweetness* || *semeth*.

V. Masculine and neuter nouns that sometimes take an irrational *-e* or a dative *-e* (§ 14).

In several instances in which a dative *-e* might perhaps be expected to occur, but in which the *cæsura* directly follows, no *-e* is pronounced (and sometimes none is written). That most of these instances have no significance, however, will be seen by comparing them with the idioms discussed on pp. 36-37.

Vp on his *bed* || but man so sore grone, 1642 (*bedde* / B).

He softe into his *bedde* || gan for to slynke, 4377. Cf. 5017, 5395, 6644, 6657, 6772. In 1152 *a-bedde* || loses its *-e* by elision or apocope before *half*.

Hath right now put to *flyght* || the Grekes route, 1698.

For ay the ner the *fyr* || the hotter is, 449.

Wel neigh down of (on † A) here *hors* || she gan to sye, 6545.

But by thi *lyf* || be war and fast eschuwe, 2103 (or,—*war* || ?).¹

Lest yn this *town* || that folkes me dispise, 6002 (*folk[es]* C). Cf. 7486, 7517.

Out of the *wey* / || so priketh hym his corn, 219 (*woye* C). Cf. 2388, 6864, 7025.

Monosyllabic neuters with short stem-syllable stand on a somewhat different footing (see p. 38, n. 1) :—

But at the *yate* || there she sholde oute ryde, 6395 (see p. 46).

Thorough more wode and *col* || the more fyr, 2417 (*cole* C, *colē* || more B, or *col* || the Cp. John's). (See p. 54.)

But al that *losse* || ne doth me no dishese, 4751 (*los* B; *cut out of* C; no note in Mr. Austin's collation). (See p. 58.)

The same may be said of *hewe* (p. 42) and *tere* (p. 45) :

It shewed in his *hewe* || bothe euen and morwe, 487 (*hewe* || on C).

For euery *teer* || which that Criseyde asterte, 3912 (*tere* B).

Compare also *weye*, *wey* (but see p. 46) :

For which that *weye* || for ought I kan espye, 6131 (*wey* B; *om.* † C).

Note.—It is perhaps worth mentioning that the two instances in which *borwe*, *bourgh* occurs as a monosyllable, are before the *cæsura* (the other cases are in the phrase *to borwe*) ; see p. 39.

VI. *Ferde*, *hede* (§ 15) ; *smert* (p. 64) :

Whi sholde thanne of *fered* || thyn herte quake, 5269 (for *ferd* C).

(Or,—*thanne* || ?).²

¹ In 7637, scan rather *day* || than *with lyf* ||.

² Cf. 6073, where the right reading is perhaps *for-fered* (pp.) || *out* (for *fered* ACp., for *ferdē* || out B, for *fer* C †).

Now taketh *heel* || for it is for to done, 7266 (*hede* / B).

The proper form of the noun *smert* seems to have no -e (see p. 64) :
Ney ded for *smert* || gan bresten out to röre, 5035 (*smerte* B). In
6780 *smert* is perhaps a verb (= *smerteth*) : if so, the cæsura follows
harm.

VII. Romance nouns which have a right to -e (§§ 21, 22) :

As *mian* / *bryd* / *beste* / || *fissh* / *herbe* and *grene tre*, 2852 (*best* B).

A *broch* || that he *Criseyde* yaf || that *morwe*, 8024 (*broche* B ; C †).

Was there noon other *broche* || yow lyste lete, 8051 (*broch* B). In
8053 scan rather : But thilke *broche* that I || with terys wete, than
broche ||. The cæsura of 4212 : But wel I wot a *broche* gold of
asure, is not quite certain (*broche* || ?).

To *morwe*. || *allas*. that were a *fayre* || quod he, 3692 (*fair* B, *fayr* C).

Yf that I hadde *grace* || for to do so, 3770 (*gracü* had || B ; C *om.*
grace †).

And seyde *Nece* || who hath arayed thus, 2272 (*nece* || ho C).

And seyde *Nece* || se how this lord can knele, 3804 (B † ; *nece* || how
C).

But alwey good[e] *nece* || to stynte his wo, 1468 (*goode* *nece* || alwey
to C).

In 1340 read *nece* || *alwey* (with BCCp. John's) instead of *nece* || *lo* A.

That in *science* || so expert was that he, 67.

That *prescience* || put fallyng necessarie (*l. necessaire*), 5683.

God wot the *text* || ful hard is soth to fynde, 4199 (*tixt* † is C).

Note 1.—*Ioye* ||, 4478, suffers elision before *halt*. In 4535 : *This ioye* ||
may not yurcte ben || *with inke*, we should perhaps cut out the prefix *y-*
(with BC John's), but Cp. has *i-writen*. In 6093, read *ioyē* || and the
amorousē daunce.

Note 2.—The reading is doubtful in 5504 : *Peyne tormēt* (*turnement* † C)
pleynt (*pleynte* B, *om.* C) *wo and* (*om.* BCp. John's ; and ek C) *distresse*.

Note 3.—In 4592 : *Bynd this acord* || *that I have told and telle* (*acorde* B),
acord may be referred to the corresponding O. Fr. form (see p. 74). *Pres*
in the sense of *crowd* never has an -e in the *Troilus* (see p. 74).

Note 4.—In *Towchyngh thi lettre* || *that thou art wys ynough*, 2108, we may
omit *that* with BC (no note in Mr. Austin's collation). In *Foryaf awl*
with here vnclē || *gan for to pleye*, 4420, we may omit *for* before *to* with
BC (no note in Mr. Austin's collation).

Note 5.—In 2917 *sire* (first word in the line and followed by the usual
vocative pause) apocopates its -e (*syr* B).

VIII. Proper names :

Vnto *Criseyde* || that heng here hed ful lowe, 1774.

And folwe alwey *Criseyde* || thi lady dere, 4969 (or,—*alwey* ||).

This *Diomedē* || that ladde here by the bridel, 6455.

And *Poliphete* || they gonnen thus to waryen, 2704.

Cf. *Pandare* || which that sente was || from *Troilus*, 5468 A.

Particularly noteworthy is :

Fro *Meleagree* || that made the bor to blede, 7878 (Meleagre B, meliagre C ; no note in Mr. Austin's collation).

IX. *More* (subst. and adv., §§ 64, 86), *worse* (adj., § 64) :

Nor axen *more* || that may do yow disese, 1232.

By god I shal *nomore* || com here this wyke, 1515.

For euere *more* || myn herte lust to reste, 1915 (mo BC). Similarly 4243, 4946.

Withoute *more* || to (is † B) Troylus yn thei went, 2751.

I kan no *more* || but that I the wole serue, 3232. Similarly 4035, 4115, 4156, 4654, 7731.

There was no *more* || to speken (*l. skippen with* BECP. John's ; *schepe* C) nor to traunce, 3532. (Or,—*skippen* || ?.)

He dar *nomore* || come here ayen for shame, 6130 (nomor B).

Note 1.—In *And yf I more dorste prey yow as now*, 2521 (dorst prey B, durste prey as now C), read probably *dorstē prey[ē]* rather than *dorstē preyē*. In *For ay thirst I (I preste † C) the more that I it drynke*, 406, the position of the cæsura is probably *more* ||.

Or loue the *wers* || though wrecches on it crien, 1950.

That hym is *wors* || that is fro wele ythrowe, 5144.

For now (it) is *wors* || than euere yet I wende, 7056 (BC om. it).

Note 2.—The construction in 5144 and 7056 may be perhaps be regarded as adverbial (§ 86).

X. Monosyllabic adjectives in the "definite" use (§ 53) :

That *at the laste* || the dede slep hire hente, 2009.

But *at the laste* || this woful Troylus, 5034.

Til *at the last* || this sorwful wyght Criseyde, 5914 (laste BC).

Al be I not *the firste* || that dide amys, 7430.

Note.—In 3407 *the laste* || suffers elision before *herof*.

XI. The plural of monosyllabic adjectives and perfect participles (§§ 67-70) :

Hath lordes *olde* / || thourgh which withinne a throwe, 7824 (old C).

In the following instances the adjective is in the predicate and the subject refers to a single person (cf. § 69, *b*) :

Now be not *wroth* || my blod my nece dere, 1679.

And ben so *loth* || to suffren hym yow serue, 2996.

Now beth al *hol* || no lengere ye ne pleyne, 3010.

Ye ben to *wys* || to do so gret folye, 3709 (C *has swich for* so gret).

And beth wel *war* || ye do no more amys, 4022.

And ye so *feyr* || that cuerich of hem alle, 6533.

Note.—In *If ye be swych* || *youre beaute may not strecche*, 1426, *ye* refers to Criseyde, and *swichē* would be surprising (*swiche* || B).

In the two examples of *al* that follow, we cannot be quite certain that we are dealing with a plural (see § 80) :

This is o word for *al* || this Troylus, 4502.

And of the furies *al* || she gan hym telle, 7861 (furies also † C).

Perhaps we should read *als*.

Note 2.—In *Criseyle which that aft these thynges say*, 2350 (al B; C+), and *Criseyde which that alle these thynges herde*, 3641 A, perhaps the only cæsura is after *Criseyde*. 3225 perhaps runs: *And this || yn alle the temples || of this town*. 7857 may be scanned *She told ek || al the prophesies by herte* (al B, al the profecy † C).

Monosyllabic perfect participles (§ 68) :

Of women (whom † men C) *lost*. || thorough fals and foles bost, 3140.

O nece pes || or we be *lost* || quod he, 3937. (Or,—nece ||.)

Now be ye (*sing. in sense*) *kaught*. || now is there but we tweyne, 4049.

This wordes (*om. C*) *seyl* (*seyde BC*) || she on here armes two, 5573.

Of things that ben *wyst* || byfore that tyde, 5739 (*wiste B; cut out in C*).

XII. The pronoun *hire, here*, dat. acc. sg. (pp. 152-3).

Since *hire* is seldom or never dissyllabic in the interior of the verse, cases of apocope before cæsura present no interest. Such may be seen in 315, 370, 443, 454, 2307, 3497, 4820, 4827 (*herē || do A*), 5089, 5100, 5149, 5192, 5299, 5305, 6480, 7599; cf. also 7948 (see p. 153).

XIII. Adverbs.

For the reason just mentioned, no interest attaches to *here, there* before cæsura (cf. § 89) : examples may be seen in 187, 2904, 4844, 6111, 6542, and perhaps in 4658. *Whanne* in : But ryght as *whanne* || the sonne shyneth bright, 1849 (*when B, whan C*) (see § 88) is also of no account. More interesting are : And *namelyche* || my dere herte ye, 5996 (*nameliche B, namely C*); *Secundelich* || ther yet deyneth noon, 2826 (*secound[e]ly B, secundeli C*) (§ 84). In the following the constructions are not certainly adverbial :

For bygh and *low* || withouten ony drede, 3260 (see § 82, n. to *lowe*).

This short and *pleyne* || theffect of my message, 5552 (*pleyn C*).

XIV. Present Indicative of Verbs (§ 92, V.) :

But wel I *rede* || that by no maner weye, 495.

As thus I *mene* || that ye wole be my stere, 4133 (*mene || 3e wol 3e BCp., menē || wil 3e C*).

Wherfor I *seye* || that from eterne yf he, 5640.

I *seye* || that yf the opynion || of the, 5692 (or,—*yf* || ?).

Se how I *deye* || ye nyl me not rescowe, 6594 (*dye B; ἄλλωε C*).

Compare the plural :

Go *loue*. || for old(e) ther wil no wight of the, 1481. (§ 115, III.)

And *sey* || thou mayst no lengere || vp endure, 2603 (seye B, sei C). (§ 115, V.)

Now spek / now *prey* / || now pitously compleyne, 2584 (*sing.*) (preye B, preye || and † C). (§ 116, IV.)

Now *vnderstonde* || for I yow nought requere, 1443 (B † *om.* nought; vnder-stand C). (§ 118, IV.)

And seyde *awake* || ye slepen al to longe, 1630. (§ 118, IV.)

Now *stunte* || that ye no longere || on it honge, 2327 (§ 118, IV.)

XVIII. Infinitive (§ 119, X.):

A man to *loue* || til that hym lyst to leue, 686 (C † *om.* that).

Nomore to *speke* || for trusteth wel that I, 2511 (C *has* of this *for* to speke).

Now doth hym *sitte* || now gode nece dere, 3817 (hardly,—*now* ||).

But BCGCp. John's omit the second *now*; D has it.

I may here *haue* || right sone douteles, 4764. (§ 124, VI.)

That it shal *come* / || but they seyn that therefore, 5661. Similarly 5662.

That thing to *come* || be purueyed trewely, 5717. Similarly 5726.

I moste *come* || for wheder sholde I gon, 6023 (com C).

Than shal [s]he *come* || that may me blisse brynge, 7021.

She wolde *come* || ye but she nyst[e] whanne, 7791.

So myght I *wene* || that thynges alle and some, 5730.

The folk wol *wene* || that thou for eowardyse, 6775 (seyn † C).

The existence of the monosyllabic infinitive form *seyn* (§ 119, XIII.) makes the following examples inconclusive :

That is to *seye* || for the am I becomen, 3095 (seyne C). Similarly 3126 (seyn B, seine C).

This dar I *seye* || that trouthe and diligence, 4139 (seyn C). Similarly 4779 (seyn C).

The gerundial forms *to sen*, *to seyn*, and *to don* are too common elsewhere in the verse to make the following examples before the caesura of any significance (§ 119, XIII.) :

He was *to sen* || fulfild of heigh prowesse, 1717. Cf. 3384, 3910, 4972.

That is *to seyn* || that I foryeue al this, 4020 (say C). Similarly 6037 (seyne C), 7261 (seyne C).

And soth *to seyn* || she nas nat al a fo, 1769 (say C).

That what *to done* || for ioye vnnethe he wyste, 4095 (don B).

Note.—In 1781, scan probably : *And what to done best were and what eschue* (C om. were).

XIX. The Perfect Participle of Strong Verbs (§ 122, X.) :

To Troye is *come* || this woful Troylus, 6560 (comyn C).

Note.—In 8161 the correct reading is : *That thow be vnderstonde* (or *-en*) *god besече* ; B inserts *I* after *god*.

II. CASES OF UNACCENTED TERMINATIONS ENDING IN A CONSONANT.

I. *-eth* in the pres. ind. 3 sg. (cf. § 94, II.) :¹

Fro whennes *cometh* || my walyng (wele † C) and my pleynte, 408.

Whan that it *cometh* || but wylfully it weylen (weyuen BC, *which is right*), 1369.

That ofte ycleped *cometh* || and endeth peyne, 5166. Much more energetic than *ycleped* || *cometh*.

For al that *cometh* || comth by necessite, 5620 (not in C).

Nough[t] that it *comth* (comes B) || for it purueyed is, 5715 (not in C).

Whan (Til C) that she *cometh* (come C) || the which (and that C) shal (may C) be right[t] sone, 6754. Cf. also 7516.

Wher it *bycometh* || lo no wyght on it sporneth, 1882.

Men seyn || the suffraunt *ouercometh* || parde, 6246 (C †). (Or perhaps,—*suffraunt* ||.)

Ek wostow how it *fareth* || on (of BC) som seruice, 956.

And yet *me of-thynketh* (mathynketh B) || that this auant me (may B) asterte (sterte B), 1043 (cut out of C).

Whan that hym (om. B) *thenketh* (om. B) || a womman bereth (berth B) here heighe, 1486.

That wher he *cometh* (comth B) || he prys and thank hym geteth, 1461.

Which that myn vncler *swereth* (swerth B) || he mot be ded, 1739.

Al that now *loueth* || asonder sholde lepe, 4605.

Criseyde *loueth* || the sone of Tydeus, 8109 (cut out of C).

Note 1.—So perhaps in 1292 : *To suche as hym thenketh* || *able for to thryue*, but the cæsura may as well come after *able*.

Note 2.—There are no certain examples in the inv. pl. owing to the instability of the ending in that form (§ 118), but note : *But yet* (om. C) *I seye* aryseth || *and lat vs daunce*, 1306 (perhaps,—*seye* || *aryseth*). The same may be said of the pres. ind. 3 pl. in *-eth* (§ 97) : see *As ony men that lyueth* (-en B, leyn C) || *vnder the sonne*, 1259, and *Which that men clepeth* (-yn C) || *the* (om. BC) *wode ialousye*, 7576. *Lyth* 3 sg. (§ 94, III.) and *seyth* 3 sg. (§ 94, II.) and 3 pl. (§ 97) have, for obvious reasons, not been taken into account.

¹ *Seyth* ind. sg. (§ 94, II.) and *pl.* (§ 97) has been left out of account.

II. *-est* :

Thorough Troye *rennest* || ay (*om.* C) downward to the see, 6211.

Note.—*Lyst*, *scyst* have been left out of account (see § 93).

III. *-en* :

Thenne wolde I *hopen* || the rathere for to spede, 865 (hope ratherē C).

That men hem *wrien* (*wren* B) || with asshe[n] (*asshen* B, *asschin* C)
pale and dede, 1624.

I kan not *trowen* || that she (*om.* B) wol write ayen, 7661 (*trowē* ||
sche C).

Ne yf she kan *here-seluen* (*self* BC) || *distorben* it, 5765.

For examples before a vowel or *h*, see § 136, *e*.

Note.—In the examples before a consonant, it is of course possible to read
-e for *-en* (*here-self* for *here-seluen*; in the examples before vowels, *-e*
(elided).

IV. *-es* :

(i.) In the plural :

Both of his *ioyes* (*ioie* B Cp., *ioy* D) || and of his cares colde, 264.

The sg. *ioie* is probably right.

By alle the *othes* || that I haue to yow sworn(e), 1384 (BCD *om.* to).

The omission of *to* (BCD) gives *othēs* || *that*. Cp. John's appear to
have *to*.

To make *amendes* (*amend* B, an † *ende* C, *amendis* D) || of so cruel a
dede, 1427. No note in Austin: *amendes* is probably right.

It is oon of the *thynges* (*-is* CD) || that (*om.* BCp.) furthereth most,
2453 (D has *that*).

In gentil *hertes* || ay redy to repara, 2847 (C cut out). D *om.* *ay*,
but Cp. John's agree with A.

Swych *argumentz* (*-t3* B, *-tis* CD) || ne (*om.* CD) ben not worth a bene,
4009. (No note in Austin). Cf. 466.

That *elementes* (*-t3* B, *-tis* C) that ben so discordable, 4595.

The *ambassiatours* (*Thembassadours* B, *Theem-lassatourys* C) || to
Troye streight thei (*om.* B) wente, 4802.

Thembassadours (*The* *embassadourys* C) || ben answered for fynal, 4807.

Theschaunge (*The* *chaunge* C) of *prisoners* (*presoneris* C) || and al this
nede, 4808.

O ye *loueres* (*-ers* B, *-eris* C) || that heyhe vpon the whiel, 4985.

So gan the *peynes* || here hertes for to twyste, 5791 (*peyne* B, *peine* D;
ἀλλωϛ C †). (No note in Austin.)

Of al the (that B) *londes* (*lond* BC, *londe* D) || the sonne on shyneth
shene, 5901. (No note in Austin.)

His *enemys* (*enemys* C) || and in here hondes falle, 6615.

Note.—In some of the lines just quoted it will be observed that the reading is doubtful.—In 7397, read *sykes sore* || *adoun* rather than *sorē sykes* || *adoun*. In 8154, the question is between *steppes* || and *seest* or *steppes* and *seest*: the latter scansion gives a more satisfactory line. *Knees* is of course a monosyllable in 3025 (*knees* || *and*) and 3922 (*knees* || *and*).

(ii.) *-es* gen. and adverbial :

Shal han me holly *heres* || til that I deye, 5106 (C †). See § 74.

Ther *ayenis* (a3eyn B, a3en C) || answer I thus anoon, 1454.

Think here *ayens* (a3enis B) || whan that the sturdy ok, 2465.

Or she vs bothe *at ones* || er that ye wende (at onys || or), 2961.

So as we shulle *togederes* || euere dwelle, 5984 (shal togideres B, That we schal euere more togedere d[w]elle C).

He hadde in herte *alweys* (alweyes B, alwoy C) || a manere drede, 6415.

Note.—The variability of form in adverbs in *-es* (§ 91) renders most of the examples given above of little significance in the question of the extra syllable.

V. *-ed* in the perfect participle ; *-ele* in the preterite :

Ful wel *beloued* / || and wel men of here tolde, 131.

As he was *woned* (wont BC) || and of hym self (seluyn C) to (*om.* C) iape, 3397. Cf. *woned* || *to*, 4697. See § 121, III

Thow *mysbeleued* || and (*om.* C) enuyous folye, 3680.

For when men han wel *cried* || than wol they rowne (let hem rounne C), 5249.

That ben *purueyed* || but nedely as they seyn, 5668 (not in C).

That ech(e) hym *louede* (loued B) || that loked on his face, 1071.

And ay the peple *cryede* (cryed C) || here cometh oure ioie, 1728.

I that *leuede* (hauede C) || yn lust and in plesaunce, 5155.

Ne (And B) though I *lyuede* (*-ed* B) || vnto the worldes ende, 6242.

Note 1.—In 6947 *werreyed* should doubtless be read (*waryed* A, *weryed* BC, *hast me weryhed* D, *haste me werreide* G) : *How thow me hast werreyed* || *on* (*om.* DG) *cuery syde*. (Austin makes no note.)

Note 2.—Wherever the pret. sg. of *answeren* occurs in the form *answerēd* before cæsura and the word after the cæsura begins with a vowel or weak *h*, we may read rather *answerēde* than *answerēd*: there is then no question of the extra syllable (see, e.g., 3767, 3974, 4019, 5351, 6777, 7491, 7533). For *answerēde* ||, cf. 4498, 5042, 5783, 7638; for *answerēde* ||, cf. 1964 (?). 6686.

In one line, however, the retention of a light extra syllable before the cæsura seems to be unavoidable, if the reading of the best MSS. is to be followed :

Nentendement¹ *considerere*² || .ne³ tonge⁴ telle, 6358.⁵

¹ So AECp. John's Selden B 24; *Nintendement* Durh.; *Ne entendement* D Phillipps 8252; *Ne † mendement* B.

² So ABCp. John's; *considre* D, *consider* Durh. Seld.; *concidre* Ph.; *considered* † E.

³ So ABDc. Durh. Seld. Ph.; or E John's. ⁴ *tung* Durh.; *tong* Seld.

⁵ *Non † tndement nor tonge considerere or tell* Harl. 2392. Leaf cut out of C.

Cf. And I ther (*om.* C) after / || gan rome (roman B) to and fro, 1601 (*rome* ?).

Less certain than 6358 (for slurs are easy) are :

What wonder *is it* (*ist* C) || though he of me haue ioye, 1834. For *ist* see § 143.

And yn here *bosom* || the lettre doun he thraste, 2240 (And in her bosom doun the lettre cast D ; no note in Austin).

Ye bothe for the *seson* || and for the feste, 168 (BC omit the second *for* ; D reads *and eke for* ; no note in Austin).

O olde *vnholosom* || and mysbyleued (myslyued B, mysbeleuyd C, mysleuyd D ; no note in Austin) man, 4992.

Compare :

And to *Pandarus* (-ris C, Pandare DCp. John's) || he (*om.* B) held vp bothe his hondes, 2059.

But to *Pandarus* (-dare BD) || alway was (was alway C) his recours (cours † D), 2437 (no note in Austin.)

And thow *Symoys* || that as an arwe clere, 6210.

Note.—In 2059, 2437, we are of course to read *Pandare* (with elision) : on the forms of this name, see § 139.—Chaucer apparently pronounced *Symoys* as a dissyllable with the accent on the ultima, making *oy* a diphthong (§ 140).

§ 145. Some interest attaches to the treatment of the following unaccented final syllables before the cæsura :

- (1) Consonant + *-le, -me, -ne, -re* ; (2) *-ne, -re*, preceded by weak *-e* ; (3) *-el, -en, -er* ; (4) *-we* (*-ewe, -owe, -ow*) ; (5) *-y, -ye*. When one of these syllables stands before a cæsura which is followed by an unstressed syllable beginning with a vowel or weak *h*, it is of course easy to scan the line as a normal verse by depriving of syllabic value (by elision, syncope, or slurring) the syllable (or syllables) immediately preceding the cæsura. Thus in *He seyde he hadde a feuer* || *and ferde amys, feuer* may syncopate the vowel of the final syllable ; in *He seyde o lettre* || *a blysful destine, lettre* may elide its final *-e* ; in *But like a dredful louere* || *he seyde this, louere* may syncopate one *e* and elide the other, and so on. On the other hand, it may be maintained that the preferable way to scan such verses is to admit the extra syllable before the cæsura.

Note.—I have used the terms syncope and elision above merely because they are short and convenient. In strictness, we cannot speak of *lettre* as eliding its *-e* or of *feuer* as syncopating its *-e*, unless we are ready to maintain that Chaucer's ordinary pronunciation of *lettre* was really *lettre* and not *letter* or *letʀ* and that his ordinary pronunciation of *feuer* was really *fever* and not *fevre* or *fevʀ* : and these are theses which few would

undertake to demonstrate. Exactly what the quality of the "extra syllable" would be in each case, if the verse is to be scanned so as to admit an extra syllable, is of course also a question that depends on the normal Chaucerian pronunciation of the words in hand. See the remark of Skeat, *Prioresses Tale*, 4th ed., p. lxii, and cf. § 136.

I. Consonant + *-le, -me, -ne, -re*. (For *heuene*, see II., below.)

Variations in spelling are seldom recorded.

For al be that his *moeble* || *is hym by-raft*, 6122.

Among the *peple* || *as who seyth alwed is*, 3110. Cf. 1731, 4845.

In thilke large *temple* || *on euery syde*, 185. Cf. 3382.

Out of the *temple* || *al esilyche he wente*, 317. Cf. 162.

Withinne the *temple* || *he went hym forth pley[i]nge*, 267. Cf. 5609
(in which insert, with Cp. John's, *al* before *allone*).

The[r]for a *title* || *he gan hym for to borwe*, 488.

Vs from *visible* || *and inuysible foon*, 8229.

Ne I nyl not *rakle* || *as for to greuen here*, 4484.

Note 1.—A remarkable line is 7186: *Charitable / estatlyche / lusty and fre*
(see the variants given in § 146, I).

Note 2.—In 3031 C, for *merakele* || I, read *meruayle* || I.

That to myn hertis *botme* (*om.* † A) || *it is i-sownded*, 1620 B (*boteme*
it is foundit † C).

And nere it that I *wilne* || *as now tabregge*, 3137.

Into a *chaumbre* || *and fond how that he lay*, 1641. Cf. 5394 (?).

Into the grete *chambre* || *and that yn hye*, 2797. Cf. 5016.

And to the *chambre* || *here* (the C) *wey than* (*om.* C) *han thei nomen*,
6877.

Right as oure first[e] *lettre* || *is now an a*, 171.

And seyde *lettre* || *a blysfyl destene*, 2176. Cf. 2232, 7761 (?).

At wrytyng of this *lettre* || *I was on lyue*, 7732. Cf. 2146, 2178.

Note 3.—In 2091 the sense seems to make *A lettre* || *in which I wolde here*
telle[n] how imperative in preference to *A lettre in which* || I. So in 7963:
Your lettre || *and how that ye requeren me*. Cf.

The poudre in which myn herte ybrend shal torne, 6672.

In feith youre *ordre* || *is ruled in good wyse*, 336.

For pity of myn *aspere* || *and cruwel peyne*, 5509.

Note 4.—In *That called was Cassandre ek al aboute*, 7814, *ek* is by no
means a secure reading. In 2314 the position of the *cæsura* is dubious:
Of iaspere vpon a quysshon gold ybete.

Ye may the *bettre* || *at ese of herte abyde*, 6013.

And gan to *motre* || *I not what trew[e]ly* (-ely BC), 1626.

And if that yow *remembre* || *I am Calkas*, 4735.

I shal wel *suffre* || *vnto the tenthe day*, 6260.

For *euere, neuere, leuere, delyuere*, see under II., below.

II. *-ene, -ere*. (Some of the words under this heading are here considered rather because they are spelled *-ere* in good MSS. than because they have any right to both *e*'s.) Variations in spelling are seldom recorded.

It was an *heuene* || *upon* hym for to se, 1722. Cf. 4093 (A †).

Thou hast in *heuene* || *ybrought* (brouȝt C) my soule at reste, 4441.

It was an *heuene* || *his* wordes for to here, 4584.

And seyde he hadde a *feuer* || *and* ferd (ferde al C) amys, 491.

Sey that thi (*om.* C) *feuer* || *is* wont the for (*om.* C) to take, 2605.

As of a *feuere* || *or* othere gret(e) syknesse, 4055. For the spelling of the word (which rhymes with *keuere* inf.), see § 18.

Forwhi to euery *louere* || *I* me excuse, 1097.

But as a dredful *louere* || *he* seyde this, 2130 (*louerē* || seyde he C).

That hadde I *leuere* || *vnwyst* for sorwe dye, 2594. (Or, *vnwyst* ||.)

Me were *leuere* || a thousand fold to dye, 3416. See § 64.

Amonges alle these *othere* || in general, 893.

Here to *delyuere* || *I* holden haue my pes, 4762.

He spak and called *euere* || *yn* his compleynte, 541 (*euere* he callyd / C). (Or,—called || ?)

I who seygh *euere* || a wysman faren so, 5749. (Or,—*wysman* ||.)

Ne herd I *neuere* || *and* what that was his mone, 1643. Cf. 1522, 2954 (*neuere* || *how*), 4375, 4763 (?).

I may not slepe *neuere* || a Mayes morwe, 2183. Cf. 2623, 6243, 6317 (?), 7198.

They speken || but they bente *neuere* || his bowe, 1946.

III. *-el, -en, -er*. (For *bette*, see I.; for *feuer, feure*, see II.)

But tho bygan a *lytel* || *his* herte vnswele, 6577 (his herte a lite B).

For goddes *speken* || in amphibologies, 6068.

For thei *proceden* (-e B, -yn C) || of thi malencolye, 6723.

And thus thei (*om.* C) *wolden* (-e BC) || *han* brought hem self a lofte, 915.

For what to *speken* (-e B, spek C) || *and* what to holden inne, 387.

Or nyl not *heren* || *or* trowen how it ys(se), 1013 (here / B, heryn C).

And gan to *casten* (caste B) || *and* rollen vp and down, 1744.

Shal I not *louen* (-e B) || in cas yf that me lyst (*l. leste*), 1843.

Lat no wight *rysen* (rise B) || *and* heren of oure speche, 3598 (Let hem not rysyn and heryn oure speche C).

As for to *loken* (looke B, loke C) || *upon* an old romaunce, 3822.

And thus shal Troye *turnen* (torne B, turne C) || in (to B, tyl C) asshen dede, 4781.

Ne koude he sen her *laughen* (-e B) || *or* make (-en B) ioye, 7144
(hyre se lauzhe ne make C).

For which she may yet (3it may C) *holden* (-e BC) || *al* here byheste,
7554.

Who shal now *trowen* (-e BC) || *on* ony other (*l. othes with* BC) mo,
7626.

And art now *fallen* (-e BC) || yn som deuocioun, 555.

Til crowes feet ben *growen* (grow B) || *vnder* youre eye, 1488 (hem
waxen *for* ben growen C).

Thanne yf I ne hadde *spoken* (speke C) || *as* grace was, 5895.

Criseyde *comen* || *and* therwith ban he synge, 6867.

To ben *vnknownen* (onknowe C) || of folk that weren wyse, 7942.

Note 1.—The perfect participles of the verbs *sleen* and *seen* have not been
taken into account (see § 122. XII., XIII.)

Note 2.—With regard to the probability that elided *-e* should be read,
wherever possible, instead of *-en*, see § 136, e.

My dere *brother* || *I* may the do no more, 8094. But the weight of
MS. authority is for *brother deere* (*dere*): so BCp. John's. C is cut
out.

I mene as loue (-yn C) an *other* || *in* this mene (*om.* C) while (wyse C),
3618.

And radde it *ouer* || *and* gan the lettre folde, 2170 (ἄλλως C).

IV. *-we*, etc. :

A *morwe* || *and* to his neces paleys sterte, 2179.

To bere the wel to *morwe* (-w C) || *and* al is wonne, 2583. Cf. 3690 (?).

He straught a *morwe* || *vnto* his nece wente, 3394. Cf. 7555.

Graunted on the *morwe* || *at* his requeste, 7312.

That neuere was yn *sorwe* || *or* (or in C) som distresse, 641. Cf. 530 B
(right reading), 3932, 4527, 5171, 5541, 6540, 7405.

So lef this *sorwe* || *or* platly he wol deye, 5586. Cf. 1, 5743, 6821,
6895, 6921, 7012, 8107.

He was no *narwe* (harde C) || *ymaked* (ymasked B, imaskid C) and
ykneth, 4576.

Gan hym *saluwe* (salue B, seluyn † C) || *and* womanly to pleye, 2753.

Saue a *pilwe* (-wo B, pillowe D, pilowe G) || *I* (*om.* C) fynde nought
(nouzte elles G) tenbrace (to embrase C, to embrace D, to embrace
G), 6587. Read probably *pillow* || rather than *pilwe* || (which
makes the verse 9-syl.).

V. *-y*, *-ye* :

Wher is my *lady* || *vnto* (to B) hire folk seyde he, 1164 (C cut out).

This knoweth *many* || *a* wys and worthi wyght, 1265.

That Ector with [ful] (ful B) *many* || *a* bold baroun, 4695 (C cut out.)
 Thourgh girt with *many* || *a* (om. BC) wyd and bloody wounde, 5289.
 Ye god wot and fro *many* || *a* worthi knyght, 6696 (C *has* so hath for
 fro).
 I shal therof as *fully* (ful BC) || excuse (-en Cp.) me, 3652. *Fully* is
 probably right.

Note.—Cæsura has been assumed between *many* and *a* in 1265, 4695, 5289, 6696, with some hesitation.

By sort and by *augurye* || *ek* trewely (trewly B), 4778.
 In *consistorie* || *among* the Grekes soone, 4727 (C cut out).
 For which the grete *furye* || *of* his penaunce, 6091. Cf. 4915 BC.
 In *furye* || *as* doth he Ixion || in helle, 6575 (ἀλλωc C°).
 And god *Mercurye* || *of* me now woful wrecche, 6684.
 Be *necessarie* || *al* seme it not therby, 5682 (C cut out). *Necessaire* is
 also possible (see § 51).
 For that I *tarye* || *is* al for wykked speche, 7973.

Here may be put the interesting verse :

In to the gardyn go *we* || *and* ye shal here, 2199.

VERSES LACKING THE UNACCENTED PART OF THE FIRST FOOT
 (“9-SYLLABLE VERSES”).

§ 146. The occurrence in Chaucer of heroic verses lacking the unaccented part (the *senkung*) of the first foot can no longer be doubted.

Such verses may be conventionally called “nine-syllable verses” even when, from ending in a feminine rhyme, they actually contain ten syllables. The material here collected is arranged in four lists.

List I. (meant to be exhaustive) contains those verses of the *Troilus* which are either certainly nine-syllable verses or which must at least be seriously reckoned with before being otherwise scanned. Some of the verses in I. may easily be emended so as to run regularly, and in some of these a variant reading actually anticipates the emendation; but it seemed better to include in I. a few verses that might have been put in II. than to run the risk of excluding any which might with an appearance of reason claim a place in the list. Under the heading *Ib* are collected a number of verses which (in MS. A) might be scanned as of nine syllables, but may better be scanned as of ten.

List II. contains verses which in A must be read as nine-syllable verses, but which are easily corrected by a comparison of MSS.

List III. contains a number of verses in which A is restored to order by the insertion of a single letter (or syllable) required or justifiable by grammar or usage. Some other MS. or MSS. will usually be found to furnish the required form. At the end of this list are given references for a number of similar lines from other MSS.

List IV. contains specimens of lines absolutely unmetrical in A, but curable in the same manner as the lines in III.

For the lines quoted at length in these four lists, ABCDG have been used throughout, and all the significant Cp. and John's variants recorded in Mr. Austin's collation have been registered. When no note is made of the reading of Cp. or John's, it is to be inferred that Mr. Austin records no such variants.

I.

For (ffor why D) it were (were here C) a long (-e B) digression (discrecioun BG, disgrecioun C, digressioun D), 143 A. Mr. Austin notes the reading of Harl. 2392 (For whi it were of to long discuscioun), but gives no other variants. The reading of either C or D makes a normal verse : *here* may have been accidentally dropped on account of its similarity to the preceding word *were*. *För it wèrë* || *a lōng*, with lyrical cæsura, hiatus, and dissyllabic *were* (§ 135, ε) is very unlikely.

Of this kynges sone of which I tolde, 261 ABCG. D reads *As of*, etc. Shewed (Schewede C) wel that men myght (myȝtyn C) yn here gesse, 286 ABG (She † shewyd D).

First to hide (-en BCp., -yn C) his desir in (al in D) muwe, 381 (First he hid his desire in mewe G; in the margin of G, in another hand, are the words "al for to hide," a reading which, with the change of *hide* to *hiden*, would make the verse regular).

That the (al the D) Grekes as the (om. G) deth hym dredde, 483 (That the grekys hym as of the deth dredde C; Harl. 2392 seems to read *aH* for *the* before *Grekes* : no other note in Austin).

That the hote fyr of loue hym brende (for brende G), 490 (stanza om. in D).

I wolę partyn with the al thyn peyne, 589 ABCDG.

Loue ayens the (om. C) which (wheche G) who-so defendeth, 603.

Louë would cause hiatus: besides, this word is usually monosyllabic (§ 8).

I that haue yn loue so ofte assayed (asaied G, asayde B), 646.

Dorstestow (Dorestow G, Trist thow D) that I telle (tolde BCp.

John's, told hyre C, told it D, tolde it G) in hire eere, 767.
Probably read *tolde it* (or *hire*).

Twenty wynter that (er that G) his lady wyste (wist D, not † wyst C), 811.

Of (And of CDE) that word toke (took Cp. John's) hede (hed CDG) Pandarus, 820. *And of* is perhaps best.

Were it for my suster al thi sorwe, 860 ABCDG.

Next (-e B) the foule (foul D) netle rough and thikke, 941.

Alderfirst (Aldirfirst Cp. John's) his purpos for to wynne, 1062 ABDG (C cut out).

Of the sege (segee B) of thebes while (whil BD) hem leste, 1169 AG (C cut out).

How (How that G) the bisshop (bysshope G) as the bok kan (gan DG) telle (telleth *for* can telle C), 1189. G makes the measure normal.

Now (And Cp.) good (goode BG, myn C, my good D John's Harl. 2392) em for goddes loue I prey, 1394. Read *goodē em* (with hiatus) or *my goode em*.

Ther ayenis (aȝeyn B, aȝen C, ayens D, aȝens G, aȝeins Cp.) answerē I thus anoon, 1454.

For his loue which (-e B, wheche G, *om.* D) that vs bothe made (mode B), 1585 (CD have *loue of god* instead of *his loue*). If ten Brink's "lyrical cæsura" be allowed, the same may be read *Fðr his lðuē* || *which thåt*, etc.; but *loue* is seldom a dissyllable (§ 8).

Who sey euere (-er D) or this so (or this euere so C) dul a man, 1633 ABG. If ten Brink's "lyrical cæsura" be allowed, the verse may be read *Whò sey èuer* || *or thìs*, etc. (for *euër* before a vowel, see § 90).

And (3e CD, A E) lord (-e E) he (she D, how he C, as he G, so be E) was glad and wel bygon, 1682. No doubt a word has dropped out in the best MSS. between *lord* and *he*. Cp. John's appear to agree with A.

Made loue withinne (within D) hire (her hert D) for to myne, 1762 ABCG. With lyrical cæsura and dissyllabic *lðuē* (see last example but one), the verse might run *Màdē* (or *Màked*) *lðuē* || *withìnne hire*, etc. The reading of D (which would make the verse normal if *herte* be substituted for *hert*) lacks authority.

I am one (oon BCp., on CG) the (of the C) fairest (fayreste BC) out of (ought of G, with-outyn D) drede, 1831. The reading of C looks like a corruption in the interest either of modesty or the more usual

idiom, but may be right: at any rate, it decidedly helps the metre. *Fayrèstè* does not help much.

Fro the skarmuch (scarmich B, charmys C, scarmysse D, scarmuch G) of the whiche I tolde, 2019. *Fro the skarmuch* [ē] || *of the*, etc., would be highly improbable and no great improvement.

Sire (Sir B) my nece wole (wol B, wele C, wel G) do wel by the, 2042. In spite of the fact that the vocative *sire* is usually monosyllabic in Chaucer, we should doubtless read *sirë* here and save the verse.

Of (Ryzt of C, Right of D) myn owene (own B, owne D) hond (-e BD) write here (hire C, her D) right (*om.* D) now (how D), 2090 AG. Perhaps *Right* should be restored (cf. 2140).

Were hise (his BDG) nayles poynted (-ede C, -es B) neuere so sharpe, 2119.

Of (Ryzt of C, Right of D) here (hire BC Cp., her D, hir G) hond (-e B) and yf that (*om.* D) thow nynt non, 2140. If *right* be rejected, *here* may perhaps be regarded as a dissyllable (see § 135, I.). As to *right*, cf. 2090.

He song as who seyth (seith BDG, seth C) sumwhat (se what G) I brynge, 2394. *Seyeth* will hardly do. One is tempted to combine G with the other MSS. and read: He song as who seyth se sumwhat I brynge.

If (3if it C, If it D) youre (3our D) wille (wil D) be (were D) as I yow preyde, 2687 ABG. *Yourë* is unlikely (§ 74). The insertion of *it* (with CD) seems best.

Pleynly (-lich B, -liche GCp.) al (*om.* D) at ones they (al thei D) here (her D) hyghten (behighten E), 2708. Hardly *Pleynlichë* àl, etc., with hiatus?

Dred[e]les (Dredeles BCCp., And dredles E) it clere was (cler was C, was clere D) in the wynd, 3368 AG. *And dred[e]les*, which would make the verse normal, has only the indifferent authority of E.

With a (*om.* G) certayn of here (her D, hir G, hire Cp.) owene (own B, owne D) men, 3438. *Herë owenë* seems highly improbable (see § 74).

Heren noyse of reynes (rayn D, reyn G, reyne Cp.) nor of thondre, 3504 ABC. *Hëren noÿsë* || *of reÿnes*, with lyric cæsura and hiatus, does not commend itself as likely.

Shul (Shal B, Schal C, Shul DG) youre wommen slepen wel and softe, 3509. *Yourë* is improbable (§ 74). Perhaps we should read *shullen* (§ 123, VII.).

Reson wil (wol B, wele C, wyl D, wole G) not that I speke of (on C) shep (slep BG, slepe CD), 4250. No note in Mr. Austin's collation, though it seems incredible that Cp. John's have the absurd *shep* of A. One might conceivably scan: *Reson wil not that I* || *spēken of slēp*.

Thonkyng (Touchinge D, Thankyng G) loue he (she BCp.) so wel here (hir D) bysette, 4394. *Thōnkynge lōuē* || *he sò wel*, etc., with lyric cæsura, hiatus, and dissyllabic *loue*, is not probable. *Thonkyngē lōue* is perhaps possible, but *-yngē* in the interior of the verse is highly suspicious, whether in noun or participle (§§ 10, 120, III).

With the shete and wax for shame al (*om.* D) red, 4412 ABCG. Lyrical cæsura would give *With the shētē* || *and wāx*, etc.

At whiche (At which B, Atte which D, Atte whiche G) day was taken Antenor, 4712 (C cut out). An unbearable verse if scanned with nine syllables. Taking a hint from DG may we perhaps read *Attē* for (*At the*) *whichē day*?

Which that drawn (drawn B) forth the sonnes char (-e BDG), 4546.

Loue hym made (made hym G) al (alle G) prest to don hyre byde, 4824 ABCD. *Louē hym* is very doubtful.

Ector (H[ec]tor D) which (-e G, with C) that wel (-e BDG) the Grekis herde, 4838.

Of (O C) this (thilke D, ye ilke C) woful soule that thus crieth, 4979 ABG. Perhaps we should read *Of thilke*; *ye ilke* (C) is no doubt due to confusion between *y* and *p*.

I that leuede (hauede C, leued D, loued G) yn lust (loue C) and in plesaunce, 5155 (stanza not in Cp.). With lyrical cæsura this would run *I that lēuede* || *yn lūst*, etc.

Helpeth hardy man (men C) to (vnto B) his emprise, 5263 ADG.

Wende (-en BG) that she wepte and syked (syȝede C) sore, 5378.

By which (whiche D, swiche G) reson (resoun Cp.) men may wel y-se (I se John's), 5710 AB (not in C).

Of here (hire B, hir G, *om.* D) teris and the herte vnswelle (vnswell D, gan vnswelle G), 5808. Shall we read *herē* (here possessive plural, see § 74)? Emendation (with the help of G) is easy: Of teris and the (or *here*) herte gan vnswelle.

And thor (there CG) lat (lete D) vs speken of oure wo, 5906 AB.

Therē seems to be inevitable: the word is emphatic (§§ 89, 135, η).

May ye not (nouȝt G, not than C) ten (x D) dayes thanne (then G, *om.* CD) abyde, 5990 AB. Read *mowen* for *may* (§ 123, VIII.)?

Of vs sely Troians (Troian D, Troilus † C) but yf routhe (3e rouhte † G), 6152 AB.

Thries (Thrie; Cp.) hadde (had DG) al (alle BD, aH G) with his (hise Cp., hir John's) bemes clere (so ABG Cp. Durham, shene D Selden, cleene John's, clene Phillipps), 6372 (C cut out). *Thrîës hâddë || al with*, with lyrical cæsura and hiatus, is unlikely. It is barely possible that *allë* (plural, referring to *snoves* in the next line) is right, and that we may read *Thrîës hadde allë || with his*, etc.

Passynge (Passing D) al (alle G) the valey (valeye B) fer (ferre G) withoute, 6430 AC.

Thaqueyntaunce (The aqeyntau[n]se C, The acqueintauns D, The acqeyntaunce G) of these (this BC, thes D) Troians (Troyans B, Troylus † C, Troiaunes D) to (for to C) chaunge, 6485. Though C alone has *for to chaunge*, yet that seems to be the correct reading.

Hath his lady gon (gone D, forgon C, gone 3ee G) a fourtenyght, 6697 AB.

Go (So D) we pleye (pley CD) vs in som (somme DG) lusty rowte, 6765 AB. With lyrical cæsura we might scan *Gò we pleyen || vs in*, but it will not do to separate the reflexive *us* from its verb.

Charitable (Scharite † abele C) estatlyche (statlyche C, estalich † D, estateliche G) lusty (lyzt lusti C) and (om. DCp. John's) fre, 7186 AB. With lyrical cæsura the line might run: *Chàritablë || estatlych(e) lusty* and (or om. *and*) *fre*: *charitablë estatlych* would not be a real hiatus. It satisfies the ear quite as well, however, to elide *-e* in *charitable* and make the cæsura after *estatlyche*: we have then a pretty sonorous 9-syl. verse.

Tendre (-dry C) herted (herte C) slydyng (yng CD) of corage, 7188 ABG.

Trewe (Trew B) as stel in ech condicion, 7194 ACDG. Hiatus?

Sholde (-en BGCp. John's) spille a quarter of a (1 D) tere, 7243 AC.

With lyrical cæsura the verse might run *shòlden spillen || a quàrter*, etc.

Trusteth wel (-e G) and vnderstondeth me, 7250 ABCD. An easy emendation would be to insert *me* before *wel*.

Polymyte (Polymyzt C, Polymites D) and many a (om. C) man to (al to C) skathe, 7301 ABG. Shall we read *Polÿmytès || and*?

Cf. *Polÿmytès*, 7851 f, rhyming with *Ethÿoclès* and *Thebès* (§ 139).

Graunted on the morwe (morowe G) at his requeste, 7312 ABCD.

For to speke (-en BCP., -yn John's) with hym at the leste (atte leste BG), 7313 ACD.

For to sen (se CD, sene G) yow in aduersite, 7446 AB.

Ferthere (Forther B, Further D, Ferther G) than (thanne B) this (the BCDG) story (storie B) wol (wele C) deuyse, 7457.

I comende hire wysdom (witte D) by myn hood, 7514 ABCG.

And that (that that C) Ioues (-ys C, Ioue D) of (hadde of C) his purueyaunce; 7809 ABG. Is it possible that *that that* is right?

With *that Iouys* cf. the well-known *that god*. *Hadde* (C) is wrong.

Of the (a G) stronge (strong Cp.) bor with (with his C) tuskes (toschhis C) stoute, 7817 ABD.

Wrak (Venged D, Wroughte G) here in a wonder cruwel wyse, 7831 ABC.

Thorough (Thorwgh B, Thurgh D, Thorough G, Of C) his (*om.* D, hire † C) moder wol I yow (*om.* GCp.) not (naught Cp.) telle, 7846.

At (Atte G) a scarmych (-e B, scharmoth C, scarmissh D, scarmusch G) eche of hem slowh other, 7871.

Peyneth here on ladyes for to lye, 7887 ABCDG. *Peyneth hère* || *on ladyes*, etc., with lyrical caesura, hiatus, and dissyllabic *here*, is very improbable.

Of his loue I haue seyde (seide G) as (that D) I kan, 8132 AB. *Of his lōuē* || *haue*, etc., with lyrical caesura, hiatus, and dissyllabic *loue* is very improbable.

I b.

Some lines in A that might perhaps be scanned as of nine syllables may better be scanned as of ten.

But the Troiànë (troyan BCG, troyans D) gestes as they felle, 145.

For *Troiànë*, see §§ 59, b, 70.

Al this Pandàrë || yn his herte (-t D) thoughte, 1063. *Pandare* is the reading of ABDEGCp. John's Phillipps; Durh. has *Pandar*; Harl. 2392 has *Al this tho Pandare in herte thoht*; cut out in C. Hiatus may be avoided by reading *Pandàrus* (cf. §§ 126, 139). Cf. *Pàndarë* || *I*, 1044, where we may read *Pàndarūs* || *I*.

Cryseyde (Criseyda B, Cresseide C, Cresceide G, Cryseyd anon D) gan al his (the D) chere asprien, 1734. Read *Crysejddë*, or rather *Crysejddà* (§ 140); cf. 2509, 2729, below.

Al (As D) wolde (wold BD) I that noon (no man CD) wyste (weste C, wist DG) of this thought, 1830. Unless *no man* be preferred to *noon*, read, with hiatus, *Al wolde I that noon wystë of*, etc. (rather than *woldë I* and *wyste of*) (cf. § 126).

Criseyda (Criseyde B, Crisseyde C, Cresceide G, Of Cryseyd D) my

- frend he seyde (seyd D) yis, 2509. Mr. Austin's notes the reading of E: Criseide my frende pandare he seid sir yis, but gives no other note on the line. Read *Crisëjdà* and cf. 1734 above, 2729 below.
- So hey nous (hay nous DG) that men myghte (might D, myght G) on it spete, 2702 ABC. Read, of course, *hëjnòus* (§ 140).
- Criseyda (Crisside C, Criseide D, Creseide G) my lady that is here, 2729 AB. Read *Crisëjdà*, and cf. 1734, 2509 above.
- Now thannë (than B, *om.* DG) thus (this D) quod she I woldë (wold D) hym preye, 2966.
- So secret (secrete BD, discret G) and of (in D) swych (such DG) obeysaunce (obseruaunce D), 3320. Read *sècret* and *obëysaunce* (§ 140).
- For myne (my E) wordes here and euery part, 4173 (stanza *om.* in DG). Read perhaps *mynë* (§ 74).
- Love that with an (a E) holsom (holesome E) alliaunce, 4588 ABCG (not in D).
- Loue that knetteth (endytyth C, kennyth E) lawe (law E) of (*om.* E, and BCp.) companye, 4590.
- Nought (Nouȝte G) rought (rouȝte CG) I wheder (whidere B, whider G, whedirwardes D, whedyr that C) thow woldest (wilt D) me (*om.* D) stere, 4944. The readings of C and D lack authority. A may perhaps be read: Nought rought I wheder thow || woldest me stere, (cf. ten Brink's remark on the separation of subject from verb by cæsura, § 313), or, with hiatus and with syncope of *-est* in *woldest*: Nought rought[ë] I || wheder thow woldest me stere.
- Euery thing (thyng B, thing G) that souned into badde (harde † G), 6338 AD (C cut out).
- In a vessël that men clepeth (clepe D, callyn C) an (*om.* C) vrne, 6674. One has little temptation to read *vessel* and *clepeth*.
- Here nedede (neded BDG, nedit C) no (none CG Cp., non John's) teris for to borwe, 7089. As a 9-syl. line, the verse would be unendurable, and *nonë* is surely not Chaucerian; it is probably best to read *nëdëdën* (plural influenced by *teris*, which, indeed, may even be regarded as the subject, *for to borwe* serving as a sort of complement). Cf. § 132.
- Yong fresche (fresshe BG, frosch C, freisshe D) strong and (*om.* C) hardy (*om.* C) as (as a D) lyon, 7193. Read *fresshë*, by-form of *fressh* (§ 49), though this is the only case in which the form occurs in the *Troilus*.
- I fynde ek (-e G) in storyes (storyies C, the stories B) ellys (eH C)

where, 7407. An impossible 9-syl. verse: read *fyndē ek* (with hiatus) or *the storyes* (with B).

How myght (myȝte CG) I (*om.* B) than (thanne C, then G) do (don BC Cp. John's, done G) quod Troylus, 7652 AD. Read *thannē don* || *quod* (§ 88).

Euerych (-y CD, -ich G) ioye or (*om.* D) ese (crese D) in (is in C, in to D) his contrarye, 7742 A.

Tydeus sone that doun (-e DG) descended is, 7877. Read *Tydeus* (§ 141).

Come (Com B) I wole (wolde C, wil D) but yet in swich disioynt, 7981.

Lines which in A might be read as of nine syllables as they stand, but which in that MS. are so corrupt as not to make sense (*e. g.*, 400, 1928, 2720, 2925, 6326; *cf.* 2575, 5206) are of course not considered.

II.

In this list are included a number of verses in which A has nine syllables, but which are easily corrected by comparison of MSS.

For loue of the whan thou tornest ofte, 196 ADG. BCCp. have *ful* before *ofte*.

Or hastow remors of conscience, 554 A. BCDG have *som* before *remors*. Mr. Austin notes that Harl. 2392 has *som*, but registers no other variants in this line.

If thei (men D John's) ferd (-e BGCp., seide John's) yn (with D) loue as men don here, 1124 (C cut out). BDGCp. John's have *that* after *if*, which restores the metre.

Ywys vnclē quod she grant mercy, 1324 ABG. CD have *myn* before *vnclē*. Mr. Austin notes that Harl. 2392 and Harl. 4912 have *myn*, but registers no other variants in this verse.

In which ye may se youre face a morwe, 1490 ABCD. GCp. John's read *which* (wheche G) *that* for *which*.

Eke I knowe of long (-e BDG) tyme agon, 1807. Read *And ek*: BCDCp. John's have the *And*.

Chese (And chese BECp., And sches C, And ches John's, And these † G) if thow wolt syngē or (*om.* C) daunce (daunce syngē G) or lepe, 2040. *And ches* is of course right.

Worth (-e C, Lepe E, worth thow BCp., worthe thou D, wurthe thou G) vp on a courser right a non, 2096. *Worth thow* is of course right.

But wel wot I (I wot C) yow (thow BG, thou D, that thow C) art now (*om.* D) yn (in a D) drede, 2589.

And hast lasse (the lesse D, the lasse GCp. John's) nede to (*om.* BD,

- the to C) countrefete, 2617. Read *the lasse nedē to* (or, possibly omit *to*).
- He rong hem a (hem oute a ECp., hem out a G John's, hym oute a B) proces lyk a belle, 2700 AC (He rong out the processe as a belle D).
- And lord so (so that BGCp. John's, how that C, so as D) his herte gan to quappe, 2899.
- And to (And I to CEG, And y to D) han (have DG) right as yow lyst comfort, 2978 AB. Mr. Austin notes the reading of E, but registers no other variants in this line.
- And what mischaunce (myschauns C, mischef yet D) in this world (-e B) yet (ther D, ȝet ther BCp., yet ther John's, ȝet † er G) is (this † G), 3132. Read *yet ther is*.
- How this (the Cp., is this CDE John's) candele in the (this G) straw (-e E) is (*om.* CDE Jn's.) falle (yfaH D, I-falle John's, fall E), 3701. The right reading is : How is this candel in the straw yfalle.
- That he cam (come C) there (ther BG) and that (that that Cp.) he was born, 3915. ABCDG all omit one of the *that's* and Cp. seems to be the only MS. that has both of them ; yet both are needed by the construction as well as by the metre.
- So thenk (thynkith C, thinketh DE, thyng G, thynk that B, thenk that Cp.) though (*om.* C) that I vnworthi be, 4128. *Think that though that* is probably right.
- Were (ȝt were C, ȝit were D) it so that I wist (wiste BG, woste C) outrely (outerly B, outerely C, vtirly D, entirely G), 4328. Either *ȝet were* or *wistē* (with hiatus).
- Who-so seth yow knoweth (knowe C) yow ful lite, 4410. BDGCp. John's have *O* before *who-so* (D reads : O ho seeth ȝou knoweth ȝou but a lite).
- For wistow (wistist thou C, wystemow Cp. John's, wist thou D) myn herte (hert D) wel Pandare, 4486 ABG. *Wististow* is of course right.
- Of here (his D) comynge (-yng DG) and (and ek CD, and eke G) of his (here D) also, 4517 AB.
- That (They Jn's.) maden (makkedden B, makedden Cp. John's, madyn CD) the (alle the C, al the D) walles (waH C) of the toun, 4783 AG. *Makkedden* is doubtless right ; *al* seems to be a scribe's insertion to make metre.
- In o (oone D) thyng (-e B) were and (and in BCDGCp. John's) noon (none G) other wyght, 5070.
- Nay (Nay nay D Harl. 2392) god wot (woote B, wote DG ; *in* CE

John's Harl. 4912 *the line begins* Nay Pandarus *instead of* Nay god wot) nought (not C, nouth D, nozte G) worth (worthi B) is al thi (this CD Harl. 2392) red, 5160. *Nay nay god wot* seems to be right. Cp. omits the stanza.

Quod (Quod tho BG) the thridde (thrid G) I hope ywys (iwise I hope D) that she, 5353 (C reads The threde answerede I, etc.).

Right a[s] (That right as BDCp. John's, That rihte as G) when I wot ther is a thing, 5735 A (C cut.out).

Com Pandare (Pandarus C, Pandar G) and (in and BGCp. John's) seyde as ye may here, 5747.

For myn honour yn swych (suche D, swiche G) auenture, 5991 AC. BGCp. John's Harl. 2392 have *an* after *swych*.

For (For when B, For whan DG, ffor whan Cp. ffor when John's) he saugh (saught John's) that she ne myghte (-t BD John's) dwelle, 6361 (C cut out).

Saue a pilwe (pilwo B, pillowe D, pilowe G) I (*om.* C) fynde nought (not C, nauzt elles G) tenbrace (to embrace C, to embrace D, to embrace G), 6587. Read *pillow* rather than *pilwe* (cf. § 145, IV.).

For tendresse (tendrenesse B John's, tendirnesse C, tenderness Cp., tendresse G, the tendirnesse D) how (-e G) shal she this (ek C, eke D) sustene, 6605.

That vnnethe (wel vnneth B, wel onethe C, weht vnnethe D, wole vnnethe G) it (vs D) don shal (schal don C, done shaft DG) vs (*om.* D) duresse, 6762.

As seyden bothe the (*om.* C) meste and (and ek BC, and eke DG) the (there C) leste, 6803.

Shal (Ne shal BD, Ne schalle G, He schal C) he (*om.* C) neuere thryue (-yn C, -en Cp. John's) out of drede, 7122.

How he may best with short (shortest BDG John's Harl. 2392, schort C) tarynge, 7137. Intolerable as a 9-syl. verse.

As konnyng (-e B) as (and as BCp. John's) parfit (-e BG, tharfit C, perfite D) and as kynde, 7333.

So wel (-e G) for hym self he (he for hym self BCp. John's, he for hym seluen G) spak (-e G) and seyde, 7396 ACD. *He for hym seluen* is no doubt right.

For she sory (so sory CDGCp. John's) was for (*om.* B) here vntrouthe, 7461.

But why (*om.* D) lest (lest that Cp. John's, liste that B, leste that D) this letre founden were, 7965. Intolerable as a 9-syl. verse.

Other lines of a similar character, when the correction is certain on comparison of MSS., are the following (in some cases the verse begins with a word or syllable that we should expect to have no accent or ictus: these instances are marked by old-style verse numbers): 652, 690, 764, 1091, 1124, 1372, 1457, 1480, 1923, 1932, 2044, 2087, 2138, 2150, 2153, 2194, 2575, 2902, 3082, 3123, 3193, 3405, 3431, 3546, 3564, 3655, 3789, 3864, 4045, 4111, 4160, 4522, 4695, 4842, 5182, 5314, 5329, 5341, 5363, 5403, 5840, 6053, 6384, 6878, 7519, 7843, 7865, 7978, 8098; cf. 7368.

III.

In some lines the insertion of a single letter (usually weak -e or -e-justified or required by grammar or usage) restores a normal line.

That *ought*[ē] (auzte C, oughte John's, owghte Cp.) wel ben (wel to ben CG, be wele D) oure opynyoun, 710.

Stond *fast*[ē] (faste CCp.) for to good part (-e Cp.) hastow rowed, 962.

For *dred*[ē]les (dredeles CCp. John's) me were leuere (lever to DG) dye (dethe † C), 1027. Cf. 1270, 3844, 4738, 5940, 6156, 7245, 8103, 8118.

I *rought*[e] (roughte BCp. John's, rouzte C, roght D) nought though that (*om.* C) she stode and herde, 1032.

To *good*[e] (goode BC) mot it turne of yow I mette, 1175 (see § 14).

In whom that (*om.* G) *al*[le] (alle Cp., euery DE), vertu lyst abounde, 1244 (C †). *Allē* is surely right, see § 80, III. (cf. especially 1848, 1918, 1930, 6311).

For *trew*[e]ly (treweliche B, trewely C, truly DG, trewelich Cp.) I hold it gret deynte, 1249. Cf. 7986.

Thus *gilt*[e]les (gilteles BCG) than haue ye fysshed faire, 1413. Cf. 7447.

O (B inserts *thou* above the line) cruel god o *dispitous*[e] (dispitouse B, dispituse C, dispetous G) Marte, 1520.

Ye *dout*[e]les (douteles CG, doutelees Cp., trewly B) quod she myn vncle dere, 1579 AD.

She *thought*[e] (thouzte C) wel (ek C, ferst D) that (this C) Troylus persone, 1786.

Be *drynk*[e]lees (drynkeles CCp., drenkynlees B) for alwey as I gesse, 1803.

Men *moste*[n] (miste C, must D, most G) axe (axen C, ask D) of (at BCGCp.) seyntes if it is, 1979.

Quod Pandarus *lok[e]* (looke B, loke DG, loke that C), alwey ye (3e alwey C) fynde, 2194.

And *sent[e]* (sente Cp., sent to D) you this lettre here by me, 2208.

Out of *disdayn[e]s* (desdayns B, disdayns C, disdeynous D, disdaynes GCp., desdaines John's) prison but a lyte, 2302.

Al *soft[e]ly* (softely BCD) and thederwardes (thiderward BCCp., thedirward G, thidirward D) gan (gan he D) bende, 2335.

Yet of (for E) hym self (my selfe E) no thyng (-e B) nold I (ne wolde I BCp.) recche (3it of him self 3it wolde I no thyng rech C, 3it of him self wolde I nothyng recche G, D=A with *wold* for *nold*), 2558.

The line is restored by reading either *hym seluen* or *ne wolde I*.

And shortly made (makes B, mad C, made D, maked GCp. John's) eche (*om.* G) of (*om.* G) hem his fo, 2567. Read *maked* for *madē*.

Tel[te] (Telle G, Tel me CD) which (-e G) thow wylt of eueyrychone, 3254. Read either *tellē* (which is not so common as *tel*, see § 115) or *tel me*.

So *help[e]* (helpeth BEGCp., helpyth C, helpith D) to this werk that is bygonne, 3577.

With (which † B) *pi[e]te* (piete BCp., pete C) so wel repressed is, 3875.

As she that *iust[e]* (iuste BCD) cause hadde hym to tryste, 4069.

Nought (Now C, Noo E) *swych[e]* (swiche B, such C, suche E) sorwful (sorwful C, sorowful E) sykes as men make, 4203 (wanting in DG).

God *myght[e]* (myghte B, myzte C, mi3t D, myght G) not a (oo D, o G) poynt my (of my D) ioyes eche, 4351.

Why nylt (nylte G) *thi* (thyn C, the John's, thou D) *self* (seluen BG John's, selue C, *om.* D) helpen (helpe to D, help to John's) don (doone D, to G) redresse, 5190. Read *thi seluen* (stanza *om.* in Cp.). Cf. 5253.

And *nam[e]ly* (namely BGD, namelich C) syn (sythe C, sithe D) ye two (ye bothe tuoo D) ben al oon, 5254. Cf. 6220.

Graunt (-e BG) mercy (mercie G) *good[e]* (goode BCp., god DG, iwis goode C) myn (myne DG) ywys (*om.* C) quod she, 6322.

Fro *then[nes]forth* (tennes forth B, thennes forth Cp. John's, thennes rizte forth G) he rideth vp and down, 6924. For similar cases cf. 3009, 6970, 7016, 7034, 7248, 7258, 8080; see also § 91, s.vv. *hennes*, *thennes*, *whennes*.

Lord *whethe[r]* (whether BCG, whethir D) yet thou thenke (thow thy[n]ke 3et B, thou thynke 3it C, thou thinkist yet D, thou 3itt

thenke G) vpon (on CG) Criseyde, 7098. For *whether wher*, see § 138, 6.

Shal *knot[te]les* (knotteles C, knottles D) thorough (thour C, oute D, thorough G) out (oute G, of D, *om.* C) here (hir DG) herte slyde (glyde C, glide D), 7132.

Hardy testyf (testis B, testy D) strong (-e DG) and (*om.* D) *cheual[e]rous* (chialrus B, chyualrous DG), 7165.

He shal no terme *fynd[en]* (fynden BG, fynde C, finde D) out of drede, 7453.

Hym self (seluen B, selue C) lyk (-e BD) a pylgrym (pilgryme D) to degyse (disgise C, disguise D, desgise Cp.), 7940 (not in G). Read *hym seluen*.

The *which[e]* (whiche CDG) cote (cote armur D) as telleth Lollius, 8016. Cf. 8187.

And *shuld[en]* (sholden BCp. John's, shulden E) al oure herte on heuene caste, 8188 (not in D).

For other examples (some harsh enough) see 1797, 2041, 3323, 4080, 4646, 5018, 5226, 5228, 5248, 6285, 6320, 6383, 6535, 6595, 6930, 7018, 7153, 7171, 7710, 7854, 8100.

Of instances in which this or that MS. (not A) has a verse that might, in its present condition, be scanned (though sometimes very harshly) as of nine syllables, but that is easily corrected by a comparison of MSS., the following will serve as examples. The necessary correction is often very slight, consisting sometimes merely in a single final -e. The list is not meant to be exhaustive. 78 C, 92 B, 93 C, 128 C, 145 BC, 147 CD, 157 B, 292 CD, 338 C, 411 BCD, 454 B, 498 B, 502 C, 623 C, 761 C, 968 BC, 1276 C, 1277 CD, 1453 B, 1473 BD, 1668 C, 1961 C, 2035 C, 2204 CD, 2206 C, 2215 C^e, 2401 CD, 2417 B, 2464 C, 2535 CD, 2580 B, 2595 C, 2791 CD, 2826 B, 3239 BD, 3311 CD, 3349 BD, 3836 CD, 4624 C, 5148 C, 5288 C, 5510 C, 5763 C, 6544 C, 6694 C, 6886 C, 6935 C, 6949 C, 7135 C, 7330 C, 7339 C, 7346 C, 7423 C, 7687 B, 7842 C, 7895 C, 7917 C.—Particularly interesting is: Wherefore (-for BD, Wherefore C) my (A John's have *my*, BCDG omit it) lord (-e G) if my (*om.* Cp.) seruyse or I, 430, in which A and John's alone show both *my*'s.

IV.

A large number of lines absolutely unmetrical as they stand in A, and quite incapable of being read as verses of nine syllables, admit

of the simple cure just mentioned: the addition or insertion of a single letter (or two letters), usually *e* (final or interior), required or allowed by grammar or usage. Samples are:

This is the *right[e]* (ryzte C) lyf that I am inne, 1936.

For Pandarus (-re D) and *sought[en]* (soughten BGCp. John's, souzte C, soghtyn D) hym ful faste, 2022.

And don (do on CG, do † down D) thyn hod (-e B) thi neles *sped[de]* (spedde BCE) †be, 2039. Cp. apparently has *sped*. On the plural participle *spelde*, see § 68.

Wolde on (vp on CD) the *best[e]* (beste BCCp.) souned (sowned BGCp., sounede C, sownyd D) ioly (*om.* G) harpe (hare † B), 2116. Read *the beste sowned* (§ 87); the *best ysowned* would also be possible.

For whi men seyth *impression[e]s* (impressyons B, impressiou[n]s C) lyghte, 2323.

Thow shalt gon ouer (to D) nyght and that (*om.* G) *b[el]yue* (belyue C, bylyve E, as blyve D Harl. 2392), 2598. On *belyue*, *blyue*, see § 138, 1.

Of *thing[es]* (thynges BCp., thingis D, thinges G John's) which that folk (-es John's) on wondren (wondre on John's) so, 2874.

Herynge here come and *short[e]* (schorte C, shorte Cp., for John's) for to syke, 2900.

Nyl I nought swere although he *lay[e]* softe, 3284. No -e in *laye* in ABCDG; no note in Austin.

Was euere *ylík[e]* (yhold B, ilik C, ylyk D, alike G) prest and dyligent, 3327.

And they that *lay[en]* (layen BCp., leye C, lyen D, leyn G) at the dore withoute, 3587.

But lord so she wax *sodeynlych[e]* (-lyche B, -li C, -ly G, sodenly D) red, 3798.

Haue ye no care hym *lyst[e]* (list BG, liste C, lest D) not to slepe, 3908.

Hadde of hym take here *thought[e]* (thouzte C) tho no fere, 3986.

Whan she his trowthe and clene *entent[e]* (entente B, entent clene D) wyste, 4071.

And syn (sithe C, sythe D) thow list myn *argument[e]* (-ment CG, -mentes D) blame (to blame BCDG John's), 5189. Perhaps we should read *argument*; and *to blame*; but *argumentes* is an unobjectionable form (§ 39, I).

But shortly lest this tales *soth[e]* (sothe BCDG) were, 5333.

She herd hem ryght as though she *then*[ne]s (tennes B, thense D, thennes GCp. John's) were, 5357 (Sche herde riȝt nouȝt thow sche there were C). (Cf. 6766, 6852.)

Cryseyde ful of sorwful (sorweful C, sorwefuH D, sorowfuH G, sorowful John's) pite (piete Cp.), 5393. Read either *sorwëful* or *piëte*.

Or elles thinges that *puruey*[e]d (-ueied BJohn's, -ueid D, -veide G, -ueyed Cp.) be, 5718 (C cut out).

And thanne (than BD, that G) at (att D, atte G) *erst*[e] (erste BDCp.) shal we ben (best D) so (*om.* D) fayn, 5983. (See §§ 54, n. 2, 143.)

Than (Thanne B, There C, Then G) shal (shalle G) no mete or (ne C) *drynk*[e] (drynke G) come (com B) in me, 5437.

For which Pandare (-dar DG) *myght*[e] (myȝte CG) not restreyne, 5534.

The gold [*y*]tressed Phebus heighe on lofte, 6371 (cut out in C). The correct reading must be *the gold ytressed Phebus*, but the MSS. do not have it: *goldtressed* is in ABCp. John's (separatim in B), *gold tressid* in Phillips 8252 Harl. 2392, *gold tresses* in Selden B 24; D has the diverting lection *The Auricomus tressed Phebus*, due, of course, to the intrusion of a gloss (Harl. 2392 has the gloss *auricomus* over the reading *gold tressid*, and *sol* over *phebus*); in the readings of E (*goldetressed*), Durham (*golde tressed*), and G (*golde dressed*), perhaps the lost *y-* may be discerned.

Whan Diomede on *hors*[e] (horse CD) gan hym dresse, 6400.

But syn (sithen G) of *fyn*[e] (fyne BD, *om.* G) force I (it † G) mot aryse, 6784.

Whan he was there (ther BD) as (that C) no (*om.* BG) wight (man CD, nought B, nouȝte G) *myght*[e] (myght hym BJohn's, myȝt hym C, might him D, myȝte hym G) here, 6827. Probably (with Furnivall) we should supply *hym* in A.

The lettres ek that she of *old*[e] (olde BDG) tyme, 6833. C stops the line at *sche*, but the corrector has added *oftyn tyme*.

Intendestow that we shul here (her D) *b[i]leue* (beleue CD Harl. 2392. bileue G), 6841.

With *soft*[e] (softe CG, lofte † D) voys he of his lady dere, 6999.

Conseyued hath myn hertes *pi*[e]te, 7961 (pete C, pietee Cp.). (Not in G.)

To com ayen which (-e C) yet (*om.* C) [*ne*] (ne BCp. John's) may not be, 7964. C stops the verse with *not*, and the corrector adds *ȝet be*.

Other examples may be seen in 1351, 1838, 2064, 2440, 2469, 2488, 2525, 2667, 2874, 3169, 3194, 3351, 3456, 4089, 4183, 4445, 4451,

4476, 4505, 4709, 4737, 5064, 5188, 5298, 5489, 5560, 5813, 6194,
6543, 6715, 6854, 7011, 7080, 7172, 7175, 7231, 7272, 7308,
7539, 7543, 7566, 7578, 7619, 7726, 7791, 7849, 7884, 8087,
8093.

On the whole matter of "nine-syllable verses," see the excellent monograph of M. Freudenberger, *Ueber das Fehlen des Auftakts in Chaucers heroischem Verse*, *Erlanger Beiträge*, 1889.

ADDITIONS AND CORRECTIONS.

p. 2, s.v. *hosbonde*. On the shortening of *o* in A.S. *-bónða* (*husbonða*, *-banda*, Chron. 1048), see Manly, p. 2.

p. 2, s.v. *stere*. The causes of the M.E. confusion of form between A.S. *stéora* 'gubernator,' and *stéor* 'gubernaculum,' are doubtless more or less complex; but one of them is perhaps the tendency (which has gone so far in Modern English) to give to the names of implements, etc., the form of *nomina agentis* (cf. *boiler*, *cultivator*, *governor*, *generator*, *pipe-cleaner*, *mower*, etc., etc.; in America one even hears a *dining-car* occasionally spoken of as a *diner*). Cf. also Manly, p. 3.

p. 3, s.v. *tyme*. On *somtyme*, *ofte tyme*, cf. § 133.

p. 3, s.v. *wele*. The Lazamon forms are accidentally omitted (L.^{ab} *wele*, L.^a *wela*, *weolla*, *wella*, *weole*, *wæl*).

p. 4, s.v. *wrecche*. For *L. wreche* read *L^a. wræcche*, etc.

p. 5, s.v. *blæse*. For *blæse* read *blæse*.

p. 6, s.v. *myte*. On this word see Skeat, *Trans. Philol. Soc.* for 1888-90, p. 305. I see no evidence that the M. L. G. word ever replaced the A.S. *míte* in English. The most that can be said is that it influenced its meaning.

p. 8, *wodebynde* was put here with considerable hesitation. Both A.S. *wudubind*, *wudebind*, and *wudebinde* occur, apparently as nominatives, in glosses (see *Wrt.-W.*, 137/5, 418/25, 556/39).

p. 8, *wyse*. Cf. *gyse*, § 26.

p. 9, I feel great doubt whether *feldefare* and *felfor* have anything to do with each other.

p. 10, s.v. *ache*. Insert the A.S. form *æce*.

p. 10, s.v. *sone*. See this article in *Studies and Notes in Philology and Literature*, published under the Direction of the Modern Language Departments of Harvard University, II, 1 ff. (on *sunu*, see p. 7).

p. 14, s.v. *loue*. As further instances of *loue*, cf. 16, 46, 234, 677, 1762, 3004, 3359, 3622, 3851 † A^c, 4158, 4830, 5084, 5761, 6530, 7443 (old-style figures indicate that the cæsura follows *loue*).

p. 15, s.v. *shame*. Insert *L^a. scome*, *secome*, *scame*; *L^b. same*, *seame*.

p. 17, s.v. *chyste*. Klæber, *Das Bild bei Chaucer*, 1893, p. 392, has an ingenious but futile note in this passage.

p. 18, s.v. *help*, note. But cf. "Sir, thine help now on hast!" *Arthur and Merlin*, ed. Kölbing, 1736, "O now thyn help thy socour and releef," Hoccleve, *Male Regle*, 55, *Minor Poems*, ed. Furnivall, p. 27; with which may be compared such phrases as *thin ore!*

p. 22. On *routhe*, *slouthe*, *trouthe*, etc., see Zupitza, *Anzeiger f. d. Alterthum*, II, 17, 18.

p. 31, s.v. *benche*. Insert *L. dat. benche*.

p. 31, s.v. *bok*. Insert *L. boc*.

p. 31, s.v. *forward*. Insert *L. forward, forewarde*, etc.

p. 34, s.v. *game*. Insert *L^b* before *game*.

p. 36, § 14, l. 6. *Scrín* is of course neuter, as is indicated below, s.v.

p. 38, § 14, n. 1. The explanation of this *-e* in neuters with short stem-syllable as derived from *-u* of the plural is Zupitza's (*Anzeiger f. d. Alterthum*, II, 11).

p. 41, s.v. *fyre*. On the form *fere* see Skeat, *On Chaucer's Use of the Kentish Dialect* (Chaucer Soc. *Essays*).

p. 47, § 15. For *myte*, see § 3, p. 6 (cf. *Additions and Corrections*).

p. 48, s.v. *felawe*. Add *felawe* (before caesura), 696 (*felow B, felaw D*).

p. 48, *ferde*. The comparison with M.H.G. *gerârde* seems to have little value. The history of the English word is very obscure, and its form doubtful (cf. p. 392).

p. 51, § 16. For *kne*, see pl. *knes, kneës (knowes)*, § 39, V., p. 105, and the phrase *on knowe*, § 14, p. 42.

p. 52, l. 1, *first word*. For *bodig* read *body*.

p. 52, § 18. In our uncertainty as to the etymology of A.S. *craft*, it would perhaps have been better to put this word among the *o*-stems.

p. 52, § 18. Among the neut. *o*-stems insert *soot*.

p. 60, § 18. Insert,—*soot* (A. S. *sót, u.*), 4036 f BCp. John's (*sote CD, sot A*) (: in hire foot, in his fote A, in his foote D). The correct reading is *sucre be or soot*. A took *soot* for the adj. (see § 46, p. 113) and wrote *sour* for *sucre*.

p. 63, § 19, s.v. *cross*. On this word, see now the *New English Dictionary*.

p. 70, § 21. Insert,—*thou lantern*, 6906 (*lantern, C, [thou] lantern D*).

p. 71, s.v. *nece*. Add : *good[ē] nece || to*, 1468 (*goodē nece C, good[ē] nece D*).

p. 73, § 21. Add : *sclaue*, 3233 † B (*read knave*).

p. 79, s.v. *heirdesse*. I transcribe a passage from advance sheets of Professor Skeat's essay *On Chaucer's Use of the Kentish Dialect*, p. 662 : "We . . . also find the riming words *wirdes, hirdes*, in *Troil*. iii. 617, which would rime in any dialect; and I draw special attention to this passage, because the latter word is wrongly explained in *Morris*, and omitted in *Stratmann*, though it was solved by Tyrwhitt in the last century. The passage is :—

'But O, Fortune, executrice of *wirdes*,
O influences of these hevenes hye !
Soth is that, under god, ye ben our *hirdes*,
Though to us bestes been the causes wrye.'

The Campsall MS. writes *wyerdes, hyerdes*; but all that we are concerned with are the A.S. forms. *Wirdes* is the pl. of *wyrd*, fate; but *hirdes* is not a plural at all. It is the feminine of *hirde*, A.S. *hyrde*, a shepherd. The word *ye* is merely the polite substitute for *thou* :

and the person addressed is the goddess Fortune, who is here said to be our shepherdess. Morris's explanation of 'guardians' is clearly to be rejected. It may seem strange that Chaucer should adopt *-es* as a feminine suffix instead of the more usual *-esse*; but the context clearly demands it; and we thus have a bright light thrown upon l. 15 of the *Envoy to Scogan*, where the form *goddess* is rimed with *forbode is*. The comparison of these two passages clears up both of them." Professor Skeat's explanation of this passage from the *Troilus* (3459 ff.) seems inadmissible; certainly it is not clearly demanded by the context. *Hirdes* = *shepherds* or *herdsmen* (*bestes* in the next verse carries out the figure); the *influences of the stars* are apostrophized as well as *Fortune*, whence the plural, which may refer either (a) to *Fortune* and *influences*, or (b) to *influences* alone. The latter interpretation is perhaps better. The influences of the stars are the shepherds or herdsmen, who, under God, control us mortals, who, like the beasts of the field, cannot perceive the causes of what the shepherds force us to do.—I have never been able to accept Professor Skeat's interpretation of *goddess* as = *goddesse* (*Minor Poems*, p. 389) in *Envoy to Scogan*, 15. All the seven gods ("the brighte goddess sevene," 3) may be regarded as feeling the blasphemy against one of their number, or, if this will not do, *this goddess* may perhaps refer to Cupid and Venus. It is unnecessary to remark, in connection with the former and preferable of these two explanations, that *this* (pl.) is often used in Chaucer with little difference of meaning from that of the definite article (cf. O. Fr. *ces*).¹

p. 86, § 31, s.v. *contrarye*. Add: cf. also 418, 637, 645 (*pl.* see p. 103), and cf. the adj. (§ 51, p. 120); cf. also § 142.

p. 87, § 31, n. at end. Add: Cf. 6684 (§§ 131, 139, 145, V.).

p. 89, § 33, s.v. *soueraignty*. The correct form for this line (3013) seems to be: *souereyneté* (see § 126, 137).

p. 89, § 33, n. 1. Add: For *pârde* (i.) (ii.) cf. 1040, 1451, 2493, 2608.

p. 89, § 33, n. 2. On *benedicite* cf. § 138, 8.

p. 90, l. 4. For nouns in *-ion*, *-ioun*, see § 142.

p. 92, s.v. *crois*. See now the *New English Dictionary*, s.v. *cross*.

p. 93, § 34, s.v. *pes*. For *pes* interjectionally used cf. 753: *pes and cry no more* (pees BD, lye † stulle and crye no more C).

p. 97, § 35, l. 3. For *past*, read *part*.

p. 98, § 35, I, note. Cf. "As thou art a man of life" (= *a lives noun*), *Little Musgrave and Lady Barnard*, A, st. 10, Child, *Ballads*, II, 244.

p. 113, s.v. *merye*. On the forms of this word in Chaucer, see Skeat, *On Chaucer's Use of the Kentish Dialect*, p. 661.

p. 114. As to *lyte* in the adjectival use, cf. Manly, in the *Harvard Studies and Notes in Philology*, II, 50.

¹ I take this opportunity to remark that Mr. Skeat's suggestion that *olde grissel*, *Scogan*, 35 = *old gray horse*, is supported not only by Gower, *Conf. Am.*, viii. ed. Pauli, III, 356 ("Olde grisel is no fole"), but by *bonny grissell* = *bony gray horse* in the ballad of *Johnie Armstrong*, B, st. 20, Child, III, 369. Cf. "Mine hed is hore and al for-fare I-hewid as a grei mare," *Old Age*, st. 6, Furnivall, *Old Engl. Poems*, Philol. Soc., 1862, p. 149.

p. 120, § 51, s.v. *contraire*. Cf. §§ 31 (p. 86), 38, VII. (p. 103), and 142.

p. 122, § 52, s.v. *sonereyne*. Add: But,—thilkē sōueyren (*dissyll.*) purueyaunce, 5732 (sōueyren D); cf. §§ 63, 137.

p. 122, § 52, n. 3, l. *penult.* See Metrical Chapter, § 142.

p. 123, l. 13. Add (for 1766): seuēneṭhe A.

p. 127, § 54, n. 2. As to *atte*, cf. § 143, where it is suggested that in *firstē vertu* the demonstrative *the* has been swallowed up by the preceding *that* (conjunction). The quotation from *Rom. Rose*, 13117-21, II, 48, should probably be replaced by "Virtutem primam esse puta comescere linguam," *Disticha Catonis*, i, 3; cf. Kittredge, *Modern Language Notes*, VIII, 465.

p. 138, § 67. Add, as a note: The adj. pl. *ynowe* (with elided *e*) occurs in 3141 (inow B, ynow D), 4769 (inowe B, ynow D), 5523 (inoughe B, inow C, ynow D); see the adj. sing. *there is art ynow* || *for*, 5928 (ynough B, inow CD), cf. 7357 C. As a subst. (i.) bef. consonants, *ynough*, 912 (inough B, inow C, ynow D), *ynowh*, 6177 (inough(e) B, inow C, inough D); (ii.) before vowels, *ynough*, 881 (inow C, ynow D), *ynow*, 5904 (ynowgh B, inow CD).

p. 151. In *Wherof artow* (*ertow B, art(e) thou D*) *quod Panulare* (-*dar D*) *than amayed*, 5303 (*Whereto quod panularus art thou thus amayed C*; no note in Austin), the ictus falls on *-ow* in *artow*. In

Think ek how Parys hath that is thy brother
A loue and whi shaltow not haue a nother,

5270-1 (shaltow(e) B, schuldist † not han another C, shulde nat † I haue a nother D; no note in Austin), *-ow* in *shaltow* certainly has both the ictus and the sense-accent. Perhaps we should read *thow* in both these instances.

p. 168, § 79, s.v. *oon*. In: And for a soth they tellen .xx. lyes, 6069, *a* apparently = *one*.

p. 176, § 82, s.v. *hote*. Cf. *halde ich* (I CD) *it so hoote*, 5245 f B Cp. D (for hote A, so hote C), where *so hoote* is surely the correct reading (no note as to John's).

p. 189, § 85, at end, n. 5. The Northern use of *til* for *to* (of space or direction) is occasionally found: see 128 B, 506 C, 1273 C, 1999 AB, 2271 C, 2431 C (till(e) B), 2438 AB, 4423 AB, 4781 C; on-tyl, 354 C (vn-til B, vn-to AD). [Var. BC tyl.] In all these cases *til* stands before a vowel or weak *h*. In 2215 f D, *seyd hym till* (: *stonde still*) is a very bad reading. For *through*, etc., see p. 389 (and *Additions*).

p. 221, l. 1. See also § 111, III., n. 1, p. 266.

p. 242, § 100, note. On *thraсте, thriste, threste*, cf. Skeat, *On Chaucer's Use of the Kentish Dialect*, pp. 668-9.

p. 246, second line of § 102. For *second*, read *third*.

p. 248, § 103. It is unlikely that, in *Til in a temple he fonde hym al allone*, 5609 (fond AC, fonde BD, fownde John's; ABCD om *al*, Cp. John's have it), *founde* is to be referred to W.S. weak preterite *funde*, though John's has the spelling *fownde*.

p. 303, l. 14. For *V.* read *IV.*

p. 389, § 143, at end, n. 5. For *thourgh*, *thurgh*, *thorough*, monosyllabic, cf. 998, 1853, 2402, 2417, 2421, 2425, 2858, 2926, 3089, 3140, 3443, 3629, 4060, 4130 4455, 4566, 4656, 4680, 4829, 7922, 7923, etc.

[Advance-sheets of Professor Skeat's paper *On Chaucer's Use of the Kentish Dialect* reached me in time to be of assistance in preparing the *Additions and Corrections*. Professor Skeat's edition of the *Troilus*, however, did not appear in time for me to use it in any part of these *Observations*. This note is added at the last moment, in the proof, to prevent possible misapprehensions.

G. L. K.]

RICHARD CLAY & SONS, LIMITED,
LONDON & BUNGAY.





Vertical text or markings on the left margin, possibly bleed-through from the reverse side of the page. The text is extremely faint and illegible.

PR Chaucer Society, London
1901 [Publications]
A3
ser. 2
no. 28

CIRCULATE AS MONOGRAPH

PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY
